

**THE NEW TESTAMENT
BRAID SCOTS**

WILLIAM WYE SMITH

1904

**Wipf and Stock Publishers
Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #70
THE NEW TESTAMENT
IN BRAID SCOTS**

Translated by: Rev. WILLIAM WYE SMITH

1904 Original Publisher, ALEXANDER GARDNER, Paisley

358 Pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers
1396 E. Washington Blvd.
Pasadena, CA, 91104
1-626-7 97-4756

Printer: James Baden
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-419-3

Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leeser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leeser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, " 'Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.' " "Therefore blessed be they," the preface continues, "and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God's book unto God's people in a tongue which they understand?" And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge "that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance."

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. *

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell
(Charter Member #12)

*additional versions supplied by:
Bill Chamberlain

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
IN BRAID SCOTS.

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
IN
BRAID SCOTS.

RENDERED BY
REV. WILLIAM WYE SMITH.



NEW EDITION, REVISED.

PAISLEY:
ALEXANDER GARDNER,
Publisher and Bookseller to the late Queen Victoria.

1904

PRINTED AT
ALEXANDER GARDNER, PAISLEY

P R E F A C E.

THAR are mony folk, wha hae spoken English a' their grown-up days, wha like to gang back to the tongue o' their bairnhood, i' the mirk and shadows o' auld age. Thar are itherers wha seem tae tak better to the Word whan it comes to them wi' a wee o' the Scottish burr. And thar are a hantle o' folk—and I meet them a'gate—wha dinna speak Scots theirsels, but are keen to hear it, and like to read it.

And thar is anither consideration—the Scots tongue is no gettin extendit, and some folk think it may be tint a'thegither 'or lang. And God's Word is for a' men; and ony lawfu' means ane can use to get folk to read it, and tak tent to it, is richt and proper. For a' thae reasons, and itherers I could bring forrit, I hae putten the New Testament intil Braid Scots. Let nae man think it is a vulgar tongue—a mere gibberish to be dune wi' as suns as ane is bye the schule-time. It is an ancient and honourable tongue; wi' rutes deep i' the yird; aulder than muckle o' the English. It cam doon to us throwe our Gothic and Pictish forebears; it was heard on the battle-field wi' Bruce; it waftit the triumphant prayers and sangs o' the Martyrs intil Heeven; it dirl't on the tongue o' John Knox, denouncin wrang; it sweetan't a' the heevenlie letters o' Sam'l Rutherford; and aneath the theek o' mony a muirland cottage it e'en noo carries thanks to Heeven, and brings the blessings doon!

And I haena putten pen to paper unhidden. A wheen screeds o' the Word dune intil Scots I had at times putten afore the public een; and folk wad write me, "Hae ye ony mair o't? Is the hale Testament in Scots to be gotten?" till I begude to think that aiblins Providence had gien me the Scots blude and the Scots tongue, wi' the American edication, for the vera reason that—haein baith lang'ages—I soud recommend the Word in Scots; and juist Scots eneuch no to be unfathomable to the ordinar English reader.

Whiles thar has been a chance o' makin the meanin plainer; whiles a Scots phrase o' unco tenderness or wondrous pith could come in. And at a' times, ahint the pen that was movin, was a pair but leal Scots heart, fu' o' prayer that this sma' effort might be acceptit o' the dear Maister—and, survivin a' the misca'fin o' the pernickity and the fashionable—might bring the memory o' a worthy tongue, and the better knowledge o' a Blessed Saviour, to this ane and that ane, as they might chance to read it.

WILLIAM WYE SMITH.

ST. CATHARINES, CANADA.

THE NAMES AND ORDER

OF ALL

THE BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

WITH

THE NUMBER OF THEIR CHAPTERS.

	Chap.	Page.		Chap.	Page.
MATTHEW,	28	1	1 TIMOTHY,	6	264
MARK,	16	42	2 TIMOTHY,	4	269
LUKE,	24	69	TITUS,	3	273
JOHN,	21	114	PHILEMON,	1	275
THE ACTS,	28	148	TO THE HEBREWS,	13	276
EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS,	16	191	EPISTLE OF JAMES,	5	289
1 CORINTHIANS,	16	209	1 PETER,	5	294
2 CORINTHIANS,	13	226	2 PETER,	3	299
GALATIANS,	6	237	1 JOHN,	5	302
EPHESIANS,	6	243	2 JOHN,	1	307
PHILIPPIANS,	4	249	3 JOHN,	1	308
COLOSSIANS,	4	254	JUDG,	1	309
1 THESSALONIANS,	5	258	REVELATION,	22	311
2 THESSALONIANS,	3	263	THE TWENTY-THIRD PSALM,		332

M A T T H E W

CHAPTIR ANE.

The Forrbear and Nativitie o' Christ.

THE buik o' the generation o' Jesus the Christ, Dauvid's son, the son o' Ab'ram.

2. Ab'ram begat Isaac ; and Isaac begat Jaucob ; and Jaucob begat Jndah and his brethren.

3. And Judah begat Pharez and Zarab o' Tamar ; and Pharez begat Esrom ; and Esrom begat Aram.

4. And Aram begat Aminadab ; and Aminadab begat Naasson ; and Naasson begat Salmon.

5. And Salmon begat Boaz, o' Rabab ; and Boaz begat Obed, o' Ruth ; and Obed begat Jesse.

6. And Jesse begat Dauvid the king ; and Dauvid the king begat Solomon, o' her wha was Uriah'a.

7. And Solomon begat Rehoboam ; and Rehoboam begat Abijah ; and Abijah begat Aaa.

8. And Aaa begat Jehosaphat ; and Jehosaphat begat Jehoram ; and Jehoram begat Uzziah.

9. And Uzziah begat Jotham ; and Jotham begat Ahaz ; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah.

10. And Hezekiah begat Manasseb ; and Manasseb begat Amon ; and Amon begat Josiah.

11. And Josiah begat Jeboiachin and his brethren, nar-baun the time they war carry't awa' to Babylon.

12. And esfir they cam to Babylon, Jeboiachin begat Salathiel ; and Salathiel begat Zerubbabel.

13. And Zerubbabel begat Abiud ; and Abiud begat Eliakim ; and Eliakim begat Azor.

14. And Azor begat Sadoc ; and Sadoc begat Achim ; and Achim begat Eliud.

15. And Eliud begat Eleazar ; and Eleazar begat Mattban ; and Mattban begat Jaucob.

16. And Jaucob begat Joseph, Mary's husband, o' wham was born Jesus, wha is ca'd "The Christ."

17. See a' the generations frae Ab'ram to Dauvid are fourteen generations ; and fras Dauvid to the takin awa' to Babylon fourteen generations ; and fras the takin awa' to Babylon to Christ fourteen generations.

18. Noo the nativitie o' Jesus Christ was thisgate : whan his mither Mary was mairry't till Joseph, 'or they cam tbegither, she was fund wi' bairn o' the Holie Spirit.

19. Than her guidman, Joseph, bein an upright man, and no desirin her name soud be i' the mooth o' the public, was settin to pit her awa' hidlin.

20. But as he had thir things in his mind, see ! an Angel o' the Lord appearit till him hy a dream, sayin, "Joseph, son o' Dauvid, binna feared to tak till ye yere wife, Mary ; for that whilk is begotten in her is by the Holie Spirit.

21. "And she sal bring forth a son, and ye shall ca' his name JESUS ; for he sal ¹ save his folk fras their sins."

22. Noo, a' this was dune, that it might come to pass what was said by the Lord throve the prophet,

23. "Tak tent ! a maiden sal be wi' bairn, and sal bring forth a son ; and they wull ca' his name Emmanuel," whilk is, translatit, "God wi' us."

24. Sae Joseph, comin oot o' his sleep, did as the Angel had bidden him, and took till him his wife.

25. And leev'd in continence wi' her till she had brocht forth her first-born son ; and ca'd his name JESUS.

¹ V. 21. The dourness o' the Jews, and o'en o' his ain kith accordin to the fleab, was unco strange. The Angel to Joseph, (and Simeon and Anna,) said naething o' him bein a great conqueror, but aye to be a blessin to the wairld ; and yet they wad haes it that he woud be a conqueror King like Dauvid.

CHAPTIR TWA.

The Wyss Men frae the East. To Egypt, and back again.

NOO, whan Jesus was born i' Bethlehem-Judah, i' the days o' King Herod, lo ! Wyss Men cam frae the East tae Jerusalem.

2. And quo' they, "Whaur is he bidin that is ca'd King o' the Jews ? for i' the East we saw his starn, and are come forrit to worship him."

3. But the King, hearin, was sair putten-about ; and a' Jerusalem wi' him.

4. And, gatherin a' the heigh-priests and writers o' the nation, he wad ken o' them "whaur the Messiah soud be born ?"

5. And quo' they, "In Bethlehem-Judah ; for see it is putten doon by the prophet :

6. "And thou, Bethlehem, land o' Judah, name the least amang Judah's princes ! for oot o' thee sal come a Ruler, wha sal tend my folk o' Iara'l !"

7. Than, Herod, convenin the Wyss Men privately, faund oot mair strickly o' the comin o' the starn ;

8. And bad them gang to Bethlehem ; and quo' he, "Gang, and seek ye oot the wee bairn ; and whan ye ken, fesh me word again, that I as weel may come and worship."

9. Eftir hearin the King, they gaed awa' ; and lo ! the starn whilk they saw i' the East gaed on afore them, till it stood whaur the wee bairn was.

10. And whan they saw the starn, they were blythe wi' unco blythe-ness.

11. And comin intil the hoose, they saw the wee bairn, and his mither Mary ; and loutin doon, worshipp't him. And openin' oot their

gear, they offer't till him gifts—goud, and frankincense, and myrrh.

12. And bein warned in a dream no to go back till Herod, they airtit their way to their ain kintra anither gate.

13. Noo whan they had gane, tak tent ! an Angel o' the Lord appear't to Joseph by a dream, and quo' he, "Rise, tak till ye the wee bairn, and his mither, and flee intil Egypt, and hide ye thar till I tell ye ; for Herod seeks the wee bairn to destroy him."

14. And he, risin, took the wee bairn and his mither by nicht, and cam intil Egypt.

15. And bade there till Herod's death : that it soud be fulfilled what was said by the Lord throws the prophet, "Frac Egypt has I ca'd my Son."

16. Than Herod, seein he was made sport o' by the Wyss Men, was unco furious, and sent oot to slay a' the lad-bairns in Bethlehem, and a' the kintra-side aboot, frae twa-year auld doon : conform tae the time he had been tellt by the Wyss Men.

17. Than cam to pass the sayin o' Jeremiah the prophet :

18. "A voice was heard in Ramah, greetin and maenin, and murnin sair ; Ra'hel greetin for her weans, and wadna be comfortit, for that they are-na !"

19. But Herod deein, look ! an Angel o' the Lord by dream appears to Joseph in Egypt.

20. And quo' he, "Rise ! tak the wee bairn and his mither, and journey intil Iara'l's land ; for they that socht the wee bairn's life are deid."

21. And he raise, and took till him the wee bairn and his mither, and cam intil the land o' Iara'l.

22. But whan it was tellt him that Archelaus rang in Judea in the stead o' Herod his faither, he was fleyt to gang thar : but, being instruckit in a dream, he gaed intil the pairts o' Galilee :

¹ V. 1. The comin o' the Wyss Men wad be for some guude end. It wad pit gear in Joseph's haun to gang till Egypt wi' ; but muckle mair, it wad open the way i' the East for the Blythe-Message, affraun carryt by the Apostles.

23. And cam and dwalt in a citie ca'd Nazareth ; that it soud come to pass that was said by the prophet, " He will be ca'd a Nazarene."

CHAPTIR THRIK.

John baptizin. He speaks wi' unco plainness to the folk. Baptizes the Son of Man.

NOO, i' thae days, comes John the Baptist, preachin' i' the muirlands o' Judea.

2. And quo' he, " Repent ye a' ! for the kingdom o' Heaven is at haun ! "

3. For it is he wha was tell't o' by Eriah the prophet, sayin', " The sough o' aye crying oot i' the waste, ' Mak ye ready a gate for the Lord ! Strauchten oot his fitpath ! ' "

4. And John his sel bad his cleedin o' camel's hair, and a belt o' a skin ; and his meat was locusts and rock hinny.

5. And thar war gangin oot till him Jerusalem and a' Judah, and the kintra-side aboot Jordan ;

6. And war baptizeit by him in Jordan ; confessin a' their sin.

7. But whan he saw a hantle o' the Pharisees and Sadducees come till his baptizin, quo' he to them, " Eh, ye venomous race ! Wha has gien ye warnin' to flee frae comin wrath ? "

8. " Feah than forth the frutes conform till repentance ! "

9. " And say-ye-na to yersels, ' We hae Abra'm till oor faither ! ' for say I t'ye, God could raise up oot o' thir stanes, beirns to Abra'm ! "

10. " And noo is the aixie brocht to the rute o' the trees ; and ilka tree bringin na forth gude frute is cuttit doon, and cuisten till the huruin.

11. " I, indeed, div in watir baptize ye intil repentance ; but he wha follows me is sterker nor mysel ; whase shoon I'se no fit to carry ; he sel baptize ye wi' Holie Spirit, and fleughts o' fire.

12. " Whase fanner is in his neive,

and he'se¹ scour-oot his threshin-flair, and gaither his wheat intil his girnal ; but the cauff wull be burn in nevir-endin lowe ! "

13. Than cam Jesus fras Galilee tae John, to be baptizeit o' him.

14. Noo, John wad hae forbidden him ; and quo' he, " I hae need o' thy baptizein, and come ye to me ! "

15. But Jesus answer't him, and said, " Sae be it e-noo ; for sae it behoves us to fulfil a' richt-gangin ! " Than he contentit him.

16. And Jesus, whan he was baptizeit, gae up straucht fras the watir, and lo ! the heevens war unsteekit till him, and he saw the Spirit o' God comin doon like a doo, and lichtin upon him.

17. And tak tent ! a voice oot o' the lift, sayin', " This is my Son, my Beloved, in wham I delight ! "

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Saxton has a talkie wi' Christ. Jesus takes up wi' Capernaum ; and bids a when disciples.

THAN was Jesus airtit by the Spirit intil the wilderness, thar to be testit o' the Enemy.

2. And whan he had fastit for forty days and nichts, he was spent wi' hunger.

3. And whan the Tempter cam till him, quo' he, " Gin thou be God's Son, speak to thir stanes, that they be bannocks ! "

4. But he, answerin till him, said, " No allenarlie on braid leeves man, but by ilk word o' God's mooth ! "

5. Than the deevil takes him wi' him intil the holie citie, and pits him on the tapmaist towerickie o' the Temple.

6. And quo' he till him, " Gin ye be God's Son, cast yersel ower ; for it is patten-doone, 'Till his Angels

¹ V. 12. The Lord is unco lang-sufferan ; but wha lichtlies him will fin' a time comin whan the Maister reddis up his flair ; and what's cauff maun gang the gate o' the cauff—until the lowe !

sal he gie chairge anent ye ; and on their hannis sal they hand ye up, that ye clour-na yere fit again a stane ! ”

7. Quo’ Jesus till him, “ Ance mair it is putten-doone, ‘ Ye sanna temp the Lord yere God ! ”

8. And again the Enemy takes him up until an unco heigh mountain, and airts him till a’ the kingdoms o’ the yirth, and a’ their glorie ;

9. And says till him, “ A’ thae things gie I t’ye gin ye, fa’in doon, gie worship to me ! ”

10. Than quo’ Jesus till him, “ Awa, Sautan ! for it is putten-doone, ‘ The Lord yere God sal ye worship ; and him alone sal ye ser’ ! ”

11. Than the deevil quarts him ; and lo ! the Angels cam to ser’ him.

12. Noo whan it was tell’t him that John was taen hand o’, he gaed awa’ until Galilee :

13. And forsakin Nazareth, he cam and made his dwallin i’ Capernaum, on the side o’ the Loch, on the border o’ Zabulon and Naphtali ;

14. That it might come to pass what said Esaiyah the Prophet,

15. “ Land o’ Zabulon ! and land o’ Naphtali ! Galilee o’ the nations !

16. “ The folk that were sittin i’ the mirk, saw an unco licht ; and till a’ thae sittin i’ the land and the mirkness o’ the deid, the licht raise up ! ”

17. Frae that time forth begude Jesus to preach ; and quo’ he, “ Repent ye ! for Heeven’s kingdom draws nar-baun ! ”

18. And walkin by the Loch o’ Galilee, he saw twa brithers, Simon, (ca’d Peter), and Andro his brither, castin about a net i’ the Loch, for they war fisher-folk.

19. And quo’ he to them, “ Follow ye me ! and I se mak ye fishers o’ men ! ”

20. And they, without ado, left the nets, and gaed aftir him.

21. And gangiu forrit tharawa, he saw ither twa brithers, James, son o’ Zebedee, and his brither John, in a smack wi’ Zebedee their faither,

workin on their nets : and he bad them “ Come ! ”

22. And they, forsakin the boat, and their faither, gaed aftir him.

23. And Jesus gaed ower a’ Galilee, instructin i’ their kirks, and giean forth the Blythe-Message o’ the Kingdom, and healin a’ diseases, and a’ infirmities amang the folk.

24. And the sough o’ him gaed oot until a’ Syria : and they feash’t till him a’ wha war ill wi’ a’ diseases and pains, and thae possess’t wi’ demones, and dementit, and that had a stroke : and be healed them.

25. And unco thrangs follow’t him —frae Galilee, and the Ten Cities, and Jerusalem, and Judea, and ayont the Jordan.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Who’s happy ? A weel said saysis strauchtit oot. Eile ye perfection !

1. ND, seuin the thrang o’ folk, he gaed up until a mountain ; and whan he was unten-doone, his disciples gather’t about.

2. And he open’t his mooth, and instructit them ; and quo’ he :

3. “ Happy the spirita that are low and cannie : for the kingdom o’ Heeven is waitin for them ! ”

4. Happy they wha are makin their maen ; for they sal fin’ comfort and peace.

5. “ Happy the lowly and meek o’ the yirth : for the yirth sal be their ain baddin.

6. “ Happy they whase hunger and drouth are a’ for holines : for they sal be satisfy’t ! ”

7. “ Happy the pitif’ : for they sal win pitie theirsels ! ”

8. “ Happy the pure-heartit : for their een sal dwal upon God ! ”

9. “ Happy the makkers-up o’ strife : for they sal be coontit for bairns o’ God ! ”

V. 5. The “ yirth ” here issa the great world ; but the grund, the soil. The meek, thae maist like to be retit out by stoutreis and guile, sal keep their ain haddins and mailios, and lea’ them till their bairns !

10. "Happy the ill-treatit anes for the sake o' gude: for they're haes the kingdom o' God!"

11. "Happy sal ye be when folk sal misse' ye, and ill-treat ye, and say a' things again ye wrangouslie for my sake!"

12. "Joy ye, and be blythe! for yere meed is great in Heeven! for e'en sae did they to the prophets afore ye!"

13. "The snt o' the yirth are ye: but gin the snt haes tint its tang, hoo's it to be sautit? Is it no clean useless? to be christen oot, and trauchilt under folk's feet."

14. "Ye are the wrold's licht. A toon biggit on a hill-cap is aye seen."

15. "Nor wad men licht a crusie, and pit it neath a cog, but set it up; and it gies licht to a' the boose."

16. "Sae lat yere licht gang abreid amang men; that seein yere gude warks they may gie God glorie."

17. "Think-na I am come to do awa' wi' the Law, or the Prophets: I see no come to do awa', but to bring to pass!"

18. "For truly say I t'ye, Till Heeven and Yirth dwine awa', ae jot or ae tittle fails-na o' a' the Law, till a' comes to pass!"

19. "Than, wha breaks ane o' thae wee'st communa, and gars ither's sae do, he sal be ca'd sma' i' the kingdom o' Heeven: but wha sal keep them, and spread them abreid, he sal be ca'd great i' the kingdom o' Heeven."

20. "For I say till ye, Gin yere gudeness gang-na yont the Scribes and Pharisées, ne'er sal ye win intil the kingdom o' Heeven!"

21. "Ye ken hoo it was spoken till the folk o' auld: 'Ye manuna kill; and whasae killis is in danger o' the Coort.'

22. "But say I t'ye, Whasae is angry wi' his brither-man, sal be in danger o' the Coort: and wha sal say to his brither-man, 'Gonyel!' sal be in danger o' the Cooncil: but wha

sal say 'Fule!' sal be in danger o' the fire o' hell!"

23. "Sae, gin ye flesh yere offerin to the altar-place, and thair bethink ye o' a sairness in a brither's mind anent ye,

24. "Pit doon yere gift fornent the offerin-stane, and haud awa; first, be at ane wi' yere brither-man, and syne come and offer yere gift!"

25. "Mak up wi' yere enemy while ye are yet in the highway wi' him; sae as he gies-ye-na ower to the judge, and the judge to the officer, and ye be cuisten intil prison."

26. "Truly say I t'ye, Ye come-na oot, till ye ha paid the last bode!"

27. "Ye haes heard it was said lang syne, 'Ye sanna commit adultery!'

28. "But say I t'ye, Whasae sets his een on a wumman wi' desire, has e'en e-noo committit the sin wi' her in his heart!"

29. "And gin yere richt ee ensnare ye, oot w'it, and cast it fras ye! it is for yere gude that ae member soud be destroyt, and no that yere hale body soud fa' intil hell!"

30. "And gin yere richt haun ensnare ye, cut it aff, and cast it awa! better for ye that ae member soud fail, and no that yere hale body soud fa' intil hell!"

31. "The sayin has been, 'Whasae pits awa his wife, lat him gie her a written divorcement!'

32. "But say I, Whasae pits awa his wife, let abee for the cause o' adultery, gars her commit adultery; and whasae weds her that is putten awa commits adultery."

33. "Ance mair, ye ken it has been said by them o' by-past time, 'Ye sanna manawaer yersel, but ye'se render to the Lord yere aiths!'

34. "But say I, Sweer-na awa! no by Heeven, for it is God's thron:

35. "Nor yet by the Yirth, for it is his fit-brod: nor Jersusalem, for it is the citie o' the Great King."

36. "Nor sal ye swear by yere ain

heid for ye canna mak as hair white
nor black.

37. "But lat yere answer be,
'Aye, aye,' and 'Na, na!' for ony-
thing mair comes o' nae gude.

38. "Ye ken it has been said, 'An-
ees for an ee, and a tooth for a tooth!'

39. "But say I, Resist ye na ill;
but gin aye clour ye on the ae cheek,
turn ye till him the ither as weel.

40. "And gin ony man hae a law-
plea wi' ye, and tak awa yere coat,
e'en lat him hae the cloak as weel.

41. "And gin ye be impress'd for
a mile wi' aye, gang aye mair wi'
him.

42. "Gie till him seekin frae ye;
and frae him wha wad receive o' ye
turn-ye-no awa.

43. "Ye ken it has been said, 'Ye
mal lo'e yere neebor, and hate yere
fee.'

44. "But say I, Lo'e yere fues;
bless the anea that ban and curse ye;
seek the gude o' thee that hate ye;
and pray for sic as shamefully ill-
treat ye, and seek for yere wrang:

45. "That ye a' may be bairns o'
yere Faither in Heeven; for he gars
his sun to glint alike on the ill and
on the gude; and sends oot his rain
baith on the just and the unjust.

46. "For gin ye but lo'e whaur
thar is love till yersel, whaur is yere
meed? divna e'en the reivin tax-men
de the same?

47. "And gin ye but speir aftir
yere ain kith, how div ye mair nor
ither folk? divna e'en the tax-men
sae?

48. "But ye maun be perfete, e'en
as yere Faither Aboon is perfete!"

CHAPTIR SAX.

*He who hears prayer can neet teach it!
Ane soule haes two masters, nor be air
trouched aboot things o' the yirth.*

66. TAK tent no to do yere gude
warks i' the sicht o' men, that
ye may be seen by them; else hae
ye tint reward frae yere Faither wha
is in Heeven.

2. "Whan, than, ye wad do a
gude wark, dinna hae a bugle-horn
soondit afore ye, as the pretenders
div in kirke and merkit, that they
may be roosed o' men. Truly say I
t'ye, they hae gotten a' their reward!

3. "But whan ye wad do a gude
wark, lat yere left han no jalouse
what yere richt han is thrang wi'!

4. "That yere gude warks may be
dune hidins; and yere Faither wha
sees i' the hidlin place, sal his ain sel
reward ye.

5. "And whane'er ye pray be-na
as the pretenders; for weel they like
to pray i' the kirks, and at the
corners o' the braid causeya, sae as
folk soud see them. Aye, aye! say
I; they hae gotten their reward!

6. "But ye, whan ye wad pray,
gang intil yere bower; and, steekin
yere door, pray till yere Faither wha
is i' the hidlin place; and yere Faither,
wha sees i' the hidlin place, sal his
ain sel reward ye!

7. "And in yere prayin, rhyme-na
things ower and ower, incontinent,
like the heathen-folk: for they trow
gin that they speak eneuch, they sal
be heard.

8. "Come-na than to be like tae
them; for yers Faither kena weel a'
yere needs, e'en afore ye ask him.

9. "And sae pray ye: 'Faither o'
us a', biding Aboon! Thy name be
holie!

10. "'Lat thy reign begin! Lat
thy wull be dune, on the Yirth as in
Heeven!'

11. "'Gie us ilka day oor needfu'
fendin.'

12. "'And forgie us a' oor ill deeds,
as we e'en forgae thae wha did us ill!'

13. "'And lat us no be sifkit; but
save us frae the ¹ Ill-Ane! For the

¹ V. 12. "Frac the Ill-Ane" rather read,
than frae "ill" in general. Sae oor best
authorities. And "the croon, and the
micht, and the glorie," isna fund in
mony ancient copies; but seems nathe-
less to hae been generally used i' the
kirks.

croon is thine ain, and the nicht and the glorie, for svir and svir, Amen !'

14. "For gin ye be forgiean men their fauts, yere Faither in Heeven wull e'en forgie you.

15. "But gif ye are no forgiean men their fauts, nae mair wull yere Faither forgie our fauta.

16. "And again, whan ye are fastin, ye arena to be as the pretenders, wi' wae i' yere faces ; for they mar their looks, that they may kythe afore men as fastin. Aye, aye ! say I, they too hae their reward !

17. "But ye, whan ye fast, snod yere heid, and freshen yere face ;

18. "That ye, be-na seen by men to be fastin, but seen o' yere Faither wha is e'en i' the hidlin place : and yere Faither, wha sees i' the hidlin place, his ain sel sal reward ye.

19. "Lay-na up gear for yereels on the yirth whaur the moth and the rust can mak awa wi't, and whaur thieves hawk throws and steal.

20. "But lay ye up gear in Heeven, whaur nae moth and nae rust can mak awa wi't, and whaur thieves canna bowk throws nor steal.

21. "For whaur your treasur lies, e'en thar yere heart wull be !

22. "The lamp o' the hail body is the ee ; than, gin siblins yere ee is asfauld and leal, yere hail body is fu' o' licht.

23. "But gin yere ee be dooble and ill, yere hail body bides i' the mirk. Gin, than, the vera licht within ye is but gloom, hoo unco great is the gloom !

24. "Nae man can tak service wi' twa maisters ; for either he wull lightlie the ane, and lo'e the ither ; or incontinent he wull hand by the ane, and care-na for the ither. Ye canna be in God's service, and Mamon's as weel !

25. "Wharfor say I t'ye, Be-na sair fash'd wi' cark and care anent yere life—what you are to eat and what ye are to drink ! nor yet for yere body, hoo ye are to be cleedit !

Iana the life mair nor the meat ; and the body mair nor the claedin !

26. "Look ye to the wee birdies i' the lift ; for they naither saw nor shear, nor lead intil the barn ; and yet yere Heevenlie Faither gies them meat. Are-ye-na a hantle better nor they ?

27. "And wha amang ye, be he nevir sae fain, could mak his sel a span heigher ?

28. "And anent cleedin ; why soud ye hae nae muckle cark and care ? Look weel at the lilies o' the lea, hoo they growe ; they toil-na, nor spin ;

29. "And yet say I, that Solomon in a' his glorie was-na buakit hraw like ane o' thae !

30. "Noo than, gin God sae cleed the foggage, (the day on the lea, and the morn brunt i' the oven), hoo muckle mair you, O ye o' the sma' faith !

31. "Sae be-na sair trauchl't in yere mind, sayin, 'What sal we eat ? or 'What sal we drink ?' or 'Hoo sal we be cleedit ?'

32. "For o' a' thae things div the Nations seek eftir ; but yere Heevenlie Faither kens weel that ye need a' thae things.

33. But seek ye first o' a' God's reign and God's richtonsness ; and a' thair things sal be addit till ye.

33. "Hae than nae wearin-care anent the day to come : for the morn wull hae care o' its ain. Eneuch for the day is its ain ill !

CHAPTER SEEVEN.

Judge-ye-na, but pray : and seek the richt yett. And bigg-ye-na on the sonds !

" JUDGE-NA ; that ye he-na judged !

2. "For wi' yere ain judgment sal ye be judged yersel ; and wi' yere ain firlot sal yere corn be measur't till ye ?

3. "And why soud ye craftily spy oot the mote i' yere brither's ee, and think-na o' the caber i' yere ain ee ?

4. "Or wull ye say till yere

brither, 'Tbole ya, till I tak oot the mote frae yere ee !' and behauld ! a caber is in yere ain ee !

5. "Pretender ! oot wi' the caber frae yere ain ee first ! and then may ye hae gude sicht to pit' the mote oot o' yere brither's ee !

6. "Ye manna gie holie things to dowgs ; nor yet cast pearls afore swine ; that they trauchle them-na aneath their feet, and than turn on ye and rive ya.

7. "Ask, and it sal be gien t'ye ; seek, and ye sal hae ; chap, and it sal be unsteekit t'ye.

8. "For ilk ane that asks obteens ; and he fin's wha seeks ; and till him wha chapse it sal be open't.

9. "And whatna man is amang ye, wha—gin his son asks for braid —wad gie him a stane ?

10. "Or, gin he asks a fish, wull he gie him a viper ?

11. "Gin ye, than, bein sinfu', ken hoo to be aye gien gude things till yere ain bairna, hoo muckle mair sal yere Faither wha is Aboon gie gude things to thae that ask o' him !

12. "And sae, a' things whateo'er ye wad that men soud do till yersel, div ye do e'en sae tae them ; for this is the hail Law and the Propheta.

13. "Gang ye in at the strett yett ; for muckle is the yett, and braid is the causey, that leads on to destruction ; and mony a' ane gangs intil't !

14. "For strett is the yett, and crampit is the fit-road that airts awa to life ; and but a wee wheen find it !

15. "Tak ye tent o' fause-propheeta, whilk come t'ye in sheep's-cleedin, but i' the binner-end are devoorin wolves !

16. "Ye may¹ ken them by their frutes. Dae folk gather grapes frae the thorna, or figs amang thressles ?

17. "E'en sae, ilk a gude tree brings forth gude frute ; but a fushionless tree brings forth ill frute.

18. "A gude tree winna bring forth ill frute ; nor can a fushionless tree gie gude frute.

19. "Ilka tree that brings-na forth gude frute is cuttit doon, and cuisten intil the fire.

20. "Sae by their frutes ye sal aye ken them.

21. "It isna ilk aane that cries oot 'Lord, Lord !' that ganga intil the Kingdom o' Heeven ; but he that does the wull o' my Faither wha is in Heeven.

22. "Mony a' ane wull say to me i' that day, 'Lord, Lord ! prophesy't we-na i' thy name !' And cuist-we-na oot demons i' thy name ?' And did-we-na mony ferlies i' thy name ?'

23. "And than wull I confess till them, 'I never kent ye ! Depart frae me, ye that cairry-oot wrang !'

24. "And sae ilk aane hearin and performin thir sayins o' mine, sal be likent till a wyes man, wha biggit his boose on the rock.

25. "And the rain fell, and the spate cam, and the win's blew and stormed again that hoose ; and it fellna, for it stods siccar on the rock !

26. "And ilk aane wha hears and dis-na thir sayins o' mine, sal be like till a sumph wha biggit his boose on the sand :

27. "And the rain fell, and the spate cam, and the win's blew and stormed again that boose ; and it whammi't ower ; and muckle was the fa' o't !"

28. And it cam aboot, whan Jesus had endit thir words, the folk war amazed at his teachin ;

29. For he spak till them as ane that had authoritie, and no like the Writers.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

Intil Capernaum, whaur he drove out sickne. Out on the Looch, whaur the storm was hawden in his weise !

AND whan he cam doon frae the A mountain, great thrangs o' folk followt him.

¹ V. 16. And tak ye tent, that ither men ken you by your frutes, as weel ! As a man acts and thinks, sae is the man !

2. And lo ! a leper cam and worshipp't him, and said, "Lord ! gin ye wad, ye could mak me clean !"

3. And Jesus pat oot his hann, and touched him, sayin, "I wull, be ye clean !" And at aince his leprosie was healed.

4. And Jesus charged him, "See that ye tell nae ; but gang yere ways till the priest, and gie ye the gift commandit by Moses, for a token to them !"

5. And whan Jesus cam intil Capernaum, thar cam till him a Captain, and besocht him,

6. Sayin, "Lord ! my servant-lad is doon wi' a stroke, in my hoose, in unco pain !"

7. Quo' Jesus till him, "I wull come and heal him !"

8. And the Captain answer't, "Lord ! I am-na fit ye soud come beneath my roof ; but only say the word, and my servant-lad sal be weel !"

9. "For e'en I mysel, 'a man beneath autoritie, hae sodgers under me ; and I say till aye 'Gang,' and he gangs ; and till another 'Come,' and he comes ; and till my servant-lad, 'Do see and see,' and he dis it !"

10. Hearin this, Jesus ferlied ; and said to them that follow't, "I haena fund sic faith as this, no in a' Isra' !"

11. "And I say t'ye, Mony sal come frae the East and frae the West, and sit doon wi' Abra'm, and Isaac, and Jacob, i' the Kingdom o' Heeven,

12. "But the sons o' the kingdom sal be cuisten oot intil the mirk ootby : thar sal be greetin and cherkin o' teeth !"

13. And Jesus said to the Captain, "Gang yere ways ! E'en as ye lippened, see sal it be done t'ye." And his servant-lad was made weel i' that same 'oor.

14. And Jesus, enterin Peter's

hoose, saw his guude-mither lyin, doon wi' a fivver.

15. And he touched her haun, and the fivver was gane. And she raise, and waitit on him.

16. But whan the gloamin cam on, they brocht till him a hantle wi' evil spirite, and be cuist oot the spirite wi' a word, and healea a' the sick :

17. That sae nicht the words o' Esaiyah be fulfilled, wha threepit, "He his ain sel took oor sillinesses, and burs oor sicknesses !"

18. Noo Jesus, seein great thrangs aboot him, commandit to gang ower to the ither side.

19. And a certain Writer cam, and quo' he, "Maister ! I wull follow ye, whauras'er ye may gang !"

20. Jesus said till him, "The tods haes holes, and the birdies o' the lift haes nests ; but the Son o' Man haesna whaur his heid may lie !"

21. And anither o' his followers says, "Lord ! lat me first gang till my faither's burial !"

22. But Jesus says till him, "Follow ye me ! and lea the deid to bury their ain deid !"

23. And whaun he gaed intil a boat his disciples follow't him.

24. And see ! a great storm raise on the Loch ; and wave efter wave gaed ower the boat : but he was sleepin.

25. And comin till him, they roused him, sayin, "Maister ! save us : we perish !"

26. And he says to them, "Why soud ye be fleyt ? ye o' sic ama' faith !" Than he raise, and challenged the winds and the sea. And a' was lown !

27. And the men ferlied uncolie, sayin, "Whatna man is this, that e'en the winds and the watirs obey him ?"

28. And whan he cam to the ither side, to the parts o' the Gadarenes, thar met him twa possess't anea, comin oot o' the tombs, unco fierce, unco that name daur gang that gate.

V. 9. The Roman Captain argued weel ! He, an inferior officer, wi' a hunner men, had his biddins done by them ; hoo muckle maist coad this Divine Healer order the paixy to be gane !

29. And see! they cryt oot, "What hae we wi' you, Son o' God! Are ye come to torment us 'or the time?"

30. Noo thar war feedin, a gey bit aff frae them, a great herd o' swine.

31. Sae the evil spirits besoacht him, sayin, "Gin ye cast us oot, send us intil the herd o' swine!"

32. And he said to them, "Gang!" And whan they cam oot, they gied intil the herd o' swine; and lo! a' the herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch, and perished i' the watter.

33. And they that herdit them fled and gaed their gate to the citie, and tellt a'; and what had befaun the possessat anes.

34. And lo! a' the citie cam oot to meet Jesus: and whan they saw him they besoacht him to gaang awa frae their borders.

CHAPTIR NINE.

Two hunes made blithe—Matthew and Jairus. The blin' and the dumb rejoice.

AND he enter't the boat, and gaed ower, and cam till his ain toun.

2. And behauld! they war bringin till him a man doon wi' a stroke, lyin on a couch: and Jesus, seein their aefauldness says tae the man, "Bairn, be o' gude heart; yere sins are forgien ye!"

3. And mark! thar war Writers sayin within theirsels, "This ane speakes profaneness!"

4. And Jesus, kennin their thochta, says, "Why soud ye think ill in yere hearts?"

5. "Whilk is easier to say, 'Yere sins are forgien!' or to say, 'Rise ye, and walk!'

6. "But sae as ye may ken the Son o' Man has authoritie on the yirth to forgie sins, (quo' he till the ane wi' a stroke,) Rise ye, tak up yere bed, and gaang yere ways till yere ain hoose!"

7. And he, risin up, gaed awa till his ain hoose.

8. And a' the folk, seein it war

dauntit wi' fear, and gloriy't God for gien sic pouer to men!

9. And as Jesus gaed on frae that, he saw a man ca'd Matthew, sittin whaur the dues were paid; and he says till him, "Follow ye me!" And he raise, and follow't him.

10. And it cam aboot, as he was at meat i' the hoose, that behauld! mony tax-men and ill-deedie anes cam and sat doon wi' him and his disciples.

11. And whan the Pharisees saw that, quo' they till his disciples, "Hoo is't that yere maister taks meat wi' tax-folk and ill-deedie anes?"

12. Noo Jesus heard; and quo' he to them, "It's no the halo anes that need the leech, but thas that are ill."

13. "But gang ye and learn what that sets forth, 'I wad suner hae mercie nor sacrificees; for I am-na come to ca' the richtous, but sinners."

14. Than the disciples o' John cam till him; and quo' they, "Hoo is't that we fast muckle—and the Pharisees—but yere disciples haena to fast?"

15. And Jesus says to them, "Can the bairns o' the bridal-bower fast whan the bridegroom is wi' them? But the days come, whan the bridegroom is taen awa frae them, and than wull they fast!"

16. "And nae ane pits a clout o' new claih on an auld coat, for in wankin-up it rives awa fras the cleedin, and the bole is made waur."

17. "Nor div men pit new wine intil auld skins; else the skins rive, and the wine skails; and the skins are destroyt: but they pit new wine intil new wine-skins, and baith are keepit."

18. And, meanwhile he was speakin thir things till them, behauld! a certain Ruler cam, and loutit doon afore him, sayin, "My dochter maun s'en noo be deid! But come and pit thy haun ower her, and she sal live!"

19. And Jesus raise and follow't him; and the disciples as weel.

20. And behauld! a wumman wi'

an issue o' blinde twal year, cam ahint him to touch the border o' his mantle.

21. For she said till herse, "Gin I can but touch his mantle, I sal be weel!"

22. But Jesus turned him roon', and whan he saw her, said, "Dochter, tak heart! Yere faith has made ye hale!" And the wumman was made hale frae that 'oor.

23. And Jesus, comin intil the Ruler's hoose, saw the flute-playera, and the folk makin a rowt.

24. He said to them, "Gie place: for the bairn is no deid, but is sleepin!" And they geek't at him, and leuch.

25. But whan a' the folk war putten oot, he gaed ben; and takin her by the haun, the lassie raisee.

26. And the sough o't spread ahreid in a' that kintra-side.

27. And as Jesus gaed forris, twa blin' men follow't him, cryin' oot and sayin, "Son o' Dauvid! has mercie on us!"

28. And whan he was within the hoose, the blin' men cam till him; and Jesus says to them, "Lippen ye that I can do this!" And they say till him, "Aye, Lord!"

29. Than touched he their een, sayin, "E'en as yere faith, sas be it dune till ye!"

30. And their een war unsteakit; and Jesus stricklie chairged them, sayin, "See that nae man ken!"

31. But they gaed oot, and spread ahreid his fame in a' that kintra-side.

32. And as they gaed oot, behald! they brocht him a dumb man, wi' an evil spirit.

33. And whan the evil spirit was cuisten oot, the dumb spak; and a' the folk ferlied, sayin, "Never was sic seen in Isra'il!"

34. But the Pharisees said, "He casts oot the demons by the prince o' the demons!"

35. And Jesus gaed about a' the toons and villages, teachin i' their kirks, and makin kent the Blythe-

message o' the Kingdom, and healin a' kinds o' sickness, and every ill amang a' the folk.

36. But whan he lookit on the thrangs, he was fu' o' compassion, for they war in distress and war scattered, as sheep wantin a shepherd.

37. Than said he till his disciples, "The hairst is maist abundant, but the hairst-folk are few!"

38. "Pray ye to the Maister o' the hairst, that he may send oot laborers intil his hairst!"

CHAPTIR TEN.

The twal Apostles comell't, and sent out.

AND ca'in his twal disciples till him, he gied them the rule ower unclean spirits, sas as to cast them oot, and to heal a' mairner o' sickness and fecklessness.

2. Noo the twal Apostles' names are thir: first Simon, wha is named Peter, and Andro his brither; James o' Zebedee, and John his brither;

3. Philip, and Bartholomie, Tammaz, and Matthew the tax man; James o' Alphen, and Thaddeus;

4. Simon the Zealot; and Judas Iscariot, wha s'en betray't him.

5. Thir twal Jesus sent oot, and chairged them, sayin, "Gang-na the gate o' the Gentiles, and enter-na ony Samaritan citie;

6. "But gang ye raither to the forwanderin sheep o' Isra'il's hoose.

7. "And as ye gang, proclaim and say, 'The Kingdom o' Heeven is at haun!'

8. "The sick heal; the lepers cleanse; the deid raise; ill spirits cast ye oot: freely ye hae gotten; as freely gie!

9. "Get ye nae gowd, nor siller, nor yet copper i' yer pouches;

10. "Nae pock for yer journey, nor a' spare coat, nor shoon, nor staff: for the worker is wordie o' his meat!

11. "And intil whatna citie or toun ye may gae, seek ye oot wha is

wordie ; and bide ye that till ye gang awa.

12. "And whan ye come intil a hoose, salute it.

13. "And gin the hoose be wordie, lat yere peace bide upon it ; and gin it be no wordie, yere peace wull come back till ye again.

14. "And whasae winna tak ye in, nor hear yere words—whan ye gang oot o' that hoose or that toun, flatt aff the vera stour frae yere feet.

15. "Truly say I t'ye, It sal be mair tholeable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day o' judgment nor for that citie !

16. "And look ! I send ye oot as sheep amang wolves : be ye than wyse like serpents, and aefauld as dooas.

17. "But ¹tak tent o' men ! for they wull gie ye up to Cooncils, and clour ye i' their kirkes ;

18. "And ye sal be brocht afore Governors and Kings for my sake, for a testimonie to them and to the nations.

19. "But whan they deliver ye up, be-na fashed aboot hoo or what ye sal say : for in that same 'oor it sal be gien ye what to say.

20. "For it isna ye wba are speakin, but the Spirit o' yers Faither wha speaks in ye.

21. "And brither sal gie up the brither to deid, and the faither the bairn ; and the bairns sal rise up again the parents, and hae them putten to deid.

22. "And ye sal be hatit o' a' folk for the sake o' my name ; but he wha tholes to the end, that same sal be deliver't.

23. "But whan they persecute ye

i' this toun, flee till anither ; for truly say I t'ye, Ye'se no be ower the cities o' Isra'el till whan the Son o' Man comes !

24. "The learner is no aboon the teacher, nor a servant aboon the maister.

25. "Eneuch that the learner sud fare as dis the teacher, and the servant like his maister. Gin they ca' the maister o' the hoose Beelzebul, boo muckle mair than o' his hoose-haudl !

26. "Be-na fleyt at them than ; for thar is naething cover't that canna be uncover't ; and bid, that canna be kent.

27. "What I tell ye i' the mirk, tell ye oot i' the liebt ; and what ye hear whusht i' the lug, proclaim ye on the boose-taps !

28. "And dreid-na them wha slay the body, but canna slay the saul ! but raither dreid ye him wba is able to wreck saul and body in hell !

29. "Arena twa sparrows gaun for a bodie ! And ane frae mang them fa'-na on the grund without yere Faither !

30. "But the vera hairs o' yere heid are a' coontit.

31. "Dinna be dowie, than : ye are better nor mony sparrows !

32. "Whasae sal own me afore men, him sal I own afore my Faither wha is in Heeven.

33. "But whasae disowns me afore men, him sal I disown afore my Faither wha is in Heeven.

34. "Think-na I am come to cast abraid quateness on the yirth : I come-na to cast quateness, but a sword.

35. "For I am come to set in dispute a man again his faither, and a bride again her gode-mither ;

36. "And a man's faes are they o' his ain hoose.

37. "Wha lo'es faither or mither mair nor me, isna wordie o' me ; and wha lo'es son or dochter mair nor me, isna wordie o' me.

¹V. 17. "Tak tent" ; no i' the way o' followin or believin them (as in Acts 8 : 6, whaur the original is the same) ; but to avoid what they say. "Do as we do," says the world, "and let Christ alone !" "Na !" says the Christian, "I'll follow him, o'en gin he leads me to my cross !" (ver. 28.) "A Christian," quo' Luther, "is aye a Crossian !"

38. "And wha takes up his cross, to follow me, isna wordie o' me.

39. "He wha wins his life sal tine it; and wha tines his life for my sake, he sal win it !

40. "He wha welcomes you, welcomes me; and he wha welcomes me, welcomes him wha sent me forth.

41. "He wha takes in a seer, in the name o' a seer, sal receive a seer's reward; and he wha takes in a holie man i' the name o' a holie man, wins a holie man's reward.

42. "And whassae sal gie to drink til aye o' thir wee ayes a cup o' the cauld watir only, i' the name o' a disciple—truly I say t'ye, he sanna in onygate tine his reward !"

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.

John Baptist spair'd; and Jesus answered. Folk that wadna speir, and wadna be speir'd at !

AND it cam aboot, whan Jesus had endit his commauns to his disciples, he gaed on, to teach i' their toons.

2. Noo whan John, i' the prison, had heard o' the warks o' Christ, he sent twa o' his disciples,

3. And speir'd at him, "Are ye He wha comes ? Or div we look for some ither aye ?"

4. Jesus answer'd, and says till them, "Gang yere ways; and schaw John a' that ye see and hear !

5. "The blin' are gettin their aicht, the lameters walk aboot, the lepers are made clean, the deif are hearin, the deid are raised up, the puir and destitute has the Blythe-message proclaim'd till them !

6. "And happy sal he be wha sees nae cause o' mindootin in me !"

7. And as they gaed their ways, Jesus begude to speir at the thrangs, anent John, "What gaed ye oot intil the muirlands to see ? a reed wafflin' i' the win ?

8. "But what gaed ye oot to see ? a man in braw class ! See ! they

wha wear braw class are in king's coorts.

9. "But what gaed ye oot for to see ? A prophet ? Aye ! say I t'ye ; mair nor a prophet !

10. "For this is he o' wham it is written, 'Tent ye ! I send oot my messenger afore thy face, wha sal mak gangable thy fit-path afore thee !'

11. "Truly say I t'ye, Amang a' these that are born o' weemen, hasna risen aye greater nor John Baptist : yet whassae is wee i' the Kingdom o' Heeven is 1 greater nor he !

12. "And frae John Baptist's days the Kingdom o' Heeven is in the way o' bein reived, and the reiverst ak it by main stren'th !

13. "For a' the propheta, and the Law, testifyt doon till John.

14. "And, gin ye but accept it, this is 'Elijah,' wha was to come !

15. "He wha has hearin to hear, see lat him hear !

16. "But to what sal I even this race ! It is like hairs sittin i' the merkit-place, and cryin oot to their marrowes,

17. "And sayin, 'We played till ye, and ye didna dance ; we maen'd till ye, and ye made nae wail !'

18. "For John cam, eatin-na and drinkin-na, and ye say, 'He has an evil spirit !'

19. "The Son o' Man cam, eatin an' drinkin ; and ye say, 'See ! a man glutinous ! a tippler o' wine ! a freend o' tax-man and ill-deedie folk ! But, 'What comes o' Wisdom vindicates her !'

20. Than begude he to challenge thae cities whaur the feek o' his great runner-warks war dune, for that they repentit-na :

21. "Wae comes till ye, Chorazin !

'V. 11. "In knowledge made kant till him, in boundless hope, in a felt aibness till his Faither and his God, the laighest bairn o' the new covenant has a richer toocher than the greatest prophet o' the wold."—*Farrar, Life of Christ*, ch. xx.

Wae comes till ye, Bethsaida ! for gin in Tyre and Sidon had been dune sie wunner-warks as were dunes in you, they wad haes repentit lang syne in tow-claith and assis !

22. "But say I t'ye, it sal be mair tholeable for Tyre and Sidon at the day o' Judgment nor for you !

23. "And ye, Capernaum ! Till Heeven are ye to be raised ? Till hell sal ye be dung doon ! for gin the warks dune in you had been dune in Sodom, it wad haes been to the fore to this day !

24. "But say I t'ye, It sal be mair tholeable for a Land o' Sodom in the day o' Judgment nor for you !"

25. At that time Jesus spak, and said : "I gie thee thanks, O Faither, Lord o' Heeven and Yirth ! that thou did bide thir things frae the wyss and the discernin, and did schaw them till weans !

26. "Aye, Faither ! for sas it was gude in thy siecht !

27. "A' things are gien to me o' my Faither. And nane weal-kens the Son but the Faither allenarlie, and nane weel-kens the Faither but only the Son, and he the Son wull schaw him till.

28. "Come ye to me, a' ye wha toil and moil wi' heavy burdens, and I wull gie you rest !

29. "Tak my yoke upon ye, and learn ye o' me : for I am meek and lowن-heartit, and ye sal fin' rest tae yer auala.

30. "For my yoke is cannie ; and my burden light."

CHAPTIR TWAL.

Grase teachin—in field, kirk, and hoose ; but ill-mor'd, strongart scholars.

AT sic a time Jesus gaed on the Sabbath-day throwe the corn ; and his disciples war yap, and begude to tak hand o' the heids o' the corn, and to eat.

2. But whan the Pharisees saw't, quo' they till him, "See ! yer dis-

ciples are doin what's no alloo'd on the Sabbath !"

3. But he answer't them, "Has ye no read what Dauid did, when he was hunger't, and the axes that were wi' him ?

4. "Hoo he gaed intil God's Hoose, and did eat the Breid o' the Presance, whilk was unlawfu' for him to eat—and unlawfu' for them wi' him to eat—but for the priests allenarlie ?

5. "Or has ye read-na i' the Law, hoo on the Sabbath-day the priests i' the Temple brak the Sabbath, and sin-na ?

6. "But I say t'ye, Thar is Anhera, greater e'en than the Temple !

7. "But gin ye had kent the meanin' o' this, 'I chooses mercie rather than sacrificee, ye wadna haes wytit the guiltless !'

8. "For the Son o' Man is Lord o' the Sabbath !"

9. And he left thar-awa, and gaed intil the kirk.

10. And see ! a man was thar, wi' a wizzen't hann. And they speir't at him, "Is it richt to heal folk on the Sabbath-day ?" that they nicht wytte him.

11. And said he to them : "Whatna man is amang ye, wha auchtis ae sheep, an' gin' it fa' intil a sheugh, wull he no lay haud o't, and tak' it oot ?

12. "Hoo muckle mair, than, is a man no worth nor a sheep ? And sas, it is weal to do gude on the Sabbath-day."

13. Than said he to the man, "Rax oot yere haun !" And he rax't it oot ; and it was restor't, hale and weel, like the ither.

14. Than the Pharisees gaed oot, and counsellit thegither, how they nicht mak awa' wi' him.

15. But Jesus, kennis it, withdrew fras that place ; and great thrangs follow't him ; and he heal'd them a ;

16. Chairgin them that they soudna mak him kent ;

17. That it might come to pass what Esaiyah spak, whan he said :

18. "Tent ye, my Servant, my Chosen, my Beloved ! My saul is weel-pleased in him. I wull lay my Spirit on him, and he sal schaw true judgment to the nations.

19. "He sal mak nae tulzie, nor cryin ; and nae man sal hear his voice i' the streets.

20. "A dentit reed he brake-na, and the ill-luntit tow he staps-na, till true judgment he sends on to victory.

21. And on his name sal the nations lippen."

22. Than was brocht till him ane possess'd wi' a demon, blin' and dumb : and he heald him, see that the dumb man spak and lookit.

23. And a' the folk war astonish't : and quo' they, "Is this no Dauvid's Son ?"

24. But whan the Pharisees heard that, quo' they, "This ane casta-na oot demons but throwe Beelzebul, the prince o' the demons !"

25. But, kencin their thochts, he said to them, "Ilka Kingdom workin again itsel is brocht to waste ; and ilka citie or hoose workin again itsel canna staun !

26. "And gin Sautan cast oot Sautan, he is workin again himsel ; hoo than wull he mak his kingdom staun ?

27. "And gin I throwe Beelzebul cast oot demona, wha casts them oot by yere ain sons ? Sac they sal o'en be yere judges.

28. "But gin I by the Spirit o' God haes cuisten them oot, that the pouer o' God has come on ye !

29. "Or, hoo sal ane come intil a strang man's hauld, and poind his gear, gin he divna first shackle doon the strang man, and than herrie his hoose ?

30. "He wha is isna wi' me is again me ; and wha gaithers-na wi' me, skails abreid.

31. "Sac, say I t'ye, Ilka ain and

blasphemie sal be forgi'en to men ; but the blasphemie o' the Spirit canna be forgi'en.

32. "And wha sal speak a word again the Son o' Man, it sal be forgi'en till him ; but wha sal speak again the Holie Spirit, it canna be forgi'en him, naither i' this world, nor in that to come !

33. "Mak aither gude the tree and gude the frute ; or els mak ill the tree and ill the frute ; for the tree is kent by its frute.

34. "Ye spawn o' vipers ! hoo are ye, bein ill, to speak gude things ! for o' the overcome o' the heart the mou' wull speak.

35. "A gude man, oot o' the gude treasur, fesches forth gude things, and an ill man, oot o' the ill plenishin, fesches forth ill things.

36. "And I say t'ye, Ilka lowes word that men sal say, they sal gie account o't at the Day o' Judgment !

37. "For by yere words sal ye be acceptit, and by yere words sal ye be bauden guilty."

38. Than some o' the Writers and Pharisees answer't, sayin, "Maister, we wad see a token frae thee !"

39. But he answer't to them, "An ill-doin and adulterous race seek for a token ; and nae token sal be gien till't, but the token o' Jonah the prophet.

40. "For as Jonah was thrie days and thrie nichts i' the wame o' the sea-monster, see sal the Son o' Man be i' the heart o' the yirth thrie days and thrie nichts.

41. "The folk o' Ninevah sal rise in judgment wi' this race, and condemn it ; for they turned at Jonah's preachin ; and mark ! Ane greater nor Jonah is here !

42. "The Queen o' the Sooth-land sal rise up i' the Judgment wi' this race, and condemn it ; for she airtit hersel frae the ends o' the yirth to bear Solomon's wisdom ; and tent ye ! Ane greater than Solomon is here !

43. "But the foul spirit, whan it

has gane frae the man, gange oot
throws drouthie pairts, seekin rest,
and fin'in name :

44. "Than," quo' he, 'I'se e'en
awa back till my ain hoose, whaur I
cam frae!' And when he comes, he
finds it toom, soopit oot, and buskit
braw.

45. "Than gange awa he, and
takin wi' him seeven mair, waur nor
himself, enters in and bides thar; and
that man's last state is¹ waur nor the
first. Sae sat it be wi' this ill-doin
race!"

46. And whan he was e'en-noo
speakin to the folk, see! his mither
and his brithers stude oot-by, seekin
to speak wi' him.

47. And ane says till him, "See!
thy mither and brithers, staunin' oot-
by, seekin to speak wi' thee!"

48. But quo' he till him wha tell't
him, "Wba is a mither to me? and
wha are brithers o' mine?"

49. And raxin oot his hauns to-
ward his disciples, he says: "See ye
my mither and brithers!"

50. "For wha sal do the wull o'
my Faither Aboon, he is my brither,
and sister, and mither!"

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

*Parables and Wyes-Sayis proposed; and
a whan o' them made plain. Let the
man tak tent!*

ON that vera day gaed Jesus oot o'
the hoose; and sat doon by the
side o' the Loch.

2. And great gaitherins o' folk
cam thegither till him, see that he
gaed intil a boat, and sat doon; and
the hail o' the folk stude on the shore.

3. And he spak mony things to
them in parables; and quo' he: "Tak
tent: The sawer gaed oot to saw.

4. "And in his sawin, a neiffu' was

mis-cuisten on the fit-path, and eaten
up wi' the birdies.

5. "Some fell on the staney bits,
whaur the yird was jimp; and it
brairdit bonnie, for the mool was thin.

6. "And whan the sun raise heigh,
it biral't up; and, for that it had nae
route, it dwined awa.

7. "And some fell whaur thorns
had been; and up cam the thorna,
and smoored it.

8. "And some fell on the gude
grun', and brocht forth frute—this a
hunner, that saxty, and the ither
thretty.

9. "Wba has lugs for hearin, lat
him hear!"

10. And, drawin nar, his disciples
say, "Why soud ye speak to them
in parables?"

11. And he answer't them, "It ia,
that till you it has been gien to ken
o' the things o' the Heevenlie King-
dom: but to them it isna sae gien.

12. "For wha has, to him sal be
gien, and he sal hae rowth o't; but
wha hasna, frae him sal be taen awa
e'en what he has!"

13. "Sae, speak I to them by
parables: for they, seein, are blin';
and they, hearin, are deaf; naither
div they ken."

14. "And wi' them is brocht to
pass the prophecy o' Esaiyah, whilk
says: 'Wi' hearin ye sal hear, and in
naegate understand; and seein ye sal
see and in naegate perceive.'

15. "'For this people's heart is
gross, and their lugs are dull o' hearin',
and their een has they streakit; least
they soud see wi' their een, and hear
wi' their lugs, and understand wi'
their heart, and turn again and I
soud heal them!'

16. "But fair fa' yere een, that
they see! and yere lugs, that they
hear!"

17. "For truly say I t'ye, that a
bantle o' prophets and holie man war
fain to see the things ye see, and saw
them-na; and to hear the things ye
hear, and heard them-na!"

¹ V. 45. Ca' oot the ill spirit! but dinna
stop thar: welcome the Holie Spirit
within! A toom hoose is the gaengel's
invitation: and a reformation that ends
short o' bein born again, lea's aue waur
nor before!

18. "Hear ye than the parable o' The Sower:

19. "Whan ony ane bears the word o' the Kingdom, and understands it na, than comes the Ill Ane, and cleeks awa that sown in his heart: this is he sown by the fit-path.

20. "And he on the staney bit sown, is he wha hears the word, and blythely receives it;

21. "Yet has he nae rute in himself, and bides but for a wee; and on dool or fash comin, he stumbles belyve.

22. "And he sown amang the thorns, this is he wha hears the word, and than the cark o' the warl', and the glamor o' riches, smoor the word, and it bears nae frute.

23. "But he sown on the gude grun', this is he wha baith hears and understands the word; wha e'en brings forth frute; and gies, this a hunner, that sixty, and the ither thretty."

24. Anither parable set be afore them; and quo' he: "The Kingdom o' Heeven is like to a man, wha sowed gude seed in his croft;

25. "But whan folk war sleepin, cam his fae, and sawed tares amang the wheat, and slippit awa.

26. "But whan the wheat brairdit and brocht forth frute, than schawed the tares as weel.

27. "Sae cam the servants o' the gudeman, and quo' they to him, 'Sir, did-ye-na saw gude seed i' yere croft? Frae whatna way than has it tares i'.'

28. "And he said to them, 'Some enemy has dune this!' And quo' the servants to him, 'Wull ye has us gang and gaither them up?'

29. "But quo' he, 'Na; least as ye gaither up the tares, ye pu' up the wheat wi' them!'

30. "'Lat baith grow thegither till the hairst; and at hairst-time I wull say to the shearers, "Gaither ye thegither the tares first, and burn them; but gaither ye the wheat intil my barn.'

31. Anither parable set be afore them, sayin', "The Kingdom o' Heeven is like a mustard-seed, whilk a man took, and plantit in his yaird.

32. "Whilk in sooth is am'est o' a' seeds, but whan it is grown is the biggest o' a' yerbs, and comes to be a tree, sae that the birdies o' the litt come and howff in its branches."

33. Anither parable set be afore them: "The Kingdom o' Heeven is like till risin, whilk a wife took and pat in a firlet o' meal, till the hail was risen."

34. A' thae things spak Jesus to the folk in 1 parables; and wantin a parable spak-he-na to them,

35. That it soud come to pass what was said by the prophet, "I will open my mou' in parables; I will gie oot things keepit hidin frae the warld's fundation."

36. Than he pairtit frae the thrangs, and gied intil the hoose: and his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "Expone to us the parable o' the Tares o' the Croft!"

37. He answer't, and quo' he to them, "He wha sowed the gude seed is the Son o' Man.

38. "The croft is the warld; the gude seed are the bairns o' the Kingdom; but the tares are the bairns o' the Ill Ane.

39. "The enemie that sowed them is Sautan; the hairst is the endin o' the warld, and the shearers are the Angels.

40. "And e'en as the tares are

1 V. 34. How mony manu has been nor Lord's parables! Matthew, maist like, gies us but a wheen o' the number. And think-ye-na, Christ often gied them ower again! Weel-kent Evangelists in oor ain day fin' the advantage o't. And wadna this account for the differ i' the cleedin o' them? Matthew gican a parable the way he first heard it, or the way he likit it best; and Luke the same parable in anither form that he likit best, or they likit it best wha tell't him. See also note, Luke xiv. 24.

gaither't and burnt i' the fire, sae sal it be at the end o' the warld.

41. "The Son o' Man sal send oot his Angels, and they sal gaither oot o' his kingdom a' things that ensnare, and a' that do ill ;

42. "And sal cast them intil the lowin furnace ; there sal be maenin and cherkin o' teeth !

43. "Than sal the richtons glint forth like the sun, i' their Faither's Kingdom. Wha has hearin to bear, lat him bear !

44. "Ance again : The Kingdom o' Heeven is like to gear, hidling in a field ; the same, when a man has fund, he hides again, and for the joy o't gangs and nifers' a' that he has, and buys that field.

45. "Again, the Kingdom o' Heeven is like to a tradin-man, seekin precious pearls ;

46. "Wha, whan he has fund an pearl o' a' price, gaed and sell't a' he had, and colt it.

47. "Again, the Kingdom o' Heeven is like a net cuisten intil the sea, and it gaither't o' a' kinds :

48. "Whilk, when it was fu', they har'l tae the shore, and they set them doon and waled oot the gude intil creels, but cuist the bad awa.

49. "Sae sal it be at the end o' the warld : the Angels sal come forrit and wale oot the wicked frae amang the gude ;

50. "And sal cast them into the lowin furnace : there sal be maenin and cherkin o' teeth !"

51. And quo' Jesus to them : "Hae ye understande a' thir things ?" Quo' they till him : "Aye, Lord !"

52. Than said he to them, "Ilka scribe wi' the leair o' the Kingdom o' Heeven, is like till ane that is heid o' a hoose, wha can fesh oot o' his presses things baith new and auld."

53. And it cam aboot, that whan Jesus bad made an end o' his parables, he gaed frae that place.

54. And whan he was come intil his ain kintra-side, he was teachin them

i' their ain kirk, sae that they war astonish't, and quo' they : "Whaur gat this man this wisdom, and thir farlies ?

55. "Isna this the wricht's son ? And isna his mother ca'd 'Mary' ? And his brithers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judah ?

56. "And his sisters, arena they a' wi' us ? Frae whanrawa, than, has this man thir things ?"

57. And they took a scunner at him. But Jesus said to them : "A Prophet is nevir wantin honour, binna it be in his ain kintra-side, and amang his ain folk."

58. And he wrocht na mony wunner-warks thar, because o' their unbelievin.

CHAPTIR FOWTEEN.

Herod slays John. Breid i' the wilderness, Christ's fit-road on the sea.

BOOT that time Herod, the King A. Depute, heard a' that was said aboot Jesus.

2. And quo' he to them o' his hoosehould, "This manna be John the Baptist ; he is risen frae the deid ; and sae div thir pouers schaw theirsels in him."

3. For Herod had grippit John, and putten him in bonds ; and cuist him intil prison for the sake o' Herodias, wife o' his brither Philip.

4. For John said till him : "It is no allo'd for ye to haes her !"

5. And whan he wad haes putten him to deid, he was fleyt o' the people, for they reckon'd him a Prophet.

6. But when Herod's birthday cam, the daughter o' Herodias danced in the mids o' them a', and glamor'd Herod.

7. Whauron, he aware to gie her onything she nicht speir.

8. And she, bein set on by her mither, said : "Gie me here John Baptist's heid, on an aschet !"

9. And the king was wae ; but for the sake o' his aitha, and for thes

that sat at meat wi' him, he commandit it to be gien to her.

10. And he sent, and beheidit John i' the prison.

11. And his heid was brocht on an aschet, and gien to the lass; and she brocht it till her mither.

12. And his disciples cam, and took up the body, and bury't it; and gaed and tell't Jesus.

13. And whan Jesus heard it, he gaed awa by boat till a desert-place oot-by; and whan the croods heard o't, they follow't on fit frae the toons.

14. And he cam oot, and saw a great thrang; and he had pitie on them and healed their sick anea.

15. And whan the e'enin cam on, his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "This is but a desert hit, and the time is gaun by; send the folk awa, that they may gang to the neebor toons, and buy theirsels meat!"

16. But Jesus said to them, "They need-na gang awa; gie ye them to eat!"

17. Quo' they to him, "We has here but fyve bannocks and twa fish."

18. He said, "Feeh them here to me!"

19. And he gar't the crood sit doon on the geres; and took the fyve bannocks and the twa spaldins, and lookin up till Heaven he gied thanks, and brak, and gied the bannocks to the disciples, and the disciples to the folk.

20. And they a' did eat, and war satisfy't; and they liftit o' the broken bits that war left, ¹ twal basket fu'.

21. And they wha had eaten war aboot fyve thoosand men, forby weemen and weana.

22. And at ance he gar't his disciples gang intil the boat, and gang awa first to the ither side, till he wad send the crood awa.

23. And whan he had sent the crood awa, he gaed up intil a mountain by hissel to pray; and whan e'enin fell he was ther alone.

24. But the boat was noo i' the mids o' the Loch, ver'd wi' the waves: for the wund was concur.

25. And i' the hinmaist watch o' the nicht Jesus cam to them, gangin on the sea.

26. And whan the disciples saw him walkin on the sea, they war sair glifft, saying, "It is a ghast!" And they cry't oot for fear.

27. And at ance Jesus spak to them, "Be o' gude heart! It is I; fear-na!"

28. And Peter answer't and quo' he, "Lord, gin it be thou, bid me come till thee on the watir!"

29. And he said, "Come!" And whan Peter was gotten doon oot e' the boat, he walkit on the watir to gang tae Jesus.

30. But whan he saw the wund gousy, he fear't; and as he begude to sink he cry't oot, "Lord, save me!"

31. And at ance Jesus raxed oot his haun, and grippit him, saying to him, "O thou o' sic sma' faith, why did thou fear?"

32. And whan they war gane up intil the boat, the wund was lown.

33. And they i' the boat worshippit him, saying, "Truly thou art the Son o' God!"

34. And whan they gat ower, they cam to the land, to Gennesaret.

35. And whan the men o' that place had kennin o' him, they sent oot intil a' the kintra-side, and fesh't till him a' that war ailin;

36. And entreatit him that they might but touch the border o' his garment; and a' that tonched were made hale.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

*What syles a man? The Canaan-woman.
A great dinner on sma' providin.*

¹ v. 30. The twal basket-fu's war nee doot gien to the poirest o' the folk. Breid is a sacred thing, and tho' multiply't by miracle, is no to be wastit.

THAN cam Writers and Pharisees
o' Jerusalem to Jesus ; and quo' they,

2. "Hoo is't yere disciples mind-
na the biddins o' the faithers o' auld ?
For they eat breid wi' unweeshin
hauna."

3. But he answer't them, and quo' he,
"Hoo is't that ye too gang contrar
to God's commaun wi' yere
biddens ?

4. "For God commandit, 'Honor
faither and mither,' and, 'Wha baus
faither or mither, lat him dee !'

5. "But ye say, 'Wha says till his
faither or his mither, It is a' ¹devotit,
echt that ye nicht has hy me ;

6. "'He sal do nocht to maintean
his faither or his mither.' Sae has
ye brocht God's commaun to nocht
by yere biddens.

7. "Ye fause anes ! Esaiab weel
foretell't o' yon, sayin,

8. "'This folk come nar me wi'
their mon', and gie me honor wi' their
lips, but their heart is far awa !

9. "'But a' in vain worship they
me, layin down for rules the biddens
o' men.'"

10. And he ca'd till him the folk,
and quo' he to them, "Hear ye, and
understaun !

11. "It isna what gangs intil the
mooth that fyles the man ; but what
comes oot o' the mooth that fyles the
man !"

12. Than cam his disciples, and
quo' they, "Kannst thou the Pharisees
war ill-pleased, whan they heard
yon sayin ?"

13. But he said, "Ilka plant no o'
my Heevenlie Faither's plantin, sal
be uprootit.

14. "Lat abee ! they're but blin'
leaders o' the blin' ! And gin the

sichtless airt the eichtless, baith sal
fa' intil the abeugh."

15. Than up-spak Peter, and quo' he,
"Expone to us the parable !"

16. And Jesus says, "Are ye e'en
yet wantin knowledge ?

17. "Div ye no ken, that what'ser
may gang in at the mooth, fin's its
way intil the paunch, and is cuisten
oot intil the sewer ?

18. "But thae things whilk come
frae the mooth, come oot frae the
heart, and they fyle the man !

19. "For frae the heart come oot
ill-thochts, bludeashed, adulteries,
lecherie, thievin, fause-aweerin, blas-
phemies ;

20. "Thir things fyle a man ; but
to eat wi' hauns unpurify't fyles-na a
man !"

21. And Jesus gaed thence, and
cam to the pairts o' Tyre and Sidon.

22. And see ! a Canaanito wum-
man cam oot frae thae pairts, and
cry't oot till him ; and quo' she,
"Hae pitie on me, O Lord, thou
Son o' Dauid ! my dochter isair
wax't wi' a demon !"

23. But he answer't her no a word.
And his disciples cam and entreatit
him, and quo' they, "Send her awa,
for she akreighs oftir us !"

24. But he answer't, and said, "I
wasna sent, but to the forwanderin
sheep o' Isral's hoose !"

25. And she cam nar, and wor-
shipp't him, sayin, "Lord ! help me !"

26. But quo' he, "It isna bonnie
to tak bairns' breid, and to cast it to
the dowses !"

27. And she said, "Even sae, Lord !
yet the vera dowses eat o' the mools
fa'in frae the maister's buird !"

28. Tban answer't Jesus till her,
"Eh, wumman ! yere faith is great !
Lat it be till ye as ye wull !" And
her dochter was made hale frae that
'oor.

29. And Jesus gaed awa frae that
place, and came nar to the Loch o'
Galilee ; and gaed up intil a moun-
tain, and sat him doon.

¹ V. 5. The awfu' selfishness o' a man tell-
ing his pair faither that he has devotit a'
to God, and sae canna fend him—and the
Pharisees sayin it was a' proper—is weel
condemned here. The faither's buird
was bare ; but the son's haart grew stane
—a waur ill to dree !

30. And great croods o' folk cam to him, haein wi' them lameters, sightless, dumb, maimed, and mony mair; and laid them doon at Jesus' feet; and he healed them.

31. See that the folk fertied uncolie, to behauld the dumb speakin, the maimed hale, the lameters to gang, and the blin' seein; and they glorifyf' the God o' Isra'il.

32. Than Jesus ca'd his disciples to him, and quo' he, "I hae pitie on the folk, for that they hae been wi' me noo thrie days, and hae nae meat; and I winna send them awa, least they soud swarf i' the gate."

33. And the disciples said to him, "In whatna way could we hae nae muckle breid i' the wilderness, as to fill sae great a crood o' folk?"

34. Jesus says to them, "Hoo mony bannocks hae ye?" And they said, "Seeven; and a wheen wee speldrina."

35. And he commandit the folk to sit doon on the grun'.

36. And he took the seeven bannocks, and the fish, and gied thanks; and he brak, and gied to the disciples, and they to a' the folk.

37. And they did a' eat, and war filled; and they gaither't up o' the broken meat left, seeven creels fu'.

38. And they wha did eat war four thoosan' men, forby weemen andairns.

39. And he sent the folk awa; and gaed intil a boat, and cam to the pairts o' Magadan.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN.

The barm o' the Pharisées. Peter's gruen confession. What is tis, and what is won.

AND the Pharisées and the Sadducees cam, and in a twafanld way speir't at him, "Gin he wadna schaw them a token fras Heeven!"

2. He answer't, and quo' he, "Whan it is e'anin ye say, 'Fair wather; for the sky is raid!'

3. "And i' the mornin, 'Broken

wather the day, for the sky is raid and lowerin!' Ye ken hoo to judge the scaun o' the sky;—can ye see the signs o' the times?"

4. "An ill-deedis and adulterous race seek efter some sign; and nae sign sal be gi'en till't but the sign o' Jonah." And he gaed aff fras them.

5. And the disciples cam to the ither side, and forgot to tak breid.

6. And Jesus said to them, "Tak tent, and troks ye-na wi' the barm o' the Pharisées and Sadducees!"

7. And they spak ane till anither, sayin, "We took nae breid!"

8. And Jesus, kennin it, said, "O ye o' the sma' faith, why soud ye reason amang yersels for that ye hae nae breid?"

9. "Dae ye no ken, dae ye no mind, the fyve bannocks o' the fyve thoosan': and hoo mony baskets ye gaither't?"

10. "Naither the seeven bannocks o' the four thoosan', and hoo mony creels ye gaither't?"

11. "Hoo is't ye dinna ken I spak to ye-na anent breid; but to tak tent and beware o' the teachins o' the Pharisées and the Sadducees!"

12. Than saw they hoo he bad them no beware o' the barm o' the breid, but o' the doctrines o' the Pharisées and the Sadducees.

13. Whan Jesus had come intil the kintra-side o' Philip's Cesarea, he speir't at his disciples, "Wha dae folk say the Son o' Man is?"

14. And quo' they, "Some, John the Baptist; and some, Elijab; and ither, Jeremiah, or ane o' the Prophets."

15. He says to them, "But wha say ye that I am?"

16. And Simon Peter spak, and quo' he, "Thou art the Anointit Ane, the Son o' the Leavin God!"

17. And Jesus answerin, says till him, "Happy are ye, Simon, son o' John! for nae flesh and blude tell't it t'ye, but my Father i' the Heevena.

18. "And I say t'ye, ye are a Rockmen ; and on this Rock wull I bigg my kirk ; and the yetts o' Hell sal nevir overcome it !

19. "And I wull gie t'ye the keys o' Heeven's Kingdom ; and what ye sal bind on the yirth sal be bund in Heeven ; and what ye sal lowse on the yirth sal be lowsed in Heeven."

20. Than chairged he the disciples no to tell ony man he was the Anointit Ane.

21. Frae that time forrit Jesus begude to schaw till his disciples, hoo that he bude gang to Jerusalem, and dree mony things o' the Elders and Heid-priests and Writers ; and be slain ; and on the third day be waukeued again.

22. Than Peter took him aside, repruvin him ; and quo' be, "Hae mercy on thyself ! this sal nevir be thy fa' !"

23. But he turned him aboot, and quo' he to Peter, "Ahint me, Sautan ! ye are bnt a snare to me ! for ye seek-na the things o' God, but the things o' man !"

24. Than quo' Jesus to his disciples, "Gin ony man wad come efter me, lat him deny his sel, and tak up his cross, and follow me.

25. "For whasee wad save his life sal tine it ; and whasee wull tine his life for my sake, sal win it.

26. "For what is a man the better, tho' he win the hale warkd, and tine his ain saul ? or what sal a man gie as ca'tion for his saul ?

27. "For the Son o' Man comes in the glorie o' his Faither, wi' the Angels ; and than sal he gie every man accordin as his wark sal be.

28. "Truly say I t'ye, thar are thae staunin here, wha sal in naegate pree death, till they hae seen the Son o' Man 'comin in his Kingdom !"

¹ V. 28. Hoo doar they war to understand that his Kingdom was a spiritual ane : They gat a wee blink o' whatna kingly glory was his an, at the Transfigur.

CHAPTIR SEEVENTEEN.

Jesus for a wee in glorie. The pair day's taddle. A fish brings tribute-money.

AND sax days efter, Jesus takes A Peter, and James, and his brither John, and brings them up intil a heigh mountain by their sels :

2. And was transfigur'd afore them ; and his face beamed like the sun, and his cleedin glintit as the licht.

3. And look ! thar was seen by them Moses and Elijah, speakin wi' him.

4. Than answer't Peter, and quo' be to Jesus, "Lord ! it is guid for us to be here ! Gin thou wull, lat us mak here thrie bothies—for thee ane, and for Moses ane, and for Elijah ane."

5. Whiles he was speakin, lo ! a clud o' brichtness cam ower them ; and a voice cam oot o' the clud, sayin, "This is my Son ! the Beloved, wham I delicht in ! Hear ye till him !"

6. And whan the disciples heard, they fell on their faces, fearin uncolia.

7. And Jesus cam nar, and touched them, and said, "Rise, and be-na fleyt !"

8. And liftin up their een, they saw nane, but Jesus alone.

9. And comin doon frae the mountain, Jesus chairged them, "Sehaw ye the vision tae nae man, until the Son o' Man rise frae mang the deid !"

10. And his disciples speir'd at him, "Hoo than das the Writers say, 'Elijah matan first come' ?"

11. And he answer't them, "Elijah dis come, and redd a' things.

12. "But say I, Elijah is come already, and they kent him na ; but did till him as they deairt. E'en eas sal the Son o' Man dree o' them !"

But it was wae that he bude chairge them no to tell he was the Anointit (ver. 20), as lang as they didna understand what he was anointit for !

13. Than the disciples begude to see that he spek to them o' John the Baptist.

14. And whan they war come till a' the folk, thar cam till him a man, loutin doon on his knees, and sayin,

15. "Lord, hae mercie on my son; for he is sair dementit, and uneo handen; for aft he fa's intil the fire, and aft intil the watir:

16. "And I fashed him tae thy disciples; and they coudna heal him."

17. And Jesus said, "O race, thrawart and wantin faith! hoo lang sal I be w'ye! hoo lang sal I thole ye? Bring him here to me!"

18. Than did Jesus challenge the demon, and be gaed forth oot o' him; and the laddie was made hale frae that 'oor.

19. And than the disciples cam to Jesus, a' by their seuls, and quo' they, "Why wast we couldna cast him oot?"

20. And he says to them, "For that ye want faith: for truly say I t'ye, gin aiblins ye had faith e'en as a pickle o' mustard-seed, ye sal say till this mountain, 'Flit ye to yon place!' and it sal flit; and nooht sal be ayont yere poosier.

21. "But this kind gangs-na oot, but in prayer and faastin."

22. And while they bade in Galilee, Jesus says to them, "The Son o' Man sal be giean up, intil men's haunes.

23. "And they wull slay him; and the third day be wull rise again." And they war uncolie grieved.

24. And whan they cam to Capernaum, they that took in the Hauf-shekel, cam nar to Peter, and quo' they, "Yere Maister—dis he no pay the ¹ Hauf-shekel?"

25. Quo' he, "Aye!" And whan he cam intil the hoose, Jesus spek

first, and quo' he, "What dae ye think, Simon? Fras wham dae kings o' the yirth tak toll and tribute? fras their ain folk, or fras fremd folk?"

26. Peter says to him, "Fras fremd folk." Quo' Jesus to him, "Than their ain folk are free!"

27. "But that we gar-them-na stummle, gang ye till the Loch; and cast in a heuk, and tak the first fish comin up; and openin its mou', ye sal find a shekel. Tak it, and gie to them for me and you."

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.

Bairn-like is God-like. Conqueris wi' love. The ungrateful servant.

I' THAT 'oor cam the disciples till Jesus, and quo' they, "Wha is boonmaist i' the Kingdom o' Heeven?"

2. And he ca'd till him a bairn, and set him i' the mids o' them,

3. And quo' he, "Gin ye turn-na, and come to be like a bairn, ye enter-na intil the Kingdom o' Heeven.

4. "Whasae than sal mak his sel naething, as this wee bairn, the same is heigher i' the Kingdom o' Heeven.

5. "And whasae takes till him as sic wee bairn i' my name, takes me till him.

6. "But whasae sal mak to fa' a' a' thae wee things that lippen tae me, it had been better for him to hae a mill-stane bung aboot his neck, and be sunk i' the deeps o' the sea.

7. "Wae to the world for snares o' stummelin! For snares wull come; but wae to the man by wham the snares come.

8. "And aas, gin yere haun or fit ensnare ye, sned it aff, and cast it awa; it is gude for ye to enter intil life hirplin or maim'd, raither than wi' twa haunes or feet to be cuisten intil nevir-endin lowe!

9. "And gin yere ee ensnare ye, oot wi't, and cast it awa; it is gude

¹ V. 24. This was tribute for the Temple; and, till the Great Atonement was offer't, Jesus wad hae the Temple-service keepit up.

for ye to enter intil life wi' ae es,
raither than wi' twa een to be cuisten
intil hell-fire !

10. "Tak tent that ye liehtlie-na
ane o' thir wee anes ; for say I t'ye,
that in Heeven their ain Angels aye
look upon my Heevenlie Faither's
face !

11. "For the Son o' Man has come
to save thaе that war lost.

12. "Noo, hoo think ye, yersels !
Gin a man hae a hunner sheep, and
ane o' them is gane awa, dis he no
lea' the ninety-and-nine, and gang intil
the mountains, seekin the ane for-
wander't ?

13. "And gin sae be that helichts
on't, truly say I t'ye, he is blyther
ower that sheep than ower the ninety-
and-nine that gaed-na awa.

14. "E'en sae, thar is nae desire
afore yere Faither in Heeven that ane
o' thir wee anes soud be lost.

15. "And gin yere brither-man sin
again ya, gang to him, and schaw
him his faut atween you and him
alone : gin be barken to ye, ye hae
won yere brither-man.

16. "But gin be winna barken
to ye, than tak wi' ye ane or twa
mair, sae that at the mooth o' twa or
thris witnesses, ilk word may be
made siccar.

17. "And gin aiblins he winna
hear them, tell it to the kirk ; and
gin he winna hear the kirk, than lat
him be to ye as a fram'd ane, or ane
o' the tax-men.

18. "Truly say I t'ye, whatsoes'er
ye hind fast on the yirth, sal bo bun'
fast in Heeven ; and what ye lowse
on yirth sal be lowsed in Heeven.

19. "And ances mair say I t'ye, that
gin twa o' ye mak it up on the yirth
what ye sal ask for, it sal be dune for
them by my Faither in Heeven.

20. "For whaur the twa or the

thrie are forgather't i' my name, thar
am I i' the mids' o' them."

21. Then Peter comes forrit till
him, and quo' he, "Lord, hoo aft
may my brither-man sin again me,
and I maun forgie him ? Seeven
times ?"

22. Jesus said to him, "I say t'ye,
No till seeven times, but seeventy
times and seeven !

23. "And sae is the Kingdom o'
Heeven like to a certain king wha
wad hae a reckonin wi' his servants.

24. "And whan he had begude to
reckon, ane was brocht till him wha
was awn him ten thoosan' talents.

25. "And haasin nocht to pay, his
maister order't him to be sell't, and
his wife, and weans, and a' that he
had ; and payment to be mada.

26. "The servant than fell doon
and worshipp't him, cryin, 'Lord,
thole ye wi' me, and I wull pay ye
a' !'

27. "Than, moved wi' pitie, that
servant's lord lowsed him, and forgae
him the debt.

28. "And that same servant, gann
oot, fand ane o' his fellow-servants
wha was awn him a bunner pennies ;
and he laid hand v' him, and grippit
him by the hanes, cryin, 'Pay me
what ye are awn !'

29. "And his fellow-servant fell
doon at his feet, and beseecht him :
'Thole ye wi' me, and I wull pay ye
a' !'

30. "And he wadna, but gaed and
had him cuisten intil prison, till he
soud pay what was awn.

31. "Sae whan his fellow-servants
saw what was dune, they war unco
wae, and cam and tell't their maister
a' that was dune.

32. "Then his lord ca'd for him,
and quo' he to him, 'O, ye ill-deedie
servant ! I forgae ye a' that debt, for
that ye did beseech me :

33. "'Soud-ye-na had rewth on
yere fellow-servant, e'en as I had
mercie on you ?'

34. "And his lord was eair anger't,

ⁱV. 18. Gin he has wrang'd ye, and con-
fesses his faut afore a neebor, he'll no
be temptit to fa' awa frae it efter. Whiles
Santan, in sic cases, moves a "recon-
sideration." Dinn a second his motion !

and gied him ower to the officers, till he soud pay a' that was awn to him.

35. "E'en sae sal my Heevenlie Faither do to you, gin ye forgie-na ilk ane his brither-man fras yere hearts!"

CHAPTRIE NINETEEN.

Marriage and Divorce. His baus and blesin on the we bairns. About grace and gear.

AND it cam aboot, that whan Jeesus had made an end o' thae words, he quat Galilee, and cam intil the pairts o' Judea ayont Jordan.

2. And great croods follow't him; and he healed them thar.

3. And Pharieees cam to him, waylayin him, and sayin, "Is't lawfu' for a man to pit awa his wife, for ony cause ava?"

4. And he answer't, and quo' he to them, "Hae-ye-na read hoo be wha made them at the beginnin, made them male and female.

5. "And said, 'For this wull a man lee' his faither and his mither, and be joined to his wife, and they twa sal be as flesh!'

6. "Sae that they are nae mair twa, but as flesh. And sae what God has joined thegither, lat-na man pit sindry!"

7. They say to him, "Hoo than did Moses commaun to gie her a writin o' divorceement, and to pit awa i?"

8. He says to them, "Moses, for the hardness o' yere hearts, tholed that ye could pit awa yere wifes; but fras the beginnin it wasna sae.

9. "And I say to ye, that whassae sal pit awa his wife, let-abees for adultery, and sal wed anither, commits adultery; and wha weds the divorced wumman commits adultery."

10. His disciples say to him, "Gin it be sae wi' a man and his wife, it isna gude to mairry!"

11. But he said to them, "A'

canna tak in this sayin; but only thae to wham it is gien.

12. "For thar are some eunuchs fras their mither's womb; and thar are some sae, made eunuchs by men; and thar are some that hae made theirsels sae for the Kingdom o' Heeven's sake. Wha has stren'ht to tak it in, lat him tak it in!"

13. Than war brocht till him wee bairns, that he soud pit hauns on them, and gie them his blesin: and the disciples challenged them.

14. But Jesus said, "Let the wee bairns come to me, and dinna forbid them; for sic anes mak up the Kingdom o' Heeven!"

15. And he pat his hauns on them; and gaed awa.

16. And see! ane cam till him, and quo' he, "Maister! Whatna gude thing sal I dae, that I may win Eternal Life?"

17. And he says to him, "Why div ye speir aboot that whilk is gude? Ane thar is wha is gude; that is God! But gin ye wad enter intil Life, keep the Commaunments."

18. He speir't at him, "Whilk?" And Jesus said to him, "'Ye sanna kill; ye sanna commit adultery; ye sanna bear fause-witness;

19. "'Honor yere faither and yere mither; and ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel!'"

20. The lad says, "A' thir I keep! What want I yet?"

21. Jesus says to him, "Gin ye wad be perfete, gang and sell¹ a' ye hae, and gie it oot to the pnit; and ye sal hae gear laid up in Heeven; and come, follow me!"

22. But whan the young man heard that sayin, he gaed awa dowie; for he had great estates.

23. And Jesus said till his dis-

¹ V. 21. Ilk man has a besettin sin that he maun ding, gin he wad enter Heeven. This man's sin was the love o' ailler. Wi' anither, it micht be pride, or revenge, or fame. Freend, what wad ha lay his finger on, as your besettin sin?

ciples, "It is no an easy thing for a man o' muckle gear to enter the Kingdom o' Heeven !

24. "Aye, say I t'ye, it is easier for a camel to threid a needle's ee, than ane rich to enter the Kingdom o' Heeven !"

25. Whan the disciples heard it they ferlied uncolie ; and quo' they, "Wha than can be sav't ?"

26. And Jesus, dwallin on them wi' his een, said, "Wi' men, this wad be impossible ; but no wi' God. For wi' God, a' things can be possible !"

27. Peter answer't, and quo' he, "We hae left a' to follow thee ; what sal we hae, than ?"

28. And Jesus said to them, "In the A'-Things-New, whan the Son o' Man sal sit on the thron o' his glorie, ye as weel sal sit on twal' throns, ower the Twal' Tribes o' Isra'el.

29. "And ilka ane forseakin hooses, or bretbren, or sisters, or faither or mither, or bairns, or mailin, for my name's sake—sal hae a bunner-fank, and sal inherit Life Eternal !

30. "But mony first sal be bin maist ; and binmaist first.

CHAPTIR TWENTY.

The laborers. The ambition o' two. The blin' pair't to see.

FOR the Kingdom o' Heaven is like till a man, a laird, wha gaed oot i' the dawin, to hire workers intil his vine-yaIRD.

2. "And when he had 'gree't wi' the laborers for a hauf-merk a day, he sent them intil his vine-yaIRD.

3. "And he gaed oot aboot the chap o' nine, and saw ither anes staunin idle i' the merkit.

4. "And quo' he to them, 'Gang ye as weel intil the vine-yaIRD, and whate'er is richt, ye sal hae !' And they gaed their ways.

5. "And again he gaed oot aboot twal', and thrie o'clock, and did the same.

6. "And at fyve he gaed oot, and found mair staunin ; and, quo' he,

'Hoo is't ye stann here, idle a' the day ?'

7. "They say, 'For that nae man fee'd us !' He says to them, 'Gang ye as weel intil the vine-yaIRD ; and whate'er is richt, that sal ye hae !'

8. "Sae whan gloamin was come, the laird o' the vine-yaIRD says to his grieve, 'Ca' the workers ; and gie them their fee ; beginnin fras the binmaist doon to the first.'

9. "And whan they o' fyve o'clock cam, they gat ilk man a hauf-merk.

10. "And whan the first cam, they trow'd to hae gotten mair ; and they, as weel, gat ilk man a hauf-merk.

11. "And whan they gat it, they yammer't again the gudeman,

12. "Saying, 'Thir last anes has puttan-in as 'oor, and ye hae made them even wi' us, wha hae dreed the weary cark and scoubher o' the day !'

13. "But he answer't ane o' them, and quo' he, 'Freend, I do ye nae wrang ! Did-ye-na tak-on wi' me for a hauf-merk ?

14. "'Tak what belangs t'ye, and gang yers gate ! It is my wull to gie to this last e'en as to yon.

15. "'Is't no richt to hae my ain wull in my ain things ? Is your ee skallied because I am upright ?'

16. "Sae the binmaist sal be first, and the first binmaist. For mony are hidden, but no a' acceptit."

17. And as Jesus was gaun up to Jerusalem, he took aside the twal' disciples, and on the way said to them,

18. "Noo, we gang up to Jerusalem, and the Son o' Man sal be betray't to the Haid-Priests and the Writers, and they sal doom him to death ;

19. "And sal set him ower to the heathen to mock, and to clour, and to crucify ; and on the third day he sal rise again."

20. Than cam till him the mither o' Zebedee's sons, wi' her sons, worshippin him, and seeking a thing fras him.

21. And he says to her, "What wad ye?" Quo' she till him, "Commaun that thir my twa sons may sit, the ane on thy richt haun, and the ither on thy left haun, i' thy Kingdom!"

22. But Jesus answer't and said, "Ye kenna what ye seek! Are ye fit to drink o' the cup I am to drink o'?" They say till him, "We are fit!"

23. He says to them, "Ye sal truly drink my cup; but to sit on my richt haun and on my left haun, isna mine to gie, but to thas my Faither has prepar't it for."

24. And the Ten, hearin it, war unco angry again the twa brithers.

25. But Jesus ca'd them till him, and said, "Ye a' ken hoo the rulers o' the nations lord it ower¹ the folk, and their great anes exerceese authoritie amang them;

26. "But eas it sanna be amang you; but whasee wad be heigh amang ye, lat him be yere servitor;

27. "And whasee wad be first amang ye, lat him be yere thirlman.

28. "E'en as the Son o' Man camna to be servt, but to serv'; and to gie up his life a ransom for mony."

29. And when they gaed on frae Jericho, a great crood follow't him.

30. And lo! twa blin' men, sittin by the wayside, whane'er they kent that Jesus gaed by, cry't out, "Lord, hae mercie on us, thou Son o' Dauvid!"

31. And the folk challenged them, that they soud hand their whisht. But they skreigh't oot the mair, "Lord, hae mercie on us, thou Son o' Dauvid!"

32. And, comin till a stann, Jesus ca'd them; and said, "What is't ye wad hae me do for ye?"

33. They say till him, "Lord, that oor een micht be unsteekit!"

34. And Jesus, led wi' compassion, touched their een; and at ance they wan their sight; and they follow't him.

CHAPTR TWENTY-ANE

The entry intil Jerusalem. The seckless fig-tree. The ill-deedis gardener.

AND whan they wan nar Jerusalem, A and war come till Bethphage, at the Mount o' Olives, Jesus sent forrit twa o' his disciples.

2. Sayin to them, "Gang yere ways to the toun forment ye, and ye sal fin' at ance an ass tether't, and a cowt wi' her; lowse them, and lead them to me.

3. "And gin ony ane challenge ye, say, 'The Lord has need o' them'; and at ance they wull send them."

4. Noo this was eas, that it soud be fulfilled that was said by the prophet:

5. "Tell ye Zion's dochter, Tak tent! thy King comes to thee, lowly, and ridin on an ass; and a cowt, the foal o' a toilin ass."

6. And the disciples, doin as Jesus appointit them,

7. Fesh'd the ass and the cowt, and they laid on their mantles; and be sat thar-on.

8. And a hantle o' the thrang spread their mantles i' the way; ither entit branches frae the trees, and strinkled them i' the way.

9. And a' the folk that gaed on afore, and they that cam ahint, cry't, sayin, "Hosanna to the Son o' Dauvid! Blessed is he comin i' the name o' the Lord! Hosanna i' the heighest Heevens!"

10. And whan he was come tae Jerusalem, a' the citie was putten aboot, speirin, "Wha is this?"

11. And a' the folk said, "This is Jesus the Prophet—frae Nazareth o' Galilee!"

12. And Jesus gaed intil the Temple, and drove oot a' that sell't and bocht i' the Temple, and wham'mit ower the tables o' the nifferers

¹ V. 25. The text isna very clear; but it means that rulers tak authoritie ower their ain folk: a thing Christ's disciples are no to do.

o' siller, and the binks o' thae that sell't doon.

13. And said to them, "It is written, 'My Hoose sal be ca'd a House o' Prayer,' but ye mak' it a bowff o' robbers!"

14. And there cam till him i' the Temple the blin' and the lameters; and he healed them.

15. But whan the Heid-Priests and the Writers saw the ferlies that be did, and the bairns cryin oot i' the Temple, and sayin' "Hosanna to the Son o' Dauid!" they war sair vexed;

16. And quo' they till him, "Hear-ye-na what thir anes say?" And Jesus says to them, "Aye! And ha-ye-na read, 'Oot o' bairns' and sucklin' mou's hast thou ordeen't thy praise!"

17. And he left them, and gaed oot o' the city to Bethanie, and lodged the nicht thar.

18. And comin back early tae the city he hunger't.

19. And seein a fig-tree by the way, he cam till't and fund naething on't but leaves; and quo' he, "Lat thar be nae frute o' thee frae this forrit, for evir!" And belyve, the fig-tree dwined awa!

20. And whan the disciples saw it, they ferlied uncolie, sayin, "Hoo sun'e did the fig-tree dwine awa!"

21. And Jesus answer't, and said to them, "Truly say I t'ye, Gin ye hae faith, ye mayna only do as is dune to the fig-tree, but aiblins ye may say to this mountain, 'Flit thou, and fa' intil the sea!' it sal be dune.

22. "And ye sal win' a' things—whatsoe'er ye ask in prayer, believin."

23. And whan he was come intil the Temple, the Heid-Priests and the Elders o' the people cam till him as he was teachin, and quo' they, "By whatna authoritie div ye do thir things? And wha gied ye this authoritie?"

24. And, answerin, Jesus said to

them, "I wull tak you as quaisten as weel; and gin ye answer me, I wull tell ye by whatna authoritie I do thir things.

25. "The baptizin o' John—whaur cam it frae? Fras Heeven; or o' men!" And they counsellt amang theirsels, sayin, "Gin we say, 'Fras Heeven,' he wull say to us, 'Why, than, dinna ye believe him?'

26. "But gin we say, 'Fras men,' we are fley't o' the people; for they a' haud John as a Prophet."

27. And they answer't Jesus, and said, "We canna tell." And than be, too, says to them, "And naither div I tell you by what authoritie I do thir things!"

28. "But hoo div ye judge noo? A man had twa sons; and he cam to the first ane, and quo' he, 'Son, gang and work, the day, in my vine-yaird!'

29. "He, answerin, said, 'I winna!' but astir, he bethocht him, and gaed.

30. "And he cam to the second, and said the like; and he answer't, and quo' he, 'I—aye, Sir!' and gaed na.

31. "Whilk o' thae twa did his faither's wull?" They say till him, "The first ane." Jesus says to them, "Truly say I t'ye, that the tax-men and the barlots gang intil the Kingdom o' Heeven afore ye!"

32. "For John cam to ye, schawin richtousness; and ye wadna believe him. And ye, seein it a', didna e'en repent astirbaun, that ye nicht lippen till him.

33. "Hear ye anither parable: Thar was a laird wha plantit a vine-yaird, and dykit it roond aboot, and howkit a wine-vat in't, and biggit a tooer, and lat it oot to crofters, and gaed awa till another land.

34. "And whan the time o' frutin' drew nar, he sent his servants to the crofters to receive his frutes.

35. "And the crofters took his ser-

vants, and they cloured ane, and slew anither, and stamed anither.

36. "And again, he sent ither servants, mair in number than the first anes; and they did to them the same.

37. "But esfir, he sent to them his son, sayin, 'They will honour my son.'

38. "The crofters, howbeit, seein the son, said amang theirsels, 'This is the heir! Come, let us slay him, and tak his inheritance.'

39. "And they took him, and cuist him oot the vine-yaird, and killed him.

40. "Whan, tharfor, the laird o' the vine-yaird sal come, what wull he do to thae crofters?"

41. They say to him, "Unco destruction sal he bring on thae wicked men; and wull lat oot the vine-yaird to ither crofters, wha wull render him the frutes i' their seasons!"

42. Jesus says to them, "Did ye nevir read i' the word, 'The stane rejeckit o' the masons, the same was made the heid o' the corner. Fras the Lord was this: and an unco farlie in oor e'en!'

43. "Tharfor say I t'ye, The Kingdom o' God sal be ta'en awa fras ye, and gien till a nation bringin forth the frutes o't."

44. "And wha fa's on this stane sal be sairly cloured; but on wham it may fa', it wull grind him to poother!"

45. And the Heid-Priests and Pharisees, bearing his parables, jaloused that he spak o' them.

46. But whan they socht to grip him, they fear't the crood; for they did haud him as a Prophet.

like to a King, wha made a Bridal-feast for his son.

3. "And sent oot his servin-men to tell them wha had a bode; and they wadna come.

4. "And he sent oot mair servants; and quo' he, 'Tell them that are bidden, See! I ha gotten ready my dinner; my owsen and my fed things are killed, and a' is ready. Come tae the Bridal-feast.'

5. "But they geck't at it, and gaed their gate, ane to his ain mailin, and anither to his wares.

6. "And the lave grippit his servin-men, and ill-treatit them, and slew them.

7. "And the King was sair anger't; and he sent oot his airmies and destroyed thae men-slayers, and brunt their toon.

8. "Than said the King, 'The Bridal-feast is a' ready, but they bidden warna wordie;

9. "Gang ye tharfor to the pairtin o' the ways; and a', e'en as mony as ye fin', ca' to the feast!'

10. "And thae servants gaed oot intil the heigh-roads, and gather't thegither a', e'en as mony as they faund, baith ill and weel faur'd; and the bridal had its guests.

11. "But the King,¹ comin ben to see the guests, spied a man wantin a waddin garment.

12. "And speirs at him, 'Freend! hoo cam ye here, wantin a waddin-garment?' and he had nocht to say.

13. "Than said the King to his servants, 'Bind him haun-and-fit, and cast him oot intil the deid-mirk; thar wull be greetin and cherkin o' teeth!'

14. "For a hantle are bidden: but only a wheen waled oot."

15. Then gaed the Pharisees, and counsell't thegither boo they might fank him in his talk.

16. And they sent their disciples to him, wi' them o' Herod's party,

CHAPTIR TWENTY-TWA.

The Royal Bridal. The girms set by the Pharisees and Saducees.

AND answerin', Jesus spak to them again in parables; and quo' he:

2. "The Kingdom o' Heeven is

¹ V. 11. See note on Luke xiv. 24.

and quo' they, " Maister ! we ken ye are leal and true, and taach God's ways truly, and swither for nae man ; for ye look-na on the person o' men :—

17. " Tell us than what think ye ? Is't weel to gie dues to Cesar, or no ? "

18. But Jesus, takin tent o' their wickedness, said to them, " Why fausely deal wi' me, ye hypocrites ?

19. " Schaw me the siller for the dues ! " And they brocht to him a siller penny.

20. And he says to them, " Whase is this heid, and this inscription ? "

21. They say to him, " Cesar'a." Than says he to them, " Gie to Cesar Cesar's things ; and to God God's things ! "

22. And whan they heard, they ferlied uncolie ; and lea'in him, gaed their gate.

23. That vera day cam till him the Sadducees, wha say thar is nae Risin-again, and they speir't at him :—

24. " Maister, Moses said, ' Gin a man soud dee, lea'in nae bairn, his brither sal mairry his wife, and rear up seed till his brither.' "

25. " Noo thar war wi' us seeven brithers ; and the first aftir mairryin, dee't ; and hasin nae bairn, left his wife to his brither.

26. " In like manner the second, and the third, e'en to the seventh.

27. " And aftir them a', the wife dee't.

28. " At the Great Risin, than, whase wife sal she be o' the seeven ? for they a' had her ? "

29. Jesus answer't them, and quo' he : " Ye are a' wrang ! for ye ken naither the Scripture nor the power o' God !

30. " For in the Risin-again, they naither wed nor are gien in wedlock ; but are as the Angels in Heeven.

31. " But, anent the Risin-o'-the Deid, has ye no read what God spak t'ye, sayin :

32. " 'I am the God o' Abra'm ;

and Isaac's God, and Jacob's God ! ' He isna the God o' deid men, but leevin ! '

33. And a' the folk, hearin it, ferlied muckle at his teachin.

34. But the Pharisees, whan they heard he had putten the Sadducees to silence, forgather't ;

35. And ane frae mang them speir't at him a quasten, testin him, and sayin,

36. " Maister ! whilk is the great communn o' the Law ? "

37. Jesus says till him, " ' Ye sal lo'e the Lord yere God wi' yere bairn heart, and wi' yere bairn soul, and wi' yere bairn mind ! '

38. " This is the great and first communn.

39. " And a second ane is like till't ; ' Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel.'

40. " On thir twa communa hing's the Law and the Prophets."

41. Noo, while the Pharisees war gaither't thegither, Jesus speir't at them :

42. " What think ye about the Anointit Ane ! Whase Son is he ? " They say to him, " Dauid's son."

43. He said to them, " Hoo than dis Dauid ca' him 'Lord' ? sayin,

44. " 'Jehovah said to my Lord, Sit thou on my rieht haun, till I mak thy faes thy fit-brod.'

45. " Seeing Dauid ca's him 'Lord,' hoo is he his son ? "

46. And nae man was fit to answer him a word : naither, frae that day forrit deur ony man to speir at him ony mair quastena.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THRIE.
*The desperate corruption o' the Pharisees.
Jerusalem bewailed.*

THAN spak Jesus to a' the folk, and till his disciples :

IV. 32. Gin Abra'm was leevin fourt hauner year aftir the death o' his body—and in consequence (to a' wha believe the Scripture), the great maitter o' the immortality o' the soul is proved—the ama'er maitter o' the restoration o' the body may weel be admittit !

2. "The Writers and the Pharisees are sitten doon in Moses' seat.

3. "A' things tharfor they bid ye do, observe them. But follow-nae afir their warks: for they say, and do-nae.

4. "And they bind heavy burdens, and lay them on the shouthers o' men; but they winna move them wi' as fing'er.

5. "For they mak braid their amulets and enlairge their tassels,

6. "And seek for the first seats at feasts, and beid places i' the kirks,

7. "And courtesie i' the merkis, and to be ca'd 'Maister! Maister!' o' men.

8. "But be-na ye ca'd 'Maister'; for ye haes a Maister, Christ; and a' ye are brethren.

9. "Aud ca' nae man 'Faither,' on the yirth; for Ane is yere Faither—the Heevenlie.

10. "Nor be ye ca'd 'Leaders'; for Ane is yere Leader, Christ.

11. "But the ane wha is greatest amang ye sal be the ane that ser's.

12. "And whase sal mak himself heigh, sal be pu'd doon; and whase sal abase himself sal be upliftit.

13. "But was for ye, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye steek up the Kingdom o' Heeven afore men wha wad gang in; ye naither gang in yersels, nor allooc them to gang in wha wad!

14. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye devoor weedews' hooses, c'en while ye are makin lang prayers: eae sal ye haes the wechtier judgment!

15. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye gang ower yirth and sea to bring in ae disciple; and when he is eae become, ye mak him twa faul mair a son o' hell than yersels!

16. "Wae for you, ye blis' leaders! whilk say, 'Wha sal sweer by the Temple, it is nocht; but wha sweers by the Temple's gowd, he is hauden!'

17. "O foles and blis'! Whilk is

greater, the gowd, or the Temple that hallows the gowd?

18. "And, 'Wha sweers by the offeran-stane, it is nocht; but wha sweers by the offeran on't, he is hauden!'

19. "O blis! For whilk is mair, the offeran, or the Altar-stane that hallows the offeran?

20. "Wha, tharfor, sweers by the offeran-stane, sweers by it, and by a' things on't.

21. "And wha sweers by the Temple, sweers by it, and by Him that dwells within.

22. "And wha sweers by Heeven, sweers by God's thron, and by Him wha sits tharon.

23. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye tithe mint, and dill, and cummin; and pit awa the wechtier things o' the Law, justice, mercie and faith. Thir ye behoved to do—no leavin the ither undune.

24. "Ye blis' leaders! Ye sail oot the midga, and ower wi' the caunel!

25. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders; for ye dicht the ootside o' the cup and the dish, but within they are fu' o' reivin and riot!

26. "O blis' Pharisee! mak clean first the inside o' the cup and the dish, that the ootside o't may be made clean as weel!

27. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye are like whitened tombs, whilk look bonnie outside, but within are fu' o' deid men's banes, and a' uncleanness.

28. "E'en eae, ye haes the ootward seemin o' being holie men, but within ye are fu' o' fausehood and sin.

29. "Wae for you, Scribes and Pharisees, pretenders! for ye bigg the tombs o' the Prophets, and buik the graffis o' the gude.

30. "And say, 'Gif we had but been i' the days o' oor faithera, we wadna haes been ans wi' them anent the blude o' the Prophets!'

31. "Sae ye are witnesses to yersela, that ye are bairns o' thae wha killed the Prophets.

32. "And you! fill ye up the measur o' yere faithers!

33. "Serpents! offspring o' vipers! hoo are ye to escape the judgment o' hell?

34. "Tharfor, see! I send ye Prophets, and Wyas Men, and Scribes: some o' them wull ye slay and crucify, and some clour i' yere kirks, and persecute them fras toon tae toon:

35. "That on ye may fa' a' the holie blude shed on the earth, fras the blude o' Abel the richtous, to the blude of Zechariah, son o' Barachiah, that ye slew between the Temple and the altar.

36. "Truly say I t'ye, a' thir things sal come on this race!

37. "Eh, Jerusalem! Jerusalem! wha slays the prophets and stanes the messengers sent to her!¹ Hoo aft and fain would I hae gaither't thy bairns thegither, like as a hen gaithers her cleckin aneath her wings! —and ye wadna.

38. "See! yere hoose and hauld is left a' desolate t'ye!

39. "For say I t'ye, ye see me nae mair fras this forrit, till whanae'er ye may say, 'Blessed is he, comin' i' the name o' the Lord!'"

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FOWR.

Behaunding Jerusalem; and tellin o' her pyne.

AND Jesus gaed oot fras the Temple, and was gangin his ways; and his disciples cam to airt him to look at the biggins o' the Temple.

2. But he answer't tae them, "See-ye-na thae things? Truly say I t'ye,

¹ V. 37. This wail ower Jerusalem and her bairns is like the skreigh o' a mither ower her deid son! Its sough has followt us, a' doon the ages; and we cauna get quat o't! Think-ye-na the Lord foresaw this, and kent hoo sic tenderness wad draw despairin anes till him?

thar sal-na remain here as stane on anither that cauna be cuisten doon!"

3. And as he² sat on the Mount o' Olives, his disciples cam till him by theirsela, and quo' they, "Tell us whan div thae things come? And what is the sign o' thy comin? and o' the hinner-end o' the warld?"

4. And Jesus answer't and quo' he, "Tak tent that nae man mistreat ye!

5. "For mony sal come in my name, sayin, 'I am the Anointit Ane!' and sal lead mony a-gley.

6. "And ye sal hear o' weir, and a' the clash o' weir; but be-na fleyt; for a' thae things maun come, but the end o' a' isna yet.

7. "For nation sal rise again nation, and kingdom again kingdom; and thar wull be dearth, and yirdins, in a hantle places;

8. "Noo, a' thir things schaw the oncome o' travail.

9. "Than sal they gie ye up to dool, and sal slay you; and ye sal be hatit o' a' folk for the sake o' me.

10. "Than sal mony stoiter; and they sal gie ane anither up, and sal hate ane anither.

11. "And mony false prophets sal rise, and lead mony a-gley.

12. "And, sin overflowin, the love o' mony sal grow cauld.

13. "But wha tholes to the hinner end sal be saved.

14. "And thir Gude-tidins o' the Kingdom sal be preached in a' the warld for a testimonie to the nations; and then sal the end come.

15. "Whan, than, ye see the abomination that ruina a', spoken o' by Daniel the Prophet, staukin i' the Holie Place (wha reads, lat him tak tent!)

² V. 3. The Temple had the city abint it, and faced the East, (aiblins that the worshippers comin tillt could hae nae temptation to worship the sun: (see Ezek. viii. 16) and as they sat on Olivet, east o' the citie, it maun hae been ane o' the bonniest sightis i' the warld forment them. It was wae that Jerusalem wae nae as guid as she was bonnie!

16. "Than thae that are in Judea, lat them hie to the mountains !

17. "Lat him that is on the boose-tap no gang doon to tak ony o' his plenisabin oot o' the boose !

18. "Nor lat him wha is in the croft, rin back to grip his mantle.

19. "But was for thae that are mithers to-be ! and for thae that gie sook i' thae days !

20. "And pray that yere flittin be-na i' the winter, or on the Sabbath !

21. "For thar sal be dolor and dool, sic as nevir has been sin' the world begude, till noo ; na, nor evir sal be mair !

22. "And but for that thae days hae been shortened, nae flesh soud hae been saved ; but for the sake o' the waled-oot, the days are shortened.

23. "Than, gin ony man say t'ye, 'See ! here is the Anointit Ane !' or 'yonner !' heed-him-na !

24. "For thar sal rise fause Christas, and fause prophets, and they sal schaw unco signs and ferlies ; sae as to lead awa, gin it war possible, e'en the waled-oot theirsels.

25. "See ! I hae tell't ye afore-haun !

26. "Sae, gin they say t'ye, 'See ! he is in the desert !' gang-na oot ; 'Tak tent ! he is ben i' the chaummer !' believe-it-na !

27. "For as the fire-flaucht glints i' the East, and flares e'en to the West, sae sal the comin o' the Son o' Man be.

28. "Wbaure'er the carcase ia, thar wull the kites be gaither't the-gither !

29. "But incontinent aftir¹ the dool o' thae days, sal the sun be putten out, and the mune sanna gie her licht, and the starns sal fa' frae

their places, and the pooers o' the heevens sal be cuisten doon.

30. "And thar sal be display'd abraid the token o' the Son o' Man in Heeven ; and than sal a' the tribes o' the yirth maen ; and they sal see the Son o' Man come in the clouds o' Heeven, wi' unco pooer and glorie.

31. "And he wull send oot his Angels wi' an unco blast o' a trumpet, and they sal gaither thegither his chosen frae the fowr wunds, frae so far-awa end o' Heeven to the ither.

32. "Noo, frae the fig-tree tak her lesson ! Whan her young sprigs are tender, and the leaves are comin, ye ken summer is nar ;

33. "And sae e'en ye, whan ye see a' thir things, ken that it is nar-haun, e'en at yere doors.

34. "Truly say I t'ye, this generation sanna pass awa, till a' thir things are done !

35. "Heeven and yirth may pass awa, but my words sanna pass awa !

36. "But, anent yon day and 'oor, nane kens—no e'en the Angels in Heeven—but my Faither alone.

37. "For e'en as it was in Noah's days, sae sal be the comin o' the Son o' Man.

38. "For as i' thae days afore the Flude, they war feastin and drinkin, marryin and giean in wedlock, to the vera day Noah gaed intil the ark,

39. "And kent na till the Flude cam, and soopit them a' awa ; sae sal be the comin o' the Son o' Man.

40. "Than, twa sal be in the field ; ane sal be taen, and the tither left.

41. "Twa sal be grindin at the mill ; ane is taen, and the tither left.

42. "Tak gude tent tharfor ! for ye ken-na on what day yore Lord comes !

43. "But tak ye tent o' this : that gin the gudeman had kent whan the reiver wad come, he wadna hae had his boose howkit throwe !

¹ V. 29. The view widens noo, and takes in the great things o' the last days ; the sun, mune, and starns denotin pooers and governments (as in Revelation). But verse 34 refers mair specially to the beginnis o' the things here spoken o'.

44. "Sae be ye aye ready ! for ye ken-na but at some 'oor ye think-na, the Son o' Man comes !

45. "Wha than is the wyss and leal servant, wham his maister has putten ower his hoosehould, to gie them their providin at due times ?

46. "Weel is the servant, wham his lord, whan he comes hame, sal fin' sae doin.

47. "Truly say I t'ye, he wull set him ower a' his haddin.

48. "But, gin that ill servant sal say within his sel, 'My lord is lang in comin !'

49. "And sal begin to clour his fellow-servants, and to feast and drink wi' the drucken,

50. "The maister o' that servant sal come in a day he looks-na for him, and at an 'oor he kens-na,

51. "And sal smite him through ; and his fa' sal be wi' a' the fause anes : tha sal be greetin and cherkin o' teeth.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FYVE.

*The ten maidens, the witless and the wyss.
The talents. The great day.*

"**T**HAN sal the Kingdom o' Heeven be like to ten maidens, takin ilk ane her ain cruse, and gaun oot to meet the bridegroom.

2. "And fyve o' them war unco witless, and fyve war wyss.

3. "For the witless took nae ulyie wi' them whan they took their cruses ;

4. "But the wyss took ulyie i' their pouries, wi' their lamps.

5. "Noo, while the bridegroom cam-na, they a' grew sleepierie, and dozed.

6. "But at midnight cam a shout, 'Hey, the Bridegroom comes ! C'way and meet him !'

7. "Than raise a' thae maidens, and settled up their cruses.

8. "And the witless said to the wyss, 'Gie us o' yere ulyie ; for oor lamps are gaun oot.'

9. "But the wyss answer't, and quo' they, 'Aibline thar wadna be eneuch for us and you ; but raither gang ye to thae that sell, and seek for yersels.'

10. "And while they war aff, trokin, the Bridegroom cam ; and they that war ready gaed in wi' him till the marriage-feast ; and the door was stekkit.

11. "Then belvye cam the ither maidens, sayin, 'My lord, my lord, open to us !'

12. "But he answer't, and quo' he, 'Truly say I t'ye, I dinna ken ye !'

13. "Sae, tak ye tent ! for ye ken-na the day nor the 'oor !

14. "For it is juist like a man gaun till anither lan', wha ca'd till him his servants, and gied ower to them his gear.

15. "And to ane he gied fyve talents, to anither twa, and anither ane ; to ilka ane accordin to his ain ability ; and than he gaed on his journey.

16. "Than he that had gotten the fyve talents, gaed and trokit and niffor't wi' the same, and made fyve talents o' increase.

17. "And likewise the ane o' the twa talents, he gained twa mair.

18. "But he that gat the ane, gaed awa and howkit i' the grun', and hid awa his maister's siller.

19. "And, lang eftir, the maister o' thae servants comes ; and has a reckoning wi' them.

20. "And he that had gotten the fyve talents gien him, cam and said, 'My lord ! ye gied me five talents ; see, I haes gotten fyve talents forby !'

21. "His maister says to him, 'Weel dune, gude and leal servant ! ye haes been leal and true ower a wee wheen things ; I wull gie ye charge ower a bantie o' things. Enter ye intil the joy o' yere lord !'

22. "Likewise he o' the twa talents cam forrit, and quo' he, 'My lord ! ye gied me twa talents ; see, I haes gotten twa ither talents !'

23. " His lord said, ' Weel dune, gude and leal servant ! Ye has been leal and true ower a wee wheen things ; I wull gie ye charge ower a bantle o' things. Enter ye intil the joy o' yere lord ! '

24. " He, too, wha had gotten the ae talent, cam ; and quo' he, ' My lord ! I kent ye war a siccar man, shearin whar ye saw'd-na, and gaitherin whar ye cuist-na breid ;

25. " And I was fleyt, and gaed awa, and hid yere talent i' the grun'. See ! ye has yere ain ! '

26. " But his lord answer't him, and quo' he, ' Wicked and feckless servant ! did ye indeed ken that I shear whaur I saw-na, and gaither whaur I cast-na breid ?

27. " War ye no behauden than to gie ower my siller to the bankers ? and at my hame-comin I sould hae gotten back my ain, wi' interest.

28. " Tak, then, the talent frae him ; and gie it to him that has the ten talents !

29. " For to ilk ane wha has, sal be gien, and he sal hae rowth ; but frae him wha wants sal be taen awa e'en what he has !

30. " And cast ye the ungainfu' servant intil the ooter mirk ; thar sal be greetin and cherkin o' teeth !

31. " But whan the Son o' Man sal come in his glorie, and a' the angels wi' him, then sal be sit on the thron o' his glorie.

32. " And a' the nations sal be gaither't afore him ; and he wull pairet them ane frae another, juist as a herd pairet the sheep frae the goats.

33. " And he wull pit the sheep on his richt haun, but the goats on the left.

34. " Then wull the King say to them on his richt haun, ' Come ye, a' blessed o' my Faither ! Inherit the Kingdom made ready for ye frae the up-bigin o' the world !

35. " For I was hunger't, and ye gied me meat ; I was drouthie, and ye gied me drink ; I was a fremd ane, and ye took me in ;

36. " ' Strippit was I, and ye clod me ; I was ill, and ye socht me oot ; I was in thrall, and ye cam till me ! '

37. " Then wull the richtons say to him, ' Lord ! whan saw we thee hunger't, and gied meat ? or drouthie, and gied drink ?

38. " ' Or whan saw we thee a fremd ane, and took thee in ? Or strippit, and clad thee ?

39. " ' Or whan saw we thee ill, and in thrall, and cam to thee ? '

40. " Then sal be answer them, sayin, ' Truly say I t'ye, in-as-muckle as ye did it to ane o' thae my brethren, e'en they least anes, ye did it to me ! '

41. " Then, eke, sal he say to them on his left haun, ' Awa frae me, ye curst, intil nevir-endin lowe, made ready for the deevil and his angels !

42. " For I was hunger't, and ye gied me nae meat ; I was drouthie, and ye gied me nae drink ;

43. " ' I was a fremd ane, and ye took-me-na in ; strippit, and ye dinna cleed me ; ill, and in thrall, and ye socht-me-na ! '

44. " Then, eke, wull they answer, sayin, ' Lord ! whan saw we thee hunger't, or drouthie, or fremd, or strippit, or ill, or in thrall, and dinna ser' thee ? '

45. " Then wull be answer them, sayin, ' In-as-muckle as ye did-it-na till ane o' thir least anes, ye did-it-na to me ! '

46. " And thir sal gang awa intil nevir-endin pyne ; but the richtous intil nevir-endin life."

Tak tent here, that baith the servant that did nocht wi' the talent, and the wicked that gaed awa' to the pit, war condemned, no for what they did, but for what they failed to do ! Fauld yere hauns, and do naething—and yere doom is siccar !

CHAPTIR TWENTY-SAX.

The sweet perfume o' Bethanie. The doot o' the garden. Jesus deliver't up.

A ND sae it cam to pass, that whan Jesus had made an end o' thae sayins, he said to his disciples :

2. "Ye ken that two days mair,
and the Pasche comes; and the Son
o' Man is deliver't up to be crucify't."

3. Than forgather't the Heid-
priests and the Elders o' the nation
intil the palace o' the Heigh-priest—
the ane ca'd Caiaphas.

4. And coonseil't thegither that
they might tak Jesus hidlin, and
slay him.

5. "But," quo' they, "no at the
Feast-time; or thar wad be a stramash
amang the people."

6. Noo, whan Jeans was in Be-
thanie, i' the hoose o' Simon the leper,

7. Thar cam till him a wumman
wi' an alabaster hox o' unco precious
perfume; and she teemed it on his
heid as he was at meat.

8. And the disciples, seein it, war
put aboot, and quo' they, "For what
is siccan a wastrie ?

9. "For this nicht has been sell't
for muckla, and gien to the pnir."

10. But Jesus, takin tent, says to
them, "Why fash ye the wumman ?
For a wark that is bonnie has she
wrocht on me.

11. "For ye aye has the pur w'ye;
but ye hae-na me aye !

12. "For she, strinklin this per-
fume on my heid, did it for my
burial.

13. "Truly say I t'ye, Whaurso-
e'er thir Gude-tidins sal be made
kent i' the hail wORLD, this too o' what
she has done sal be tell't for a me-
morial o' her."

14. Than ane o' the Twal, the ane
ca'd Judas Iscariot, gaed awa to the
Heid-priests,

15. And quo' he tae them, "What
meed wull ye gie me, and I wull de-
liver him up t'ye ?" And they trokit
wi' him for threty merks.

16. And fras that time forrit he
watched for a time to betray him.

17. Noo on the first o' the days o'
the Sad Breid, the disciples cam to
Jesus, askin him, "Whaur wull ye
that we wull mak ready for ye to eat
the Pasche ?"

18. And he says, "Gang awa intil
the citie, tae sic and sic a man, and
spear at him, 'The Maister says, My
time is comin; I keep the Pasche at
yere hoose wi' my disciples !'"

19. And the disciples did o'en as
Jesus tell't them; and they made
ready for the Pasche.

20. Noo whan the e'enin was come,
he sat doon at meat wi' the Twal.

21. And whiles they war eatin, he
said, "Truly say I t'ye, that ane o'
ye wull betray me !"

22. And they were unco wae, and
begude to say to him, ilk ane o'
them, "Is it I, Lord ?"

23. And he said, "He wha dippit
his haun wi' me in the dish, that ane
wull betray me !

24. "The Son o' Man gangs, as it
was written o' him; but wae to that
man by wham the Son o' Man was
deliver't up ! It war gude for yon
man gin he nevir had been born !"

25. And Judas, wha betray't him,
spak, and quo' he, "Is't I, Maister ?"
He says till him, "E'en as ye say !"

26. And as they war eatin, Jesus
took the laif, and gied thanks, and
brak it, and gied to the disciples,
sayin, "Tak, eat; this is my body !"

27. And takin a cup, and giean
thanks, he gied it to them, sayin,
"Drink ye a' o't !

28. "For this is my blinde o' the
New Covenant, whilk is shed for
many, for the pittin-awa o' sins !

29. "But I say till ye, I drink nae
mair forrit o' this frnts o' the vine,
till yon day whan I drink it new wi'
you i' my Faither's Kingdom !"

30. And whan they had sung
praise, they gaed oot intil the Mount
o' Olives.

31. Than says Jesus till them, "A-

¹ V. 18. We ken-na this man; but we
feel as gin we were sib till him, for the
kindness the Lord kent was in his heart !
Some folk think this lairge upper room
(Mark xiv. 15) was the ane whaur
the Spirit cam doon on Pentecost. It is
vera likely; but we dinna ken.

ye sal fin' cause o' stumblin in me this nicht ; for it is putten-doone, 'I wull clour the Shepherd ; and the sheep o' his hirsel sal be scattert abreid !'

32. "But oftir my Risin, I wull gang afore ye intil Galilee."

33. Peter answerin, says to him, "Gin a' soud stumble in thee, yet nevir wad I stumble !"

34. Jesus says to him, "Truly say I t'ye, that this vera nicht, 'or ever the cock craw, ye sal thrice disown me !"

35. Peter threepit to him, "Gin I soud dee wi' thee, yet wull I no disown thee !" And siclike said a' the disciples.

36. Than cam Jesus wi' them intil a place ca'd Gethsemanie ; and says to the disciples, "Sit ye here, till I gang yonner and pray."

37. And takin wi' him Peter and Zebedee's twa sons, he grew unco fn' o' sorrow, and sair putten-aboot.

38. Than says he to them, "My saul is unco sorrowfu', e'en to death ! Bide ye here, and watch wi' me !"

39. And he gaed on a wee bit yont, and fell on his face, and prayed, sayin, "O my Faither ! gin it be possible, lat¹ this cup pass by me ! yet, no as I wull, but as Thou wult !"

40. And he comes till the disciples, and fin's them sleepin ; and quo' he to Peter, "E'en sae ! Coud-ye-na watch wi' me ae 'oor ?

41. "Tak ye tent, and pray, gin ye fa'-na intil temptation ! The spirit is indeed wullin, but the flesh is waff !"

42. Again a second time he gaed aff, and prayed, sayin, "O my Faither ! gin this canna gang by me unless I drink it, Thy wull be done !"

43. And, comin again, he found them sleepin ; for their een had wan heavisome.

44. And he left them again, and gaed awa, and prayed a third time, sayin the same words.

45. And he comes till his disciples, and says he tae them, "Sleepin are ye noo, and takin yere rest ? Tent ye ! the 'oor is at haun ; and the Son o' Man is deliver't intil the haunes o' evil men !

46. "Rise ye, and lat us be gaun ! See, he is at haun wha betrays me !"

47. And e'en while be yet spak, look ! Judas, ane o' the Twal¹, cam, and wi' him a great thrang, wi' swords, and rungs, frae the Heigh-priests, and elders o' the nation.

48. And he wha betrayed him, had gien them a sign, and quo' he, "Wha I sal kiss, that same is he ; grip him !"

49. And at ance he cam to Jesus, and said, "Hail, Maister ! " wi' unco kissin.

50. And Jesus said to him, "Freand, for what did ye come ?" Than cam they, and pat their haunes on Jesus, and grippit him.

51. And see ! ane o' them that war wi' Jesus, rax't oot his haun, and drew a sword, and strack a servant o' the Heigh-priest, and sned aff his lug.

52. Than said Jesus to him, "Put up yere blade intil its place ; for a' they wha tak oot the sword, by the sword sal dee !

53. "Think-ye-na that I coud pray my Faither, and he soud send me mair nor twal¹ legions o' Angels ?

54. "But hoo than coud the Scripture be fulfilled that sae it soud be ?"

55. In that 'oor said Jesus to the thrang, "Cam ye oot as again a robber, wi' swords and rungs to tak me ? I sat day by day, teachin in the Temple, and ye grippit-me-na."

56. But a' this was dune, that the writings o' the Prophets soud come to pass. Than a' his disciples desertit him, and fied.

57. And they wha had taen Jesus led him awa till Caiaphas, the Heigh-priest, whaur the Scribes and the Elders war forgather't.

58. But Peter follow't far ahint,

¹ V. 39.—See Mark xiv. 36, note.

to the Heigh-priest's palace ; and gaed in, and sat wi' the servants, to see the end.

59. Noo the Heid-priests and the hale Cooncil socht fause witnesses again Jesus, that they might pit him to daid ;

60. But faund-them-na, tho' a hantle cam forrit as witnesses. At last cam twa,

61. And said, " This Ane said, ' I am able to destroy the Temple o' God, and up-bigg it in thrie days ! ' "

62. And the Heigh-priest raise, and quo' he, " Answer-ye-na ! What is't that thir are witnessain again ye ? "

63. But Jesus was silent. And the Heigh-priest said, " I adjure ye by the Leevin God, that ye tell us gin ye be The Anointit, the Son o' God ? "

64. Jesus says to him, " Ye haes said it ! Nathelessa, I say t'ye, here-efter sal ye see the Son o' Man seatit at the richt haun o' power, and comin' i' the cluds o' Heeven ! "

65. Than did the Heigh-priest rive his garments, and quo' he, " He has spoken profanely ! What need haes we o' mair witnesses ? Tent ye ! ye haes noo heard his profane speech !

66. " Hoo dis it seem to ye ? " They answer't and said, " He is wordie o' death ! "

67. Than they spat in his face, and baft' him ; and itherstrack him wi' the loof,

68. Sayin, " Prophesie tae na, thou Anointit Ane ! Wha was't that clour'd thee ? "

69. Noo, Peter was sittin oot by i' the coort-yaird : and a maid cam till him, sayin, " Ye war wi' Jesus o' Galilee ! "

70. But he deny't forment them a' ; threepin, " I ken-na what ye're sayin ! "

71. And whan he was gane oot until the porch, anither lassie saw him, and says to them that war thar, " This ane, too, was wi' Jesus, the Nazarene ! "

72. And again he deny't wi' an aith, " I ken-na the man ! "

73. And efter a wee, they that stude by cam and said to Peter, " O' a sooth ye are ane o' them ; for yere tongue tells on ye ! "

74. Than begude he to curse and ban, " I ken-na the man ! " And at ance the cock crew.

75. And Peter ca'd to mind the word Jesus spak, " Afore the cock craw, ye wull thrice disown me ! " And he gaed oot, and grattair.

CHAPTR TWENTY-SEEVEN.

Afore the Governor. At the cross. In the tomb.

WHAN mornin was come, a' the Heid-priests and Elders o' the nation coonsell't thegither again Jesus to compass his death.

2. And they bund him, and led him awa to Pilate the Governor.

3. Than Judae, that betray't him, whan he saw he was condemned, repentitair, and took back the thretty merks to the Heid-priests and Elders,

4. Sayin, " I haes sinned, in deliverin up innocent blude ! " But quo' they, " What is't to us ? See ye till't yersel ! "

5. And he cuist doon the siller i' the Temple, and gaed awa ; and gaengin oot, he hang't himsel.

6. And the Heid-priests liftit the siller, and said, " It faus fit to gang i' the Treasury, seisin it is the price o' blude ! "

7. And, takin advice on't, they coft wi' the potters'-grund, to bury freind anes in.

8. See that grund was ca'd " The Bluidy Field," to this day.

9. Than cam to pass what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, " And they took the thretty merks, the price o' him that had a price set on him, wha was priced among Isra'il's sons ;

10. " And gied them for the

potter's yaird ; as the Lord appointit me."

11. And Jesus stude forment the Governor. And the Governor speir't at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews ?" And Jesus said to him, "Ye haes said it."

12. And bein accused o' the Heid-priests and Elders, he answart nocht.

13. Than said Pilate to him, "Hear ye na hoo mony things they threep again ye ?"

14. And he answer't him no sae muchle as a word ; sae that the Governor ferlied uncolia.

15. Noo, aye at the Feast, the Governor had lowned to them as prisoner, sic aye as they wad.

16. And they had, at that time, a noted prisoner, ca'd Barabbas.

17. Sae when they had forgather't, Pilate speir't at them, "Wham wad ye that I lowne ? Barabbas, or Jesus that is ca'd Christ ?"

18. For he kent that for mere ill-will they had deliver't him up.

19. And as he was on the Jndgment-seat, his¹ wife sent till him, sayin, "Hae ye nocht to do wi' yon just man ! for I haes dree't mony things this day in a dream, on his account."

20. Noo the Heid-priests and the Elders perswadit a' the folk that they soud ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21. And the Governor said to them, "Whilk wull ye, o' the twa, that I soud release ye ?" Quo' they, "Barabbas !"

22. Pilate says to them, "Than what sal I do wi' Jesus, wha is ca'd Christ ?" They a' say, "Lat him be crucify't !"

23. And he said, "Why sae ?

¹ V. 19. E'en as i' the days o' Elijah—we a' mind o' the seven thoosand wha didna bow the knee—the Lord has unco mae disciples than mony folk think ! And I doot-na but that this Claudia Procula (for sae the anld writers gie her name to be) was aye.

What ill has he dune ?" But they cryt oot fierce and lang, "Lat him be crucify't !"

24. Sae Pilate, seein he prevail't na, but that raither a tulzie was risin, had watir, and weash't his hauns afore a' the folk, sayin, "I am innocent o' the blude o' this righteous man : See ye till't !"

25. And a' the folk answer't, "His blude be on us, and on oor bairns !"

26. Than lowned he Barabbas ; but Jesus be lash't, and deliver't him to be crucify't.

27. Than the soldgers o' the Governor, takin Jesus wi' them until the Judgment-ha', gaither't thegither the hail core :

28. And they strippit him, and pat on him a scarlet manteel.

29. And they wove a croon o' thorns, and pat it on his heid, and a reed in his richt haun ; and they loutit doon afore him, and geck't at him, sayin, "Hail, King o' the Jews !"

30. And they spat upon him, and baft' him ower the heid wi' the reed.

31. And whan they had mockt him, they took aff the manteel frae him, and pat on his ain cleedin, and led him awa to be crucify't.

32. And, comin oot, they liebtit on a man o' Cyrene, ca'd Simon ; him they press'd, to cairry the cross.

33. And whan they war come till a place ca'd Golgotha, that is to say, "Skull-place,"

34. They offer't him wine wi' ga' in't ; and whan he had pree'd, he wadna drink.

35. And whan they had crucify't him, they pairtit his cleedin amang theirsels, castin the lot ;

36. And they sat doon and watch't him thar :

37. And pat up ower his heid his accusation, "This is Jesus, King o' the Jews."

38. Than war twa reivers crucify't wi' him, aye on the richt haun, and aye on the left.

39. And the passers-by misca'd him, waggin their heads,

40. And sayin, "Ye that ding doon the Temple, and up-bigg it in thrie days, save yersel ! Gin ye be God's Son, come doon frae the cross ! "

41. And e'en the Heid-priests too, and the Scribes and Elders, said,

42. "Ithers he savt : his ain sel he canna save ! Israëls King he is ! lat him, e'en noo, come doon frae the cross, and we wull lippen on him !

43. "He lippen'd on God : lat him, noo, rescue him, gin he cares ocht for him ! for he said, 'I am God's Son ! '

44. And e'an the reivers that war crucify't wi' him, cuist the same reproach at him.

45. Noo, frae the 'oor o' twal', thar was black mirk ower a' the kintra, to the 'oor o' thrie.

46. And aboot the 'oor o' thrie, Jesus cryt oot wi' a great voice, sayin, "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani !" that is, "My God ! My God ! for why did Thou forsake me ? "

47. And some o' them staunin thar, said. "He was ca'in for Elijah ! "

48. And at ance, ane o' them ran, and took a sponge, fillin it wi' vine-gar, and pat it on a reed, and gied him to drink.

49. Butthelave said, "Hand awa, lat us see gin Elijah comes to rescue him ! "

50. And Jesus cried oot again wi' a great voice, and gied up his spirit.

51. And look ! The Temple-veil was riven in twa, frae tap to bottom, and the grund trimm'l't and the rocks war cleft ;

52. And the tombs war open't ; and a hantel o' the bodies o' the saints wha had faun asleep, raise ;

53. And comin oot o' their tombs aftir his risin-again, they cam intil the holie city, and schawed theirsels to mony.

54. And the officer, and they that war watchin Jesus, when they saw the yirth trimmle, and the things that war dunc, war uncolie fleyt, sayin, 'Truly, this was God's Son ! '

55. Noo, mony weemen war there, lookin on fras far-awa, wha had follow't Jesus fras Galilee, providin for him.

56. And amang them, Mary the Magdalene, and Mary the mither o' James and Josea, and the mither o' Zebedee's sons.

57. And when the gloamin cam on, a rich man fras Arimathea cam, ca'd Joseph ; wha himself was a disciple o' Jesus.

58. This yin, gaun to Pilate, askit for the body o' Jesus. Then Pilate commandit it soud be gien up.

59. And Joseph, when he had taen the body, row't it in a fair linen clath,

60. And laid in his ain new tomb, whilk he had howkit oot i' the rock, and he row't a great stane tae the door o' the tomb ; and gaed awa.

61. And Mary the Magdalene was thar, and the ither Mary, sittin ower forntent the tomb.

62. Noo the neist day—the day aftir the "Preparation"—the Heid-priests and the Pharisées gaither't thagither to Pilate, sayin to him,

63. "Sir, we mind weal that yon deceiver said whan he was yet leevin, 'Aftir thrie deys I wull arise ! '

64. "Gie commaun, thar-for, that the tomb be made sure and siccar till the third day ; see that his disciples come-na and steal him awa, and say to a' folk that 'He is risen frae the deid ! ' see the last deception wad be waur nor the first ! "

65. Pilate said, "Ye'se has a gaird; gang yere ways, and make it as siccar as ye may ! "

66. See they gaed, and made the tomb safe, sealin the stane, and settin a gaird.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-AUCHT.

Risin fras the deid. The soldiers sic pilif're tears. "Gae preach ! "

AND at the hinner-end o' the Sabbath, as it begude to break to the first day o' the week, cam Mary

the Magdalene, and the ither Mary, to see the tomb.

2. And see! a great yirdin! for an Angel o' the Lord cam doon frae Heeven, and cam and row't awa the stane and sat on't.

3. To look at him he was like the fire-flaught, and his cleedin was white as the snow;

4. And, cuisten-doon afore him, the gaard did trimmie, and war as deid men.

5. But the angel, speaking to the weemen, said, "Be-na ye fley't! For I ken ye are seekin Jesus, the crucify't."

6. "He iana here! for he is risen, e'en as he said! Come, see the bit whaur the Lord was lyin."

7. "And gae quickly, and say ye to his disciples, 'He is risen frae the deid!' And mark! be gangs afore ye intil Galilee. Thar sal ye see him. See! I hae tell't ye!"

8. And quickly leavin the tomb, in muckle fear and muckle joy, they ran to tak word to the disciples.

9. And look! Jesus met them, and says, "All hail!" And they cam forrit, and grippit him by the feet, and worshipp't him.

10. Than says Jesus to them, "Fear-na! But gae tell my brethren, me as they may gang intil Galilee; thar sal they see me!"

11. Noo, e'en while they war gaun, some o' the gaard cam intil the citie, and tell't to the Heid-priests a' that had been done.

12. And whan they had forgather't wi' the Elders, and coonseil't thegither, they gied a routh o' siller till the sodgers;

13. And quo' they, "Say ye, 'His disciples cam in the nicht, and slippit awa wi' him when we war sleepin.'

14. "And siblins gin this come afore the Governor, we wull cajole him, and mak it siccar for you!"

15. Sae they liftit the siller, and did as they war tell't; and this tale was spread abraid amang the Jews—aye, e'en to this day.

16. And the eleven disciples gaed awa intil Galilee, to a mountain whaur Jesus had trystit them.

17. And, 'seein him, they adored him; hoobeit, some swither't.

18. And Jesus, drawin nar, spak to them, sayin, "Thar has been gien to me a' pooer in Heeven, and on yirth!"

19. "Gang ye tharfor, and mak ye disciples o' a' the nations, baptisin them intil the name o' the Faither, and o' the Son, and o' the Holie Spirit;

20. "Scawin them hoo till observe a' things, e'en as mony as I hae commandit ye. And tent ye! I am wi' ye a' the days; e'en till a' time!"

¹V. 17. Paul tells that war mair nor fyve hunner o' them (I. Cor. xv. 6). I canna think ony o' them wad continue to swither and doot. But the ferlie o' his Hisin—again was sae great, they bude ha' time to lat the truth get fairly haund o' them!

M A R K.

CHAPTIR ANE.

John and his baptizin. The beginnais o' great works. Wha prays need, works weel!

THE first o' the Blythe-Message o' Jesus Christ, God's Son.

2. E'en as it is putten-doorn by Esaiyah¹ the prophet, "Lo! I send oot my messenger afore thy face, wha sal mak ready thy way for thy comin."

3. "The sough o' ane cryin oot i' the waste, 'Mak ye ready a gate for the Lord! Mak straucht his fit-roads!'"

4. Than raise John, baptexin i' the muirlands, and preachin repentance-baptism for the pittin-awa o' sines.

5. And thar gaed oot till him a' the kintra-side o' Judea, and a' thae o' Jerusalem, and war baptizeet o' him i' the River Jordan, tellin oot their sins.

6. And John was cleedit wi' camels'-hair, and had a leather belt aboot him; and he did eat locusts and rock-binny.

7. And quo' he in his preachin, "Ane sterker nor I comes aftir me, the whang o' whase shoon I am-na fit to lout doon and lowae!"

8. "I watir-bapteeze ye; but he sal bapteeze ye wi' Holie Spirit!"

9. And i' thae days it cam aboot that Jesus cam frae Nazareth i' Galilee and was baptizeet o' John in Jordan.

10. And he, comin straucht frae the watir, saw the heevens unsteekit,

and the Spirit like a doo comin doon upon him.

11. And a voice cam frae Aboon, "Thou art the Beloved, My Son; in Thee I delicht!"

12. And noo the Spirit leads him oot intil the muirlands.

13. And he was i' the muirlands forty days, temptit o' Sautan; and he was wi' the wild beasts; and the Angels waitit on him.

14. And eftir John was deliver't up, Jesus cam intil Galilee, gien oot the Blythe-Message o' God;

15. And sayin, "The waitin-time is by-past, and the Kingdom o' God has come; turn ye, and lippen the Joyfu'-Message!"

16. And gaun on by the Loch o' Galiles, he saw Simon, and Andro (Simon's brither), castin about i' the Loch; for they war fishermen.

17. And Jesus says to them, "Come ye aftir me, and I'll mak ye fishers o' men!"

18. And at ance, lea'in their nets, they follow't aftir him.

19. And gaun on a wee, he saw James, Zebedee's son, and John his brither, i' the boat, pittin their nets i' guid fettle.

20. And at ance he ca'd them; and lea'in their faither i' the boat wi' the fisher-men, they gaed aftir him.

21. And they cam intil Capernamm; and without delay, on the Sabbath day, he cam intil the kirk, and was teachin.

22. And they war uncolie struck wi' astonishment at his teachin; for he spak as gin he had authoritie, and no like the Scribea.

23. And noo, thar was i' the kirk a man wi' a foul spirit; and he cryt oot,

24. Sayin, "What has we wi' thee, thou Jesus o' Nazareth? Hast

¹ V. 2. The second verse is frae Malachi, and is only an introduction to the gressan propheccie o' Esaiyah, in the third verse. A wheen o' the MSS. say "Prophet" or "Prophets"; but the feck o' them, as here, "Esaiyah."

thou come to destroy us? I ken thee, wha thou art—God's Holie Ane!"

25. And Jeans forbad him, sayin, "Haud yere peace! and come oot o' him!"

26. And the foul spirit, rivin, and aryin' wi' a great voice, cam oot o' him.

27. And they war a' astoundit; see that they coonsallit amang their-sels, "What is a' this? A new teachin! Like a Ruler he commands e'en the foul spirits, and they do his wull!"

28. And the fame o' him spread abreid at ance ower a' the hiel kintra-side o' Galilee roond aboot.

29. And noo, comin oot o' the kirk, they gaed intil the hoose o' Simon and Andro, wi' James and John.

30. Noo Simon's gude-mither was lyin wi' a fivver; and syne they tellt him aboot her.

31. And he gaed ben, and took her by the haun, and rais't her up; and the fivver left her: and she waitit on them.

32. And at e'enin, i' the gloamin,¹ they brocht till him a' them that war ill, and them possess'd wi' spirits;

33. And the hiel toun forgather't at the door.

34. And he healed mony that war ill wi' a' diseases; and cuist oot mony demons; and wadna lat the demons speak; for they kent him.

35. And i' the mornin, lang afore the dawin, he raise up and gaed oot, and airtit him till a desert-bit, and was thar prayin.

36. And Simon, and the lave, follow't estir.

37. And they found him, and quo' they to him, "A' folk seek thee!"

38. And he says to them, "Let us gang awa to the neist toons, that

I may preach thar as weel; for to this end cam I oot."

39. And he gaed intil the kirks a' throwe Galilee, preachin and castin oot demons.

40. And thar cam till him a leper, and besoacht him, and loutit doon afore him, sayin to him, "Gin aiblins thou wad, thou can mak me clean!"

41. And, touch't wi' rewth, he rax't oot his haun, and touch't him, and quo' he, "I wull; be ye clean!"

42. And at ance the leprosy gaed frae him, and he was recover't.

43. And he strickleie charged him; and than bed him awa;

44. And says to him, "See! say ye nocht to ony; but gang yare ways, and schaw yersel to the priest, and offer for yare makin-clean what Moses pat doon, to testify to them."

45. But he gaed oot, and begude to spread abreid the tale, see that Jesus coud-na gang intil ony citie, but was oot-by in desert-places: and they war comin till him frae a' pairts.

CHAPTIR TWA.

*Doon throwes the rippin! Levi bidden.
Arent fastin, and the Sabbath.*

A NCE mair comin intil Capernaum, it was reportit, "He isneath a roof again!"

2. And at ance the folk a' gaither't thegither, see that thar was nae room, no e'en aboot the door: and He spak the word to them.

3. And they cam, and brocht a man wi' a stroke, cairryt by fowr.

4. And no bein able to fash him in for the thrang, they strippit the rippin whaur Jesus was; and brekka throwes it, they lat doon the pallet on whilk the paralytic lay.

5. Whan Jesus saw their faith, quo' he to the paralytic, "Son, yere sins are forgien ye!"

6. But a wheen o' the Scribes bad suttent doon thar; and quo' they i' their hearts,

7. "Hoo is't that this ane speaks

¹ V. 32. The Sabbath-day—when mony o' them wadna e'en cairry a sick ane to be healed—bein noo past, they fash't them a' oot to the Great Physician!

nae ! He blasphemeth ! Wha can forgie sins, an it be na God ? "

8. And at ance, Jesus, takin tent in his ain spirit that they thocht thir things, says to them, " Why soud ye haes sic debatin i' yer ain hearts ? "

9. " Whilk, think ye, is easier ? to say, ' Yere sins are forgi'en ', or to say, ' Rise ye, and walk ! '

10. " But that ye may ken the Son o' Man has power on the yirth to forgie sins " —(he says to the paralytic),

11. " I say to ye, Rise ; row up yere pallet, and gang yere ways till yere ain boose ! "

12. And he raise up, and grippet his pallet, and gaed oot afore them ' ; nae that they war clean beside theirsels, and glorify't God, sayin, " We ne'er saw sic things ! "

13. And he gaed forth again by the side o' the Loch ; and a' the thrang war comin aboot him, and he was teachin them.

14. And, gaun by, he saw Levi, he o' Alpheus, in chairge o' the tax-gatherin ; and says till him, " Come ye wi' me ! " And he raise, and follow't him.

15. And whan he was at table in his boose, mony tax-men and sinners eat doon wi' Jesus and his disciples : for they war mony.

16. And they follow't him, e'en the Scribes and the Pharisees ; and whan they saw he was eatin wi' sinners and tax-men, said to his disciples, " He eats and drinks wi' sinners and tax-men ! "

17. And hearin it, Jesus says to them, " The strang and the weel has nae need o' the leech, but the anes that are ill. I cam no to bid ² holie anes, but sinners."

¹ V. 15. Jesus, nae doot, tho' the feck o' the MSS. merely say " he. " And the house was Levi's ; we ken him best as " Matthew. "

² V. 17. Ane that thinks his sel to be holie (as they did), pits the gracious bode bye him. " It's do for me ! " quo' he ; and times a' !

18. And the followers o' John and o' the Pharisees war fastin ; and they come and quo' they, " Hoo is't that John's disciples, and the Pharisees' disciples fast, and the disciples ye mak dinna fast ? "

19. And quo' Jesus to them, " Coud the sons o' the bride-chaumer fast, and the bridegroom amang them ? Sac lang as the bridegroom blyes wi' them, they canna fast ! "

20. " But the days come whan the bridegroom is to be taen awa frae them ; and than, i' thae days, sal they fast.

21. " Nane evir schews a ' clout o' unwaikit clath on an auld coat, or aiblins the new bit rives awa frae the auld, and the rent is the waur. "

22. " And nane evir teems new wine intil auld wine-skins ; or aiblins the wine will rive the skins, and the wine is tint, and the skins baith ; but new wine gangs intil fresh wine-skins. "

23. And it cam aboot that he gaed throwe the fields o' corn on the Sabbath ; and his disciples begude to mak their way, pluckin the heids o' the corn.

24. And the Pharisees say to him, " See ! hoo is't they do on the Sabbath what is no allowt ? "

25. And says he to them, " Did ye nevir read what Dauvid did, whan he had need, and hunger't ; he and thae wi' him ? "

26. " How he gaed intil God's Hoose, i' the time o' Abiathar, the Heigh-priest, and did eat the Breid o' the Presence, whilk isna to be eaten but by the priests : and gied e'en to them that war wi' him ? "

27. And said he to them, " The Sabbath was made for man's sake, and no man for the Sabbath's sake. "

28. " And sae the Son o' Man is maister e'en o' the Sabbath ! "

³ V. 21. A clout o' new clath, aiblins, on an auld coat ; but nevir Christ's New Testament doctrines cloutit on the Ceremonial Law !

CHAPTIR THRIE.

The wizzen'd haun. The twal' waled oot.
"Wha's my mither?"

AND he cam again to the kirk; and a man was thar wi' a wizzen'd haun.

2. And they keepit watch ower him, gin he wad heal him on the Sabbath; see as they might wyte him.

3. And quo' he to the man wi' the wizzen'd haun, "Staun forth i' the mids!"

4. And to them, quo' he, "Is richt on the Sabbath to do guude or to do ill? to save life or to slay?" But they said nocht.

5. And lookin roond aboot on them wi' indignation—havin grief for sic hardenin o' their hearts—he says to the man, "Rax oot yere haun!" And he strauchtit it oot; and his haun was made richt.

6. And the Pharisees gaed oot, and begude coonsellin wi' Herod's party again him, hoo they might mak awa wi' him?

7. And Jesus, wi' his disciples, retir't to the Loch; and a great thrang frae Galilee follow't; and frae Judea,

8. And frae Edom, and ayont Jordan; and aboot Tyre and Sidon, a great thrang, hearin a' the things that he did, cam till him.

9. And he spak to his dieciples, that a sma' boat soud wait on him, on account o' see mony folk: that they soudna strang him.

10. For he healed a hantle o' them; and they wi' plagues preas't on him to touch him.

11. And foul spirita, whan they saw him, fell at his feet, cryin oot, "Thou art God's Son!"

12. And he chairged them strickle that they soud-na mak him to be kent.

13. And he gaed up the mountaint; and cried to him wham he wad has; and they cam till him.

14. And he waled oot twal', that they might be wi' him, and see as he could send them oot to preach;

15. And to has authoritie to expel demons.

16. And he gied the name Peter to Simon;

17. And James; and John, brither o' James; them he ca'd "Boanerges," meanin, "Men o' Thunner."

18. And Andro, and Philip, and Bartholomie, and Matthew, and Tammas, and James o' Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Zealot.

19. And Judas Iscariot, wha e'en deliver't him up. And they gaed intil a hoose.

20. And the thrang cam thegither again; see that they coudna e'en get their breid eaten.

21. And hearin o't, his ain folk gaed oot to grip him; for they said, "He's clean wud!"

22. And the Scribes—the anes that cam doon frae Jerusalem—said, "He has Beelzebul;" and, "by the prince o' the demons, the demons are cuisten oot."

23. And he brocht them nar, and says to them in parables, "Hoo is't that Santan casts oot Santan?"

24. And, "Gin a kingdom be set again itsel, that kingdom maun fa'!"

25. And, "Gin a hoose be set again itsel, that hoose canna staun!"

26. And, "Gin Santan rise up again his sel, and be twa, he canna staun, but comes till an end."

27. "Nae man comes intil the hald o' a mighty man, to harrie his guudes and gear, till he has first hund-doon the strang ane; and than wull he harrie his hoose.

28. "Truly say I t'ye, a' things sal be forgien to the sons o' men, and a' the sins, and a' the misca'in they misca' wi'!"

29. "But wha sal misca' the Holie Spirit has pardon nevir! but is fetter'd by an eternal ² sin!"

¹ V. 28. We wad n' like to see sic an end o' Santan's pooper; but we maunna think Santan his sel wad help it forrit!

² V. 29. Haud ye aye in fear o' sinnin again the Holie Spirit! Wha dis that, has ae fit in hell already!

30. For that they war sayin, "He has a foul spirit!"

31. Than cam his mither and his brithers ; and stannin oot-by, they sent till him, and ea'd him.

32. And thar war mony folk sittin about him ; and they say to him, "See ! yere mither and yere brithers are oot-by, seeking ye !"

33. And he, answerin them, said, "Wha is my mither and my brithers?"

34. And, lookin roond on these sittin about him, he says, "See ! my mither and my brithers !"

35. "For wha dis the wull o' God, that same is my brither, and sister, and mither !"

CHAPTIR FOWR.

The sawer and the seed : and what the seed soud be. The stillin o' the storm.

AND he begude again to teach by the Loch-side. And an unco thrang gather't till him, sae that he gaed intil a boat, and eat i' the Loch ; and a' the folk war by the Loch, on the lan'.

2. And he was teachin them a hantle o' things in his parables, and said to them in his teaching,

3. "Hear ye ! Behauld, a sawer gaed oot to saw ;

4. "And it cam aboot as he sawed, some was strinkt' aside the fit-road ; and the burdies cam and devoor't it.

5. "And some fell on rocky bits, whaur it faund little mool ; and at ance it brairdit, for that the mool was jimp.

6. "And whan the sun raise haigh, it was a' birlt' up ; and for that it had nae rute, it dwined awa.

7. "And ither fell amang the thorns ; and the thorns cam up, and smooered it, and it brocht forth naething.

8. "And ither fell intil the gude grun', and gied frute, risin up and growin mair ; and brocht forth to thretty-fauld, saxty-fauld, and a hunner-fauld."

9. And he said, "Wha has hearin to hear, lat him hear !"

10. And whan he cam to be by his sel alone, thae that war aboot him, wi' the Twal', speir't at him aboot the Parable.

11. And he says to them, "To you the mysteries o' the Kingdom o' God hae been gien ; but to them oot-by, a' thir things aro gien in parables ;

12. "Sae that lookin they may look, and no see ; and hearin they may hear, and no understand : gin aiblins they soud turn, and it soud be forgi'en them."

13. And he says to them, "Ken ye-na this parable ? Hoo then wull ye ken a' the parables ?

14. "The sawer saws the Word.

15. "And thir are they by the fit-road, when the Word is sown ; and whansoe'er they hear, Sautan comes and cleeks awa the Word whilk was sown amang them.

16. "And thir are they as weel, that are sown on the rocky bits ; wha, when they hear the Word, tak it to them wi' joy,

17. "And they hae nae rute in their sels, but staun only for a wee ; than when fash and persecution arises for sake o' the Word, at ance they snapper and fa'.

18. "And ither are they sown amang thorns ; they that hear the Word ;

19. "And the cark o' the wairld, and the glamor o' riches, and the fainness for ither things comin in, ding oot the Word, and it is unfrutefu'.

20. "And yon are they on the gude grun' sown, sic as hear the Word, and tak it in, and bear frute : thretty, saxty, and a hunner-fauld."

21. And he said to them, "Dae ye fash a liecht and pit it under a cog, and no to be putten on the staun ?

22. "For naething is hidden, except aiblins that it might be brecht oot ; nor was keepit secret, but that it soud come to liecht.

23. "Gin ony man has hearin to hear, lat him hear!"

24. And he said to them, "Tak tent what ye hear! in sic measur as ye gie, it sal be measur't to ye again—and mair!"

25. "For he wha has, sal hae mair gien to him; and he wha has-na, frae him sal be ta'en e'en what he has!"

26. And he said, "Sae is God's kingdom, as gin a man soud cast the seed on the yird;"

27. "And soud sleep and rise, nicht and day; and the seed soud braird, and be raxin oot, he kens-na what way:

28. "For the yird brings forth frute o' itsel; first the braird; aftir, the heid; aftir, the fu' pickle i' the heid.

29. "But whansoever the frute wad gie itsel up, he pits in the heuk, for that the hairst has come."

30. And he said, "To what sal we marrow God's kingdom? or wi' whatna pictur sal we pictur it?"

31. "Like to a seed o' the mustard; whilk, when it is sown i' the yirth, is sma'er than a' the seeds sown i' the yirth.

32. "Yet when it is sown, it schutes up, and comes to be greater than a' the yerba; and schutes oot great branches, sae that the burdies o' the air may howff under the beild o't."

33. And wi' a hantle o' sic-like parables spak he to them the Word, as they war fit to hear it.

34. And but in parables¹ spak he na to them; and when they war by their sels, he exponed a' things to his disciples.

35. And the same day, when

gleamin had come, he says to them, "Let us gang ower till the ither side."

36. And sendin awa the thrang, they tak him, juist as they faund him, i' the boat; and ither boats war wi' them.

37. And thar cam up a great tempest o' win'; and the waves war dashin ower intil the boat, sae that the boat was fillin.

38. And he was i' the stern-sheets o' the boat, sleepin on a wee pallet; and they rouse him, cryin, "Master! care-ye-na that we perish!"

39. And he roued up, and challenged the win'; and said to the Loch, "Peace! Be quate!" And the win' gaed doon, and a' was lown.

40. And he said to them, "Why soud ye be fley'd? Hae ye no yet faith?"

41. And they war in unco terror; and quo' they ans till anither, "Wha can this be, that e'en the win's and the waves obey him?"

CHAPTR FYVE.

An awfu'-omesse's aye. A lause brocht to life.

AND they cam to the ither side, to the pairts o' the Geresenea.

2. And when he was come oot o' the boat, strauchtway thar cam till him oot o' the tombs, a man wi' a foul spirit,

3. Wha dwalt amang the tombs: and no e'en wi' a chain was ony ane langer able to haund him:

4. For he had aft been haunden wi' fettters and chains; and the chain had been pu'd sindry, and the fettters he brak in flindars: and nae man was sterke eneuch to tame him.

5. And aye nicht and day was he i' the tombs and i' the mountainea, cryin oot, and gashin his sel wi' stanes.

6. And seein Jesus frae far yont, he ran and worshipp't him.

7. And cry't oot wi' a lood voice, "What is thar atween thee and me, Jesus? Son o' God maist heigh!"

¹ V. 34. Gin he had spoken plain to them, and tellt them his Divine character, and the spiritual natur o' his Kingdom, they wadna hae listened to him: but he gied them *parables* to cairry hame, and for the Holie Spirit to work on them wi'. A hantle o' them wad see belvye!

adjure thee by the name o' God, torment-me-na!"

8. For he was sayin till him, "Come forth, thou foul spirit!"

9. And he speir't at him, "What name hae ye?" And he answer't sayin, "Legion is my name: for we are mony!"

10. And he was unco beseechin that he wadna send them awa clean oot o' thae parts!

11. And noo thar war nar the mountain a great herd o' swine, feedin.

12. And they besoacht him, "Let us gang intil the swine, that we may enter intil them!"

13. And he loot them gang. And the foul spirits gaed oot, and gaed intil the swine; and the herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch: aboot twa thoosand; and war drooned i' the Loch.

14. And they that herdit the swine fled, and tall't it i' the eitie and i' the kintra; and they cam oot to see what was dune.

15. And they cam to Jesus, and saw him that was possess't wi'demons, sittin, cleedit, and in soond mind—the ane that had the legion—and they war awfu' feart.

16. And the onlookers tell't them hoo it had fared wi' him that was possess't o' the demons, and aboot the swine as weel.

17. And they begude to pray him to gang awa frae their pairts.

18. And as he gaed intil the boat, he that had been in the pooer o' the demons besoacht him that he nicht be wi' him.

19. And he didna alloo him; but quo' he till him, "Gang till yer hame, till yere freends, and I'll tell them hoo

great things the Lord has dune for ye, and had mercie on ye."

20. And he gaed awa, and begude to spread abraid i' the Ten Cities, hoo great things Jesus had done for him. and a' men ferlied.

21. And when Jesus had gane ower again i' the boat to the ither side, a great thrang war gather't till him; and he was nar-hann the Loch.

22. And thar cam aye o' the elders o' the kirk, by name Jairus; and whan he saw him, he fell doon at his feet,

23. And wi' muckle beseechin said, "My wee dochter is at death's door; gin thou wad but come and lay thy hauns on her she wad be saved, and she wad leave!"

24. And he gaed wi' him; and an unco crood follow't him; and they thrangit him.

25. And a ² wumman, wha had a flowin' o' blude for twal years,

26. And had dree'd muckle under mony doctors, and wared a' her gear, and was nane the better, but raither grew waor—

27. Whan she heard o' the things aboot Jesus, cam i' the thrang abint, and touched his cleedin.

28. For quo' she to hersel, "Gin I but touch his cleedin, I'll be made hale!"

29. And at ance the fountain o' her blude was stayed, and she kent in hersel that she was deliver't frae that plague.

30. And Jesus, takin tent o' pooer gaun oot frae him, turned aboot i' the thrang, and said, "Wha touched me?"

31. And the disciples said to him, "Thou sees the thrang pressin' on thee, and thou says, 'Wha touched me?'"

¹ V. 19. This man kent Christ's wark and character better than the lave; and waans forbidden to tell what he had fund. Others o' them, wha wad hae nae Saviour frae sin, but only frae the Romans, he ga'nt keep quate.

32. And he lookit weel roond, to see her wha had done this thing.

33. And the wumman, swarfin' wi' fear, kennin what was done till her, cam forrit and fell doon afore him, and tellt him a' the truth.

34. And quo' he to her, "Dochter, yere faith has made ye hale; gang in peace, and be hale o' yere plague!"

35. But e'en while he spak, cam they free the kirk-elder's hoose to say, "Yere dochter's deid! Hoo sood ye fash the Master mair?"

36. But at ance Jesus, overhearin what was said, says to the kirk-elder, "Fear-na; only lippen!"

37. But he loot nae follow him, but only Peter and James and John (James' brither).

38. And they cam intil the hoose o' the kirk-elder; and he saw a fash, and folk greetin and wailin uncolie.

39. And whan he cam in, quo' he to them, "Hoo mak ye a' this ado, and greetin? The lassie's no deid, but sleepin."

40. And they leuch at him. But he, whan he had putten them a' oot, took the faither o' the wean, and the mither, and them that war wi' him, and gaed ben whaur the lassie was.

41. And takin the hain o' the wean, he says till her, "Talitha cumi!" that is, "Lassie, wauken!"

42. And at ance the lassie raise, and gaed aboot; for she was twal year auld. And they ferlied wi' an unco amazement.

43. And he charged them tichtly that nae sond ken o't; and spak for her to hae some meat.

CHAPTIR SAX.

"*Jesus this the Carpenter?*" John's heid fa's. *He that could antife fyne thoosand men wi' fyne bannocks and two speldrins, nicht weel walk the sea!*

AND he gaed oot frae that, and cam till his ain kintra-side: and his disciples followt wi' him.

2. And whan the Sabbath cam, he begude to teach i' the kirk; and the

thrang hearin him, war astoundit, and quo' they, "Whaur gat this ane thir things?" And, "Whatna leair is this that is gien to this ane?" And, "Sic warks o' pocer he pits frae his hamus!"

3. "Is this no the carpenter, Mary's son, brither to James and Joses, and Judas and Simon?" And are na his sisters here wi' us?" And they took a scunner at him.

4. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is no wantin his honors gin it be-na in his ain place, and amang his ain freends, and in his ain hooes."

5. And he coondna fii' to do ony wark o' pocer thar, mair than to lay his hauns on a wheen sick folk, and to heal them.

6. And he was uneolie puttan aboot wi' their unbelievin. And he gaed a' roond in the wee toons, teachin.

7. And he ca'd till him the Twa', and begude to send them oot, twa¹ and twa; and he gied them pocer ower foul spirits;

8. And charged them to tak nocht for the journey, but only a staff; nae bannocks, nae wallet, nae plack i' their purse;

9. But only shod wi' sandals. And quo' he, "Pit-na on twa coata."

10. And he said to them, "Intil whatna place ye gang till a hooes, bide thar till ye gang awa frae the place.

11. "And whatna place will-na receive ye, nor hear to ye, as ye gang oot frae't, flaff aff the vera grymin' o' mool frae yare feet for a witness again them."

12. And gaun oot, they preached that men nicht repeat.

13. And they cuist oot mony demons, and anointit wi' oyle a hantle o' sick anes, and made them hale.

¹ V. 7. The Lord aye sent them oot twa-and-twa. And the Apostles seemed aye to gang the same. We're whiles no see wynn in sendin oot messengers in oor day!

14. And King Herod heard ; for his name was muckle spoken o' : and he said, "John Baptist has risen frae the deid ! and thus their pouers are wrocht in him."

15. But ithers war threepin, "It is Elijah !" And ithers again, "A Prophet !" or, "Like ane o' the Prophets !"

16. But Herod, comin to hear, said, "John, wham I beheidit is risen frae the deid !"

17. For Herod his sel had sent oot, and laid haud o' John, and putten him in prisou, for the sake o' Herodias, his brother Philip's wife ; for he had marryt her.

18. For John tallt Herod, "It is no alloo'd for ye to has the wife o' yere brither !"

19. And sae Herodias held a grudge again him, and wad hae slain him : but she coudna.

20. For Herod was in fear o' John, kennin him to be a just and holie man, and keepit him safe : and listenin till him, he did a hantle o' things, and was fain to hear him.

21. And a fit day comin, whan Herod on his birthday made a feast for his nobles, and the heigh rulers, and chiefs o' Galilee ;

22. And the dochter o' this vera Herodias cam in and danced, she sae took wi' Herod and them feastin wi' him, that the King said to the wench, "Demand o' me what ye wull, and I'll gie ye !"

23. And he swure to her, "Whatever ye demand o' me, I'll gie ye, e'en to the hauf o' my Kingdom !"

24. And she gaed oot, and said to her mither, "What sal I ask !" and quo' she, "The heid o' John Baptist !"

25. And she cam ben quickly to the King, and askit, sayin, "I wull that ye gie me, balvye, the heid o' John Baptist on a server !"

26. And the King was unco cuisten-doон ; but for his aiths, and for them that feastit wi' him, he wadna refuse her.

27. And without delay the King sent oot ane o' his gaird, and gied orders to bring his heid : and he gaed and beheidit him i' the prison ;

28. And he brocht his heid on a server, and gied it to the wench, and the wench gied it to her mither.

29. And when his disciples heard o't, they cam and took up his body, and laid it in a tomb.

30. And the Apostles gather't theirsels thegither to Jesus ; and they tellt him as mony things as they had dune, and what they had been teachin.

31. And he said to them, "Come ye by yersels apartnt intil a desert-bit, and rest yersels for a wea." For thar war mony comin and gann, that they coudna get their breid eaten.

32. And they gaed awa quately i' the boat, till a desert spot.

33. And mony saw them gaun aff, and took tent ; and a-fit, oot o' a' the cities, they ran, and wan there afore them.

34. And he cam oot, and saw an unco thrang : and he had pitie on them, for they war as sheep wantin a Shepherd : and he begude to teach them mony things.

35. And whan the day was nar endit, his disciples cam till him, and quo' they, "This place is desert, and the gloamin is comin on :

36. "Send them awa, that they gang to the kintra and intil the neebor touns, and buy theirsels fendin."

37. And he answerin, says to them, "You gie them to eat !" And they say to him, "Sal we gang and ware twa bunner siller-pennies on breid, and gie them to eat ?"

38. He says to them, "Hoo mony laives has ye ? gang and see !" And whan they had speir't, they say "Fyve, and twa speldrina."

39. And he gied orders that a' soud sit doon,¹ banquet-like, on the green gress.

1. V. 39. In hauf-circles ; a hammer in ilka ane. But gif ye ca' them "ranks," than wad be fifty in ilka rank. (See v. 40.)

40. And they loutit doon in order, in fifties and bunnern.

41. And he took the fyve bannocks and the twa speldrines, and lookit up till Hleeven, and bless't, and brak the bannocks, and gaed on giean to the disciples to ser' them : and the speldrines portioned he oot to them a'.

42. And they a' did eat, and war satisfy't.

43. And they gather't what was ower o' the bannocks, and o' the fish, twa baskets fu'.

44. And they that did eat the bannocks war aboot fyve thoosand men.

45. And noo he wad hae his disciples to gang intil the boat, and gang ower to the other side—by Bethsaida—while he skul't the thrang.

46. And efter he had pairtit wi' the thrang, he gaed up intil the mountain to pray.

47. And whan the e'enin cam on, the boat was in the mids o' the Loch, and he alone on the lan'.

48. And seein them sair forfachten wi' the rowin—for the win' was contrar—about the himmaist watch o' the nicht he cam till them, walkin on the Loob ; and seemed to gang by them.

49. But they, seein him walkin on the Loch, thocht it had been a ghaist, and cry't oot.

50. For they a' saw him, and war sair putten-aboot. But he begude to speak to them, and says to them, "Cheer-up ! be-na fley't !"

51. And he cam up to them, intil the boat ; and the win' gaed doon. And they war sair amazed ayont a measur, and ferlied.

52. For they couldna comprehend aboot the bannocks ; for their heart was turned hard.

53. And gangin ower, they cam to the lan' o' Gennesaret ; and ty't up at the shore.

54. And whan they war come oot o' the boat, he was kent at ance.

55. And they ran through a' thar-awa roond aboot, and begude to

carry aboot on their pallets them that war sick, whaure'er they heard he was.

56. And ilka place he gaed till—until wee towns, or cities, or a wheen hooses thegither—they lay doon the sick i' the merkit-places ; and besocht him that abline they micht tonch but the vera fringe o' his mantle : and as mony as touched war made hale.

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

The Pharisees wudit to wech their hearts mair nor their hauns. The Cananide wether wha wadna gang without a blessta. Speech and hearin at his bidden !

1. ND thar are gather't aboot him the Pharisees, and the Scribes that had come doon fras Jerusalem.

2. And, takin tent that some o' his disciples war eatin braid wi' unpurify't—that is, unwashen—hauns, they challenged them.

3. For the Pharisees, and a' the Jews, gin they weash-na their hauns religioualy, eat-na ; haudin fast the traditions o' the Elders.

4. And comin fras the merkit—gin they weash-na their aels, they eat-na. And mony mair things are thar that they haes acceptit to hand ;—purifyin o' cups and stowps, coppers and table-couches.

5. And the Pharisees and the Scribes speir at him, "Hoo is't thy disciples gang-na conform to the tradition o' the Elders, but eat their braid wi' unpurify't hauns ?"

6. But he said, "Weel did Esaiyah prophesie o' you, dissemblers ! as it is putten doon :—' This nation honor me wi' their lips, but their heart they haud faur-awa fras me !

7. "But they offer devotion to me in vain, teachin as precepts the commandments o' men.'

8. "For haein put-awa God's command, ye haud fast the tradition o' men—purifyin o' cups and stowps ; and mony sic-like things ye do."

9. And he said to them, "Fu' weel ye reject the commaun o' God, that ye may hand yer ain tradition.

10. "For Moses said, 'Honor yere faither and yere mither: and whan revile faither and mither, by death lat him dee.'

11. "But ye say, Gin a man sal say to his faither or his mither, 'Whatsoe'er ye nicht hae frae me is Corban,'—that is, dedicate to God—

12. "Ye nae mair suffer him to do aucht for his faither or his mither,

13. "Makin void God's word by yere tradition ye haes deliver't! And mony sic things ye do."

14. And ca'in to him the thrang o' folk again, he says to them, "Hear me, every ane o' ya, and understandin!"

15. "Thar is naething frae¹ without a man, enterin intil him, can fyle him; but the things that gas forth oot o' the man, they fyle him.

16. "Gin ony ane has hearin to hear, lat him tak tent!"

17. And whan he was come intil the hoose frae the thrang, his disciples speir't at him anent the parable.

18. And he says to them, "Are even you wantin discernment? Can ye no see that whatsoe'er frae without that comes intil the man, canna fyle him?

19. "For it comes-na ben intil his heart, but only to his stammack; and gae's intil the sewer, purifyin a' meat."

20. This he said, moreover, "What comes forth oot o' the man, that fyles the man!

21. "For frae within, frae ben i' the hearts o' men, ill designs come forth: lecherie, thefts, murders,

22. "Adulteries, covetins, knaveries, deceit, wantonness, envy, evil-speakin, loftiness, foolishness;

23. "A' thir ill things proceed

frae within, and they fyle the man!"

24. And frae thar he raise, and gaed intil the borders o' Tyre and Sidon. And he enter't intil a hoose, and wad haes nae man ken; but he coudna be keepit private.

25. But forthwith a wumman, whose wee dochter had a foal spirit, hearin' about him, cam and fell down at his feet.

26. The wumman was a Greek, a Canaanite by blude; and she besoicht him that he wad cast the demon oot o' her dochter.

27. And he said to her, "The bairn soud first be satisfies'; it isna bonnie to tak the bairn's breid, and cast it to the dowga."

28. But she answer't, and said to him, "E'en sae, Lord; yet the wee dowga beneath the table eat o' the mools o' the bairns!"

29. And he said to her, "For that word, gang yare ways; the demon has gane forth oot o' yere dochter."

30. And gann awa to her hoose, she faund the bairn lyin on the couch, and the demon gane forth.

31. And again, gann forth oot o' the pairts o' Tyre, he cam throwe Sidon to the Loch o' Galilee, up throwe the pairts o' the Ten Cities.

32. And they bring to him ane that can hear nane, and speak but a wee; and they beg that he wad lay his hand on him.

33. And he led him aside frae the thrang, and pat his fingers intil his lugs, and touched his tongue wi' spittle;

34. And lookin up to heeven, he gied a sigh, and said, "Ephphatha!" that is, "Be thou unbarred!"

35. And his lugs war unsteikit, and the string o' his tongue was lowsed, and he spak plain.

36. And he instruckit them that they soud tell name: but accordin as he instruckit them, see muckle the mair did they tell o't:

37. And they were astonisht ayent

¹ V. 15. Whan wull folk learn that it's no what's done to a man, but what a man dia, that distinguishes the man?

a' bounds, sayin, "He has done a' things weel ! He gars e'en the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak !"

CHAPTRIE AUCHT.

Four thousand' fel. What Peter said. Takin up the Cross.

IN thae days, whan again there was a great thrang, and they had naething to eat, Jesus ca'd his disciples, and said to them,

2. "I hae pitie on the folk ; for they has been wi' me now thrie days, and has-na to eat.

3. "And gin I send them hungerin awa to their hames, they will swarf by the way ; for a hantie o' them comes frae far awa."

4. And his disciples answer't him, "In whatna gate caud we be able to fill thir men wi' bannocks, here in a wilderness ?"

5. And he speir's at them, "Hoo mony bannocks hae ye ?" And they said, "Seeven."

6. And he commandit the thrang to lout doon on the grun' : and takin the seeven bannocks, and giean thanks, he brak, and gied to his disciples to set afore them ; and they set afore the thrang.

7. And they had a wheen sma' speldrins ; and he bleas't, and bed them set them on as weel.

8. And they did eat, and war satisfyt : and they took up o' the broken bits ower, seeven creels-fu'.

9. Noo, they that war eatin war aboot fourt thoosan' ; and he sent them awa.

10. And without delay, gaun intil a boat wi' his disciples, he cam intil the kintra-side o' Dalmanutba.

11. And oot cam the Pharisées, and begude to argue wi' him ; seekin frae him some token frae Heeven—tempin him.

12. And deeply mairin in hisaul, he says, "Why soud this generation ask a token ? Truly say I t'ye, nae token sal be gien till this generation !"

13. And he left them, and again lauchin oot, cam to the ither sida.

14. And they forgot to tak laives ; nor had they i' the boat wi' them mair nor ae bannock.

15. And he warned them, "Tak tent, beware o' the barm o' the Pharisées, and the barm o' Herod !

16. And they war coonsellin amang theirsels, "We hae brocht nae laives !"

17. And Jesus, takin tent, says to them, "Why soud ye be quaistemin thegither for that ye hae nae laives ? Dae ye no yet see nor understand ? Hae ye yore heart hardened yet ?

18. "Hae ye een, and see-na ? and luga, and hear-na ? and dae ye no ca' to mind ?

19. "When I brak the fyve bannocks to the fyve-thoosan', hoo mony basketa-fu' o' mools took ye up ?" They say to him, "Twal."

20. "And whan the seeven for the fourt-thoosan', hoo mony creels-fu' o' the mools did ye tak up ?" And they said, "Seeven."

21. And he says to them, "Dae ye no yet comprehend ?"

22. And they cam intil Bethsaida ; and they bring till him ane blin', and beseech him to touch him.

23. And he laid hand o' the blin' man by the hauns, and brocht him forth oot o' the toon ; and whan he had putten spittle on his een, and putten his hauns on him, he speir't at him, "Dae ye see ancht ?"

24. And he lookit up, and said, "I see men ; for they are like trees, walkin aboot !"

25. And again¹ he pat his hauns on his een, and he saw clearly and was restored ; seain' a' things in splendor.

26. And he sent him awa till his hame ; sayin, "Naither gang intil

¹ V. 25. The man needit faith mair nor he needit sicht ; and siblins it was necessar to wankin his faith. A hantie o' folk are that gate !

the toun, nor tell it to ony in the toun!"

27. And Jeems gaed and his disciples, intil the toons o' Philip's Cesarea; and i' the way he says to his disciples, "Wha dae man say I am?"

28. And they answer't, "John the Baptist; but others Elijah; and a wheen, ane o' the Propheta."

29. And he speir't at them, "Wha say ye I am?" Peter answers and says to him, "Thou art the Anointit Ane!"

30. And he straitly charged them to tell nae man o' him.

31. And he begude to schaw them that the Son o' Man man dree mony things, and be rejeckit o' the Elders, and the Heid-priests, and the Scribes, and be slain; and eftir thrie days to rise again.

32. And he was speakin this thing freely. Than Peter, takin him in haun, begude to reprove him.

33. But he, turnin aboot, and fixin his een on the disciples, rebukit Peter, sayin, "Get you abint me, Sautan! for ye are na seekin the things o' God, but the things o' men!"

34. And ea'in till him the thrang, wi' his disciples, he said to them, "Wha ells to follow me, lat him dany bis ain sel, and tak up his croos, and come eftir me!"

35. "For whasee fain wad save his life, sal tine it; but whasee sal tine his life for the sake o' me and the Gude-Word, sal save it!"

36. "For what sal a man be better't, gin he win the hale wairld, and tine his ain saul?"

37. "For what may a man gie, to niffer for bis saul?"

38. "For whasee sal think shame o' me and my words, in this fause and sinfu' generation, the Son o' Man sal eke be ashamed o' him, whan he comes i' the glorie o' the Faither wi' the hale angels."

CHAPTR NINE.

The glorie on the mountain-top. The man o' awes' faidh, wha socht for mair! A way to be great!

AND he said to them, "Truly say I t'ye, thar are some staunin here, wha sal in naegate pree death, till they haes seen the Kingdom o' God comin in pooer!"

2. And eftir sax days Jesus takes Peter, and James, and John, and feahes them up intil a heigh mountain, allemarlie: and he was transformed afore them.

3. And his cleedin became unco glitterin white, as white as snaw; sic as nae wank-miller on the yirth could white them.

4. And Elijah and Moses appear't to them; and they spak wi' Jesus.

5. And Peter answerin, says to Jesus, "Maister, it is bonnie for us to be here! and lat us mak thrie bothies; for thee ane; and for Moses ane; and for Elijah ane!"

6. For he kant-na what to say; for they war eair terrify't.

7. And thar cam a clud ower-shadin them; and a voice spak oot o' the clud, "This is my Son! The Beloved! Hear ye till him!"

8. And a' o' a suddainie, lookin roond, thar was nae ane to be seen, but only Jesus wi' their sels.

9. And as they war comin doon fras the mountain, he charged them that they soud tell nae man the things they had seen, till ance the Son o' Man soud rise fras the deid.

10. And they keepit that sayin amang their sels, what the "Risin-fras-the-deid" waa.

11. And they speir't at him, sayin, "The Scribes hand that Elijah man first come!"

12. And he answer't and tauld them, "Elijah, indeed, dis come first, to pit a' things to richts; and yet hoo is it written o' the Son o' Man, that he manu dree mony things, and be unco liichtlied!"

13. "But I say t'ye, Elijah is

come ! and they has done to him whatsa'e'er they wad, e'en as it is putten doon concernin him."

14. And whan they joined the disciples they saw a great thrang aboot them, and the Scribes speirin at them.

15. And at ance a' the folk, whan they gat a glisk o' him, war in unco astonishment ; and rinnin to him, salutit him.

16. And he said to him, " What was ye speirin at them aboot ? "

17. And ane frae mang the crood said, " Maister ! I hae brocht my son, wha has a dumb spirit, to thee.

18. " And wha'e'er it takes him, it rives him ; and he froths, and cherks wi' his teeth, and dwines awa' ; and I spak to thy disciples, that they micht cast it oot, but they couldna ! "

19. But he answerin says, " O rae wantin faith. Till whatna time sal I hae to bide w'ye ? Till whatna time sal I thole ye ? Bring him tae me ! "

20. And they brocht him to him. And seein him, forthwith the spirit dang him ; and he fell on the grun', and row't, frothin.

21. And he speir't at his faither. " Hoo long syne this cam on him ? " And he said, " Frae a bairn !

22. " And aft it has cuisten him intil the fires, and intil waters, to mak an end o' him : but gin thou can do onything, hae pitie on us, and help us ! "

23. And Jesus says, " ' Gin thou can ! ' — A' things can come to him wha believes ! "

24. And forthwith the laddie's faither cry't oot, and quo' he, " Lord ! I believe ! Tak awa my unbelief ! "

25. But Jesus, seein that mony folk war comin, rinnin thegither, challenged the foul spirit, sayin till't, " Ye dumb and deif spirit ! I command ye, come oot o' him ; and come nae mair intil him ! "

26. And cryin oot, and sair manglin him, he cam oot ; and the laddie was like ane deid ; see that the feck o' them said, " He is deid ! "

27. But Jesus grippit his haun, and helpit him up ; and he raise.

28. And whan they war inside, the disciples speir't at him, " Why couldna we cast it oot ? "

29. And he said, " This sort ganga na oot but by prayer and fastin."

30. And fra thar they gaed forth, and journey't throwe Galilee ; and he wadna that ony man soud ken.

31. For he was teachin his disciples, sayin to them, " The Son o' Man is deliver't up intil the hanes o' men, and they wull slay him : and aftir he is slain, in thrie days he wull rise again."

32. But they comprehendit-na his words, and war fley't to ask him.

33. And they cam to Capernaum ; and bein i' the hoose, he speir't at them, " What war ye arguin on the way ? "

34. And they said nocht ; for on the road they had been arguin " Wha was greatest ? "

35. And he sent him doon, and ca'd the Twa', and says to them, " Gin ony ane wad be first, he sal be last o' a', and servitor o' a'."

36. And, takin a bairn, he set it i' the mids o' them, and fandlin it in his arme, he said to them,

37. " Wha sal tak till him ane o' sic bairns as thir, for the sake o' me, takas me till him ; and wha takes me till him, takes no me but him that sent me ! "

38. John says to him, " Maister, we saw ane i' thy name castin oot demons ; and he ganga na wi' us ; and we forbad him, for he ganga na wi' us."

39. And Jesus said, " Forbid-him na ; for that is nae that sal do a wark o' poerer i' my name, and than be able to speak ill o' me.

40. " For he that is no again us is for us.

41. " For wha sal gie ye a cup o' water to drink, i' the mind that ye are Christ'a, truly say I t'ye, be tines-na his reward !

42. "And whasae sal ensnare aye o' thir wee ayes that lippen on me, it war better for him gin the ¹ muckle millstane was hang't about his neck, for him to be cuisten intil the sea !

43. "And gin aiblins yere haun ensnare ye, aff wi't ! it is bonnier for ye enterin intil life maimed, than to haes the twa hauns and gang intil hell, intil lowe unquenchable !

44. "Whaur their worm dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched !

45. "And gin yere fit ensnare ye, aff wi't ! it is bonnier for ye enterin into life haldin, than wi' twa feet to be cuisten intil hell, intil lowe unquenchable.

46. "Whaur their worms dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched !

47. "And gin yere e'e ensnare ye, pyke it oot ! it is bonnier for ye enterin intil life ae-e'ed, than wi' twa een to be cuisten intil hell,

48. "Whaur their worm dees-na, and their lowe isna quenched !

49. "For ilka aye sal be sautit wi' fire ; and ilka offeran sal be sautit wi' saut.

50. "Gude is the saut. But gin the saut haes tint its tang, hoo sal ye mak it saut again ! Hae saut in yersels, and be at peace aye wi' anither !"

CHAPTIR TEN.

The blessin o' the bairns. Ane that loed the siller. Wha wad be greatest ? The bairn man o' Jericho.

AND risin up, he cam intil the borders o' Jordan. And thrangs cam thegither till him again ; and, as he aye did, he instruckit them again.

2. And the Pharisees cam nar till him, and they wad ken, "Is it lawfu' for a man to pit awa a wife ?" tempin him.

3. And answerin them, quo' he, "What dis Moses commaunn f?"

4. And they said, "Moses alloosed

a writin o' divorce, and to put her awa."

5. But Jesus answer't, "Anent the hardness o' yere hearts, he wrote ye this commaunn.

6. "But fras the first o' the creation, God formed them male and female.

7. "And fore-anent this sal a man lea' his faither and his mither, and cling till his wife :

8. "And they twa sal be as flesh : see are they nae mair twa, but as flesh.

9. "Whasae, than, God has joined thegither let-na man pit sindry !"

10. And whan they war within again, the disciples speir't at him anent it.

11. And he says to them, "Whasae pits awa his wife, and taks anither, commits adultery against his wife.

12. "And gin a woman divorces her husband, and taks anither, she commits adultery."

13. And they war bringin till him bairns, that he soud touch them ; but the disciples challenged them that brocht them.

14. But when Jesus saw it, he was unco displeased, and said to them, "Let the wee ayes come to me : binner-them-na : for o' siccan ayes is the kingdom o' God !

15. "Truly say I t'ye, Whasae taks-na till him the kingdom o' God as a wee bairn, he'se in naegate comin in !"

16. And he clippit them up in his arms, and socht blessings on them, and pat his hauns on them.

17. And as he was gaun oot in the way, aye cam rinnin, and loutit doon afore him, and speir't at him, "Gude Maister ! what mann I do to heir eternal life ?"

18. And Jesus says to him, "Why dae ye ca' me 'Gude ?' Thar is but Ane gude—God !

19. "Ye ken the commauns—kill-na, commit-na avoutrie, steal-na,

¹ V. 42. No the stane o' a bit quern, a wench could haund in her lap, but a muckle stane needin a beastie to ca'.

mansweir-na, wrangously seek-na,
cherish faither and mither!"

20. And be said to him, "Maister,
a' thae things haes I watched ower
sin' my bairnheid!"

21. And Jesus, lookin upon him,
lo'ed him, and said to him, "Ye haes
ae thing wantin; gang, and sell
whatnae ye haes, and gae to the puir;
and ye'll haes gear in Heeven: and
come, follow ye me!"

22. But dule cam on him at that
sayin; and he gaed his ways sorrow-
fu'; for he was handin great estates.

23. And Jesus lookit roond about,
and says he to his disciples, "Wi'
what sair strivin sal they win to
Heeven wha haes the riches!"

24. And the disciples ferlied un-
clicie at the words. But Jesus
answers again, and quo' he to them,
"Bairns, what sair strivin sal it be
to enter the kingdom o' God!"

25. "It's suner that a camel gangs
throwe a needle's ee, than that a rich
man gangs intil the kingdom o' God!"

26. And they were amazt ayont a'
bounds, and quo' they, "Than wha
can be saved?"

27. And gazing on them, Jesus
says, "Wi' men it is impossible; but
no wi' God: wi' God, a' things
are possible!"

28. Than Peter begude to say to
him, "See! we laid doon a', and
followt thee!"

29. And Jesus answer't, "Truly
say I t'ye, name has left hoose, or
brithers, or sisters, or faither or
mither, or bairns, or mailins, for my
sake and the Gude-Word's sake,

30. "But sal win a¹ hunner-auld
noo in this time—hoosea, and brithers,
and sisters, and mitthers, and bairns,
and mailins, wi' persecutions; and i'
the world to come, eternal life!"

¹ V. 20. What's nar till us, bouks see
muckle, that we aft fin' it easier to
lippen God for the things o' the naist
life, rather than for the things o' time!
But let us learn the leas o' this verse,
and do so haes mair!

31. "But mony first sal be hin-
maist; and the hinmaist first."

32. Noo they war on the gate till
Jerusalem; and Jesus was gann afore
them; and they fertid sair; and as
they followt, they war fleyt. And
he took the Twal', and begude again
to tell them the things that soud be-
fa' him:

33. "Tak tent! we gang up till
Jerusalem; and the Son o' Man sal
be deliver't up to the Heigh-priests,
and Scribes, and they sal adjudge
him to deid, and sal gie him ower
to the heathen;

34. "And they will geck at him,
and will spit upon him, and will
clour him, and will slay him; and
aftir thrie days wull he arise."

35. And James and John, the sons
o' Zebedee, cam; and they say to
him, "Maister! we wad that thou soud
do for us wharsoe'er we ask o' Thee!"

36. And he says to them, "What
is't ye wad haes me to do for ye?"

37. And they say to him, "Gie
until us that we may sit, aye on thy
richt haun, and aye on thy left, in
thy glorie!"

38. Jesus says to them, "Ye ken-
na what ye are seekin! Can ye
drink the cup I drink o' t' or be
bapteezt wi' the bapteezin I am bap-
teezt wi'?"

39. And they say to him, "We
can." And Jesus says to them,
"The cup I drink o' ye sal drink;
and wi' the bapteezin I am bapteezt
wi' sal ye be bapteezt:

40. "But to sit on my richt haun
and on my left haun isna mine to gie
—but for to be gien to them for
wham it is gotten ready!"

41. And jalouain'it, the Ten begude
to haes indignation at James and
John.

42. And Jesus ca'd them till him,
and said, "Ye ken that they wha
seem to ba rulin ower tha nations,
lord it ower the folk; and their great
anes come doon wi' authoritie upon
them.

43. "But no in sic like sal it be amang ye; for wha wad become great amang ye, sal be yere servitor:

44. "And wha wad be first amang ye, sal be yere thirlman.

45. "For truly the Son o' Man camna to be ser't, but to ser'; and to gie his life a ransom for mony."

46. And they cam tae Jericho; and as he gaed oot o' Jericho wi' his disciples and a hantle o' folk, the son o' Timera, blin' Bartimeus, the beggar, was sittin by the way.

47. And whan he heard it was Jesus o' Nazareth, he begude to cry oot, "Jesus, thou Son o' Dauid! hae thou mercy on me!"

48. And mony flytit on him, that he wad be quata. But he cry't sae muckle the mair, an' unco deal, "Thou Son o' Dauid! hae mercy on me!"

49. And Jesus stude stil, and said, "Ca' ye him!" and they ca'd the blin' man, sayin, "Cheer up! Rise! He's ca'in ye!"

50. And he, thrawin aff his mantel, sprang up, and cam to Jesus.

51. And Jesus, answerin him, says, "What wad ye that I soud do till ye?" And the blin' man said, "Lord! that I may hae my sicht!"

52. And Jesus said to him, "Gang yere ways! yere faith has made ye hale!" And forthwith he gat his sicht, and follow't¹ Jesus.

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.

The lousy triumph. The seckles fig-tree.

AND whan they cam nar to Jerusalem, to Bethphage and Bethanie at the Mount o' Olives, he sent awa twa o' his disciples.

2. And says to them, "Gang yere ways to the clachan forment ye; and as eune as ye are come intil't, ye sal see a cowt tethered, whauron nae

man evir sat; lowse him and fetch him.

3. "And gin ony man say ocht to ye, or "Why dae ye this?" say ye, 'The Maister has need o' him, and belvys he sends him back again.'

4. And they gaed their ways, and fann'd the cowt tethered at a door oot-by i' the street; and they lowse him.

5. And some o' thee that stude thar says to them, "What a' ye daein i' lowain the cowt?"

6. And they tell't them e'en as Jesus said to them; and they loot them gang.

7. And they feab the cowt till Jesus; and they crist on him their mantools; and he sat upon them.

8. And a hantle spread their mantools i' the way; and ither green branches, cuttin them oot o' the fields.

9. And they that gaed afore, and they that follow't aftir, cry't, "Hosanna! Blessed is he wha comes i' the name o' the Lord!"

10. "Blessed is the comin kingdom o' oor faither Dauid! Hosanna i' the highest Heeven!"

11. And he enter't intil Jerusalem, intil the Temple; and whan he had taen tent o' a' things, it noo wearin late, he gaed oot till Bethanie wi' the Twal'.

12. And on the morn, whan he cam back frae Bethanie, he hunger't.

13. And sesin a fig-tree ayont, fu' o' leaves, he gaed, gin aiblins he micht fin' onything on't: and whan he cam till't, he fann'd naething but leaves; for it wasna the time o' figs.

14. And Jesus spak,² and says to it, "Nae man forever again eat frute o' thee!" and his disciples war listenin till't.

¹ V. 32. The best thing a man can do wi' his new sicht—whether o' the een or the spirit—is to follow the Maister wi't!

² V. 14. This wasna to schaw his power; but it was an acted parable, to teach faith! (v. 22-24).

15. And they cam to Jerusalem ; and enterin the Temple, he begude to ca' oot thaes sellin and buyin i' the Temple ; and cowpit ower the tables o' the niffersers o' siller, and the binks o' thaes that trokit wi' doos :

16. And he wedna suffer ony man to cairry veschels throwe the Temple.

17. And he was teachin, and sayin to them, "Is it no patten doon, 'My Hoose sal be named a Hoose o' Prayer for a' people ;' but ye hae made it a howff o' robbers !"

18. And the Heid-priests and the Scribes heard ; and coonsell't hoo they might destroy him : for they war fley't o' him, for a' the folk war astonish't at his teachin.

19. And whane'er the s'enin cam, he gaed oot o' the citie.

20. And i' the mornin as they gaed by, they saw the fig-tree birl't up frae the rutea.

21. And Peter ca' in to min', says to him, "Maister ! see : the fig-tree ye bann'd, is a' dwined awa !"

22. And Jesus, answerin to him, says, "Hae ye faith in God !

23. "For truly say I tye, Whasever may say to this mountain, 'Be ye ta'en up, and cuisten intil the sea !' and doots-na in his heart—but sal lippen that what he says sal come to pass—he sal win it !

24. "And thus I say to ye, A' things that ye pray and seek for, lippen that ye hae them, and ye sal win them.

25. "And whan prayin ye staun, forgie, gin ye has ocht again ony ane ; that yere Faither wha is in Heeven may forgie yere sins.

26. "For gin ye forgie-na, yere Faither in Heeven will forgie-na your sins !"

27. And they come to Jerusalem again ; and as he was walkin aboot i' the Temple, tha Heid-priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders, cam to him,

28. And quo' they to him, "By

whatna authoritie div ye thir things ! And wha is he that gied ye this authoritie to do thir things ?"

29. But Jesus said, "I wull speir at you a'e thing ; and answer me : and I wull tell ye by whatna authoritie I do thir things :—

30. "John's Baptiam,¹—was't frae Heeven ? or o' man ? Ye may answer me !"

31. And they coonsell't amang their seils, sayin', "Gin we say, 'Frac Heeven,' he will say, 'On what grun' than, did ye no believe him ?'

32. "But gin we say 'Frac men'—they war fley't o' the folk ; for ane and a' held John in veritie to be a prophet.

33. And they answer't Jesus, and said, "We canna tell !" And Jesus says to them, "Nae mair div I tell you by whatna authoritie I do thir things !"

CHAPTIR TWAL'.

*The ill-deidit crofters. The great com-
munity. The weedo-woman and her
fardin.*

AND he begude to speak to them in A parablea. "A man set oot a vine-yaIRD, and biggit a wa' aboot it, and howkit a vat, and set up a toon, and let it oot to crofters, and gaed aff intil anither kintra.

2. "And he sent a servin-man to the crofters at the season, to hae frae the crofters o' the frute o' the vine-yaIRD.

3. "And they grippit him, and dang him, and sent him toom awa'.

4. "And again he sent to them anither o' his servants, and him they cloured on the heid, and did shamefu' by him.

5. "And again he sent anither ; and him they slew ; and mony mair ;

¹ V. 30. We manna think this was but a sharp way o' confoardin them. John was a greean witness for Him (John, i. 7, 29, 33, 34), but gin they wedna say gif the witness could be lippened, why bring him forrit ?

whiles dingin them, and whiles slayin them.

6. " Yet had he ana, a tenderly-lo'ed son : he sent him last to them, sayin, ' They will honor my son ! '

7. " But thae crofters coonseal't amang their ells, ' This is the heir ! Come awa ! let us kill him ; and we may seize on his hame-haddin ! '

8. " And they grippit him and slew him, and cast him oot o' the vine-yaird.

9. " And noo, what sal the laird o' the virie-yaird do ? He will come, and destroy the crofters, and gie the vine-yaird ower to ithera.

10. " Hae ye never read this writin, ' The stane that was refused o' thae that biggit, the same is made heid o' the corner ! '

11. " This cam to pass frae the Lord, and it is an unco ferlie in oor e'en ! "

12. And they settled to lay hand o' him ; but they war fleyt o' a' the folk ; for they saw he had spoken this parable anent them : and leavin him, they ga'ed aff.

13. And they send to him o' the Pharisees,¹ and they o' Herod, that they might snare him in his talk.

14. And comin to him, they say, " Maister, we ken that ye are true, and are swayed by nae man ; for ye care-na for the looks o' a man, but o' a truth are teachin the way o' God : Is it richt for us to pay dues to Cesar, or no ? "

15. " Sal we gie, or sal we refuse ? " But he, seein their fauseness, said to them, " Why-for are ye tempin me ? Schaw me a siller-penny that I may see. "

16. And they fesh't it. And quo' he till them, " Wha's face and inscription is this ? " And they said till him, " Cesar's. "

¹ V. 13. The Pharisees and Herodians war at dagger-points atween theirsels ; but they could join thegither in plottin again Christ ! We whiles see the same thing in oor ain day !

17. And Jesus said to them, " The things o' Cesar aye gie ye to Cesar, and the things o' God to God ! " And they war astonished at him.

18. And thar cam to him the Sadducees, wha say, " Risin-again thar is nae ; " and they speir't at him, sayin,

19. " Maister ! Moses pat doon for us, Gin a man's brither dee, and lea' abint a wife, and lea nae bairn, that his brither soud tak his wife, and raise up easd to his brither.

20. " Thar war seeven brithers ; and the first took a wife, and dee'd, lea'in nae bairn ;

21. " And the second took her, and dee'd, left nae bairn abint him ; and the third as weel.

22. " And the seeven left nae bairn ; and, binmaist o' a', the wumman dee'st.

23. " At the Up-risin, than, whase wife sal she be o' them ? for the seeven had her for wife ? "

24. Jesus said to them, " Div ye no gang wrang, for this vera cause, that ye kenna the Scripture, and God's poorer ? "

25. " For whan they sal rise frae the deid, they naither mairry, nor are gien in mairriage ; but are as the Angels in Heeven.

26. " But anent the Risin-frae-the-deid, did ye never read i' the bulk o' Moses—' Anent the Buiss'—hew God spak till him, sayin, ' I am the God o' Abra'm, and God o' Isaac, and God o' Jacob ! '

27. " He isna the God o' deid men, but o' the leevin ! Ye this way uncolie deceipte yersels. "

28. And ane o' the Scribes cam forrit, and heard them reasonin, and seein that he had answer't them weel, speir't at him, " Whilk is the first ane o' the Commandments ? "

29. Jesus answer't him, " The first o' a' is, ' Hear ye, O Isra' ! the Lord oor God, the Lord, is ane :

² V. 21. See Luke xx. 87 ; note.

30. "And ye sal¹ lo'e the Lord yere God wi' a' yere heart, and wi' a' yere soul, and wi' a' yere mind, and wi' a' yere micht ;" this, a first command.

31. "And a second like it ; this : 'Ye sal lo'e ye're neebor as yersel.' Heigher than thir, o' commandns thar is nane !"

32. And the Scribe said to him, "Weel, Maister ; o' a truth said ye that he is ane, and thar is nane ither but he ;

33. "And to lo'e him wi' a' the heart, and wi' a' the understandann, and wi' a' the soul, and wi' a' ane's micht—and to lo'e ane's neebor as ane's self, is far mair than a' the hail-brunt offerans and sacrificees !"

34. And whan Jesus saw that he answer't discreet, he said to him, "Ye are na far frae God's Kingdom !" And syno' afir that, nae man daur speir at him quaisstans.

35. And Jesus answer't, and quo' he, as he was teachin i' the Temple, "What way say the Scribes that the Christ is Daavid's son ?

36. "Daavid his sel says, by the Holie Spirit, 'The Lord says² to my Lord, Sit thou on my richt haun, till I mak thy faes thy fit-brod !'

37. "David his sel names him 'Lord' ; and frae whaur-awa is he than his son ?" And a' the thrang listened to him gladly.

38. And in his teachin, quo' he, "Tak tent o' the Scribes ! wha like to gang aboot in lang goona, and lo'e compliments i' the merkits,

¹V. 30. A hantle folk wad like a rule to gang by. Tak ye this 30th verse ! Gin God has my heart—than my time, my freends, my interests—a' man follow : as a lamb follows its minnie.

²V. 36. The Jews seemed set on no lookin at thae Scriptures that tauld o' Christ's divinity. They wad haes it that the Messiah was juist a Conquerin Prince. Wrang thochts lead on to wrang deeds. They first had wrang thochts aboot the Messiah, and than killed him because he dinna fit in wi' their wrang thochts.

39. "And preferred seats i' the kirk, and heid places at feasts :

40. "Wha devoor weedows' hames, and i' their deceit mak lang prayers : thir sal has the deeper condemnation."

41. And he set his sel doon forment the Treasury ; and a hantle o' them that war rich cuist in muckle.

42. And thar cam ane, a pair weedow, and she cuist in twa miten, that mak a fardin.

43. And he ca'd till him his ain disciples, and quo' he, "Truly say I t'ye, this pair weedow has cuisten in mair than a' they that are castin in till the Treasury.

44. "For a' they, oot o' their ower-come has cuisten in ; but she oot o' her poortith did cast in a' she had—e'en a' her leevin !"

CHAPTR THIRTEEN.

Jerusalem fa's. The Gospel spreads. The King sal come ! Let a' tak tent !

AND as he gaed oot o' the Temple, A ane o' his followers says, "Maister ! gie tent, and see sic stanes, and unco biggins !"

2. Jesus said to him, "Are ye lookin at thae great biggins ? Thar sal-na be left as stane on anither that ahanna be whamm'd ower !"

3. And as he eat on the Mount o' Olives, forment the Temple, Peter and James, and John, and Andro, speir't at him quately,

4. "Tell us, whan sal thir things be ? And what the sign whan thir things are comin to pass ?"

5. And Jesus begude to say to them, "Tak tent that nae man lead ye a-gley :

6. "Mony a' ane wull come in my name, sayin, 'I am he !' and wull gar mony gang agea.

7. "And whan ye hear o' weir, and the clash aboot weir, be-na ye putten-aboot ; for they manu needs come on ; but the endin hauna come.

8. "For nation sal rise up again nations, and kingdom again kingdems :

thar sal be yirdins in a hantle places; and thar maun be famines. Thir are the bearin-pains comin on.

9. "But tak tent to yersels; for they wull gie ye up to hie-cooncils and kirks; ye maun be cloured; and forment governors and kings maun ye stann for the sake o' me, for a testimomie to them.

10. "And the joyfu'-tidins maun first be proclaimed to a' the nations.

11. "And whan they lead ye, deliverin ye up, be-na fashin yersels aforehaun what ye sal say; but what-sae sal be gien ye i' that 'oor, that speak; for it issa ye that speak; but the Holie Spirit.

12. "And brither wull gie up the brither to deid: and the faither the bairn; and bairns sal rise up again their parents, that they be putten to death.

13. "And ye sal be hatit o' a' men for my sake; but wha tholes to the end, that same sal be saved.

14. "But whane'er ye see the abomination o' the Desolacion staunin whaur it soudna be (wha reads, lat him tak tent!), than lat thae wha are in Judea flee to the mountaintane!

15. "And lat him wha is on the hoose-tap no come doon intil the hoose, nor e'en gang in to tak onything oot o' the hoose;

16. "And lat him that is oot-by i' the field no return back to tak awa his coat.

17. "But wae for them that are bearin! and for them that gie the breist i' thae days!

18. "And pray ye that it come-na i' the winter!

19. "For thae days sal be a time o' dool, sae as thar has been nane sic-like, sin' the first o' the creation that God creatit, e'en till noo, and nevir sal be.

20. "And gin the Lord shortened-na the days, nae flesh wad be saved; but for the sake o' his sin, wham he waled oot for his sel, he shortens the daya.

21. "And, at that time, gin ony ane says t'ye, 'See! here is the Christ!' or 'See there!' lippen him na;

22. "For thar sal staun up fame Christis, and fause propheta, and wull schaw tokena and wunner-warks, that they may lead awa, gin it war possible, e'an the chosen anes.

23. "But tak ye tent! See, I haes tauld ye a' things aforehaun!

24. "But in thae days, eftir that dool and stonr, the sun sal be darken't, and the mune sanna gie oot her licht,

25. "And the starns sal fa' fras the licht, and the poors abune sal be shak'en.

26. "And than sal they see the Son o' Man comin i' the cluds, wi' unco pouer and glorie.

27. "And than sal he send oot his Angels, and sal gaither thegither his chosen anes fras the fourw winds, fras the ootermairt pairt o' the yirth to the ootermairt o' heeven.

28. "Noo learn ye a parable fras the fig-tree: whane'er her branch is bein ten'er, and the leaves comin on, ye ken summer is nar-haun;

29. "Sae ye, whane'er ye see thir things comin on, tak tent that it is nar—at the vera doors!

30. "Truly say I t'ye, this generation passes-na awa, till a' thir things sal be!

31. "Heeven and Yirth sal pass awa; but my words sal-na pass awa!

32. "But, o' that day and that 'oor kens name; no e'en the angels in Heeven; nor the Son; but the Faither.

33. "Tak ye tent! watch and pray! for ye kenna whan the time is.

34. "As a man bidin in a far-awa lan'; wha has left his hoose, and gien authoritie to his servants; to ilka ane his wark; and commandit the porter to tak gude tent;

35. "Tak ye gude tent, thar-for! for ye kenna whan the maister o' the hoose comes hame; gin it be at e'en,

or at midnight, or at the cock crawin,
or at the dawin ;

36. "Least, comin on ye o' a
soddaintie, he find ye sleepin !

37. "And what I say to you, I
say to a'—tak tent !"

Tak tent ! Thar's baith the destruction o'
Jersalem and the end o' the world here ;
and ane needs be wyss to redd them out.
And efter a's dune, we kenna weel what
is what. We man be watchfu' and
ready !

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

Anointis for his burial. He dred weco
dool who dred oors ! Judas, and Peter,
and the Heigh-priests, and Pilate : and
they a' wrang'd him !

EFFTER twa days was the Pasche,
E and the Sad Braid ; and the
Heigh-priests and Scribes war coon-
sellin hoo they coud grip him hy
knaverie, and slay him.

2. For quo' they, "No in the Feast ;
for aiblins thar wad be a bruizie
amang the folk."

3. And he bein in Bethanie, i' the
hoose o' Simon the leper, as he was
at meat,¹ a wumman cam, haein an
alabaster o' perfume, real nard, vera
costly ; and she brak the alabaester,
and teemed it ower his heid.

4. And thar war some wha war ill-
pleased amang theirsels ; and quo'
they, "For whatna end was the per-
fume wastit ?

5. "For it nicht has heen sell't
for mair nor three-hunner penniea,
and has been gien tae the puir !"
And they compleened o' her.

6. But Jesus said, "Dinna fash
her ! Why soud ye pit her aboot ?
A wark ee-sweet and bonnie has she
dune in me.

7. "For aye hae ye the puir w'ye ;

and, whan ye wull, ye may do them
gude ; but ye hae-na aye me wi' ye.

8. "She did what she was able to
do ; she took it aforehaun to perfume
my body for the burial.

9. "Truly say I t'ye, whaursoe'er
the Gude-Tidins sal be cryt, throwes
the hail world, s'en what she did sal
be tauld for her memorial !"

10. And Judas Iscariot gaed awa
to the Heigh-priests, that he nicht
deliver him up to them.

11. And they war crone when
they heard it, and promised him siller.
And he was takin tent hoo he coud
fin' the richt time to deliver him up.

12. And on the first day o' the
Sad Braid, whan they aye kill't the
Paschal lamb, his disciples speir'd at
him, "Whaur wull ye that we gang
and mak ready that we may eat the
Pasche ?"

13. And he sends oot twa o' the
disciples, and quo' he to them,
"Gang yere ways intil the citie, and
a man wi' a stoup o' watir sal meet
ye : follow him.

14. "And whaur he may gang in,
say ye to the gudeman o' the hoose,
'The Maister says, Whaur is my
lodgins, whaur I may eat the Pasche
wi' my disciples ?'

15. "And he himsel wull schaw ye
a gudely upper room, plenish't and
ready : and thar prepare ye for us."

16. And the disciples ga'ed oot, and
cam intil the citie, and faund as he
had said to them ; and they prepared
the Pasche.

17. And whan the s'enin cam on,
he comes wi' the Twal'.

18. And as they sat and war eatin,
Jesus says, "Truly say I t'ye, Ane o'
you, wha eats wi' me, wull betray
me !"

19. Than begude they to be unco
cuisten-doon, and to say to him, ane
by ane, "Is it I ?"

20. And he said to them, "It is
ane o' the Twal', and he wha dips wi'
me i' the dish.

21. "For the Son o' Man bude

¹ V. 3. Mark diana name Mary. She was
aiblins still leevin, and it nicht be better
no to draw the enemis' attention to
her. She wasna rich (See Luke x. 40),
but she gat this costly Indis nard, that
she might anoint her best freend : "had
he no raised her brither frae the deid ?"

gang, as it is putten-doон anent him; but was for that man by wham the Son' o' man is deliver't up: weal had it been for him gin he had nevir been born!"

22. And as they war eatin, Jesus took breid, and whan he bleast, brak it, and gied it to them, and said, "Tak ye, this is my body."

23. And he took a cup; and giean thanks, gied it to them; and they drank o't.

24. And he said to them, "This is my blude o' the Covenant, the blude shed for mony.

25. "Truly say I t'ye, Nae mair sal I drink o' the frnte o' the wine, until I drink it anew in the Kingdom o' God!"

26. And whan they had sung the Psalm, they gaed oot intil the Mount o' Olives.

27. And Jesus says to them, "A' ye this nicht sal be putten-about because o' me: for it is written, 'I wull clour the Shepherd, and the sheep sal be skail't abraid.'

28. "But efter my Up-risin, I wull gang afore ye intil Galilee."

29. And Peter says to him, "Gin a' soud fin' maitter o' offence, yet wull-not I!"

30. And Jesus says to him, "Truly say I t'ye, that you—this day, e'en this nicht,—afore the cock craw twice, will thrice disown me!"

31. But he threepit to him, "Gin I hae to dee wi' thee, I'll no disown thee!" and siclike said they a'.

32. And they cam to a place ca'd "Gethsemanie": and he says to his disciples, "Sit ye here, till I pray."

33. And he takes wi' him Peter, and James, and John, and begude to be in unco dool.

34. And he says to them, "My saul is unco wae, e'en till death! bide ye here, and tak gude tent!"

35. And he gaed forrit a wee, and loutit doon to the grun', and prayed that—gin it could be—the 'oor might pass by him.

36. And he was cryin, "Abha, Faither! A' things are possible to thee! Tak awa this cup frae me!" But, it isna what I will, but what Thou wills!"

37. And he comes, and fin's them sleepin, and says to Peter, "Simon, are ye sleepin? Coud-ye-na watch se 'oor?

38. "Tak tent, and pray! that ye come-na intil temptation. The spirit is fain, but the flesh is waff."

39. And ance mair he gaed awa, and prayed, sayin the same words.

40. And whan he was come back, he faund them sleepin, for that their een war unco heavy; and they kent-na what to answer him.

41. And he cam the third time, and says to them, "Sleep on for a wee, and rest. It is eneuch! The time has come! See! the Son o' Man is deliver't up intil the hauns o' the wicked!"

42. "Rise! lat us be gaun. Mark! he wha delivers me up is at haun!"

43. And at ance, e'en while he yet spak, comes Judaa, ane o' the Twa', and wi' him a great thrang wi' swords and rungs, frae the Heid-priests and Elders.

44. And he wha was deliverin him up had gien them a token; quo' he, "Wham I kiss, that is he; grip him, and lead him awa siccar!"

45. And comin, he gae strancht to him, and says, "Maister, Maister!" and kiss't him.

46. And they lay hauns on him, and made him siccar.

47. But ane that stude by, drew sword, and attackit the Heid-priest's servin-man, and strack aff his ling.

48. And Jesus answer't them, "Are ye come oot, as again a robber, wi' swords and rungs to tak me?

I V. 36. Had the cup something in't that soudna be in't? God kens! Aiblins the bitter wae, that men—the ver' race he was dooin for—soud ha'e a hand in his death! But gin this war his thocht, was his prayer answer't? See Hebrews, v. 7, and note on John, xix. 34.

49. "I was day by day wi' ye i' the Temple, and ye grappit-me-na; but it is that see the Scriptur nicht be fulfilled."

50. And they a' desertit him and fled.

51. And a young man cam followin wi' them, haein a linen claih thrawn roun' his body; and they took hand o' him.

52. But he left the claih wi' them, and escapit naked.

53. And they led Jesus aff till the Heigh-priest; and thar war gaither't thegither a' the Heid-priests and the Elders and the Doctors.

54. And Peter had followt far ahint, e'en intil the coort-yaird o' the Heigh-priest: and he sat wi' the servants, and warmed his sel at the lowe.

55. Noo the Heid-priests and a' the Cooncil socht for prufe again Jesus, for to pit him to deid: but condna fin' ony.

56. For mony bare fause-witness again him; but their tales wadna gree thegither.

57. And some stode up, and testifyt fausely again him, sayin,

58. "We heard him say, 'I wull pu' doon this Temple—this made wi' hauns—and in thrie days I'se bigg anither, no made wi' hauns!'"

59. And no e'en see was their testimonie agreein.

60. And the Heigh-priest, risin in the mids, speir't at Jesus, sayin, "Div ye answer nocht? What are thir testifyin again ye?"

61. But he stude quate, and said nocht. Again the Heigh-priest speir't at him, "Are ye the Anointit, the Son o' the Blessed?"

62. And Jesus said, "I am; and ye'se see the Son o' Man sittin on the richt haun o' Pooer, and comin i' the cluds o' heeven!"

63. And the Heigh-priest rived his cleedin, and cryt he, "What need we ony mair testimonie?"

64. "Ye has heard the wicked

words: what think ye?" And they a' condemned him to be wordie o' death.

65. And some begude to spit on him; and bid his face and daddit him, sayin, "Prophesie!" And the servitors dang him wi' their looves.

66. And as Peter was aneath i' the coort-yaird, thar comes ane o' the maids o' the Heigh-priest.

67. And whan she saw Peter warmin his sel, she narrowly looks at him, and quo' she, "And thou was wi' the Nazarine—wi' Jesus!"

68. But he deny't, sayin, "I ken-na him! nor ken I what ye're sayin!" And he gaed oot-by intil the entry; and a cock crew.

69. And the maid saw him again; and begude to say to them staunnin aboot, "This is ane o' them!"

70. And he deny't it again. And a wee while eftir, they staunnin by say to Peter, "Truly ye are ane o' them; for ye are a Galilee-man!"

71. But he begude bannin and sweirin—"I ken-na the man ye speak o'!"

72. And noo the second time a cock crew. And Peter ca'd to mind what Jesus said to them, "Before the cock craw twice, thou wull disown me thrice!" And whan he thocht thar-on, he grat.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

Pilate, and Jesus: and the cross, and the tomb.

AND straucht the Heid-priests i' the mornin coonellt wi' the Elders and Doctors, and the baill Cooncil, and bund Jesus, and led him awa and deliver't him up to Pilate.

2. And Pilate speir't at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?" And answerin, he says to him, "Ye say true."

3. And the Heid-priests threepit on mony things again him.

4. And Pilate again speir't at him, "Answer-ye-na! See! hoo mony things they lay again ye!"

5. But Jesus nae mair answer't ocht ; see that Pilate ferlied.

6. Noo, at Feast-time, he aye releas't for them a prisoner---wham they nicht wale.

7. And thar was ane Barabbas ; bund wi' the insurgents---wha, indeed, in the revolt had committit murder.

8. And a' the folk gaed up, and begude to seek for him to dae as he had aye done for them.

9. And Pilate answer't them, "Wad ye that I release t'ye the King o' the Jews ?"

10. For he saw that for jealousie the Heid-priests had deliver't him up.

11. But the Heid-priests wrocht up the folk, that he soud raither release them Barabbas.

12. And Pilate was again speirin at them, "What, than, wad ye that I soud do to the King o' the Jews ?"

13. But they cry't oot again, "Crucify him !"

14. But Pilate said to them, "Why sae ? What ill has he dune ?" And they cry't oot mair furiously, "Crucify him !"

15. And Pilate, being fain to please the crood, released Barabbas to them ; and deliver't up Jesus, first bein scourged, to be crucify't.

16. And the sodgers led him awa intil the coort, ca'd "The Pretorium ;" and they bring thegither the hale cohort.

17. And they cleed him in purple, and they weave a croon o' thorna, and pit it on his heid ;

18. And begude to salute him, "Hail to thee, King o' the Jews !"

19. And they streck him ower the heid wi' a reed ; and spat on him, and bent the knee and worshipp't him.

V. 15. Wae's me for Pilate ! He nicht hae stude forth as ane o' the world's heroes, had he dune the richt ! But he had already dune many wrang and unjust things ; and Sætan had him fast ban, haun and fit !

20. And efter mockin him, they strippit aff the purple, and pat on him his ain cleedin, and led him oot to crucify him.

21. And they lay hand o' ane Simon, a Cyrenian, comin in frae the kintra-pairts---father o' Alexander and Rufus---to carry his cross.

22. And they bring him to the place "Golgotha," that is to say "Skull-place."

23. And they proffir't him wine wi' myrr in't ; but he wadna hae't.

24. And they crucify't him ; and dividit his cleedin amang them, and quist lots wha soud hae ocht.

25. And it was the third 'oor, and they crucify't him.

26. And the writin o' his accusation was ower aboon, "The King o' the Jews !"

27. And eke wi' him they crucify twa robbers ; ane on the richt haun, and ane on his left.

28. And the Scriptur cam to passa, whilk says, "And wi' wrang-doers was he coontit-in !"

29. And the gangers-by war misca'in him, waggin their heids, and sayin, "Abal thou wha is takin doon the Temple, and up-biggio it in thrie daya.

30. "Save yersel, and come doon fras the cross !"

31. And as weel the Heid-priests, jeerin amang their sels, wi' the Writers, said, "He saved ither's ; his sel he canna save !

32. "The Christ, the King o' Isra'el ! lat him noo come doon frae the cross, that seein it, we may lippen him !" And the anes crucify't wi' him, misca'd him.

33. And at the mid-day 'oor, the mirk cam ower the hale lan', to the ninth 'oor o' the day.

34. And at the ninth 'oor, Jesus cry't oot wi' a lood voice, "Eloi ! Eloi ! lama sabachthani !" whilk is, in translation, "My God ! My God ! why did thou forsake me ?"

35. And some o' the staunners-by,

when they heard that, said, "He cries on Elijah!"

36. And ane ran and filled a sponge wi' vinegar, and pat it on a reed, and gied him drink, sayin, "Lat be! let us see gin aihlins Elijah comes to tak him doon!"

37. But Jesus, utterin a lood cry, expir't.

38. And the veil o' the Temple was rived in twa, frae the tap to the bottom.

39. Noo the Captain wha stude nar, forrent him, seein he saw cry't oot and expir't, said, "Truly, this man was God's Son!"

40. And weemen too war thar, lookin on frae oot-by: 'mang wham war Mary Magdalene, and Mary (James the less, and Jose's mither), and Salome,

41. Wha, whan he was in Galilee, aye follow't and providit for him; and mony ither weemen wha cam up wi' him to Jerusalem.

42. And gloamin comin on, and it bein "The Preparation," that is "Afore the Sabbath,"—

43. Thar cam¹ Joseph of Arimathea, a Cooncillor o' honorable rank, wha himsel lookit for the Kingdom o' God, and gaed openly to Pilate, and craved the body o' Jesus.

44. And Pilate misdootit whether he was sae sune deid; and ca'd the Captain, and spair't at him gin he had been ony time deid!

45. And as sune as he kent it o' the Captain, he grantit the body to Joseph.

46. And be coft fine linen, and takin him doon, row't him i' the claih, and laid him in a tomb hewn oot i' the rock: and row't a muckle stane to streak the door o' the tomb.

¹ V. 43. Thank God for necessities! Gin that hadn'a been the necessity o' havin the body o' Jesus frae bein cuisten till a public place, Joseph micht never ha'e pluck't up courage eneuch to avow his sel a freend o' Jesus! We ait gain by oor losses!

47. And Mary Magdalene, and Mary, James' mither, lookit on, and saw whaur he was laid.

CHAPTIR SAXTREN.

The risin' frae the deid. He schaws his sel; and then ascends.

THE Sabbath bein by, Mary Magdalene, and Mary o' James, and Salome, coft them spices, that they micht come and anoint him.

2. And early on the first day o' the week, they come to the tomb, at the sun-risin.

3. "And they war sayin to thir sel's, "Wha wull row us awa the stane frae the door o' the tomb?"

4. And, lookin up, they see that the stane is row't awa'; for it was an unco bouk.

5. And, gangin until the tomb, they saw a young man sittin on the richt, clad in a lang, white rohe; and they war unco fley't.

6. But he says to them, "Be na fley't! Ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene, the Crucify't. He raise! He isna bere! See the place whaur they laid him."

7. "But gang; tell his disciples and Peter,¹ that he gaes afore you until Galilee, thar sal ye see him; e'en as he tauld ye."

8. And gangin oot, they fled frae the tomb; for fear and quakin had come on them; and they tauld nocht to ony; for they war terrify't.

9. And, comin forth early on the first day o' the week, he was first made kent to Mary Magdalene, frae wham he had cuisten oot seeven demons.

10. She gaed awa' and tell't thae that had been wi' him, as they maen'd and grat.

11. And they, whan they war

¹ V. 7. See how unco tender the Lord was toward Peter! Nae doot he grat (ver. 10) mair than ony o' them—for he had mair to greet for! Wha fa's far'est, ha'maist need o' raisin up!

tell't that he was leevin, and seen by her, wadna believe.

12. And eftir thaes things, he was schawn in anither form to twa o' them, as they walkit and gaed oot intil the kintra.

13. And they gaed awa', and tell't it to the lave: neither believ't they them.

14. But eftir, to the Eleeven their sels he was schawn, as they sat at meat; and he wytit them for their dootsonness and hardness o' heart, no to lippen to them wha had seen him eftir he raise.

15. And he said to them, "Gang ye to a' the warld, and preach the Gude-Tidins to the hale creation!

16. "Wha believes and is baptizeez't

sal be sav't; but wha disbelieves sal be condemned.

17. "And uncos sal follow them that believe; in my name sal the demons be cuisten oot; they sal speak wi' tongues;

18. "They sal tak up vipers; and gin aiblins they drink ony deidly draught, it sal be nae ill to them; they sal lay hauns on the sick, and they sal be weel!"

19. Sae than the Lord Jesus, eftir he had spoken to them, was ta'en up till Heeven, and sat doon on the richt haun o' God:

20. And they gaed oot, and preached a'-gate; the Lord workin wi' them, and makin siccar the Word wi' the uncos that follow't.

L U K E.

CHAPTIR ANE.

The wunner-warks as the birth o' John.

NASMUCKLE as mony hae taen
in haun to pit doon in order a
narration o' thae things that hae been
made siccar amang na.

2. E'en as they, wha war at first-
hann witnesses and followers o' the
Word, gied them till us ;

3. It seemed gude to me as weel,
haein kent fras the first a' things per-
fetely, to write to you in set order,
O weel-deservin Theophilus,

4. That ye might hae fu' know-
ledge o' the certaintie o' the things
in whilk ye hae been trained.

5. THAR was, in the days o'
Herod, King o' Judea, a
priest ca'd Zachariah, o' Abijah's
coorse ; and his wife was o' the
dochters o' Aaron, and she was ca'd
Elizabeth.

6. And they war baith richt-leevin
afore God, walkin i' the Commauns
and appointments o' the Lord wyte-
less.

7. And they had nae bairn, for
that Elisabeth bure-na ; and they war
baith growin auld.

8. Noo it cam aboot, that while he
was doin priestly service afore God i'
the order o' his coorse,

9. As was the custom o' the priest-
hood, it was his lot to offer incense,
enterin intil the Temple o' the Lord.

10. And the thrang o' folk were
oot-by, prayin, at the 'cor o' the in-
cense-offeran.

11. And thar appear't to him an
Angel o' the Lord, staunin on the
richt side o' the incense-altar.

12. And Zachariah was uncolie put-
ten-aboot whan he saw him, and fear
cam on him.

13. But the Angel says to him,
"Be-na fleyt, Zachariah ! for yere

prayer has been heard, and yere wife
Elizabeth aal bear a son t'ye, and his
name ye'se ca' John."

14. "And ye sal hae joy to ye, and
rejoicin, and mony sal be blythe at
his birth.

15. "For he sal be mighty afore
the Lord, and he'se drink nae wine
nor strong drink ; and he sal be fu'
o' the Holie Spirit, e'en fras the womb.

16. "And mony o' Isra'il's sons
wull he weise roun' till the Lord their
God.

17. "And he sal gang afore him i'
the spirit and might o' Elijah to
weise roun' faithers' hearts till their
bairns, and the dour to the wyss-heid
o' the gude ; to mak ready for the
Lord a prepared folk."

18. And Zachariah says to the
Angel, "Hoo's I to ken this ? For
I'm an auld man, and my wife noo is
eild ! "

19. And answerin, quo' the Angel
to him, "I am Gabriel, that stann
afore God ! and I hae been sent to
speak to ye, and to feash ye thir gude
tidins.

20. And noo see ! ye sal be dumb,
and hae nae speech, until whatna day
thir things are dune, for that ye
wadna lippen my words—whilk aal
come to pass i' their time ! "

21. And the folk war waitin for
Zachariah, and ferlied at his delayin
i' the Temple.

22. And whan he cam forth, he
coudna speak to them ; and they
kent be bude hae seen a vision i' the
Temple. And he gaed on makin
signs to them, and remained dumb.

23. And it cam aboot, that whan
his days o' service war dune, he gaed
awa to his ain hoose.

24. And eftir thae days his wife
Elizabeth conceived, and wadna be
seen for fyve months ; sayin,

25. "Sae has the Lord dune to me, to tak awa my humiliation amang the folk."

26. And i' the sixth month the angel Gabriei was sent frae God till a citie o' Galilee ca'd Nazareth,

27. Till a maid betrothed to a man named Joseph, o' the hoose o' Dauvid; and the maid's name was Mary.

28. And the Angel, comin in till her, says, "Joy be to ye, favored ane! The Lord is w'ye; blest be ye amang weemen!"

29. But she was unco put-about at the sayin, and was comin ower in her mind wha-na kind o' salutation this micht be!

30. And the Angel said, "Fear-na, Mary! for ye ha'e gotten favor wi' God!"

31. "And tak tent! ye sal conceive i' the womb, and bring forth a son, and sal ca' his name JESUS.

32. "He sal be great, an' sal be ca'd 'The Son o' the Maist Heigh; and the Lord sal gie to him the thron o' his faither Dauvid.

33. "And be sal reign ower the hoose o' Jacob for aye: and o' his kingdom sal be nae endin!"

34. But Mary said to the Angel, "Hoo sal this be, sin a husband I ken-na!"

35. And the Angel answerin, says, "The Holie Spirit sal come, and the pooer o' the Maist Heigh sal descend upon ye; and sae that that is to be born sal be ca'd holie, the Son o' God!"

36. "And mark! Elizabeth, yere kinswumman, e'en she has conceived a son in her auld age; and this is the saxth month wi' ber wha was coontil bairnless.

37. "For nae word frae God sal want pooer!"

38. And Mary said, "Lo! I am the handmaid o' the Lord.¹ Be it

e'en to me, conform to thy word!" And the Angel gaed awa frae her.

39. And i' thae days, Mary raise, and gaed intil the hill-kintra wi' baste, intil a citie o' Judah;

40. And enter't intil the hoose o' Zechariah, and salutit Elizabeth.

41. And it cam aboot that as Elizabeth heard Mary's salutation, the bairn in her womb rejoiced; and Elizabeth was fu' o' the Holie Spirit,

42. And raised her voice in loud exclamation, and said, "Happy ye amang weemen! and blest is the frute o' yere womb!"

43. "And for what is this come to me, that the mither o' my Lord soud come tae me?"

44. "For behanld! as suns as the voice o' yere salutation eam to my bearin, the bairn lap i' my womb for joy.

45. "And happy she wha lippen'd! for thar sal be comin to pass o' thae things spoken to her frae the Lord."

46. And Mary said, "My saul dis magnify the Lord,

47. "And my spirit joys in God my Saviour!"

48. "For he has lookit upon the laigh estate o' his handmaid; for lo! frae this oot, a'generations sal ca' me blest,

49. "For that the Mighty Ane has dune to me great things; and Holie is his name!"

50. "And his mercie is until generations and generations, to thae that fear him.

51. "He wrocht victorie wi' his arm; he dang them that war heigh i' their heart's intent.

52. "He pu'd doon mighty anes frae throns, and liftit up thae o' laigh estate.

53. "To hungry anes be gied

¹ V. 38. We ken-na whilk to admire maist — Mary's faith, a readiness to risk that

rowth o' gude things ; and the walthy
he ca'd awa toom ;

54. " He helpit Isra'l, his servitor,
and remember't his mercie,

55. " As he spak to oor faithers,
to Abra'm and his seed for aye ! "

56. And Mary bidit wi' her for
about thrie months ; and retrnrn't to
her ain hoose.

57. Noo Elizabeth's time o' bringin-
forth was come ; and she buren a son.

58. And her neebors and kin heard
hoo the Lord had multiplyt his
mercies to her, and they rejoiced wi'
her.

59. And it cam aboot, that on the
anchth day they cam to circumceesce
the bairn ; and they wad hae him
ca'd " Zachariah," aftir the name o'
his faither.

60. And his mither answer't, " Na,
but he sal be ca'd John ! "

61. And they said to her, " Nane
o' yer kin is ca'd by this name ! "

62. And they made signs to his
faither, " Hoo wad ye hae him
ca'd ? "

63. And he wad hae a writin-
tablet, and wrata, " His name is
John ! " And a' ferlied.

64. And his mou' was unsteekit at
ance, and his tongue lowseed ; and he
spak, and praised God.

65. And fear fell on a' the nee-
bors ; and this was noised abreid
ower the hill-pairt of Judea.

66. And a' wha heard it laid it up
in their hearts, sayin, " Whatna
bairn sal this be ? " for the haun o'
the Lord was wi' him.

67. And his faither Zachariah was
fu' o' the Holie Spirit, and pro-
pheasyt, sayin,

68. " Blest be the Lord God o'
Isra'l, wha has regairdit his ain folk,
and wrocht salvation for them ! "

69. " And has raised up a born o'
Salvation for us in the boose o' his
servant Dauvid :

70. " As he spak by the word o'
the propheta, wha hae been sin' the
beginnin,

71. " Salvation frae our faes, and
frae the haun o' a' that hate us.

72. " To schaw mercie to oor
faithers, and to keep in mind his
holie Covenant :

73. " The aith he swure to Abra'm
oor faither,

74. " To grant to us, that, deli-
verin us frae the haun o' oor faes, we
soud aer' him wi' nae dreid,

75. " In holiness and richtouaness
a' the days o' oor leavin.

76. " And ye, bairn, sal be ca'd
the Prophet o' the Maist Heigh ; for
ye sal gang on afore him, to mak
ready his gangins ;

77. " To gie knowledge o' salva-
tion to his folk, for the remittin o'
their sins,

78. " For that God's yearnin
mercis is toward us, whaur-by the
dawin frae on heigh sal find us,

79. " To glint on them wha sit in
darkness, and the gloamin o' death ;
to airt oor feet intil the ways o'
peace ! "

80. And the bairn grew, and wax'd
sterk in spirit, and was i' the deserts
to the day he was made kent to
Isra'l.

CHAPTIR TWA.

Jesus, till he was threety years o' age.

NOO i' thae days it cam aboot that
gaed oot a decree frae Cesar
Augustus that a' the inhabitants o' his
dominions soud be enrolled.

2. And this enrollment was made
whan Quirinius was Governor in
Syria.

3. And a' war gaun to be enrolled,
ilk ane to his ain citie.

4. And Joseph, as weel, gaed up
frae Galilee, oot o' the citie o' Naz-
areth, intil Judea, intil Dauvid's citie,
whilk is ca'd Bethlehem ; for that
he was o' the boose and stock o'
Danvid :

5. To be enrolled, wi' Mary his
betrothed wife, wha was a mither-to-
be.

6. And sae it was, that while they war thar, the days war fulfilled for her to bring forth.

7. And she brocht forth her son—her first-born—and row't him in a barrie-coat, and laid him i' the manger, for that there was nae room for them i' the inn.

8. And thar war in the same kintra side herds bidin i' the fields, and keepin gaird ower their flocks by nicht.

9. And see ! an Angel o' the Lord cam till them, and the glorie o' the Lord glintit roond aboot them ; and they war sair gliff'd.

10. And the Angel said, " Be-na gliff'd ; for I bring ye gude tidins o' muckle joy to the hail warld !

11. " For thar is born t'ye this day, in Dauvid's toun, a Savionr, wha is the Anointit Lord.

12. " And here is the token for ye : ye'se fin' the bairn row't in a barrie-coat, lyin in a manger."

13. And a' at ance there was wi' the Angel a thrang o' Heeven's host, praisin God, and sayin,

14. " Glorie to God i' the heighest heights, and on the yirth peace ! Gude wull to men ! "

15. And as the Angels gaed awa frae them to Heeven, the shepherds said one to anither, " Let us gang noo to Bethlehem, and see this thing that has come aboot, that the Lord has made kent to us ! "

16. And they gaed, makin haste, and fund Mary, and Joseph, and the bairn lyin in a manger.

17. And whan they saw it, they tauld abraid the words that war tell't to them anent this bairn.

18. And a' that heard it ferlied at the things tauld them by the shepherds.

19. But Mary keepit a' thae things, pondering on them in her heart.

20. And the shepherds returned, gien glorie to God, for a' thae things they saw and heard ; e'en as it was tell't them.

21. And whan the auchtth day was come for the circumcisian o' the bairn, his name they ca'd JESUS, whilk was sae ca'd by the Angel 'or he was conceivt i' the womb.

22. And whan the days o' purification by the law o' Moses war fulfilled, they took him to Jersusalem to present him to the Lord ;

23. E'en as it is putten-doон i' the law o' the Lord, " Ilka male that opens a womb sal he ca'd holie to the Lord."

24. And to offer an offeran, as it is putten-doон i' the law o' the Lord, " A pair o' cusbarts, or twa young doos."

25. And mark ! thar was a man i' Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon ; and this man was holie and devout, lookin' for Iera'l's consolation. And the Holie Spirit was on him.

26. And the Holie Spirit had made kent to him that he soudna see death till he had seen the Anointit o' the Lord.

27. And he cam i' the Spirit, intil the Temple ; and whan the parents brocht in the bairn Jesus, to do for him what was the custom o' the Law,

28. He took him in his arms, and praised God, and said,

29. " Noo, wull thou dismiss thy servant, O Lord ! conform to thy word, in peace !

30. " For my een has seen thy salvation,

31. " Whilk thou hast brocht forrit afore the face o' a' folk.

32. " A licht for unveilin to the Gentiles, and a glorie for thy folk o' Iera'l ! "

33. And Joseph and his mither ferlied at a' the things that war said anent him.

34. And Simeon bless't them, and said to Mary his mither, " Lo ! this Ane is set for the fa'in and staunin again o' mony in Iera'l : and for a sign to be misca'd.

35. " And a sword sal thring throwe yere ain heart as weel, that

the thochts o' mony hearts may be schawn."

36. "And thar was ane Anna, a prophetess, Phanuel's doohter, o' the tribe o' Asher; she was o' an unco age, and had leev'd wi' a husband seeven year frae her maidenhood:

37. And abe bade a weedow for four-score and four year, wha left-na the Temple; and ser't wi' fastins and prayers nicht and day:

38. And she too comin in at that time gied thanks to God; and spak o' him to a' wha war waitin for the deliverin o' Jerusalem.

39. And whan they had dune a' things conform to the law o' the Lord, they gaed awa intil Galilee, to their ain citie Nazareth.

40. And the bairn grew, and wax't strang; fu' o' wisdom; and God's tender favor was wi' him.

41. Noo his parents gaed yearly to Jerusalem, at the Feast o' the Pascha.

42. And whan he was twal-year auld, they gaed up to Jerusalem, as was the mainer o' the Feast.

43. And whan they had fulfilled the days, they returned; but the lad Jesus remained abint in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mither kent-na.

44. But, supposin him to be wi' the ither's o' the company, gaed a day's journey, and they socht him amang their kin and acquaintance.

45. And whan they faund-him-na, they gaed back to Jerusalem again, seekin him.

46. And eftir thrie days they faund him i' the Temple, sittin wi' the Doctors, baith hearin them and speirin quastions at them.

47. And a' that heard him war astonished ayont a' things at his wisdom and his sayins.

48. And seein him, they ferlied uncolie; and his mother says to him, "Son, why hae ye dune this till us? See! yere faither and I hae lookit for ye in pain!"

49. And he said, "Hoo is't that ya

socht for me? Wist-ye-na, I main needs be i' my Faither's boose!"

50. And they kent-na the meanin o' what he spak to them.

51. And he gaed doon wi' them, and cam till Nazareth, and obeyt them; but his mither laid¹ up a' thae things in her heart.

52. And Jesus wax't in wynaheid, and in stature, and in favor wi' God and wi' man.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Jesus baptizt; and his genealogy.

NOO, i' the fifteanth year o' the rule o' Tiberine Cesar, Pontius Pilate bein Governor o' Judea, and Herod Tetrarch o' Galilee; Philip, his brither, bein Tetrarch o' the kintra o' Iturea and Trachonitis, and Lysanius Tetrarch o' Abilene,

2. I' the Heigh-priesthood o' Annas and Caiaphas, the word o' God cam to John, Zachariab's son, i' the muirlanda.

3. And he cam till a' pairts aboot Jordan, preachin repentance-baptism, and remittin o' sins.

4. As it is putten-doон i' the buik o' the sayins o' Esaiyah the prophet, "The sough o' ane cryin oot i' the muirlanda, 'Mak ye gangable the Lord's way! mak straucht his fit roads.'

5. "Ilka hengh sal be filled heigh; and ilka mountain and hill sal be made laigh, and the gley't sal be made straucht, and the rouch ways plain;

6. "And a' flesh sal look on God's salvation!"

7. See he was sayin to the thrangs that gaed oot to be baptizez by him, "Ye brood o' vipers! wha was't that warned you to flee frae the comin wrath?

¹ V. 51. What could Mary's thochta be, a' thae years. She aiblins didna come to the fu' licht, till aboot the time o' his death. And hoo did Luke ken sae mickle aboot her ponderins o' heart? Nae doot, frae hersel, in eftir daya.

8. "Bring ye than forth frutes fit for repentance ; and begin-na to say wi' yersels, 'We hae a faither, s'en Abra'm !' For say I t'ye, that God coud raise up o' thae stanes bairns till Abra'm !

9. "And s'en noo the axe is by the rute o' the trees : ilka tree bringin-na forth gude fruit is cuttit doon, and cristen intil the lowe."

10. And the strang o' folk war speirin at him, "What than, sal we do ?"

11. And he answer't, "He that has twa coats, lat him bestow on him that has nane : and he that has meat, lat him dae the same."

12. Than cam tax-men to he baptizez't, and said to him, "Maister ! what are we to do ?"

13. And he says to them, "Tak frae the folk nae mair than what is set for ye !"

14. And sodgers, too, war speirin at him, "And we, what sal we do ?" And he said to them, "Lift the strang baun to nane, naither grip aucht wrangously ; and be content wi' yere providin."

15. Noo, as a' the folk war lookin forrit, and war switherin i' their hearts aboot John, gin aiblins he micht be the Messiah ;

16. John answer't, sayin till ane-and-a', "I, indeed, baptize ye wi' watir ; but Ane comes wha is michtier than I ; the whang o' whase shoon I am-na fit to lout doon and lowe. He sal baptize ye wi' Holie Spirit and wi' fire.

17. "Whase fan is in his neive, and he will redd up his threshin-floor, and teem his wheat intil his gurnal, but the cauff will be burn wi' nevir-endin lowe !"

18. Wi' mony mair exhortins was he deliverin the Gude-tidins to the people.

19. But Herod, the King-depute, being reprov'd by him anent Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, and for a' the mony ills Herod had dune,

20. Addit this till't a', that be cuist John in prison.

21. Noo, it was, that when a' the folk war baptizez't, Jesus too was baptizez't, and continued in prayer— and the heevens war unsteekit,

22. And the Holie Spirit cam doon in bodily form like a doo upon him ; and a voice cam oot o' the heevena, "Thou art my Son, the Beloved Ane ; in Thee I delicht !"

23. And Jesus was, at the first, aboot thretty years o' age ; bein son —as was believ't—o' Joseph,¹ o' Heli,

24. O' Matthat, o' Levi, o' Melchi, o' Jannai, o' Joseph,

25. O' Mattathias, o' Amos, o' Nahum, o' Eali, o' Naggai,

26. O' Maath, o' Mattathias, o' Semein, o' Josech, o' Joda,

27. O' Joanan, o' Rhessa, o' Zerubbabel, o' Shealtiel, o' Neri,

28. O' Melchi, o' Addi, o' Cosam, o' Elmadaim, o' Er,

29. O' Jeaua, o' Eliezer, o' Jorim, o' Matthat, o' Levi,

30. O' Symeon, o' Judas, o' Joseph, o' Jonam, o' Eliakim,

31. O' Melea, o' Menna, o' Mattatha, o' Nathan, o' Dauvid.

32. O' Jesse, o' Obed, o' Boaz, o' Salmon, o' Nahshon,

33. O' Amminadab, o' Arni, o' Esrom, o' Perez, o' Judah,

34. O' Janeob, o' Isaac, o' Abra'm, o' Terah, o' Nahor,

35. O' Serug, o' Reu, o' Peleg, o' Eber, o' Shelah,

36. O' Cainan, o' Arphaxad, o' Shem, o' Noah, o' Lamech,

37. O' Methusalah, o' Enoch, o' Jared, o' Mahalaleel, o' Cainan,

38. O' Enos, o' Seth, o' Adam, o' God.

¹ V. 23 to the end. Gar a Jew to see that Jesus was a son o' Dauvid, and born in Bethlehem, and he was gey-weel won ower ! but ither folk lookit-na aye muckle at his pedigree. Tatian, i' his *Diauersariorum*, made aboot A.D. 160, leas' it oot a'thegither.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

*Temptit by Sautan—Lichtlit by his neebors
—but testifyt till by his works!*

AND Jesus, fu' o' the Holie Spirit, cam again fras the Jordan, and was led to the wilderness by the Spirit, forty daya.

2. Bein temptit by Santan. And naething did he eat i' thae days; and eftir, he was hungerin.

3. And the deevil said to him, "Gin ye be God's Son, speak to this stane, that it may turn to a bannock!"

4. And Jesus made answer to him, "It is putten-doone, 'Man leevea-na on braid alone, but on ilka word o' God!'"

5. And he led him up, and pointit oot till him a' the kingdoms o' the yirth, in a moment o' time.

6. And the deevil says to him, "To thee wull I gie a' this rule—asthegither—and the glorie (for it has been gien up to me; and I gie it till wham I wull).

7. "Gin aiblins thou worship me, a' sal be thine!"

8. And makin answer to him, Jesus says, "It is putten-doone, 'Ye sal worship the Lord yere God, and to him alone sal ye do service!'"

9. And he led him to Jerusalem, and set him on a towerickie o' the Templa, and says to him, "Lout yersel doon;

10. "For it is putten-doone, 'He sal gie his Angels chairge ower ye, to defend ye;

11. "'And i' their heuns sal they upheud ye, that ye ding-na yere fit on a stane!'"

12. And answerin, quo' Jesus to him, "It is said, 'Ye sanna temp' the Lord yere God!'"

13. And, endin' a' his temptations, the deevil depairtit fras him till anither tima.

14. And Jesus came back i' the Spirit's power to Galilee; and a din gaeed oot aboot him a' throwe the hail kintra round.

15. And he was teachin i' their kirks, bein mickle thocht o' by them a'.

16. And he cam intil Nazareth, whaur he had been brocht up; and gaed in, as he aye did, to the kirk, on the Sabbath day, and stude up to read;

17. And thar was gien to him the buik o' Esaiyah the Prophet; and openin the buik, he faund whaur it was putten-doone,

18. "The Spirit o' the Lord is on me, for that he has anointit me to preach gude tidins to the pair; he has sent me to tell oot their release to the prisoners, and to the blin' receivin o' sicht; to send awa free thae that war wrang.

19. "To soond oot the blessed day o' the Lord!"

20. And closin the buik, he gied it again to the beadle, and sat doon; and a' een i' the kirk war on him.

21. And he begude to say to them, "This day is this writin come to pass i' yere hearin!"

22. And a' war witnesses to him, and ferlyin at the words o' grace faein fras his mou'; and war sayin, "Isna this Joseph's son?"

23. And he says to them, "Ye wull, o' a surety say to me, 'Physician, heal yersel! As mony things as we heard o' bein done at Caper-naum, do here as weel, i' yere ain kintra-side!'"

24. And quo' he, "Truly say I t'ye, nae prophet is honored in his ain kintra-side!"

25. "But truly I tell ye, thar war mony weedows in Isra'el i' the days o' Elijah, whan the beavens war steekit thrie year and sax months; and a great dearth cam on a' the lan'.

26. "And to nane o' them was Elijah sent, bat only until Sarepta o' Sidon, to a wumman, a weedow.

27. "And thar war mony lepers in Isra'el, i' the time o' Elisha the prophet; and no ane o' them was made clean but Naaman the Syrian."

28. And a' i' the kirk war fa' o' rage, when they heard thir things;

29. And they raise up to cuist him oot o' the citie; and they led him till the brow o' the hill on whilk their citie was biggit, that he nicht be enisten doon heidlang.

30. But he, gangin oot throwe amang them, gaed his ways.

31. And he cam doon till Caper-naum, a citie o' Galilee, and was teachin them on the Sabbath-days;

32. And they war astonish't at his teachin; for his word cam wi' power.

33. And i' the kirk was a man wi' a foul spirit; and he cryt oot wi' a great voice,

34. Sayin, "Let us be! What is thar atween us and thes, Jesus o' Nazareth! Are ye come to destroy us? I ken ye—the Holie Ane o' God!"

35. And Jesus challenged him, "Peace! And come ye oot o' him!" And whan the demon had thrawn him doon, he cam oot o' him, doin him nae ill.

36. And astonishment cam on them. And they war sayin aye to anither, "Whatna word is this, that wi' authoritie and power he gies orders to foul spirits, and they come oot?"

37. And thar was gaun forth a great clash anent him, intil ilke place o' the kintra-side.

38. And, risin frae the kirk, he entered intil Simon's boose. Noo Simon's guude-mither was in sair pyne wi' a great fivver. And they speak to him for her.

39. And, staunin ower her, he rebukit the fivver, and it gaed frae her; and she raise, and waitit on them.

40. And whan the sun was¹ settin a' the folk, as mony as had sick anes wi' ony kind o' illness, brocht them

till him, and he laid hauns on them, and healed them.

41. And the demons too war gaun forth o' mony—cryin oot and sayin, "Ye are the Son o' God!" And he rebukit them; and allow't them nae to speak; for they kent he was the Messiah.

42. And whan it was day, he gaed oot and journey'd intil a desert bit; and the thrangs cam efter him, and held him back, that he soudna gang frae them.

43. But he said to them, "Till ither cities, as weel, maun I gie the Gude-tidins anent the Kingdom o' God, for for that was I sent."

44. And he was haudin forth i' the kirks o' Galilee.

CHAPTRIE FYVE.

Fishes to the nets: and a man doon throwe the lyggs to the Heater!

NOO it cam about, as the folk panged aboot him to hear God's word, he stude by Gennesaret Loch.

2. And saw twa boats lying by the Loch; but the fishers war gane frae them, and war syndin their nets.

3. And gaun intil aye o' the boats—whilk was Simon's—he wad hae him pit aff a wee frae the lan'; and sittin doon, he was teachin the thrang oot o' the boat.

4. And whan he quat speakin, he says to Simon, "Pit oot intil the deep, and lat doon yere nets for a haul."

5. And answerin, Simon says to him, "Maister! though we toiled a' nicht, we tuk naething; yet at thy sayin I wull lat doon the nets!"

6. And whan they did this, they took an unco number o' fish; and their nets war glean way.

7. And they made signs to their partners i' the ither boat, to come and gie them a haun. And they cam; and they filled fu' baith the boats, see that they war like to sink.

8. And Simon Peter, whan he saw, fell doon at Jesus' knees, cryin, "De-

¹ V. 40. The Jews war unoo particular aboot the Sabbath; and the holi day noo endin, they brocht oot their sick anes for healin. But gin God wad heal me—body or aul—on yon day o' the week, lat me be ready to come, and to bring others!

pairt frae ma, for I am a sinfu' man, O Lord !"

9. For amazement overcam him, and a' that war wi' him, on account o' the haul o' fish they tuik.

10. And s'en sae wi' baith James and John, Zebedee's sons, wha war pairtners wi' Simon. And Jesus says to Simon, "Fear-na ! Frae this time ye sal tak men !"

11. And, bringin their boats to the lau', they left a' and followt him.

12. And it cam aboot, that being in a certain citie, look ye ! a man fu' o' leprosie ; and haein sicht o' Jesus, he fell doon on his face, and cryt oot, "Lord ! gin thou be willin, thou can mak me weel !"

13. And he rax't oot his haun, sayin, "I wall ! Be clean !" And at ance the leprosie gaed frae him.

14. And he chairged him to tell nae ; "but gang, schaw yersel to the priet, and gie for yere recoverin what Moses enjoined, for a token to them."

15. But the word aboot him spread sae muuckle the mair ; and unco thrangs cam thegither to hear him, and to be recover't o' their ills.

16. But he was retirin to the wilderness, and prayin.

17. And it cam aboot on ane o' thae days, that he was teachin, and thar war sittin Pharisées and Writers, wha war come oot o' ilka toun o' Galilee and Judea, and Jerusalem ; and the Lord's pooer was thar to heal them.

18. And look ! they fesh on a couch a man wi' a stroke ; and they socht to fesh him in, and lay him doon afore Him.

19. And no kennin hoo they cond bring him in, on account o' the thrang, they gaed up on the hoose-tap, and throwe the tilin they loutit him doou, wi' his couch, i' the mida, afore Jesus.

20. And seein their lealness, he says to him, "Man, yere sins are forgien ye !"

21. And the Writers and the Pharisées begude to dispute, "Wha is this utterin profaneness ? Wha can forgie sins but God alleen ?"

22. But Jesus kennin their thochts, says to them, "Why are ye debatin i' yere hearts ?

23. "Whilk is easier to say, 'Ye're sins are forgien' : or to say, 'Rise ye and walk' ?

24. "But in order ye may ken that the Son o' Man has authoritie on the yirth to forgie sins," [he says to the paralytie], "Rise ! and takin up yere couch, gang yere ways till yere hame !"

25. And at ance, afore them a', risin, and liftin that whaur-on he lay, he gaed aff to his ain hoose, gien glorie to God.

26. And they war a' astoundit, and glorifyt God ; and war fu' o' dreid, sayin, "We hae seen unco things the day !"

27. And efter thir things, he gaed forth and saw a tax-man, ca'd Levi, presidin at the tax-liftin ; and said to him, "Be followin me !"

28. And forsakin a', he raise and followt him.

29. And Levi made a great feast for him in his hoose ; and a great company o' tax-men and ithars sat doon wi' him.

30. And the Pharisées and their Writers war yammerin at his disciples, sayin, "Hoo is't that ye eat and drink wi' tax-men and reprobates ?"

31. And Jesus answerin, says to them, "It's no the hale anes wha want the leech, but the ill anes !

32. "I hae-na come to win righteous anes, but sinfu' anes to rapentance."

33. And they say to him, ¹ "Hoo

¹ V. 33. It gars ane feel dowie and wae, to see, a' throwe this chapter, hoo the Pharisées and Doctors war hingin on him, and houndin him ! aye seekin something to fant him wi'. Oh for the spirit that aye seeks something to commend and praise, raither than ban and flyte !

is't that John's disciples fast mickle, and mak prayers ; and thae o' the Pharisées as weel ; but yere ain are eatin and drinkin ? ”

34. And he said to them, “ Wad ye hae the sons o' the bride-chaumer fast while the bridegroom is yet wi' them ? ”

35. “ But the days wull come—e'en whan the bridegroom is ta'en frae them—than wull they fast i' thae days.”

36. And he spak a parable to them : “ Nas man pits a clout frae a new mantle on an auld ane ; else, than baith the new piece makes a rive, and the new piece 'grees-na wi' the auld.

37. “ And nae man pits new wine intil auld wine-skins ; else the new wine wull rive the wine-skins, and it wull be skail't, and the skins destroy't.

38. “ But new wine maun be teemint intil new wine-skins, and baith are preserved.

39. “ And nane, haein preed auld wine, seeks for the new ; for, quo' he, ‘ The auld is better ! ’ ”

CHAPTIR SAX.

A ween heids o' corn for the hung'ry. A pickle for ilk ane oot o' this graun field-sermon !

NOO it cam aboot that on the Sabbath-day he was gann throwe the corn-fields ; and his disciples pu'd the heids o' corn, and war eatin, rubbing them i' their loof.

2. But some o' the Pharisées said, “ Why dae ye an unlawfu' thing on the Sabbath-day ? ”

3. And Jesus answerin them said, “ Hae ye no e'en read this, what Dauvid did, whan he was hunger't, he and thae wi' him ? ”

4. “ Hoo he gaed intil God's hoose, and did tak and eat o' the Breid o' Presentation, and gied to thae that war wi' him ; whilk wasna lawfu' for him to eat—but for the priests alone ! ”

5. And he said to them, “ The Son o' Man is Lord e'en o' the Sabbath.”

6. And it cam aboot that on anither Sabbath-day he gaed intil a kirk, and was teachin. And a man was thar, and his richt haun was dwined awa.

7. But the Writers and the Pharisées war lookin, gin he wad heal on the Sabbath-day, that they might hae an accusation again him.

8. Noo he kent their thochts ; notwithstanding he says to the man wi' his haun dwined awa, “ Rise ye, and staun forth i' the mids ! ” And he raise, and stude forth.

9. And Jesus said to them, “ I quairesten ye : is it lawfu' on the Sabbath to do guude, or to do ill ? to save a life, or to destroy it ? ”

10. And he lookit roond aboot on them a', and said to the man, “ Rax oot yere haun ! ” And he did sae, and his haun was restored, like as the ither.

11. And they war fu' o' rage : and they coonsell't ane wi' anither what they wad do to Jesus ?

12. And it cam aboot i' thae days, that he gaed oot intil a mountain for prayer ; and was a' the nicht in prayer to God.

13. And whan the dawin cam, he ca'd his disciples, and waled oot free them twal', wham eke he named “ Apostles ” :

14. Simon, wham eke he named “ Peter,” and Andro his brither, James and John, Philip and Bartholomie,

15. And Matthew and Tammas, James o' Alpheus, and Simon o' the Zealots,

16. And Judas o' James, and Judas Iscariot, wha was the traitor.

17. And he cam doon wi' them, and stude on an even bit o' grun' : and a great thrang o' his disciples, and an unco number o' folk frae a' Judea and Jerusalem, and the coast aboot Tyre and Sidon, wha cam to

bear him, and to be healed o' their illa,

18. And they that war sair fash'd wi' foul spirits; and they war healed.

19. And a' the thrang socht to touch him, for thar gaed forth pouer fras him, and healed a'.

20. And he liftit up his een on his disciples, and quo' he, "Happy, ye destitute! for yours is God's Kingdome.

21. "Happy, ye wha are hungerin noo! for ye sal be fill'd! Happy, ye wha greet noo; for ye sal smile.

22. "Happy are ye, whan men sal hate ye, and whan they sal separate ye, and misca' ye, and cast oot yere name as vileness, for the Son o' Man's sake.

23. "Blythe be ye i' that day, and lowp for joy! for lo! yere meed is great Aboon: for in siclike manner did their faithers to the propheta.

24. "But wae for you, ye rich anes! for ye are noo haein yere consolation.

25. "Wae for you wha hae been filled fu' noo! for ye sal hung'er. Waa for you wha lanch noo! for ye sal greet.

26. "Alack! whan a' folk speak weel o' ye! for o'en sae did their faithers to the fause propheta.

27. "But I say to you wha hear: lo'e! yere faes! do gude to them wha hate ye.

28. "Be blessin them that ban ye; pray for them that ill-use ye.

29. "To him that clours ye on ae cheak, gie o'en the ither; and fras

him wha poinds yere coat, withhanda yere cloak as weel.

30. Bestow on ilk ane wha seeks fras ye; and fras him wha takes awa yere gudees, ask them no again.

31. "And as ye wad that men soud do to yersels, do ye e'en the same to them likewise.

32. "Gin ye loe them that lo'e ye, whatna thanks are thar for ye? for e'en the ill-deedie lo'e thae that lo'e them.

33. "And gin aihlins ye do gude to them that do gude to yersels, whatna thanks has ye? for e'en the ill-deedie do the same.

34. "And gin aihlins ye lend to thae fras wham ye hope to receive, whatna thanks dae ye win? for the evil lend to the evil, to receive as muckle again.

35. "But lo'e ye're enemies, and do them gude, and lend, lookin for naething back; and yere meed sal be great, and ye sal be bairns o' the Maist Heigh; for he is kindlie to the ungratefu' and the reprobate.

36. "Be ye than mercifu', e'en as yere Faither is mercifu'.

37. "And judge-na, and ye'se be-na judged: condemn-na, and ye'se be-na condemned: release, and ye'se be released.

38. "Bestow, and it sal be bestown upon you: gude measur, pang'd doon and jousl't thegither, and akailin ower, sal they gie intil yere lap: for wi' yere ain measur that ye measur sal it be gien back to ye."

39. And he spak a parable to them: "May the blin' lead the blin'! Wull they no baith fa' intil a shengh?

40. "A disciple is no aboon bis Maister; but, whan perfetit, he sal be as his Maister.

41. "But why div ye tak tent o' the mote i' yere brither's ee, but consider-na the baulk that's i' yere ain ee?

42. "Or hoo can ye say till yere brither, 'Brither, lat me pu' oot the mote that is in yere ee,' whan ye yersel see-na the baulk that is in yere

V. 27. This rule is like gude seed sown i' the yirth; and it's aye growin! It brairdit langyne, and it will ripeen some day! wars sal cease, and hate be shamed o' itsel! Div ye no think we can best understand the Sixth Commandment, by takin it as a command again Hatred? Hate is the nation, but Murder is the king; and the declaration o' war is again the king—but tak in a' his subjects! See Matt. v. 21, 22. And sae wi' a' the Commands!

ain ee? Dissemblar! east oot first the haulk oot o' yere ain ee, and than may ye see weel to pu' oot the mote that is in yere brither's ee.

43. "For a soun' tree brings-na forth feckless frute, nor dis a feckless tree bring forth gude frute.

44. "For ilka tree may be kent by its ain fruse: for folk gaither-na figs o' thistles, nor o' a bramble gaither they grapes.

45. "The gude man, oot o' the gude gear o' his ain heart, brings oot what is gude; and the ill man, oot o' the ill, what is ill; for, oot o' the owercome o' his heart his mou' speaks.

46. "But for why say ye to me, 'Lord, Lord!' and div-na what I say?

47. "Whanee comes to me, and bears my words, I wull schaw ye wham he is like:

48. "He is like to a man biggin a hause, wha howkit deep, and laid a fundation on a rock; and, a spate comin, the torrent struck sair again that hause, and coud-na ding it, for it was biggit on a rock.

49. "But he wha hears and dis-na, is like to a man that biggit a hause on the yird, wantin a fundation; agane whilk cam doon the spate, and at ance it was dang in; and the fa' o' that hause was great!"

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

The weadow's son givn back to her. John in d.o.l. Ane weeshes Jesus' feet.

NOO, eftir he bad endit a' his teachin i' the hearin' o' the thrang, he gaed intil Capernaum.

2. And a Centurion's servin-man, wha was unco tbocht o' by him, was ill, and ready to dee.

3. But, hearin aboot Jesus, he sent to him Elders o' the Jews, wha besocht him that he wad come and save his servin-man.

4. And whan they cam to Jesus, they besocht him sair, sayin, "He is wordie to wham ye wad grant this:

5. "For he lo'eas oor nation, and has biggit us a kirk!"

6. And Jesus was gaun wi' them. By this time he, no bein far frae the hoose, the Centurion sent freends to him, sayin "Lord, dinna fash yersel; for I am-na wordie ye soud come under my roof.

7. "And sas naither thocht I mysel wardie to come till ye; but speak wi' a word, and my servin-lad sal be bale.

8. "For e'en I mysel am aye set under authoritie, and hasin under me sodgers; and I say to aye, 'Gang,' and he gangs; and to another, 'Come,' and he comes; and to my servin-lad, 'Do this,' and he dis it."

9. And whan Jesus heard these words, he ferlied at him; and turnin to the thrang that follow't him, said, "I say t'ye, I haen-a fund sic leal faith, na, no in Israel!"

10. And they that were sent, returnin to the hoose, faund the servin-lad weel.

11. And it cam to pass in order, that he was gaun intil a citie ca'd Nain; and mony disciples gaed wi' him, and a great thrang.

12. Noo when he cam to the yett o' the citie, look! thar was carryt oot aye deid, the ae son o' his mither, and she was a weadow: and a hantle o' folk o' the citie war wi' her.

13. And whan the Lord saw her, he had unco pitie on her, and says to her, "Dinna greet!"

14. And gaun forrit, he touched the bier; and the bearers stude still; and he said, "Laddie! I say to thee, Rise!"

15. And he that was deid sat up, and begude to speak. And be gied him ower to his mither.

16. And a gliss fell on them a'; and they magnifyt God, cryin, "A great prophet has raise up amang us!" and "God has visitit his folk!"

17. And this word aboot him gaed oot intil the hail o' Judea, and a' throws the pairts roond aboot.

18. And the disciples o' John tell't him a' thir things.

19. And comin to him twa certain anes o' his disciples,¹ John sent them to the Lord, sayin, "Are ye the Ane that soud come? or are we to look for anither ane?"

20. And comin to him, the men said, "John Baptist has sent us to thee, sayin, 'Are ye the Ane that soud come? or are we to look for anither ane?'"

21. At that 'oor he healed mony o' their ills and plagues, and foul spirits; and on mony blin' he bestowed sight.

22. And Jesus answerin, said to them, "Gang yere ways, and carry word to John what ye saw and heard: hoo the blin' win their sight, the lamenters gang aboot, lepers are made clean, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the needy hae the joyfu'-message preached to them.

23. "And weel may he be, wha finds nae cause o' stumblin in me!"

24. And, the messengers o' John gaun awa, he begude to speak to a' the thrang anent John: "What gaed ye oot intil the waste to see? A reed, win'-shaken!"

25. "But what wast ye gaed oot to see? A man clad in saft attire? But look! they wha are fund in grand attire, and fend delicately, are in royal palaces.

26. "But what gaed ye oot tae see? A prophet? Aye! say I t'ye: and muuckle mair nor a prophet!"

27. "This is he o' wham it is

putten-doone, 'Lo! I send oot my messenger afore yere face, wha sal mak yer fit-road gangable afore ye!'

28. "For I say t'ye, Amang a' that are born o' weemen, there issa a greater prophet than John the Baptist; yet he wha is the leas in God's Kingdom is greater nor he!"

29. And a' the folk whan they heard — and the tax-men — laudit God, bein baptize'd in John's baptizezin.

30. But the Pharisees and the Writers pat aside the coonseal o' God again their sels, no bein baptize'd o' him.

31. "Unto what, than, sal I compare the men o' this generation? and until what are they like?

32. "They are like bairns sittin i' the merkit-place, and cryin aye to anither, and sayin, 'We piped to ye, and ye danced-na; we crooned a dirge to ye, and ye grat-na.'

33. "For John the Baptist is come, neither eatin bread nor drinkin wine, and ye say, 'He has a demon.'

34. "The Son o' Man is come, eatin and drinkin; and ye say, 'See! a man o' gluttony, and a wine-tippler; a freand o' tax-men and the ill-deedie!'

35. "And yet wisdom is justifis't o' ber bairns!"

36. And a certain ane o' the Pharisees wad hae him come and eat wi' him: and gaun intil the hoose o' the Pharisee, he sat doon to meat.

37. And see! a wumman o' the citie, wha was an ill-dooer, whan she kent that he was sittin at meat i' the Pharisee's hoose, she gat her an alabaster cruse o' perfume,

38. And staunin' abint him, at his feet, she begude to weet his feet wi' her tears; and wiped the tears aff wi' her hair; and was kissin his feet, and crystit them wi' the perfume.

39. But the Pharisee wha had bidden him, seein it, spak till his sel: "This ane, gin he war a prophet, wad hae taen tent wha and o'

¹ V. 19. Was John's faith dwinin? Aiblins. Tho' he spak clear eneuch o' Christ's spiritual pou'er (John, i. 36), he was aiblins like the prophets o' auld, and spak better nor he understande (1 Peter, i. 10, 11), and was still expectin Jesus to set up a kingdom at Jerusalem. Jesus leet him ken, that gin he [Jesus] was doin the works o' God, he maun also be doin God's will; and God wad tak care o' his ain Kingdom, whether it had human grandeur in't or no?

whatna sort this wumman is that touches him — that she is a bad ane."

40. And Jesus, answerin, says to him, "Simon, I hae a thing to say t'ye." And he says, "Maister, say on!"

41. "Thar was a certain creditor wha had twa debtors ; the ane was awn fyve-hunner siller-pennies, and the tither fifty.

42. "And whan they had nocht to pay wi', he forga'e them baith. Whilk o' them, noo, wull lo'e him maist?"

43. Answerin, quo' Simon, "I wad think he to wham he forga'e the maist." And he says to them, "Ye hae judged richt."

44. And turnin him to the wumman he says to Simon, "See ye this wumman! I cam intil yere hoose : ye gied me nae watir for my feet ; but she wat my feet wi' her tears, and wiped them aff wi' her hair.

45. "Nae kiss gied-ye-me: but she, sin' I cam in, hasna left aff to kiss my feet.

46. "Wi' nae ulyie did ye anoint my heid ; but she, wi' perfume, crystit my feet.

47. "Sae, say I t'ye, Her mony sins hae been forgi'en ; for she lo'ed muckle ; but to wham little is forgi'en, be lo'es little."

48. And he said till her, "Yere sins are forgi'en."

49. And they sittin at meat wi' him, begude to say to their sels, "Wha is this, that is e'en forgi'en sins?"

50. But he said to the wumman, "Yere faith has saved ye! Gang in peace!"

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

The sowing o' the seed. A storm laid. A lassie raised.

AND it cam aboot that in due coorse he gaed throwe a' cities and villages preachin, and bringin the

Gude-tidins o' the Kingdom o' God, and the Twal' war wi' him ;

2. And certain weemen wha had been healed o' foul spirits, and illnesses ; Mary, ca'd the Magdalene,

3. And Joan, wife o' Chuza, Herod's steward ; and Suaanna ; and mony mair, wha war giean oot to them o' their ain plenishin.

4. And whan a great thrang cam thegither, and they o' the cities journey'd till him, he spek throwe a parable :

5. "A sower gaed oot to saw his seed ; and as he sawed, some fell aside the fit-road, and was trampit doon, and the burdies o' the air devo'r't it.

6. "And ither fell on the rock ; and as sunie as it brairdit it dwined awa ; for it wanted moisture.

7. "And ither fell amang the thorns ; and, growin up wi't, the thorns smoor'd it.

8. "And ither some fell intil the gude grun' ; and brairdin, brocht forth frute, a bunner-fauld." Thir things sayin, he cry't alood, "He wha has lugs to hear, let him hear!"

9. But his disciples war speirit at him, "What may this parable be?"

10. And he said, "To you it is gien to win the knowledge o' the mysteries o' God's Kingdom : but to the lave in parables : nae seein they see-na, and hearin they understand-na¹.

11. "Noo the parable is this :— The Seed is the Word o' God.

12. "And they by the fit-road are they wha hear ; than comes Saurian, and cleeks awa the word fras their heart, least, believin, they soud be saved.

13. "And thir on the rock are they wha, whan they hear, wi' joy welcome the word ; but they hae nae route—wha believe for a wee, and in time o' trial fa' away.

¹ v. 10. Wha winna see, canna see ; and wha wisna understand, canna even hear ! God mak gleg oor hearin and seein !

14. "And thir that fell among the thorna, are they that hear ; and as they gang on their way, are smoor'd wi' care and care, and the gear and the joys o' this life, and bring nae frute to the ripenin.

15. "But that i' the gude grun are they wha, in an honest and leal heart, hear the word and grip it fast ; and, tholin a', bring their frute to perfecteness.

16. "For nae, luntin a crusie, covers it ower wi' a dish, or pits it aneath a couch ; but sets it on a stin, that they wha come in may see the licht.

17. "For thar is nae secret but sal be unfauldit ; nor onything hidlin that sanna be kent.

18. "Tak tent, than, hoo ye hear ! for to wha has sal rowth be gien ; and wha has-na, frae him sal be ta'en awa e'en what he seems to hae !"

19. Noo thar cam seekin him his mither and his brethren ; but they coudna win nar him for the thrang.

20. And it was said to him, "Yere mither and yere brethren are staunin oot-by, and wad see ye !"

21. But he answer't, and quo' he to them, "My mither and my brethren are thir—wha hear the Word o' God, an' do it !"

22. And it cam, that on ane o' the days, he gaed intil a boat, he and his disciples, and he said to them, "Let us gang ower to the other side o' the Loch !"

23. And they set oot. Noo, as they war sailin, he fell asleep. And thar cam doon an unco storm o' win' intil the Loch ; and they were fillin, and war in danger.

24. And they cam till him, and wauken'd him, sayin, "Maister ! Maister ! we perish !" And he raise, and challenged the win' and the ragin' o' the watir ; and they war lown, and it became a calm.

25. And he said to them, "Whaur is yere faith ?" But, struck wi' dreid, they ferlied, sayin ane to

anither, "Whatna man is this, that he orders the win's and watirs, and they obey him ?"

26. And they cam till the kintra-side o' the Gerasenes, whilk, indeed, is ower forment Galilee.

27. And whan they war come forth on the lan', a certain man met him, oot o' the citie, wha had demons, and for lang had worn nae claes ; nor wad bide in ony hoose, but i' the tombs :

28. But seein' Jesus, he cry't not, and fell doon afore him, and wi' a soondin voies cry't, "What hae I to dae wi' thee, Jesus ! Son o' God Maist Heigh ! I entreat thee, torment-me-na !"

29. For he commandit the foul spirit to come oot o' the man : for aft it had grippit him ; and he was keepit in ward, and bund wi' fetters and chains ; and, rivin his bonds aindry, he was ca'd intil the deserts by the demons.

30. And Jesus demandit o' him, "What is yere name ?" And he said, "Legion !" for that mony demons had enter't intil him.

31. And they entreatit him that he wadna command them to gang oot intil the abyss.

32. Noo thar was a herd o' mony swine feedin on the mountain ; and they entreatit him that he wad gie them leave to enter intil them. And be loot them.

33. And the demons, gaun forth frae the man, gaed intil the swine. And the hale herd rushed doon the scaur intil the Loch, and war drooned.

34. And whan they that herdit them saw what was dune, they fled, and tell't it i' the citie, and i' the kintra-side.

35. And they cam oot to see what had come to pass, and cam to Jesus and faund the man the demons had gane oot o', cleedit and in his richt senses, at the feet o' Jesus : and they feart.

36. And they wha beheld, tauld hoo the ane possess'd wi' demons was saved.

37. Thau the hail o' the kintra-side o' the Geresaens entreatit him to depairt frae them ; for they war hauden wi' a great fear. And he, gaun intil a boat, returned again.

38. Noo the man the demons had gane oot o', was entreatin him that he micht be wi' him ; but he sent him awa, sayin,

39. "Gang yere ways to yere hoose, and sehaw what great things God has wrocht for ye!" And he gaed awa, and tellt throuwe the hail citie hoo great things Jesus had done for him.

40. Noo as Jesus returned, a' the folk walcomed him back ; for they war lookin for him.

41. And see ! thar cam ane named Jairus, and the same was a ruler i' the kirk. And fa'n doon at Jesus' feet, he entreated him to come to his hoose.

42. For he had but as dochter, aboot twal' yearauld, and she lay deein. But as he gaed, the thrang delay't him.

43. And a wumman haein a flowin for twal year—wha indeed had wared a' her gear on doctors, and wasna healed o' ony—

44. Cam ahint him, and touched the fringe o' his mantle ; and at ance her flowin o' blude stanch't.

45. And Jesus said, "Wha is't that touch'd me ?" And, whan a' war denyin, Peter and they that war wi' him, reply't, "Maister ! the multitudes hem thee in and thrang thee ; and say'st thou, 'Wha touched me ?'

46. But Jesus said, "Some ane touched me ; for I tak tent o' pouer gaun oot frae me !"

47. And the wumman, seein she hadna escapit kennin, cam trimlin ; and loutin doon afore him, tellt afore a' the folk for why she had touched him, and hoo she was healed at ance.

48. And he said to her, "Dochter, yere faith has made ye hale ; gang yere ways in peace !"

49. E'en whiles he was speakin, cam ane frae the kirk-ruler's hoose, sayin to him, "Yere dochter is deid ; dinna fash the Maister ony mair !"

50. But Jesus, hearin't, says, "Fear-na ! only believe, and she sal be saved."

51. And comin to the hoose, he suffer't nae man to gang in wi' him but Peter and John and James, and the faither o' the lassie, and her mither.

52. And they war a' greetin and makin their maen ower her. But he said, "Wail na ! for she deet na, but is sleepin !"

53. And they made derision o' him, kennin she was deid.¹

54. But he, takin her by the hand, spak aloud, "Lassie ! Rise !"

55. And her spirit returned, and she raise at ance : and he spak that she soud hae to eat.

56. And her parents war astoundit ; but he charged them no to tell ony what had been done.

CHAPTIR NINE.

Sendin oot the Twal. Feedin the thrang. Starvin in glorie. He'll be hame 'or lang.

AND, ca'in thegither the Twal, he gied them pouer and authoritie ower a' the demons, and to heal diseases.

2. And he sent them oot to proclaim God's kingdom, and to heal the sick.

3. And quo' he till them, "Tak docht for yere journey ; naither staff nor wallet, nor breid nor siller ; nor to hae twa coats.

4. "And intil whatna hoose ya

¹ V. 53. Nevir mock onyane, till ye ken what he means. And whan ye ken his meanin, thar'll be naething to mock at ! Thir folk wad be unco shamed o' their sels belyve !

may enter, bide ye in't, and fræe thar gang yere ways again.

5. "And as mony as winna tak ye in, whan ye gang fræe that citie, flaff off the stour fræe yere feet for testimonie again them."

6. And gaun oot, they gaed throws a' the toons, proclaimin the Joyfu'-message, and teachin a'-gate.

7. Noo Herod the King-depute heard o' a' that was done; and he swither't and wasair fashed: for some said John had risen again fræe the deid;

8. And some that Elijah was come; and ither's again that ane o' the auld prophets had come to life.

9. But Herod said, "I heheidit John; but wha is this I hear sic thiugs o'?" And he socht to see him.

10. And the Apostles, returnin, tell't him a' things they had done. And he took them aside, and gaed awa', unkent, to a city ca'ed Bethsaida.

11. But the folk, comin to ken, followt him. And he took them to him, and spak to them o' the Kingdom o' God; and healed thae that stude in need o' healin'.

12. Noo as the day begude to wear awa, the Twal', comin nar, says to him, "Send ye the folk awa, that they may gang to the toons and clachans roond to lodge and fendl: for we are here in a desert bit."

13. But he said to them, "Ye gie them to eat!" But they said, "We hae nae mair nor fyve bannocks, and twa speldrins; unless we soud gang and buy meat for a' thir folk!"

14. For thar war aboot fyve thoosan' men. And he said to his disciples, "Gar them sit doon in ¹ companies o' aboot fifty."

15. And they did sae, and gar't them, ane and a', sit doon.

16. And, takin the fyve bannocks

and the twa speldrins, he lookit up Aboon, and bless'd them, and brak them, and gied to the disciples, and they to the folk.

17. And they did a' eat, and war satisfyt'; and what was left ower was taen up, twal baskets o' broken ² meat.

18. And it cam aboot than whan he was alone, and prayin, the disciples war wi' him. And he speir't at them, sayin, "Wham say the folk I am?"

19. And they answer't him, "John the Baptist; ither's Elijah; and yet ither's, that ane o' the auld prophets is risen again!"

20. And quo' he to them, "But wham div ye say I am?" And Peter, answerin, said, "God's Christ!"

21. And he strickly admonished them, and commandit them that they soud tell this to nane,

22. Sayin, "The Son o' Man maun drise mony things, and be rejectit o' the Elders, the Haid-priests and the Writers; and be slain; and on the third day rise!"

23. And he said to them a', "Gin ony man wad follow me, lat him deny his sel, and tak up his cross ilka day, and follow me!

24. "For whasee wad hain his life sal tine it; and whasee may tine his life for my sake, that vera man sal save it!

25. "For what eairs it a man, gin he has gotten the hale world, and has tint his sel, or is cuisten oot?

26. "For, whasee has shame o' me and o' my words, the Son o' Man sal hae shame o' him, at what time he comes in his glorie, and in the glorie o' the Faither, and o' the holie Angels.

¹ V. 14. "Companies," or banquet-pairties; ilk in thrie sides o' a square, or a hauf-circle. See Mark, vi. 38, note.

² V. 17. We kenna what they wad do wi' the twal baskets o' mous and bits. Nae doot they gied them to the puirest o' the folk; for they, like corsel's, aye had the pair wi' them. We whiles speir "Hoo Jacob gied God the tenth o' a' he had?" (Gen. xxviii. 22). Nane need doot, by bestowin it on the pair!

27. "But truly say I t'ye, Thar are some here stannin, wha in naegate sal ken death, to the time they see the glorie o' God!"

28. And it cam to pass, aboot an aucht-days esfir thae sayins, that he took wi' him Peter and John and James, and gaed to pray, up intil a mountain.

29. And whiles he was prayin, the look o' his face was changed, and his cleedin becam white and shinin.

30. And lo! twa men spak wi' him; wha war Moses and El'ijah.

31. Wha schawed theirsels in glorie, and spak o' his depairtin, whilk he soud accomplish at Jerusalem.

32. But Peter and the lave wi' him war unco heavy wi' sleep: and whan they war wauken'd up, they saw his glorie, and the twa men stannin wi' him.

33. And as they war aboot to paes awa, Peter said to Jesus, "Maister! it is graun for us to be here! And lat us mak thrie bothics, ane for thee, and ane for Moses, and ane for El'ijah"—no kennin richt what he was sayin.

34. And whiles he was yet speakin thir words, a clud cam and ower-shadit them, and they were stricken fu' o' fear, as the men enter't intil the clud.

35. And a voice cam oot o' the clud, "This is my Son, the Chosen Ane! Hear ye him!"

36. And whan the voice had been heard, Jesus was thar his lane. And they keepit it to their sels; and tell't nae man i' thae days whatna things they had seen.

37. And it cam aboot, that on the neist day, as they war come doon fruse the mountain, a great thrang o' folk met him.

38. And look! a man frae 'mang the folk cryt oot, sayin, "Maister, I entreat ye look ye on my son; for he is ae-bairn!"

39. "And lo! a spirit grips him,

to sudden he skreighs oot; and it rives him; and dingin him, jimpily wull leave him.

40. "And I entreatit thy disciples to cast him oot; and they coud-na!"

41. And answerin, Jesus said, "O fause and thrawart generation! to whatna time sal I bide w'ye? and thole ye! Bring here yere son!"

42. And while he was a-comin, the demon dang him doon, and mangl'd him. And Jesus challenged the foul spirit, and healed the laddie, and gied him ower to his faither.

43. And they war a' stricken wi' amazement at the mighty power o' God. But while they ilka ane ferlied at a' the things that Jesus had dune, he says to his followers,

44. "Let thir words sink doon intil yere lugs: for the Son o' Man is sune to be deliver't intil the hauns o' men!"

45. But they kent-na this sayin; and it was keepit frae them, that they soud-na ken it; and they war feart to speir at him anent the sayin.

46. And thar gat up an argle-bargle amang them, "Wha o' them soud be heighest?"

47. Noo Jesus, kennin what was in their hearts, took a wee bairn, and sat him by his side,

48. And said to them, "Whassae may mak welcome this bairn in my name, welcomes me! and whassae welcomes me, welcomes him that sent me: for he that is least amang ye, he sal be great!"

49. And John spak up, "Maister! we saw ane by wham demons were cuisten oot i' thy name. And we challenged him, for he was-na followin wi' us!"

50. And Jesus said to him, "Faut-bim-na! for wha isna contrar to ye is for ye!"

51. And it cam aboot, that whan the days o' his takin-up war come, he siccarlie set his face to gang to Jerusalem.

52. And he sent oot rinnars to gang

afore him: and as they gaed, they cam intil a wee toun o' the Samartans, to mak ready for his comin.

53. And they wadna hae him come, for that his face was set to gang to Jerusalem.

54. And whan James and John, disciples, saw that, they speir't, "Lord! wull ye hae us bid fire to come doon frae the lift and consume them?"

55. But he turned aboot and rebukit them.

56. And they gaed on till anither toun.

57. And as they journey'd on, ane said to bim, "I'se follow thee whaurso'er thou may gang!"

58. And Jesus said to him, "The tods hae dens, and the burdies o' the lift hae nests; but the Son o' Man hasna whauron to lay his heid!"

59. And he said to a different ane, "Follow ye me!" But, quo' he, "Lord, lat me gang first to the burial o' my faither!"

60. But he said to him, "Leave ye the deid to kist their ain deid, but gang ye and spread abreid the Kingdom o' God!"

61. And yet anither said to him, "I'se follow thee, Lord! but lat me first gang hame, and paert wi' thae i' my ain hoose!"

62. But Jesus said to him, "Nae man, takin haud o' the pleuch, and lookin back to the things ahint, is fit for the Kingdom o' God!"

CHAPTIR TEN.

The preaching o' the Seeventy. The man in sair settle, and wha befrendit him.

AND, eftir thir things, the Lord took seeventy mair, as weel, and sent them oot, twa by twa, afore his face, intil ilka toun and place whaur he wad come his sel.

2. And he was sayin to them, "The hairest is unco great, but the work-folk are few: entreat ye than

o' the Lord o' the hairest, that he may press work-folk intil his hairest.

3. "Gang ye! See, I am sendin ye oot as lambs amang the wolvera.

4. "Cairry-na purse, nor wallet, nor shoon; and dinna be salutin ony as ye gang.

5. "And intil whatae hoose ye gang, say ye first, 'Peace be to this hoose!'

6. "And gin the Son o' peace bide yonner, yere ain peace sal licht upon it; but gin it be-na sae, ye'se hae yere ain peace again!

7. "And bide ye i' the name hoose, eatin and drinkin what they hae by them, for the laborer maun hae his fee. Flit-na fras hoose to hoose.

8. "And whatna toon ye enter in, and they mak ye welcome, eat what is set afore ye,

9. "And heal the sick thar-in, sayin till them, 'The Kingdom o' God is come nar t'ye!'

10. "But whaurso'er ye gang intil a toon, and they winna tak ye in, gang ye oot intil the bigbways o't, sayin,

11. "'E'en the stour o' yere toon on oor shoon we dicht aff for ye! but, tak tent! God's kingdom has come nar-haund ye!'

12. "I say t'ye, that for them o' Sodom, i' that day, it sal be better than for yon toon!

13. "Was for ye, Chorazin! Was for ye, Bethsaida! for gin Tyre and Sidon had seen the warks o' pouer that bad been dune in you, they wad langayne repentit, sittin in tow-claith and assie.

14. "But it sal be better for Tyre and Sidon at the Judgment nor for you!

15. "And ye, Capernaum! Are ye heizt up to heaven! doon to hell sal ye be cuisten!

16. "Wha is hearin you is hearin me; and wha is gangin you by, is gangin me by; and wha is gangin me by, is gangin-by him that sent me oot."

17. And the Seaventy blythely returned,¹ sayin, "Lord! e'en the demons gie in to ua, i' thy name!"

18. And he said to them, "I was lookin at Sautin, as like a fire-flaucht he fell fras Heaven!"

19. "Behauld! I has gi'en t'ye richt to tramp on serpents and scorpions, and on a' the pooper o' the enemie; and naething sal in onygate skaith ya.

20. "Yet, be-na blythe for this, that the demons are glean-in to ye, but be ye blythe that yere names are putten doon Aboon!"

21. In that vera 'oor joy'd he i' the Holie Spirit, and said, "I own to thee, Lord o' Heeven and Yirth, that thou did hide thir things fras the wyas and the discernin, and did mak them plain to the bairn-like! E'en sae, my Faither! for sae it was weel i' thy sicht!"

22. "To me are deliver't up a' things o' my Faither; and nane comes to ken wha the Son is, only the Faither; and wha the Faither is, only the Son, and sic aane as the Son may reveal him till."

23. And, turnin till his disciples, he says to them by their sele, "Happy the e'en that see what your een see!"

24. "For, I say t'ye, Mony prophets and kings war fain to see what ye are seein, and did-na see; and to ha'e heard what ye hear, and heard-na!"

25. And, now see! a Writer raise, tempin him, and sayin, "Maister! what maun I do that I may ha'e an everlastin inheritance?"

26. And he said to him, "What has been putten-doон i' the law? Hoo read ye?"

27. And answerin, he said, "Ye sal lo'e the Lord yere God wi' yere bairl heart, and wi' yere bairl saul, and

wi' yere bairl pooper, and wi' a aefauld ettlin—and yere neebor like yersel!"

28. And he said to him, "Truly haes ye said: do ye as weel, and ye'se haes life!"

29. But he, fain to mak himself oot to be richt, speir't at Jesus, "Wha is my neebor?"

30. And, takin it up, Jesus said, "Thar was a man gaun doon fras Jerusalem till Jericho, wha fell in wi' robbers; wha strippit him, and cloured and gashed him, and gaed their ways, lea'in him nar deid.

31. "And it cam aboot, that a certain priest cam doon that gato; and, lookin on him, gaed cannie by on the ither side.

32. "And in siclike manner a Levite as weel, comin doon till the place, and seein', slippit by on the far-away side.

33. "But a certain Samaria-man, gaun on his journey, cam doon till him; and, lookin on him, was fu' o' compassion;

34. "And comin nar, bund up his cloura, teemin in ulyie and wine; and pittin him on his ain beas', fesh't him till the inn, and tentit him.

35. "And on the morn, takin oot twa siller-pennies, he gae them to the guidman, sayin, 'Tak tent o' him weel! and whatna mair ye ware on him, whan I come back l'se pay ye.'

36. "Noo, whilk aane oot o' thae three, think ye, made his sel neebor till him that fell in wi' the robbers?"

37. And he says, "The ane that dealt in compassion wi' him!" And Jesus says to him, "Gang ye, and be doin siclike!"

38. Noo, as they gaed on, he cam intil a certain toon; and a certain wumman named Martha bade him intil her hoose.

39. And she had a sister ca'd Mary, wha was aye sittin nar-by the feet o' Jesus, hearin his words.

40. But Martha was unco pernickity aboot mickle service, and comin doon till him, quo' she, "Lord,

¹ V. 17. We jalouse they warna lang game; but we're no tell't. It was a grand beginnin o' their effir wark!

div ye no heed that my sister lea's
me to ser' by my lane! Bid her
that she help me!"

41. But Jesus answers and says
to her, "Martha! Martha! ye are
put-till't, and fashed wi' a hantle o'
things."

42. "But thar is ae thing aye
needit; ¹ and Mary waled oot the
gude pairt, and it isna to be taen awa
frae her!"

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.

*The words o' prayer, and the spirit o't.
It waras the demons wha opposed him
soo, but the Pharisees.*

AND it cam aboot, whan he was in
a particular place, prayin, as he
endit ane o' his disciples said to him,
"Lord! tell us hoo to pray; e'en as
John tell't his disciples!"

2. And he said to them, "Whan
ye are prayin, say, 'Faither! hal-
lowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom
come!'

3. "Oor needfu' breid gie to us
day by day!"

4. "'And forgie us oor sina, as we
oorsels forgie ilk ane behauden to
us! And bring-us-na incil temptation!"

5. And he said to them, "Wha
amang ye sal hae a freend, and sal
gang to him at mirk midnight, and
sal say to him, 'Freend! lat me hae
three bannocks!'

6. "'For a freend o' mine has
come to me on his way, and I hae
nocht to set afore him.'

7. "And he in-by sal say, 'Fash-
me-na! the door has been steekit,
and my weans are a' wi' me i' the
bed; and I canna rise to gie ye!'

8. "I say to ye. E'en though he
winna rise and gie him for that he is
a freend o' his—for his fashousness

he wull rise and gie him as mony as
be needs!"

9. "And I say t'ye, Ask ye, and it
sal be dune to ye: seek ye, and ye
sal hae: knock ye, and it sal be un-
steekit for ye!"

10. "For ilka ane that asks ob-
teens; and he that seeks, fin's; and
to him that chaps, it sal be unsteekit."

11. "And whatna faither is amang
ye, wham his son sal ask for a ban-
nock, that wad gie him a stane? or
for a fish, wha wad gie him a viper?

12. "Or, gin he soud ask for an
egg, wha wad gie him a scorpion?"

13. "Gif, than, bein sinfu' to begin
wi' ye ken hoo to be giean gude
gifts to yere hairns, hoo muckle mair
wull yere Faither wha is in Heeven
gie the Holie Spirit to thae that ask
him!"

14. And he was castin oot a demon;
and it was a dumb ane. And it cam
aboot that whan the demon was gane
oot, the dumb spak; and a' the folk
ferlied.

15. But a wheen o' them said,
"'Tis by Beelzebul, the prince o' the
demons, casts he oot demons!"

16. And ithera o' them temptit him,
seekin a ferlie frae Aboon,

17. But he, kennin their thochts,
said to them, "Ilka kingdom set
again itsel, is made waste; and a
boose set again a boose, fa's."

18. "And gif Sautan is set up
again his sel, hoo may his kingdom
staun? for that ye are a' ² sayin that
I, in Beelzebul, cast oot demons."

19. "But gif I, in Beelzebul, am
castin oot the demons, in wham are
yere ain sons castin them oot? See
sal they be yere doomasters."

20. "But gif wi' the finger o' God,
I am castin oot the demons, than,
incontinent, has the Kingdom o' God
come upon ye!"

¹ V. 42. A clean heart is no to be trokit
awa for a clean boose; and Martha,
siblins, was in danger o't. Mary keepit
the world's cares at arm's length; they
warna her maister.

² V. 15. They had been mutterin this
aboot Beelzebul: but he kent their
thochts, and brang them to the licht.

21. "Whansa'er a sterk ane,
ready for war, has ward ower his
sin dwallin, his gear is safe.

22. "But whansa'er a sterker ane
than his sel comes on him, and over-
comes him, he takis awa his graithin
on whilk he lippened, and divides
his booty.

23. "He wha isna wi' me is again
me; and he wha gaithers-na wi' me
akails a-breid.

24. "At whatna time the foul
spirit gaungs oot o' a man, it gangs
throuwe drouthie pairts, lookin for
rest. But, no obteenin, it says
'I'ee e'en gae back to my hoose I
left!'

25. "And sae comin, it fin's the
hoose soopit oot and buikit braw.

26. "Than it gangs, and takes wi'
itself seeven mair spirits viler nor
itself; and gangin in, takes up its
abode thar: and the hinner-end o'
that man is waur nor the be-
ginnin!"¹

27. And it cam aboot while he
was speakin thir things, a particular
wumman, speakin up amang the
thrang, cries to him, "Fair fa' the
womb that bairn thee, and the breists
that thou did draw!"

28. But he said, "Aya, raither,
'Weel wi' thae that hear God's word,
and nourice it!'"

29. And, as the multitudes
thranged thegither, he begude to
say, "This race is an ill race; aye
seekin a token; and nae token sal it
bae, but the token o' Jonah.

30. "For as Jonah becam a token
to the folk o' a' Nineveh, sae sal
the Son o' Man be to this genera-
tion!"

31. "The Queen o' the Sooth sal
rise up i' the judgment wi' the men

¹ V. 26. To be under conviction o' sin—
and tryin to be pure—and at the same
time denyin the indwallin o' God's
Spirit—is an unco wrang way! Better
no to airt ava, than to airt wrang!
The love o' amendment, gin it be
alloo'd to burn itself oot, isna easy luntit
up again.

o' this generation, and sal rebuke
them; for she cam fras far-awa
ends o' the yirth to hear Solomon's
wisdom; and lo! mair nor Solomon
is here!

32. "The folk o' Nineveh wull rise
up i' the Judgment wi' this genera-
tion, and wull rebuke it; for they
repentit at the warnin o' Jonah; and
lo! mair nor Jonah is here!

33. "Nae man, lichtin a crusie,
pits it beneath a cover, nor yet
beneath a dish; but on the lamp-
stead, that thae comin in may see
the licht.

34. "The lamp o' the body is
the ee; whan then yer ee is aefauld,
the bairn body is in the licht: but
whene'er it is evil, yere body is be-
come mirk.

35. "Tak tent, thar-for, that the
licht within ye be-na mirkness!

36. "Gif, than, yere bairn body is
lichtit up, wi' nae pairt mirk, a sal
be lichtit up, as when the lamp is
its glintin is giean ye licht!"

37. Noo, whan he was dune
speakin, a Pharisee gae him a bode
to sit doon wi' him to denner. And,
gangin in, he sat doon.

38. And the Pharisee, lookin on,
ferlied that he had-na first purifyt
bis sel afore the denner.

39. But the Lord said to him,
"Noo, ye Pharisees purify the oot-
side o' the cup and the dish; but
yere inner pairt is fu' o' extortion
and sin.

40. "Silly anes! didna he wha
made the ooter pairt, mak the inner
as weal?

41. "Gie noo yere substance as
awmous; and a' things are pure
t'ye.

42. "But wae for ye, Pharisees!
for ye pit mint, and rue, and ilk
gairden herb under the tithe; and
gang-by true judgment and the love
o' God. Thir things, hoobieit, it
was needfu' to do; no to be gaun-
by thae!

43. "Wae for ye, Pharisees! for

that ye glaum at the heid-places i' the kirks, and compliments i' the merkites.

44. "Wae for ye! for ye are like the hidlin tombs: e'en the men wha walk ower them are-na 'ware o' them!"

45. And ane o' the Writers, answerin, says to him, "Us, too, div ye lichtlie!"

46. And he said, "It is for you, as weel, ye Writers! for ye burden men wi' burdens ill to cairry; and ye, yersels, e'en wi' a finger, touchna the burdens!"

47. "Wae for ye! for that ye bigg the monuments o' the prophets—and yere faithers slew them!"

48. "Sae are ye witnesses; and are ane wi' the deeds of yere faithers; for they slew, and 'ye higg!"

49. "Than said the wisdom o' God, 'I wull send oot amang them prophets and messengers; and some amang them wull they slay, and some amang them wull they persecute;'

50. "And sae sal a' the blude o' the prophets, shed frae the fundation o' the wORLD, be socht oot again this generation.

51. "Frae the blude o' Abel to the blude o' Zechariab, he wha was destroyt atwixt the altar and the Hoose: yea, I say t'ye! it sal be socht oot frae this generation!"

52. "Wae for ye, the Writers! for ye tak awa the key o' knowledge: ye gang-na in yersels, and ye keep back thae that wad gang in!"

53. And whan he gaed oot frae thar, the Writers and the Pharisees begude desperately to beset him,

¹V. 48. It wana wrang to bigg; but their sin was that they did eftir the likeness o' their faithers: in a' things they war like them—e'en to the slayin o' God's messengers. And they thus testifyt that they war bairns o' siclike faithers, and that they apprv't o' their deeds.

and to provoke him to speak aff haun o' mony things:

54. Watchin for him; seekin to kep something oot o' his mooth to accuse him wi'.

CHAPTIR TWAL.

Fash-na muckle aboot the body; it is but the clay-biggin we dwall in: but be ye wyes and easins o' the tenant is't, the soul!

AND at a time whan the folk war that thick thegither that they war trampin ower ane anither, he begude to say to his disciples first—"Tak tent to yersels, and be ye 'ware o' the barm o' the Pharisees, whilk in sooth is pretence.

2. "But naething is happit ower, that sanna be uncover't—and bid awa, that sanna be brocht oot.

3. "For sic things as ye tell't i' the mirk, sal be heard i' the licht; and what to the secret hearin ye speak i' the chaumer, sal be cryt on the hoose-taps.

4. "But I say t'ye, my freends, be na fleyt o' them wha kill the body, and eftirhaun can dae nae unco thing.

5. "But I'se warn ye wham to dreid; ye soud dreid him wha can first kill, and than schute intil hell: aye, say I, him soud ye dreid!

6. "Are-na five sparrows sellt for twa bodies, in a 'widdie? And no ane amang them but God keeps in mind!"

7. "But the vera hairs o' yere heid are a' coontit. Be-na feart; ye are better than a bantle o' sparrows!"

8. "And I say t'ye, Ilka ane that confesses me afore men, him wull the Son o' Man, too, own before the Angels o' God.

9. "But he that denyt me afore men, sal be clean disowned afore the Angels o' God.

10. "And ilka ane that says a word to wrang the Son o' Man, it sal

¹V. 6. Tatian's Diatessaron: "in a noose."

be forgi'en him ; but to him wha speaks wickedly again the Holie Spirit, it sanna be forgi'en !

11. "But at sic times as they bring ye up afore the kirks, and the rulers, and the authorities, ye are-na to be in a swither, as to what ye are to reply, nor what ye are to say."

12. "For the Holie Spirit sal schaw ye in that vera 'oor, what ye are to say."

13. And ane frae 'mang the folk spak to him, "Maister ! bid my brither divide the heritage wi' me !"

14. But he said to him, "Man, wha made me a judge, or a portioner ower ye ?"

15. And he said to them a', "Tak tent, and keep yersels frae being sellie ; for a man's life diena bide in his haddin or his gear."

16. And he spak a parable to them, sayin, "A particular rich man's grun' bure unco weel,

17. "And be swither't within his sel, sayin, 'What maun I do ? for I hae nae housin, whaur I may pit a' my craps.'¹

18. "And he said, "I'll e'en do this : I'll thrax doon the biggins o' my grange, and bigg fairger ; and gaither in yonner a' my wheat, and the ootcome o' my grun'.

19. "And wull say to my saul, Saul, ye hae a hantle o' gude things lain by for mony years to come ! Tak yere ease, eat, drink, and be joyfu' !"

20. "But God says to him, 'Fule ! on this vera nicht yere saul are they seekin fras ye ! and whatna things ye hae prepar't, whase sal they be ?'

21. "Sae wi' him that is layin-by gear for his sel, and isna rich to God."

22. And he says to his disciples, "Be na putten-to anent yere life—

what ye may eat ? nor yet for the body, what ye may be buskit wi'.

23. "For the life is mair than the meat ; and the body than the cleedin.

24. "Think o' the craws—that they neither saw nor shear : for whilk thair is naither girnal nor barn—and God feeds them ! Are ye no a hantle better nor the fowls ?

25. "And wha amang ye, though he be e'er sae fain, coud add to his measur ae span ?

26. "Gif, than, ye canna do e'en a vera wee thing, why, anent the lave o' the things, soud ye be putten-till't ?

27. "Tent ye weel the lilies, hoo they spring : they naither toil nor spin ; and yet I say t'ye, No e'en Solomon, i' the height o' his glorie, was brawlie buskit like ane o' thae !

28. "Noo, gin the foggage (whilk grows the day i' the park, and is cuisten until the oven the morn), God sae brawlie buaks, hoo mickle mair you, ye o' sma' faith ?

29. "And be-na ye aye seekin aftir what ye are to eat, and what ye are to drink ; naither staun in a swither.

30. "For aftir a' thae things the nations o' the world dae seek ; but yere Faither kens ye need has thae things.

31. "But be ye seekin his Kingdom ; and thir things sal be gien ower and aboon to ye.

32. "Be-na fear't, ye wee hirsel, mickle lov'd ! for weel-pleased was yere Faither to gift ye the Kingdom.

33. "Soll yere plenishin, and gie awmons : mak to ye wallets that dinna wax auld ; gear nevir-failin aboon ! whaur nae reiver comes nar, nor moth dis destroy !

34. "For yer heart will be whaur yere best gear is !

35. "Lat yere loins be girt, and yere crusies lowin.

36. "And yersels like servants lookin for their Maister, when he comes fras the bridal ; that whan he

¹ V. 17. Ambrose said, langsyne, "But be had room to store them—i' the bosoms o' the puir, the hooses o' the weedows, and the mon's o' the orphans. Thir are the sumonaries that bide for aye !"

comes and tirls, straught they may open to him.

37. "Weal fa' thas servants wham the Maister, whan he comes hame, sal fin' watchin ! Truly say I t'ye, he wull gird his sel, and gar them set-to, and comin nigh, sal ser' them.

38. "And gif aiblins he comes i' the second watch, or gif he comes i' the third watch, and fiu' it sae, weakfa' thase servants !

39. "But tak ye weal tent o' this : Did the gudeman jalouse the 'oor the reiver wad come, he wad has keepit watch, and no latten his boose be howkit throwe.

40. "And ye too, be winnin ready ! for in an 'oor ye're no thinkin o', the Son o' Man comes."

41. And Peter spak : "Lord liv ye speak this parable to us, or to a' the folk ?"

42. And the Lord says, "Wha than, is the true leal steward, the canny aue, wham his maister wull set ower his hame-servants, to gie them at due times the portion o' their meat ?

43. "Weel fa' that servant, wham his maister, gif he comes, sal fin' sae doin !

44. "Truly say I t'ye, he wull set him ower a' that he has.

45. "But gin aiblins that servant soud say within his sel, 'My lord is lang i' the hame-comin !' and soud begin to clour the lads and the lasses, and to be eatin and drinkin, and makin his sel fou ;

46. "The lord o' that servant wull come hame in a day he looks-na for him, and in an 'oor when he isna takin tent ; and wull cut him sindry, and wull gie him his pairt wi' the fause anes !

47. "And the servant wha cam to ken his lord's wull, and naither gat his sel ready, nor wrocht oot his wull, sal be sair cloured.

48. "But he that didna come to ken, and did deede ca'in for stripes, sal hae the sma' punishment. And

ilka aue that gat muckle, sal hae muckle required o' him ; and frae him wha had muckle committit to him, wull they seek the mair.

49. "I am come to cast oot fire on the yirth ; and what wull I, gie it be luntit e-hoo ?

50. But a baptizezin hae I to be baptizezt wi' ; and hoo fain am I till the time it be a' endit !

51. "Think ye I cam to gie agreement on the yirth ? Na, I tell ye ; naither division !

52. "For, frae this oot, thar sal be fyve i' ae boose, dividit ; thrie again the twa, and twa again the thrie.

53. "Faither sal be dividit again son, and son again faither ; mither again dochter, and dochter again mither ; gude-mither again gude-dochter, and gude-dochter again gude-mither."

54. And he said too, to a' the folk, "Whan ye see a clud come up frae the wast, straucht ye say, 'A rain is comin !' and sae it comes aboot.

55. "And whan a sooth win' is blawin, ye are sayin, 'A het day wull there be !' and it is sae.

56. "Ye fause-anes ! ye can scan the face a' the yirth and the scannin o' the sky ; but hoo is it ye ken-na to jalouse this time ?

57. "And why, e'en frae amang yeraels, judge-ye-na o' the richt ?

58. "For, as ye are gann quately wi' yere adversary to the Judge, tak paine, on the road, to be deliver't frae him ; sae that he harl-ye-na to the Judge, and the Judge gie ye ower tae the officer, and the officer hae ye cuisten until the prison.

59. "I tell ye, in naegate sal ye come oot frae yon, till the binmaist plack ye hae paid !"

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

The Jews war usco siccar about the Sabbath : but they wad-na enter Christ's door : and they beat-na God was whetlin His sword to destroy them.

AND thar war some thar, at yon time, tellin him o' the men o'

Galilee, whase blude Pilate had minglit wi' their sacrificees.

2. And answerin, quo' he to them, "Think ye that these men o' Galilee bude be sinners ¹ aboon the lave o' Galilee, for that they dred thir things ?

3. "Na, I tell ye ! but gin ye repent-na, in siclike mainner sal ye be destroy't.

4. "Or, thae auchteen, the toor i' Siloam fell on, and killed them—think ye they war ill-deedie anes aboon a' the men i' Jerusalem ?

5. "Na, I tell ye : but gin ye repent-na, in siclike mainner sal ye be destroy't."

6. And he spak this parable : "A particular man had a fig-tree plantit i' his vine-yaird ; and he cam, lookin for frute on't, and naething faund.

7. "Than he said to his vine-dresser, 'Look ! for thrie year hae I come, seekin for frute on this fig-tree, yet find I nae : lat it be cuttit doon ! Wby soud it tak up the grun' ?'

8. "But he answerin, says till him, 'Maister ! lat it bide this ae year mair, till whatna time I can delve aboot it, and dung it.'

9. "'And gin it bear frute thar-eftir, weel ; gif it disna, ye sal hae it cuttit-doon !'

10. And he was teachin in ane o' the kirks, on the Sabbath-day,

11. And see ! a wumman, haein a spirit o' fecklessness, auchteen year ; and she was cruppen-thegether, and coudna in onygate lift up harsel.

12. And seein her, Jesus spak oot, and said to her, "Wumman ! ye are lowseed fras yer fecklessness !"

13. And he laid his hauns on her ;

and at ance she was strauchtit ; and gied praises to God.

14. But the kirk-ruler answerin (being angry that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath-day), said to the thrang, "There are sax days to work in ; on them, than, come for healin, but no on the Sabbath-day !"

15. But the Lord answer't him, and said, "Ye pretenders ! disna ilk ane o' ye lowse his ox or his ass fras the tether on the Sabbath day, and lead it awa to drink ?

16. "And soudna this wumman—she a dochter o' Abra'm, bund o' Sautan thir auchteen year—he lowseed fras this fetter on the Sabbath-day !"

17. And whan he was sayin thir things, a' wha war settin their sels again him were shamed, and a' the folk rejoiced ower the glorious works done by him.

18. And see he said, "Like to what is the Kingdom o' God ? and to what may I even it ?

19. "It is like to a seed o' the mustard, that a man took, and cuist intil his gairden ; and it grew, and cam to be a great tree, and the burdies o' the air beidit in its brancies."

20. And than too, he said, "To what sal I even the Kingdom o' God ?

21. "It is like the risin-dough a wumman took, and pat awa in thrie firlets o' meal, till what time the baill o't was risen."

22. And he was gaun on his way, throwa citie by citie, and village by village, teachin and journeyin on to Jerusalem.

23. And ane says to him, "Lord ! are thar but a wheen that wull be saved ?"

24. But he said to him, "Be ye waralin to win in at the stret yett : for mony, I say t'ye, wull fain be gaun in, and wouna be able.

25. "Fras the time the gudeman may rise and streak the door—and ye begin to staun without, and to chap at the door, cryin, 'Lord ! open ye

¹ V. 2. God disna aye ding sinners i' this world : tho' he reserves a richt to do it gin he please. Daivid was sair fashed wi' seein the prosperitis o' the wicked ; but in God's Hoose he understande it better (Pa. lxxvii. 17) : and the Jews had aye this fault o' judgin by the sicht o' their ain een. Lat ilka man tak tent !

to us !' and, answerin, he sal say, 'I ken ye na, nor whaur ye are frae !'

26. "Than wull ye begin to say, 'We did eat and drink afore ye ; and on oor causeys did ye teach !'

27. "And he wull say, 'I tell ye, I ken-na whaur ye are frae ! depart frae me a' ye doers o' unrighteousness !'

28. "Thar sal be maenin and girnin, whan ye see Abra'm and Isaac, and Jacob, and a' the prophets, i' the Kingdom o' God, and ye yersels existen oot !

29. "Whan they sal hae come frae the east and frae the wast, and frae the north and the sooth ; and sit doon i' the Kingdom o' God !

30. "And tent ye ! some are himmaist that sal be foremaist ; and some are foremaist that sal be binmaist."

31. On that same day, Pharisess cam to him, sayin, "Gae-wa", and journey on ! for Herod wad fain kill ye !"

32. And he said to them, "Gang ye and tell that tod, 'Mark ye ! I cast oot demons, and mak an end o' healins, the day and the morn ; and the third day I'se be made perfete !'

33. "But I maun needs, the day, and the morn, and the day aftir, be gaun on ; for it bude-na be that a Propbet suffer but in Jerusalem !

34. "O Jerusalem ! Jerusalem ! that slaya the propbets, and stanes them that are sent to thee ! hoo aft hae I been fain to gaither in thy bairns, like as a hen ber cleekin under her wings—and ye wadna !

35. "Behauld : yere hoose is yet left t'ye ! But I say, ye canna see me till it is come aboot that ye say, 'Blessed is be that comes i' the name o' the Lord !'"

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

The great supper. Tak tent tac their excuses ! Wha may follow the Maister ?

AND it cam aboot, whan he gaed
intil the boose o' ane o' the heid

anes amang the Pharisess, on a Sabbath, to eat breid, that they war unco gleg watchin him.

2. And look ! thar was a particular man afore him, and he was dropsical.

3. And, answerin, Jesus spak to the Writers and the Pharisess, sayin, "Is it lawfu', on the Sabbath, to heal, or no ?" But they spak-na.

4. And takin hand o' him, he heal't him, and sent him awa :

5. And said to them, "Wha amang ye, haein a son,¹ or e'en a stirk, faun intil a sheugh, wadna at ance pu' him oot on the Sabbath day ?"

6. And they warna able to answer him anent thir things.

7. And he spak a parable to the guests, markin boo they war walin oot the reserved seats, sayin to them,

8. "Whansoe'er ye may be bidden by ony ane to a bridal, tak ye no up the bonniest place, least ane better than ye has been bidden by him,

9. "And he that bad ye and him, soud come and say, 'Gie place to this ane !' and than sal ye, wi' shame, gang to tak up a laigher place.

10. "But whan ye are bidden, gang far'er on, and tak up the laigher place ; that whan he that bad ye comes, he sal say to ye, 'Freend ! come ye up heigher !' Than sal ye hae honor afore a' wha are sittin w'ye.

11. "For, ilk ane that exalta his sel sal be brocht doon, and wha bumbles his sel sal be exaltit."

12. And he said too, to him wha bad him, "Whene'er ye mak a dinner or a supper, bid-na yere freends, nor yere brithers, nor yere kin, nor yere rich neebors ; lest they in turn bid you, and yere recompense come t'ye.

13. "But whan ye mak an enter- teement, bring in the destitute, the silly aues, the lameters, and the blin'.

¹ V. & Tregelles, Tatian. R. V., margin, "son."

14. "And happy sal be yere fa',
that they canna recompense ye ; for
ye'se has yere recompense at the
risin-again o' the just !"

15. And ane o' thae sittin wi' him,
hearin thir things, said, "Weel fa'
him that eats breid i' the Kingdom
o' God !"

16. And he said to him, "A par-
ticular man was makin a great supper,
and had bidden a hantle o' folk.

17. "And he sent oot his gillie,
at the 'oor o' the supper, to say to
them that had a bode, 'Come ye noo !
for a' things are ready !'

18. "And they begude, ane and
anither, to mak excuses : the first
ane said, 'I has coft a field, and need
to gang oot and see it ; I desire ye
wad band me ¹ excused.'

19. "And anither said, 'I has
coft fyve yoke o' owsen, and am juist
gaun to try them ; I desire ye wad
haud me excused.'

20. "And anither said, 'I has
mairry't a wife, and see I canna come.'

21. "Sae, returnin, the gillie
tell't to his lord thir things. Than,
bein vexed, the gudeman said to his
gillie, 'Haste ye oot, intil the
throwe-gangs and closes o' the citie,
and bring in the gangrels, and the
silly, the blin' and the lameters !'

22. "And the gillie said, 'My
lord ! it has a' been dune as ye
order't ; and still there is room !'

23. "And the lord said to the
gillie, 'Gang oot amang the roads
and hedges, and gar them come, that
my hoose may be fu' !'

24. "For I say t'ye, No ane o'
thae men wha had a bode sal pree
my supper !'"²

25. And thar war gaun wi' him an
uneo thrang o' folk ; and, turnin,
quo' he to them,

26. "Gin ony ane is for comin to
me, and hates-na his faither and
mither, and wife and weans, and
brithers and sisters—aye, and his ain
life as weel—he canna become my
disciple !

27. "And whasee carries-na his
ain cross, as he comes aftir me,
canna be my disciple.

28. "For whatna man amang ye,
ettlin to bigg a toor, sits-na doon
first to reckon the cost ! gin aiblins
he has eneuch to finish it ?

29. "Least ance, aftir layin the
fundation, and no bein able to
finish it, a' wha see't begin to jeer
him,

30. "Sayin, 'This man begude to
bigg, and waesna able to finish !'

31. "Or whatna king, mairchin to
meet anither king in battle, diana sit
doon first and seek advice, whether
he be able wi' his ten-thousands to
meet him wha comes again him wi'
his twenty-thousands ?

32. "And gin it canna be dune,
e'en while yet far-awa, he sends an
embassy, and seeks terms o' peace.

33. "In like manner, than, ilk
ane amang ye, wha isna biddin adieu
to a' his ain gear, canna be my dis-
ciple.

34. "Saut is gude ; but gif aiblins
the saut has turned waff and wersh,
what sal ye saut it wi' ?

35. "It is naither fit for the field
nor the midden ; but it is cuisten
oot-by. Wha has hearin lat him
hear !"

¹ V. 18. It is easy seen what was boonaist i' thir men's minds ! And gin God hasna the first place i' the heart, He'll no tak the second ! It is God in a', or God no ava' !

² V. 24. We need-na doot Jesus gied his parables mony times ower. Why soud he no ? Had we been followin him, ilka

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

The sheep forwander't. The siller tint. The wastrel sun comes hame. Tak ye tent o' the Lord's meanin'!

AND thar war comin till him a' the tax men and the ill-deedie anes to bear him.

2. And baith the Writers and the Pharisees war yammerin at him, "This ane takes in ill-leevin folk, and eats meat wi' them!"

3. And he spak till them this parable, sayin,

4. "Whatna man amang ye, basin a bunner sheep, gin he tine ans fras amang them, disna lea' the ninety-and-nine i' the muira, and gang awa aftir the forwander't ane, till helichts on it?

5. "And, fa' in in wi't, he heizes it on his shouther, rejoicin' ;

6. "And, comin hame, he sen's for his freends and neebors ; sayin to them, 'Be blythe wi' me ! for I hae fun my sheep ! the ane that forwander't !'

7. "I say t'ye, that in siclike sal thar be joy in heeven o'er ae sinner repentin, mair nor ower ninety-and-nine guude o' the folk wha needit nae repentance.

8. "Or whatna wumman, haein ten siller-pennies, gin aiblins she tine ane o' them, disna leicht a crusie, and soop her hoose, and seek wi' tentie care, till whatna time shelichts on it ?

9. "And, leichtin on't, she brings thegither her freends and neebors, sayin, 'Be ye glad wi' me ! for I fund the siller-penny I tint !'

10. "E'en sae, I say t'ye, sal thar be joy amang the Angels o' God ower ae sinner repentin."

11. He said, forby, "A particular man had twa sons ;

12. "And the young² son said till his faither, 'Faither ! gie me my portion that wad fa' to me o' a' the gear !' And he portioned oot till them his leevin.

13. "And, a wheen days aftir, the young son gaither't a' his gear thegither, and gaed awa fras hame till a far-awa lan' ; and thar spersit his gear in riotousness.

14. "But mair : whan a' was gane thar cam up an awesome famine ootthrows you lan' ; and he begude to be wantin.

15. "And he gaed awa, and was sornin on ane o' the men o' that lan' ; and he sent him oot-by to hard swine.

16. "And he fain wad fill't his sel wi' the bools the swine war eatin ; and nae ane gied them till him.

17. "But, comin' till his richt min', quo' he, 'Hoo mony are the fee'd servants o' my faither, wha hae rowth o' bread, and an over-coms ; while I, here, dee o' hung'er !

18. "'I will rise and gang tae my faither, and wull say till him, My faither ! I hae done wrang, again Heeven, and afore you ;

19. "'Nae mair am I fit to be ca'd yere son ; mak me like till ane o' the fee'd servants !' And, sae rian, he cam awa till his faither.

20. "But, while he was yet haudin far-awa, his faither spy't him, and was fu' o' compassion ; and rinnin, he fell on his neck, and begude kissin him.

21. "And the son said till him, 'My faither ! I did wrang again Heeven, and afore you : I am nae mair wordie to be ca'd yere son !'

22. "But the faither said to the servants, 'Waste nae time ! bring oot a robe—the first and best ane—and pit it on him ; and gie a ring for his fing'er, and shoon for his feet ;

¹ V. 11. The Christians i' the East ca' this "The Parable o' the Wommerfu' Faither." That are a hantel sic sons ; but no aye siccan a faither ! God's mercy is infinite !

² V. 12. We say "young" son, and (v. 25) "auld" brother in Scots ; no as meanin the number o' their years, but juist "junior" and "senior."

23. "And bring oot the stall'd cauf, and I kill it; that we may eat and be joyfu'!"

24. "For he my son, was deid, and cam to life again; he had been tint, and is fund again!" And they begude to be joyfu'.

25. "But hisauld brither was i' the field: and, as he cam in, he drew nar the hoose, and heard music and dancin."

26. "And, beckomin till him ane o' the fee'd folk, he speir't what siblins a' this micht mean?"

27. "And he said till him, 'Yere brither has come back again; and yere faither has kill't the stall'd cauf, for that he gat him hame again a' safe and soun'!"

28. "But he was fu' o' ang'er, and wadna gang in. His faither, tho', cam oot, and was entreatin him."

29. "But he, answerin him, said till his faither, 'See! a' thir years hae I ser't ye; and never did I gang ayont yere commauns; and at nae time did ye gie me e'en a kid, that I micht mak a feast for my freends;'

30. "But whansae'er this yere son, wha has devoort yere leevin wi' barlots, cam, ye killed the stall'd cauf!"

31. "But he said till him, 'Bairn! thou art aye wi' me! and a' that is mine is thine!'

32. "But it was richt we soud mak merry and rejoice; for he, thy brither, was deid, and cam back to life again; he had been tint, and was fund!"

CHAPTR SAXTEEN.

The pausie grieve. The rich man wha gat nocht, and the beggar wha gat a'!

AND he was sayin till his ain dis- ciples, "A rich man thar was,

¹ V. 23. We may well believe that the cauf was fed i' the stall, to be ready for a sacrificee. *Tregelles*, has it "sacrificee," in v. 23 and 30. But whatna occasion o' sacrificee could marrow that o' gattin back his lost son?

wha had a grieve; and he was wytit wi' wastin his haddin.

2. "And haesin him afore him, he said, 'Whatna clash aboot ye is this I hear! Gie in yere reckonin as grieve; for ye'll be grieve nae mair!'

3. "But the grieve said till his sel, 'My lord takes awa my office frae me: what sal I do? I am-na fit to delve; I wad be sham'd to beg!'

4. "I ken what I wull do! sae that whan I am putten-oot o' the grieve's place, they may tak me into their hooes!"

5. "And sae, biddin ilka ane o' his lord's debtors to come till him, he speirs at the first, 'Hoo muckle are ye awn to my lord?'

6. "And he says, 'A hunner cogs o' ulyie.' He says to him, 'Tak yere bill, and sit doon, and haste to mak it fifty!'

7. "And he said to the neist ane, 'Hoo muckle are ye awn to my lord?' And he said, 'A hunner bows o' wheat.' He says to him 'Tak yere accounts, and write auchty!'

8. "And his lord commandit the fause grieve for doin wysalie; for the bairna o' the wairld are, in their ain generation, wysser than the bairna o' the licht!"

9. "And I say t'ye, Mak to yer- aels freends o' unrichtous gear; that whansae'er it may fail ye, they sal tak ye in till everlasting bidin-places!"

10. "Ane faithfu' and leal i' the least, is faithfu' in mickle!"

11. "Gif, than, ye are-na faithfu' in unrichtous gear, who wad gie intil yere keepin the true riches."

12. "And gif ye be-na faithfu' in what is anither's, wha sal gie you yere ain?"

13. "Nae servant can be in service tae twa maisters; for either the ane

² V. 8. His maister micht admire his skill and frankness, while detectin his dishonesty. The time and thought that's wared on wickedness wad gang far to bless the world!

he hates, and the tither he lo'es ; or to the ane he wull haud, and lichtlie the tither : ye cauna be in service baith to God and Mammon ! "

14. Noo the Pharisées, wha war lovers o' gear, hearin thir things, geck't at him.

15. And he said to them, " Ye are theae wha pit their selis richt afore men, but God tak's tent o' yere hearts ; for the lofty amang men is an abomination in God's sicht.

16. " The Law and the Prophets war till John cam ; free that time on the Kingdom o' God is made plain, and s' men are thrangin intil't.

17. " But it sal sunner be that heeven and earth sal pass awa, than for ae haet o' the Law to fail !

18. " Ilka ane pittin awa his wife, and weddin anither, is committin adultery ; and wha weds a wumman putten-awa frae her husband, commits adultery.

19. " A particular man was rich, and cleedit his sel wi' purple and fine linen, and enjoy'd his sel uncolie, ilka day.

20. " And a particular beggar-man, ca'd Lazarus, was suttent doon by his yetts, fu' o' sairs.

21. " And he was sair wussin he nicht eat the mools that fell frae the rich man's buird ; aye ! e'en the dowses cam and lickit his sairs.

22. " Noo, it cam aboot that the beggar-man dee't, and was carryt awa by the Angels, and laid in Abra'm's bosom. And forby, the rich man, too, dee't and was buryt.

23. " And in hell he raised his een, bein noo in torments, and sees Abra'm far awa, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24. " And he, cryin oot, said ' Faither Abra'm ! has mercie on me, and send ye Lazarus, see as he may pit the tip o' his sing'er in watir, and cule my tongue ; for I am in anguish in this lowe ! '

25. " But Abra'm said, ' Bairn ! ca' ye to min' that ye gat a' yere guude

things i' yere lifetime ; and Lazarus the ill things : and noo he is at rest, and ye are in sair pyne.

26. " And forby, atween us and you an unco void has been set ; that thae wha wad gang ower frae here to you, cauna be able ; nor thae frae you to us cauna come ben ! '

27. " Than he said, ' I entreat ye than, faither ! that ye wad send him to my faither's hooce ;

28. " For I has fyve brethern ; that he may bear testimony to them, that they come-na intil this place o' dool ! '

29. " Abra'm says till him, ' They has Moses and the Prophets ; lat them hear them ! '

30. " But he says, ' Na, faither Abra'm ! but gin ane gaed to them free the deid, they wull repent them ! '

31. " But he said to him, ' Gif to Moses and the Prophets they tak nae tent, naither wull they be perawadit e'en by ane that raise frae the deid ! '

CHAPTIR SEEVENTEEN.

Brotherlynes and humility. Are whae heart was made clean, as weel's his body ! The Kingdom that's comin.

AND he said to his disciples, " It maun s'an be that snares come ; but wae for him throwe wham they come !

2. " Weel for him raither, gin a mill-stane war roond his neck, and he cuisten intil the sea, than that he soud enanare ane o' their weans !

3. " But tak ye tent to yersels ! gin aiblins yere brither sина, rebuke him ; and gin he repeauts, forgie him !

4. " And gin aiblins he sина again ye seeven times in a day, and seeven times turns to ye, sayiu, ' I repent ! ' ye sal forgie him ! "

5. And the Apostles said to the Lord, " Gie us mair faith ! "

6. And the Lord said, " Gin ye had faith s'en as a grain o' the mustard seed, ye wad say to this syca-

more, 'Be ye liftit, and be plantit i' the deep !' and it soud obey ya.

7. "But wha o' ye wad hae a servant plenghin or herdin sheep, and wull say to him as he comes in frae oot-by, 'Come awa, and dine !'

8. "But wull be no raither say to him, 'Mak ready, that I may dine ; and gird yersel to wait on me till I eat and drink ; and than sal ye eat and drink !'

9. "Dis he gie thanks to the servant, for that he did the things commandit ?

10. "E'en sae, ye too, whan ye hae dune a' the things commandit ye, say, 'Unprofitable servants are we a', we hae hnt dune what it becam oor duty to do.'

11. And it cam aboot, that whan he was gaun on toward Jerusalem, he passed on throwe the mids o' Samaria and Galilee.

12. And as he was enterin intil a particular village, ten leprous men met him ; staunin far-awa ;

13. And they cryt oot, sayin, "Jesus ! Maister ! hae pitie on ¹ us !"

14. And, lookin on them, he said, to them, "Gang yere ways, and schaw yersels to the priests !" And it cam aboot, that, as they war gaun on, they war made clean.

15. And ane o' them, whan he saw he was healed, cam beck, wi' a lood voice giean glorie to God.

16. And he cuist his sel doon at his feet, giean thanks to him ; and he was a Samaria-man.

17. But Jesus answerin, said, "Warma a' the ten men made clean ? but whaur are the nine ?

18. "Thar are na fund o' them returnin to gie glorie to God, save this frem'd ane !"

19. And he said to him, "Rise ! and gang yere ways ; yere faith has say'd ye !"

20. And, bein speir't at by the Pharisees as to whan God's Kingdom was comin, he answer't them and said, "God's Kingdom comes na wi' close observin ;

21. "Naither sal they say, 'Tak tent here !' or 'Take tent thar !' for see ! the Kingdom o' God is s'en amang ye."

22. But to his disciples he said, "The days wull come whan ye fain wad see ane o' the days o' the Son o' Man, and sanna see !

23. "And to you they wull say, 'Look ye thar ! Look here !' Gang ye na awa, nor pursue aftir them.

24. "For like the fire-flaucht, whilk shines oot o' the ae pairt under Heeven, to the ither pairt under Heeven, sae sal the Son o' Man be in his day !

25. "But first maun be dree mony things, and be rejeckit o' this generation.

26. "And s'en as it cam aboot in Noah's days, sae sal it e'en be i' the Son o' Man's days ;

27. "They war feastin, they war drinkin, they war marryin, they war gien in mairriage ; till the day Noah gaed intil the ark, and the flude cam and destroyt a'.

28. "And, siclike as it cam aboot in Lot's days ; they war eatin, they war drinking, they war buyin, they war sellin ; they war plantin, they war hogginn ;

29. "But on the day Lot gaed oot fras Sodom, it rained fire and bruntane frae the lift, and destroyt a'.

30. "E'en sae sal it be i' the day the Son o' Man is reveal't.

31. "I' that day, he wha is on the hoose-tap, and his plenishin i' the hoose—let him no come doon to tak it awa ; and he i' the field in siclike mainner—let him no turn aboot to the things ahint him !

32. "Mind ye Lot's wife !

33. "Whassae is fain to save his life sal tine it ; and whassae sal tine his life sal hain it !

¹ V. 13. Tak tent, how they war unco ready to seek help ; far mair than to gie thanks whan the blessin cam ! Gey like coorsels in that !

34. "I tell ye, on you nicht, twa men sal be i' as bed ; ane sal be taen, and the tither sal be left.

35. "Twa weemen sal be grindin thegither ; ane sal be taen, and the tither left.

36. "Twa men sal be i' the field ; the ane sal be taen, and the tither left !"

37. And they, answerin, say to him, "Whaur, Lord ?" And he says to them, "Whaur the body is, the eagles wull gaither thegither !"

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.

The fause judge, and the castis Phariſee. The rich rales wi' a sair reast. The blin' man o' Jericho.

AND he was speakin a parable to them, as that men soud be aye prayin, and never awarf.

2. Sayin, "A particular judge was in a citie, wha cared-na for God, nor had respect for man.

3. "And thar was a weedow i' that citie ; and she was aye comin till him, cryin, 'Do me justice wi' my adversary !'

4. "And he wadna for a time. But efter, he said to his sel, 'Tho' I naither revere God, nor care for man,

5. "Yet, for that this weedow fashes me, I wull do her justice ; or aiblins wi' her aye-comin she wull wear me oot !'

6. And the Lord says, "Hear ye what the fause judge says !

7. "And sanna God still mair tak the pairt o' his ain, wha cry to him day and nicht, and tho' he tholes lang wi' them ?

8. "I say t'ye, that he wull be gleg to do them justice ! Yet, whan the Son o' Man comes, wull be efter a', fin' this faith on the yirth ?"

9. And he spak—anent some that lippened to their seles that they war

richtous, and lieftlied the lave—this parable :

10. "Twa men gaed up intil the Temple for prayer : the ane a Phariſee, the tither a tax-man.

11. "The Phariſee, takin his stann, prayed sare by his sel—'Lord ! I thank thee I am-na like the lave o' men, extortioners, ill-deedie anes, adulterers—or s'en as this tax-man !'

12. "'Twice in ilka week fast I ; I gie a tenth o' a' things I obteen !'

13. "But the tax-man, staunin far yont, fear't to lift up sare mickle as his een till Heeven, but strack his breist, cryin, 'Lord ! be mercifu' toward me, the sinner !'

14. "I tell ye, this ane gaed doon till his hoose acceptit, raither than that ane : for ilk ane that heizes up his sel sal be humbl't, but he that louts his sel sal be raised up !"

15. And they war bringin till him e'en the wee bairns, that he might pit his hauns on them : but his disciples, seein', war challengin them.

16. And Jesus ca'd them nar, and quo' he, "Lat the wee bairns come to me, and binner-them-na, for o' sie-like is the Kingdom o' God !"

17. "Truly say I t'ye, Whasae disna welcome the Kingdom o' God as a bairn, enters in naegate intil't !"

18. And aye speir't at him—a ruler—sayin, "Gude Maister ; by doin what, may I haes life-eternal ?"

19. And Jesus said to him, "Hoo ca' ye me Gude ? Nane is Gude but ane—God !"

20. "The commouns ye ken, 'Ye maunna commit adultery ; ye maunna commit murder ; Ye maunna reive ; Ye maunna bear fause-witness ; Honor yere faither and yere mither !'"

21. And he said, "A' thir things haes I dune fras my hairheid !"

22. And, listenin to him, Jesus said, "As thing, yet, dae ye want ! Sell ye a' things that ye ha'e, and divide wi' the needy, and ye'se haes gude gear in Heeven ! And come ! follow ye me !"

¹ V. 7. Fer that he is whiles lang in smitin his face, his ain folk manna think he is slack in helpin his freends ! tho' till our pair blin' een it whiles looks sare !

23. But he, hearin thir things, gaed awa dowie ; for he was uneo rich.

24. And Jeane, behalldin him, that he was uneo dowie, said, "Wi' whatna strivin sal they that hae riches, enter intil God's Kingdom ?

25. "For a camel suner coud gang throwe a needle's ea, than a rich man enter God's Kingdom !"

26. But they that heard it said, "Wha, than, can onywise be sav'd ?"

27. And he said, "The things no possible wi' man are possible wi' God !"

28. And Peter spak : "Lo ! we left a' and followt thee !"

29. And he said to them, "Truly say I t'ye, Nae ane has left abint hoose, or parents, or brithers, or wife, or weans, for sake o' the Kingdom o' God,

30. "Wha sanna win back to him mony-fauld mair i' this present time ; and in the Warld that is comin, life for aye !"

31. And takin the Twal' aside by their sels, he said to them, "Tak tent ! we are gaun up till Jerusalem ; and a' things wull come aboot that hae been putten-doон anent the Son o' Man.

32. "For he wull be gien up to the Gentiles, and be geck'd at, and insultit, and sputten on ;

33. "And, first scourgin, they wull tak his life ; and on the third day wull he rise."

34. And they didna comprehend ony o' thir things ; and it was a' mirk to them : and they didna get to ken the things that war said.

35. And it cam aboot, that whan he was comin nar till Jericho, a blin' man was suttin-doон beside the road, beggin.

36. And hearin the trampin o' a great thrang gaun by, he speir't what siblins a' this micht be !

37. And they tellt him, "Jesus o' Nazareth passeth by !"

38. And he cryt oot, sayin,

"Jesus ! Son o' Dauvid ! Hae thou pitie on me !"

39. And they that gaed afore flyted at him that he micht be quate ; but sae muckle the mair cryt he oot, "Son o' Dauvid ! hae pitie on me !"

40. Sae staunin still, Jesus order't him to be brocht forrit till him ; and whan he cam nar, he speir't at him,

41. Sayin, "What wad ye hae me to do for ye ?" And he said, "Lord ! that I may hae my sicht !"

42. And Jesus said to him, "Win back yere sicht ! yere faith has saved ye !"

43. And at ance he gat his sicht again ; and followt on, giean glorie to God ; and a' the folk, seein't, praised God.

CHAPTIR NINETEEN.

Zaccheus, unco rick afore, but unco richer noo ! The pounds to take wi' ! The humble triumph, and the saut, saut tears !

1 ND enterin, he was gaun throwe Jericho.

2. And behalld ! a man ca'd Zaccheus ; and he was heid amang the tax-men ; and had muckle gear.

3. And he was fain to see Jesus, wha he was ; and he coudna for the tbrang ; for he was sma' in heicht.

4. And he ran forrit, and speal't up intil a sycamore tree, that he micht see him ; for he was comin that gate.

5. And whan he cam to the place, Jesus lookit up, and says to him, "Zaccheus ! haste ye, and come awa doon ; for I maun bide at yere hoose the day !"

6. And he hastit doon, and enter-teid him wi' unco joy.

7. And a' saw it ; and they war mutterin, sayin, "He has gane wi' a sinner to bide !"

¹ V. 39. The beggar kent he was Dauvid's Son ! The Writers pretendit they didna ken ! Ignorance itsel is un sae blin' as dourness !

8. But, staunin afore him, Zacheus said, "Lord! I gie the hanf o' my gear to the ¹ puir; and gin fras ony ane I hae taen by fause dealin, I gie him back four-fauld!"

9. And Jesus says to him, "Salvation has come to this boose the day! forasmuckle as he too is a bairn o' Abra'm!"

10. "For the Son o' Man cam to seek oot and save the anes that war forwander't."

11. And whilst they war listenin to thir things, he addit and spak a parable, forasmuckle as they war nar Jerusalem, and they expeckit the Kingdom o' God was at ance to shine oot.

12. He said thar-for, "A particular nobleman gaed aff till a farawa land, to obtain for his sel the pooer o' a king, and to return.

13. "And ca'in thegither ten servants o' his ain, he gied till them ten pounds, and said to them, 'Cairry on business till I come back!'

14. "But the burgeses hatit him, and sent an embassage aftir him, sayin, 'We winna hae this ane to reign ower us!'

15. "And it cam aboot, that whan he was back again, aftir receivin the kingly pooer, he commandit thae servants to be ca'd, to wham he had gien the siller, that he micht tak tent o' the trokin they had dune.

16. "And the first cam sayin, 'Lord! yere pund has gained ten pounds!'

17. "And he said to him, 'Weel dune, gude servant! ye hae been leal in a sma' maitter; hae ye rule ower ten cities!'

18. "And the second cam, sayin, 'Lord! yere pund has become fyve pounds!'

19. "And he said to him, as weel, 'Hae ye rule ower fyve cities!'

20. "And the ither ane cam, and quo' he, 'Lord! tak tent o' yere pund, what I hae keepit, lyin-by in a napkin.'

21. "'For I was fleyt o' ye, for that ye are an exactin man; ye tak up whaur ye pat-na-doон; and shear whaur ye dinna saw.'

22. "He says to him, 'Oot o' yere ain mou' wull I judge ye; ill servant! Ye ken I was an exactin man, takin-up whaur I pat-na-doон, and shearin whaur I dinna saw!—

23. "'And why gied-ye-na my siller to the trokers o' siller; that at my comin I coad hae demandit my ain, wi' interest!'

24. "Then said he to them staunin by, 'Tak awa the pund fras him, and gie till him that has the ten pounds!'

25. (And they say to him, "Lord! he has ten pounds!")

26. "'For I say t'ye, till ilka ane that has, sal be gien; but fras him wha haana, e'en what he has sal be taen fras him.'

27. "'But they, my faes, wha wadna hae me to be made King ower them, flesh ye here, and slay them afore me!'"

28. And whan he had said thir things, he gaed on afore, gaun up to Jerusalem.

29. And it cam aboot, as he cam nar to Bethphage and Bethanie, to the mountain ca'd "The Mount o' Olives," he sent oot twa o' his disciples,

30. Sayin, "Gang yere ways, to the clachan forment ye; and as ye are enterin, ye sal fin' a cowt tied, whauron nae man e'er sat; lowse him and bring him.

31. "And, gin ony ane quaisten ye, 'Why are ye lowsin?' ye sal say to him, 'The Lord has need o' him.'

32. And gaun their ways, they that war sent faund e'en as he tellt them.

¹ V. 8. This waana a boast o' what he had aye been doin; but raither the vow o' a new convert, that fras this oot, he wad consecrate his gear to the Lord. Juist like Jacob. See Gen. xxviii. 22.

33. And as they war lowsin the cowt, his maister said to them, "Why lowee ye the cowt ?"

34. And they said, "For that the Lord has need o' him !"

35. And they brocht him to Jesus ; and, castin their mantees on the cowt, they sat Jesus thar-on.

36. And as he gaed on, they spread their mantees i' the way.

37. And as he was drawin nar, and was come intil the doon-gaun o' the Mount o' Olives, the hail multitude o' the disciples begude joyfully to praise God wi' a lood voice, for a' the great warks they had seen :

38. Sayin, "Blessed is the comin King, i' the name o' the Lord ! In Heeven peace ; and glorie i' the heighest height !"

39. And a wheen Pbarisees oot o' the multitude said to him, "Maister ! rebuke thy disciples !"

40. And answerin', quo' he to them, "I say t'ye, that gin aiblins thir be silent, the vera stanes wad cry oot !"

41. And whan he drew nar, he lookit at the citie, and was greetin ower it, sayin,

42. "Had thou but ta'an tent, e'en thou, in this thy day, o' the things that are for thy peace ! but o'noo they are hid frae thy e'en !

43. "For the days wull come upon thee, that thy face shall bigg bulwarks roond thee, and atek thee in, and rink thee roon on ilka side ;

44. "And wull ding thee doon to the gron', and thy bairns within thee ; for that thou wadna tak tent o' the time o' thy visitation !"

45. And, gaun intil the Temple, he begude to cast oot thae that trokit in't,

46. Sayin tae them, "It is putten-doон, 'My Hoose shall be a hoose o' prayer' ; but ye mak it a howff o' reivers !"

47. And he was teachin ilka day i' the Temple : but the Heid-priests,

and the Writers, and the heids o' the nation, socht to destroy him ;

48. And condna mak oot what they might do ; for the thrang, ane-and-a', war hingin on him, listenin.

CHAPTER TWENTY.

The ill-derrid gardeners. "Whase wife is she?" David best weel wha Christ was !

AND it cam aboot, on aue o' thae A day, when he was giean lear to the folk i' the Temple, and tellin them the Gude-tidina, the Heid-priests, and the Writers, wi' their Elders, cam on him,

2. And quo' they to him, "Tell us whatna autoritie ye hae for thir things ye do ; and wha is he that gied ye this autoritie ?"

3. But he answer't them, "I too wull speir at you anent a thing ; and tell me—

4. "The Bapteesin o' John, ¹ was it frae Heeven or o' men ?"

5. But they coonsell't thegither by their selas, and said, "Gin we sal say 'Fræ Heeven,' he wull answer, 'Why believed-ye-na in him ?'

6. "And gin aiblins we soud say, 'Fræ men,' the folk ane-an-a' wull stane us to deid ; for they are a' perswadit that John was a Prophet."

7. And they answer't that they condna tell whence he was.

8. And Jesus said to them, "Nae mair div I tell you by whatna autoritie I do thir things I am doin."

9. And he begude to speak to the folk this parable : "Thar was a man wba plantit a vine-yaird, and gied some gardeners the task o't, and synge gaed his ways fræ hame for a lang time.

10. "And at the season he sent to the gardeners a servant, that they soud gie to him of the frute o' the vine-yaird. But the gardeners sent him awa wi' naething.

¹ V. 4. See Mark xi. 28—Note.

11. "And aftir, he sent anither servant, but him too—clouerin and ill-treatin—they sent awa wi' naething.

12. "And he persistit, and sent a third; but they, clouerin this ane as weel, cristi him oot.

13. "And the laird o' the vine-yaIRD said, 'What sal I do? I wull send my son, my beloved ane; aiblins they wull honor him.'

14. "But whan they saw him, the gardiners coonsellt ane wi' anither, sayin, 'Here is the heir! lat us slay him, see that the heritage may become oor ain!'

15. "And, castin him oot o' the vine-yaIRD, they slew him! And what, noo, sal the laird o' the vine-yaIRD do to them?

16. "He wull come, and mak an end o' thae gardeners; and wull gie the vine-yaIRD to itheris!" But whan they heard it, they eryt, "Lat it noo see be!"

17. But he, lookin hard at them, said, "What, than, may this be that is putten-doon—'The stane rejeckit o' the builders, the same is made to be the copin o' the corner!'

18. "Itka ane that fa's on that stane sal he sair clou'r'd; but on wham-sae'er it may fa', it will mak a clean end o' him!"

19. And the Writers and Heid-priests wad fain hae grippit him in that vera 'oor; but they war fleyt o' the people; for they saw he had spoken this parable again them.

20. And, watchin him uncolie, they sent oot fause men, wha soud pretend to be just, that they might tak haud o' his speech, see as to deliver him up to the poore and autorities o' the Governor.

21. And they speir't at him, "Maister! we a' ken ye speak and teach richtly, and accept nae man's face, but teach the way o' God truly.

22. "Is't richt for us to pay mail to Cesar, or no?"

23. But, kennin their guile, he said to them,

24. "Schaw me a siller penny! Whase heid and inscription has it?" And they answerin, said, "Cesar's."

25. And he said to them, "Weel, than! gie Cesar Cesar's things, and to God gie God's things!"

26. And they coudna lay hand o' ony sayin o' his to the people; sae they ferlied at his answer, and said nocht.

27. And thar cam to him a wheen o' the Sadducees, wha say thar is nae Risin-again; and they speir't at him, sayin,

28. "Maister! Moses pat doon for us: Gin aiblins a man's brither soud dee, haein a wife, and he be bairnless, that his brither soud tak the wife, and raise up seed to his brither.

29. "Noo, thar war seeven brithers; and the first, takin a wife, dee't bairnless.

30. "And the second; and he dee't bairnless.

31. "And the third had her; and, i' the same way the seeven—they left nae bairn, and dee't.

32. "And aftir, the wumman too dee't.

33. "And sae, i' the Risin-again, whase wife o' them sal she be? For the seiven had her a wife."

34. And Jesus said to them, "The bairns o' this waird mairry, and are gien in mairriage;

35. "But they that are coontit wordie that waird to obteen, and the Risin-again frae the deid, naither mairry nor are gien in mairriage.

36. "Naither can they dee ony mair; for they are as the Angels; and are sons o' God, bein sons o' the Risin-again.

37. "But, that the deid are to be rais't, e'en Moses schaws at 'The Buse, whan he ca's Jehovab, 'The

¹ V. 37. Here, as weel as at Mark xii. 28, the reference isna to the bramble-buse at Sinai itsel', but to the name they had for the paragraph i' the Biks o' Moses—that o' "The Buse."

God o' Abra'm, the God o' Isaac, and the God o' Jacob.'

38. "Noo, he isua the God o' deid men, but o' leevin; for to him are a' to leave!"

39. And some particular anes o' the Writers, answer't, and quo' they, "Maister! weel has ye spoken!"

40. For they daur-na speir at him ony mair quaisens.

41. But he said to them, "Hoo say they that the Messiah is Dauvid's son?"

42. "For Dauvid his sel says, i' the Buik o' the Psalms, 'The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou on my richt haun,'

43. "'Till sic time as I mak thy face the fit-brod o' thy feet!'

44. "Dauvid, than, ca's him 'Lord'; and hoo is he than his son?"

45. And (a' the folk hearin), he said to his disciples,

46. "Hand awa fras the Writers, wha are fain to gang aboot in lang manteels, and lo'e compliments i' the merkits, and the boomaist seats i' the kirks, and reserved places at feasts;

47. "Wha devoor weedows' hoooses, and to blin' the ean mak lang prayeres: thir sal has a greater malediction!"

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.

The weedow at the Treasury. Jerusalem's weird.

AND, raisin his een, he saw the rich men drappin their gifts intil the Treasury.

2. And he saw a particular puir weedow, drappin in twa mites.

3. And he spak: "Truly say I t'ye, this puir weedow has cuisten in mair nor they a'!"

4. "For ane-and-a' o' thir, oot o' their rowth o' gear drappit intil God's gifts; but she oot o' her poortith cuist in a' she had!"

5. And whan some war tellin aboot the Temple, hoo it was buskit wi' bonnie stanes and offerans, he said,

6. "As to thir things ye look at, the days wull come whan no ae stane sal be left on anither, that sal-na be dung doon."

7. And they speir't at him, "Maister; whan, than, sal thir things be? and whatna token sal be gien whan thir things are comin to pass?"

8. And he said, "Tak tent that ye be-na mialeared! for a hantle wull come i' my name sayin, 'I am he!' and, 'The time has come!'—Gang ye-na estir them!"

9. "And, whan ye may hear o' wars and tulzies, be-ye-na fley't; for thir things maun come aboot; but the end is no balyve."

10. Than said he to them, "Nation wull rise again nation, and kingdom again kingdom;

11. "And ake great yirdins, and plagues, and famines wull thar be; unco things o' dreid, and great tokenes i' the lift wull thar be.

12. "And, afore a' thae things, they wull lay hauns on ye; and wull persecute—gien ye up to kirks and dungeons—leadin awa afore kings and governora for my name's sake.

13. "But it sal a' be for you a testimonie.

14. "Sae, has it siccar in yere hearts, no to be putten-oot aforhaun aboot makin defences;

15. "For I wull gie ye a mooth and wysheid that no ane o' thae settin their ses again ye sal be fit to staun up again!"

16. "But ye'se be gien up, e'en by parents, and brithers, and kin, and freends: and they'se pit some o' ye to deid;

17. "And ye'se be batit by a' men, for my name's sake:

18. "But no a hair o' yere heid sal perish!

19. "But patiently thole, and maintean yere sauls.

20. "Hoobedit, whan ye'se see Jerusalem rinkit roond wi' armies, than tak tent that berdesolation draws nar!"

21. "Than, they in Judea, lat them flee to the mountains! and they i' the mids o' her, lat them escape! and they oot-by, lat them no come home to her!

22. "For thes are days o' vengeance, for a' that is putten-doон to be fulfilled!

23. "But wae for weeman bearin, and for them giean the breist i' thes days! For unco distress sal be on the land, and wrath to this folk!

24. "And they sal fa' aneath the sword, and wull be taen awa captives 'mang a' nations; and Jerusalem sal be trampit-doон by the nations, to the time o' the nations come!

25. "And thar sal be signs i' the 1'mune and the starns; and on the yirth pangs and troubles i' the nations; sea and billows soondin:

26. "Men swarfin for fear and dreid o' the things overtakin a' the yirth! for the poors o' the heevens sal be cuisten doon.

27. "And than sal they see the Son o' Man comin in a clod, wi' a' his poore and glorie!

28. "And, whan thir things begin to come on, rise ye! lift up yere heids! for yere redemption comes space!"

29. And he gied them a parable: "Look at the fig-tree, and a' the trees!"

30. "At siccane a time as they bud, ye lookin on, o' yere ain sels ken that summer is comin.

31. "Sae e'en ye, whan ye see thir things comin aboot, tak tent that the Kingdom o' God is nar-haun!

32. "Truly say I t'ye, In naegate sal this race fail, till a' thir things sal come!

33. "The heevens and the yirth

sal gang, but my words sal in naegate fail!

34. "But tak ye tent to yere sals! that yere hearts be-na overcome wi' debauch and druckenness, and fash aboot this life, and that day come on ye a' at ance, as a snare.

35. "For in siclike sal it come on them wha dwell on a' the face o' the yirth.

36. "But watch ye, at a' times, makin supplication that ye may haes stranthal to escape a' thes things that are comin to pass, and to staun afore the Son o' Man."

37. And he was ilka day teachin i' the Temple; but at nicht he gaed oot, and bade i' the mount that is ca'd "The Mount o' Olives."

38. And a' the folk war comin at the dawin to him i' the Temple, to hear him.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-TWA.

The sorrows' Supper—the last and tenderest! The Son o' Man enters till the mirk.

AND the Feast o' the Sad Braid, ca'd the "Pasche," was comin on.

2. And the Heid-priests and the Writers war coonsellin' hoo to get him oot o' the way: for they were feart o' the people.

3. And Sautan enter't into Judaa, the ane ca'd "Iacariot," bein ane o' the Twal'.

4. And, gaun his gate, he coonsell't wi' the Heid-priests and Captains, in whatna way he might gie him up to them?

5. And they war blythe, and trokit wi' him to gie him siller.

6. And he made a paction wi' them, and waitit for a gude openin to gie him up to them, whan the crood wadna be aboot.

7. Noo the Day o' the Sad Braid cam, whan the Pasche wad haes to be sacrificeed.

8. And Jeans sent oot Peter and John, sayin, "Gang forrit, and mak

¹ V. 25. Sun, and mune, and starns, and poors o' the heevens, seem aye to mean, in prophecie, kings, and rulers, and governments. It's no sae like, that thes far-awa warldis wad be affectit by things o' this yirth. But, servant o' God! hide yere time! It'll a' come richt!

ready the Pasche for us, that we may eat o't."

9. Than speir't they at him, "Whaur wad ya that we soud mak ready ?"

10. And he said to them, "See ! as ye gang intil the citie, a man sal meet ye, cairryin a watir-cog ; follow him to the hoose whaur he gangs.

11. "And ye sal say to the gude-man o' the hoose, 'The Maister says, Whaur is the place whaur I may eat the Pasche wi' my disciples ?'

12. "And he will schaw ye a lairge laft ; mak a' ready ; thar prepare ye."

13. And gaun aff, they faund as he had tell't them ; and made ready the Pasche.

14. And whan it cam to the time, he took his place, and the Apostles wi' him.

15. And said to them, "Wi' great fainness hae I been faur to eat this Pasche wi' ye, afore my dool.

16. "For I say t'ye, Nae mair eat I o't, till whatna time it is fulfilled i' the Kingdom o' God !"

17. And, acceptin a cup, and giean thanks, he said, "Tak this, and divide it amang yersels :

18. "For, say I t'ye, In naegate maun I drink, frae this oot, o' the frute o' the vine, till whatna time the Kingdom o' God may come !"

19. And, takin a laif, and giean thanks, he brak it, and gied to them, sayin, "This is my body, that is gien for you ; eae do ye, to remember me !"

20. And i' the same way, the cup eftir supper, sayin, "This cup is the New Covenant, in my blude, that is to be teemend out for you.

21. "But lo ! the haun o' him wha is giean me up, is e'en wi' me on the buird !

22. "For the Son o' Man in vera deed gangs, e'en as it has been mar-kit-doон for him ; but wae for that man throwe wham he is deliver't up !"

23. And they begude to speir amang their seis, "What aye it was, amang them, that wad do this thing ?"

24. And thar was a heart-burnin amang them, as to whilk o' them soud be heighest ?

25. And he said to them, "The kings o' the nations hae rule ower their folk, and thae that hae power over them are ca'd Benefactors :

26. "But it isna sae wi' you ; but he that is the greatest amang ye, lat him be as a younger aye ; and he that rules, as gin be ser't.

27. "For wha is greater, he sittin at meat, or he that ser's ? Is't no he that sits at meat ? But I am wi' ye as aye that ser's.

28. "Hoobait, ye are thae that hae bidden wi' me in my temptations ;

29. "And I gie to you, e'en as my Faither gies to me, a Kingdom.

30. "That ye may eat and drink at my buird, in my Kingdom : and ye sal be on throns, wi' power over the twal' tribes o' Isra'el."

31. And the Lord says, "Simon ! Simon ! lo, Sautan seeks ye, to riddle ye as wheat !

32. "But I hae besocht for ye, that yers faith disna fail : whan ye hae turned again, lift up yers brethren !"

33. But he said to him, "Lord ! I am ready to gang wi' ye to dungeon and to death !"

34. But he said, "I tell ye, Peter, the cock winna craw this day, till ye thrice deny that ye ken me !"

35. And he said to them, "What time I sent ye oot, wantin purse, and wallet, and shoon—failed ye o' onything ?" And they said, "O' naething !"

36. And he said, "But noo, wha has a purse, lat him tak it : and sae wi' a wallet. And wha hasna aye, lat him strok his mantle for a sword.

37. "For I say t'ye, that what is patten-doон maun e'en be fulfilled in

me: 'And wi' law-breakers was he coontit! ' for e'en what is said o' me is made true."

38. And they said, "Lord! twa swords are here!" And he said to them, "It is eneuch!"

39. And gaun oot, he gaed ower as he aft did, to the Mount o' Olives; and the disciples cam efter him.

40. And comin to the place, he says to them, "Be ye prayin, that ye come-na intil temptation!"

41. And he was pairtit frae them aboot a stane's cast; and he loutit doon on his knees, and prayed,

42. And said, "Faither! gif thou be willin, pit this cup frae me! Yet, no my wull, but thine be done!"

43. And that appear't till him an Angel frae Heeven, giean him strength.

44. And comin intil an agony, yet mair earnestly he prayed; and he swat as it had been mickle drops o' blude, fa'in doon to the grun'.

45. And risin up frae prayin, and comin to the disciples, he faund them faun asleep wi' sorrow:

46. And says to them, "Hoo soud ye be sleepin! Rise ye! and be in prayer, that ye enter-na intil temptation."

47. And e'en as he was speakin, see! a crood; and the ane ca'd Judas, ane o' the Twal', comin afore them; and cam nar to Jesus to gie him a kiss.

48. And Jesus says to him, "Judas! wi' a kiss wad ye deliver-up the Son o' Man?"

49. And tha aboot him, seein what was comin, said, "Lord! sal we smite wi' the sword?"

50. And a particular ane amang them, struck the Heigh-priest's servin-man, and sned aff his lug.

51. And Jesus said, "Thole ye as lang as this!" And, touchin the lug, he healed him.

52. And, Jesus said to the Heigh-priests and Captains o' the Temple, and the Elders, wha had come on

him, "Cam ye oot as again a reiver, wi' aworda and rungs?"

53. "Tho' I was wi' ye i' the Temple, day by day, ye raxt oot nae hauns again me. But this is yers' oor, and the pooer o' darkness."

54. And they grippit him, and led him awa, and feash't him intil the heose o' the Heigh-priest. Noo, Peter was comin efter, far abint.

55. And they lightit a fire i' the coort, and sat thagither; and Peter was for sittin amang them.

56. But a particular servin-maid, seein him sittin forment the lowe, and glowerin on him said, "This ane too, was wi' him."

57. But he¹ deny't, saying, "Wum-un, I ken-him-na!"

58. And syne, anither ane lookin at him, said, "Ye as weel, are frae amang them!" But Peter said, "Man, I am no!"

59. And aboot an 'oor's time efter, anither ane insistit and threepit, sayin, "O' a sooth, this ane was wi' him; for he is a Galilean!"

60. But Peter said, "Man, I ken-na what it is ye are sayin!" And noo, while yet he was speakin, the cock crew.

61. And turnin his sel, the Lord lookit on Peter. And Peter mindit the word o' the Lord, hoo he said to him, "Or the cock craw this day, ye sal threice utterly deny me!"

62. And gaun oot-by, he blirtit and grut.

63. And the men that had Jesus bund, war mockin and ill-treatin him;

64. And, blindin his een, they war demanding o' him, "Prophesy! whilk ane cloured ye?"

65. And mony things, in blasphemous speech, war they sayin to him.

66. And whan it cam the dawin, a' the Elders war gaither't thegither, baith Heigh-priests and Scribes; and

¹ V. 57. Gin Peter failed, ony o' us may weel tak tent! Let us learn no to boast.

they took him tae their Cooncil, sayin, "Gin ye are the Anointit, tell us!"

67. But he said, "Gin I soud tell ye, ye wad in naegate believe ;

68. "And gin I soud speir quais-tana, in naegate wad ye answer me, nor free me.

69. "But fras this oot, sal the Son o' Man be sittin on the richt haun o' the pooer o' God."

70. And they a' said, "Ye, than, are the Son o' God?" And he said, to them, "Sae ye say ; for I am!"

71. And they said, "Whatna need hae we o' mair testimonie ! for we oorsels heard o' his ain mooth!"

CHAPTIR TWENTY-THRIE.

Jesus afore Pilate and Herod. Hoo they nicht has played the man and dune the richt, but failed ! The Lord's death and burial.

AND they, ane and a', raise, and led him to Pilate.

2. And they begude to wyte him, sayin, "This ane we found pervertin the nation, and challengin the gien o' tribute to Cesar; makin his sel oot to be a king."

3. And Pilate speir't at him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?" And he, answerin him, says "Ye say it."

4. And Pilate says to the Heid-priests and the croods o' folk, "I find naething wrang i' this man!"

5. But they made an unco bruizie, sayin, "He is steerin up a' the folk, teachin a' ower Judea, s'en frae Galilee to here!"

6. Noo Pilate, hearin o' Galilee, speir't "Gin the man was a Galilean?"

7. And whan he faund he was frae oot the autoritie o' Herod, he sent him back to Herod ; he bein in Jerusalem at that time.

8. And Herod, seein Jesus, was unco blythe ; for he had ait been fain to see him, frae hearin aboot him ; and he coontit that he nicht see some ferlie wrocht by him.

9. And he quaiostened him in many words ; but he answer't nocht.

10. And the Heid-priests and the Scribes war staunin, and desperately wytin him.

11. And Herod, wi' his men-at-arms, geckin at him and flytin him, cuist aboot him a braw manteel, and sent him back to Pilate.

12. And they war made gude freends—Herod and Pilate—on that very day, wi' ane anither ; for afore they had cuisten oot.

13. And Pilate, ca'in thegither the Heid-priests, and the Rulers, and a' the folk,

14. Said till them, "Ye brocht this man to me as ane that sair fashed the nation ; and lo ! I, takin him to task, hae fund naething in him to wyte, as to the things ye wytit him wi' ;

15. "Na, nor yet Herod ; for I sent ye to him ; and lo ! naething wordie o' death has been seen in him.

16. "Sae, then, haein beat him, I wull let him gang !"

17. For it behoved him to lowee ane to them at the feast.

18. But they cryt oot—and the haill crood—sayin, "Awa' wi' him ! and gie to us Barabbas !"

19. Wha for treason i' the citie, and blood-sheddin, had been cuisten into prison.

20. But again Pilate,¹ wantin to release Jesus, spak to them.

21. But they war demandin, sayin, "Crucify ! crucify him !"

22. But he, a thrid time said to them, "Why, whatna ill has he dune ? I faund naething wordie o' death in him ! Wi' a chastisement, thar-for, I wull release him !"

23. But they war yammerin wi'

¹ V. 20. Pilate had Jesus on his hauns : he wad fain hae fund some way o' slippin' oot o' the responsibility o' either acquittin or condemnin him. Folk noo dinna aye think they has the same wecht on their hauns !

lood voices, demandin to hae him crucify't. And their voices, and o' the Heid-priests, overcam.

24. And Pilate leet their demand be dune.

25. And lat him free, wha for treason and murder had been cuisten intil prison ; but Jesus he gied ower to their wall.

26. And as they led him awa, they laid hand on a particular man, Simon, a Cyrenian, comin frae oot-by, and laid the cross on him, to cairry it aftir Jesus. And Jesus¹ gaed on, wi' his cross abint him.

27. And a great crood follow't him ; and weemen, wha war makin their maen and lamentin him.

28. But, turnin him aboot, Jesus said, "Dochters o' Jerusalem ! greet ye-na for me ; but greet sair for yersels and for yere weana !

29. "For lo ! the days are comin whan they wull say, 'Happy the barren ! the womb that bare-na, and the breists that nonriched-na !'

30. "Than wull they begin to cry to the mountaine, 'Fa' on us !' and to the hills, 'Hap us up !'

31. "For gin sic things as thir are dune i' the green tree, what mann come to pass i' the dry ?"

32. And thar war ta'en oot twa mair, ill-doers, wi' him, to be crucify't.

33. And whan they cam to the place they ca'd "The Skull," thar they crucify't him ; the ill-doers as weel ; ane, indeed, on his richt haun and the ither on the left.

34. But Jesus was sayin, "Faither forgie them ; for they see-na what they are doin !" And, pairtin his cleedin, they cuist the lot.

35. And the folk war staunin, lookin on. And the Rulers war jeerin, sayin, "He resenied ither ; lat him rescue his sel' ! gin he be the Anointit, God's chosen Ane !"

36. And the sodgers, too, war geckin at him, comin and profferin him vinegar,

37. And sayin, "Gin ye be King o' the Jews, rescue yere sel' !"

38. And forby, thar was a writin inscritbit aboon his heid, "This is the King o' the Jews !"

39. And ane o' the crucify't ill-doers was bannin him, sayin, "Are na ye the Anointit ? Rescue yere sel' and us !"

40. But the ither ane rebukit him, sayin, "Hae ye nae fear o' God, seein ye are i' the like condemnation ?

41. "To us, richt eneuch ; for we are e'en winnin oor deservins ; but this Ane did naething wrang !"

42. And he said, "Lord, hae mind o' me whan ye come intil yere King-dom !"

43. And Jesus says to him, "Truly say I t'ye, this day sal ye be wi' me in Paradise !"

44. And it was aboot twal o'clock ; and a mirk cam ower a' the lan' till thrie o'clock.

45. And the sun was hid i' the mirk ; and the curtain o' the Temple was rived i' the mids.

46. An' cryin' wi' a lood voice, Jesus said, "Faither ! intil thy hauns I command my spirit !" And whan he had sae said, he dee't.

47. And the Captain, seein a' that had come aboot, was giean God glorie, sayin, "In vera truth, this man was richtons !"

48. And a' the folk that had gaither't to that sicht, seein a' the things that war dune, gaed awa beatin their breists.

49. And a' his acquaintance war staunin thar, far awa ; and the weemen that follow't him frae Galilee, behauldin thir things.

50. And see ! a man by name Joseph, a Coonsellor, a gude and upricht man ;

51. (The same waana wi' them i' their ill-deed) o' Arimathea, a Jewish

¹ V. 20. See in Tatian's *Diatessaron* (li. 18), A.D. cir. 160.

city, wha his sel was waitin for the Kingdom o' God—

52. The same, gaun till Pilate, eraved the body o' Jesus.

53. And takin it doon, he row't it in linen, and laid it intil a tomb that was cuttit i' the rock, whaurin was nae man yet laid.

54. And it was the Preparation-day; and the Sabbath was comin on.

55. And the weemen wha had come frae Galilee follow't eftir, and saw the tomb, and how the corp was laid.

56. And, gaun back, they gat ready spices and ointment: and war quate on the Sabbath, accordin to the Commandment.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FOUR.

The tomb couldna haud him! The fur-gatherin on the road to Emmaus. His cooncil, and his we'gawn.

NOO, on the first o' the week, at the dawin, they cam to the tomb, feshin the spices they had gotten ready.

2. And they found the stane to be row't awa' frae the tomb.

3. And gaun in, they found-na the body o' the Lord Jesus!

4. And it was, as they war unco putten aboot at it, lo! twa men stood nar-by them, cleedit in glintin robes!

5. And, as they war fley't, and loutit doon their faces to the yird, they said to them, "Why and ye seek the leevin amang the deid?

6. "He isna bere! he raise! Mind-ye-na boo ho speak to ye, when he was still in Galilee?

7. "Sayin, 'The Son o' Man bude be deliver't intil the hands o' sinfu' men; and be crucify't, and the third day rise again!'"

8. And they ca'd to mind his words.

9. And cam back frae the tomb, and reportit a' thir things to the Eleven, and till a' the Jave.

10. Noo, it was Mary o' Magdala,

and Joanna, and Mary o' James, and the Jave wi' them, that war tellin thir things to the Apostles.

11. And their reports war to them like idle clasher, and they dinna lippen them.

12. But Peter raise, and ran to the tomb; and loutin doon, he saw but the linen claes; and gaed awa, debatin in himsel as to what had come to pass!

13. And mark! twa frae'mang them war gaun on their journey, that vera day, till a village seeven or acht mile frae Jerusalem, ca'd Emmaus.

14. And they spak thegither o' a' thae things that had happened.

15. And it cam aboot, as they war speakin and reasonin thegither, Jesus his sel cam nar, and gaed wi' them.

16. But their sicht was hauden, that they soudna ken him.

17. And he says to them, "Whatna words are thae that ye has aye to anither, as ye gang on?" And they stude still, wi' a sorrowin' look.

18. But aye, by name Cleopas, answer't, "Div ye bide by yere lane in Jerusalem, and bae-na kent a' the things that has cam aboot i' thir days?"

19. And he said, "Whatna things!" And they said to him, "Anent Jesus o' Nazareth, that was a prophet, a man mighty in deed and word, in God's sicht, and o' a' the folk.

20. "And in whatna way oor Heid-priests and Rulers deliver't him up to deid, and has crucify't him.

21. "But we lippened it wad has been he that was to deliver Isra'el; and forby a' this, the day is the third day sin' thae things war done.

22. "Aye! and a wheen weemen o' oor ain gar't us be astonish't—gaun ear' to the tomb.

23. "And no findin his corp, they

* V. 17. See Tragelles. The Sinai Ms. has, "cam till a staun."

cam sayin they had seen a vision o' angels, that said he was leevin !

24. "And some that war o' us gaed to the tomb ; and faund it e'en as the weomen had said ; but they saw-na him."

25. And he says to them, "Oh, glaik it aens ! and dour in yere hearts to happen to the things the Prophets haesaid.

26. "Was't no for the Christ to suffer thae vera things ? and to enter intil his glorie ?"

27. And, beginnin frae Moses, and frae a' the Prophets, he made plain to them in a' the Scriptures the things anent himself.

28. And they cam nar to the village they war gaun till ; and he lookit as gin he was gaun on.

29. But they pressed him, sayin, "Bide ye wi' us ! the day is far gane, and the nicht is comin !" And he gaed in to stop wi' them.

30. And it cam aboot, what he was suttent doon wi' them to meat, he took the laif, and bless'd ; and breikin it, gied till them.

31. And their e'en war unsteekit ; and they kent him ! and he disappear't frae them.

32. And they said ane to the ither, "Did oor heart no lowe within us, while he was speakin to us on the way, and exponin to us the word !"

33. And they raise up that vera oor, and gaed back till Jerusalem, and faund foregather't the Eleeven, and thae wi' them, sayin,

34. "The Lord did rise ! and appear't to Simon !"

35. And they war tellin the things by the road ; and hoo he was made kent to them i' the breikin o' braid.

36. And as they war thus tellin, he his sel strude i' the mids, and says, "Peace be till ye !"

37. But they war sair putten-about, and fley't, thinkin they saw an apparition.

38. And he said to them, "What for are ye putten-about ? and why soud doots be in yere hearts ?

39. "See ye my hauns and my feet, that it is I mysel ! Touch me, and see ; for a spirit hasna flesh and banes as ye see me has !"

40. And when he had sae said, he airtit them till his hauns and his feet.

41. And while they condna yet believe for joy, and ferlied, he said to them, "Hae ye here onything to eat ?"

42. And they gied him a piece o' a brander't speldrin, and o' a hinn-y-kaim.

43. And, raxin oot afore them, he did eat.

44. And he said to them, "Thir are the words I spek t'ye, bein yet wi' ye ; that they maun needs be fulfilled—a' things putten-doон i' the law o' Moses, and the Prophets, and Psalms, anent me."

45. Than gar't be their minds open, that they soud comprehend the Scriptures :

46. And said to them, "Sae is it putten doon, and sae it behov'd the Measiah to dee, and to rise frae the deid on the third day.

47. "And that repentance and the pittin awa o' sins soud be proclaimed in his name till a' nations ; beginnin at Jerusalem.

48. "Ye are witnesses o' thir things.

49. "And lo ! I send oot the promise o' my Faither upon ye ; but bide ye i' the citie, till ye be cleedit wi' power frae Aboon !"

50. And he led them oot, the lenth o' Bethanie ; and, haudin up his hanna, he bless'd them.

51. And it cam aboot, that e'en while he was blessin them, he pairtit frae them, and was ta'en up to Heeven.

52. And they paid worship to him ; and gaed back till Jerusalem, wi' mickle joy ;

53. And war aye i' the Temple, laudin and blessin God.

i V. 42. Thir to kitcheen the braid ; for thar wad be braid ; tho' its no said ; unless the braid itsel was ca'd "hinn-y-kaim ;" bein bannocks stamp'd wi' a hinn-y-kaim pattern—as is often, e'en at this day, seen (and sae ca'd) in Syria.

JOHN.

CHAPTR ANE.

John Baptist testifies. Jesus gathers a when disciples.

AT the first o' a' things was The Word, and The Word was wi' God, and The Word was God his sel.

2. The vera same was at the first wi' God.

3. A' things war o' his makin; and but for him was naething made that was made ava.

4. Life was in him: and the life was man's licbt.

5. And the licht glintit throws the mirk! but the mirk failed to tak haud o't.

6. God sent a man o' the name o' John.

7. He cam for a witness, to gie witness o' the Licht, that a' men by him soud believe.

8. He wasna the Licht his sel, but it was his pairt to gie witness o' the Licht.

9. E'en the true Licht, beamin for ilka man that comes intil the warld.

10. And he was here in this warld, and the warld was o' his makin, and the warld kent-bim-na.

11. He cam till his ain haddin, and his ain folk war fremd to him.

12. But as mony as took him to them, to them gied he richt to be God's bairns, e'en to them wha lippen to him.

13. Born, no o' blude, nor e'en o' the wull o' the flesh, nor o' man, but o' God his sel.

14. And the Word becam flesh, and forgather't wi' us, (and we e'en saw his glorie, as o' the only begotten o' the Faither!) fu' o' tenderness and truth.

15. John burs witness to him, and cryt oot, "This was He I speak o', when I tellt ye, 'He that comes

efter me is afore me!' for he was aye afore me!"

16. "And o' his rowth and plenty has we a' gotten, and tenderness without end!"

17. "For Moses gied the Law; but tenderness and truth war brocht to us by Jesus Christ.

18. "Nae man's sel has e'er seen God! The only begotten Son, lyin in his Father's bosom, schaws him to us."

19. And this is what John spak, whan the Jews sent priests and Levites frae Jerusalem to speir at him "Wha he was?"

20. And he owned, and deny't-na, but owned he wasna the "Anointit."

21. And they speir't, "What than? Are ye Elijah?" And he said, "I am no!" "Are ye The Prophet?" And he still said, "Na."

22. Than they said, "Wha are ye! for we maun gie an answer to them that sent us oot. What div ye say o' yersel?"

23. Quo' he, "I am but the songh o' a voice cryin i' the wilderness, 'Straughten oot God's road!' just as Eesiah the Prophet said."

24. And the men that war sent war Phariees.

25. And they still speir'tat him, and said, "Why are ye baptizezin, than, gin ye are naither the Anointit Ane, nor Elijah, nor yet The Prophet?"

26. John tellt them, "I baptize wi' watir; but that is Ane i' yere mids ye kenns;

27. "It is He wha comes abint me, but is set aboon me: the whang o' whaseshoon I am-na wordie to lowes!"

28. Thir things war dune in Bethanie ayont Jordan, whaur John baptizezt.

29. On the morn, John saw Jesus comin till him, and he coudna help

sayin, "See God's Lamb, wha takes awa the world's sin !

30. "This is he I speak o', 'A man comes efter me wha was afore me !' For he was aye afore me !

31. "And I kent him-na ; but was lookin for him to be made kent till Isra'l ; see I am here, watir-bapteezin."

32. And John testify't, sayin, "I hae seen the Spirit comin doon frae the lift, like as a doo, and it bade on him.

33. "And I kent-him-na ; but he wha sent me oot to bapteeze wi' watir, e'en he tell't me, 'On wham ye see the Spirit comin doon, and bidin on him, he bapteezes wi' the Holie Spirit.'

34. "And I saw't, and testify't that this is God's Son !"

35. Again, on the neist day, John was staunin, and twa o' his disciples :

36. And lookin on Jesus as he gaed by, he cry't oot again, "See God's Lamb !"

37. And the twa disciples heard him speak, and they¹ follow't efter Jesus.

38. And Jesus turned him aboot, and saw them comin, and quo' he, "What are ye seekin ?" And they said "Rabbi (meanin Maister) whaur dwall ye ?"

39. Quo' he, "Come ye and see !" They cam, and saw whaur he dwalt, and bade wi' him the lave o' that day ; for it was nar haun' fowr o'clock.

40. Ane o' the twa wha heard John speak, and follow't Jesus, was Andro, Simon Peter's brither.

41. He first o' a' seeks his ain brither Simon ; and quo' he to him, "We hae fund the Messiah !" (meanin the Anointit.)

42. And he brocht him to Jesus. And when Jesus saw him, he said to

him, "Ye are Simon, John's son ; ye sal be ca'd Cephas" (meanin "a stane").

43. And the day efter, Jesus wad gang oot intil Galilee, and lights on Philip, and says to him, "Follow ye me !"

44. Philip was o' Bethsaida, the town o' Andro and Peter.

45. Philip than seeks Nathaniel, and quo' he to him, "We has fund him Moses wrate o' i' the Laws—as weel's the prophets—Jesus o' Nazareth, Joseph's son !"

46. But Nathaniel says, "Can ony gude come oot o' Nazareth ?" Philip says to him, "Juist come and see !"

47. Jesus lookit up at Nathaniel comin till him, and quo' he, "That's a leal-heartit Isra'lite, wi' nae guile in him !"

48. Nathaniel spak, "Hoo dae ye ken me ?" Jesus said to him, "Afore Philip cry't t'ye, whan ye war aneath the fig-tree, I saw ye !"

49. Nathaniel cry't oot, "Maister, Ye are God's Son ! Ye are Isra'l's King !"

50. Quo' Jesus to him, "On account o' my sayin, 'I saw ye aneath the fig-tree,' dae ye lippen me ? Ye sal see mair mighty warks than thir !"

51. And he said too, "Truly, truly, say I t'ye, Ye sal yet see Heeven unsteikit, and God's Angels comin doon, and gaun up, frae the Son o' Man !"

CHAPTIR TWA.

Wine frae the winter jar. The trokers' auncie ca'd oot.

ON the third day was a bridal at Galilee-Cana, and Jesus' mither was thar ;

2. And baith Jesus and his disciples had a bode to the bridal.

3. And whan the wine ran dune, Jesus' mither said to him, "The wine's a' dune !"

4. Quo' Jesus, "Ah, wumman,

¹ V. 37. John waans like a hantle o' folk—jealous o' tinin twa (and niblins mair) o' his disciples. What he taint, the Maister faund ; and John was content.

what bae I to do wi' ye e'noo? My 'oor will be here belyve!"

5. But his mither coonsell't wi' the servants, "Whatmoe he bids ye, gang and do it."

6. And thar war staunin sax stane jars, according as the Jews purifyt theirsel's; and ilk wad hand twa-thrie firkins.

7. And Jesus had them fill the watir-jars wi' watir. And they teemed them lippin-fou.

8. And he spek till them,¹ "Dip oot noo, and tak to the Maister o' the feast!" And they gaed wi't.

9. As sun'e as the Maister o' the feast had pree'd the watir-wine (and kent-na whaur it cam frae; but the servants kent), he cry't to the bridegroom,

10. "Ilka man wales oot his best wine to hanse the feast; and whan folk are weel stocken't, than fesches the second-wale; but ye has hained the best wine till noo!"

11. Sae Jesus begude to do his wunner-works in Galilee-Cana, and schawed forth his glorie: and the disciples lippened on him.

12. And syn'e he gaed doon to Capernaum, wi' his mither, and his ain folk, and the disciples; and they stoppit thar a wheen days.

13. And the Jewish Pasche was nar-baun, and Jesus syn'e gaed up to Jerusalem.

14. And thar i' the Temple he cam on the trokers o' nowte, and sheep and doos, and the nifflers o' siller sittin.

15. And he made a tawse o' sma' cords, and ca'd them a' oot, and the sheep and the nowte beass; and teemed oot the trokers' siller, and coupit their tables.

16. And tell't them that trokit wi' doos, "Tak thae things awa; ye'ee

no mak my Faither's Hoose a hoose o' traffic!"

17. And the disciples mindit hoo it was putten doon, "Thy Hoose's zeal devoors me!"

18. Then uperek the Jews to him, "What ferlies hae ye to schaw us, gin ye put oot yere haun to siclike wark!"

19. Jesus said till them, "Mak an end o' this temple, and in thrie days I'll restore it!"

20. Than cry't the Jews, "Sax and forty year gaed by afore this Temple was a' biggit, and are ye gaun to bigg it in thrie days!"

21. But it was the holie temple o' his ain body he spek o'.

22. And eas belyve, when he was risen frae the deid, the disciples ca'd to mind that he had said this to them; and they lippened the word, and a' that Jesus said.

23. And whan he was at the Pasche in Jerusalem, as the Feast gaed on, mony begude to believe on his name, whan they saw the ferlies dune beneath his haun.

24. But Jesus didna lippin and gie his sel ower to them, for he kent men,

25. And needit-na that ony scoud tell him aboot a man, for he kent a' that was in man.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

The man that cam i' the mirk, and gard awa i' the light. Christ mair weex, John mair weane.

THAR was ane o' the Pharisees, by name Nicodemus; and in authritie amang the Jews.

2. And he cam i' the mirk o' the nicht to Jesus, and quo' he, "Maister! we a' ken ye are a Teacher fras God; for nae could do sic wunner-works as ye do, gin God warra wi' him!"

3. Jesus said to him, "Truly say I t'ye, gin a man be-na born again, his e'en sal never see God's Kingdom!"

¹ V. 8. We ken-na gin the hail o' the watir was made wine. Aiblins but the pairt they dippit oot. It wad be a' the greater ferlie—dippin intil watir, and cairryin awa' wine!

4. Quo' Nicodemus, "But hoo's a man to be born in eild? Maun he return till his mither's womb, and be born ower again?"

5. But Jesus spak: "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Gin a man be-na watir-born and Spirit-born, he'se no come intil God's Kingdom!"

6. "And aye that whilk is born o' the flesh is itsel flesh, and that whilk is born o' the Spirit is spirit."

7. "Mak nae ferlie o' my words, 'Ye maun be born again!'

8. "The wind blaws whaur it wull, and ye bear the sough o't, but canna ken whaur it comes frae, nor whaur it gangs tae: sae is it wi' aye born o' the Spirit."

9. Nicodemus says to him, "Hoo can siccan a thing be?"

10. Quo' Jesus to him, "Can ye be a Maister o' Isra'l, and ken-na thir things?"

11. "Truly, truly say I t'ye,¹ we speak what we ken, and bear witness o' oor ain een; and ye winna bear ua.

12. "Gin I hae tauld ye things o' the yirb, and ye winna hae them, wull ye lippen my word anent things o' Heaven?"

13. "And nae man has e'er gane up Aboon, but he that cam doon frae Aboon—the Son o' Man, wha bides Aboon."

14. "And like as Moses i' the wilderness heized up the serpent, sae man the Son o' Man be liftit heigh;

15. "That a' wha lippen till him soudna dea, but hae Life for aye!"

16. "For God sae loved the warkd as to gie his Son, the Only-Begotten Ane, that ilka aye wha lippens till him soudna dea, but hae Life for aye."

17. "For God sent-na his Son intil the warkd to bring condemnation on't,

but that reither the warkd might be saved by him.

18. "And aye that lippens him iesa hauden guilty; but aye wha winna lippen him is judged guilty e'en no; for be haena lippened to the Son o' God, the only-begotten Ane."

19. "And here is the sentence he drees: that licht beams on the warkd, and men lo'e the mirk and no the licht; for that their deeds are wrang."

20. "For ilka aye that follows ill hastes the licht, and comes na till't; jalousin that his ill deeds wull be seen."

21. "But the man wha has the truth seeks the licht, that a' his deeds may be plainly seen, that they are done i' the poore o' God."

22. Eftir thaes things, Jesus and the disciples cam intil Judea; and he bade wi' them, baptizzin.

23. And John his sel was in Eeson, nar-by Salim, baptizzin; for that was rowth o' water thar-about; and the folk cam to he baptizez't.

24. For John wasna yet cuisten intil prison.

25. And noo thar cam a quaisten between John's disciples and a Jew anent purification.

26. And till John they cam, sayin, "Maister! the Ane that was ayont Jordan wi' ye, the Ane ye bure witness till—d'ye ken he's baptizzin, and a' the folk come till HIM?"

27. John says to them, "Ane can hae naething gien him, gin it be na frae Heeven."

28. "Ye mind yersels that I said, 'I am no the Messiah, but aye sent afore him!'

29. "The aye that has the bride, he is the bridegroom; but the bridegroom's guude freend stanin by, and bearin his word, joys i' the voice o' the bridegroom. This is my joy fulfilled!"

30. "He manna wax, but I manna wan."

¹ V. 11. Jesus siblins meant himself and John, when he said "we." John was a greev witness for him, and steered up the hale land; but the Jewish rulers wad haen nae o' him!

31. "He that comes fras Aboon, is aboon a' folk ; he wha is o' the yirth is yirth-like, and speaks o' the yirth ; but he wha is fras Aboon is aboon a'.

32. "And he speaks o' the nicht o' his ain e'en ; and thar isna a man to tak him at his word !

33. "But ony ane that taks his word, he has set his seal to the truth o' God, and made it his ain.

34. "For the Ane sent fras God speaks God's word ; for he has sent the Spirit ayont a' measure.

35. "The Faither lu'es his Son ; and gies a' things intil his hauns.

36. "The man wha lippens on the Son has Life for Aye, and he wha winna believe the Son sal see Life nevir ; but the ban o' God on him sal bide !"

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Jaucob's waal, and the watir for the waal's drouth. The great man's hauns.

NOO, whan the Lord kent the Pharisres bad word that he gaither'd in and bapteez't mair folk than John did—

2. (But it was the disciples, and no Jesus'sel wha bapteez't)—

3. He quat the Jews' kintra-side, and gaed awa again intil Galilee :

4. And he behoved to gang athort Samaria.

5. And he lichtit on a Samaria citie ca'd Sychar ; nar-haun the bit grun' Jaucob gi'ed to Joseph.

6. And Jaucob's waal¹ was thar-at. And Jesus, forfouchtan wi' the way, cuist his sel doon on the waal : and it was about the denner-time.

7. Than thar cam a Samaria-wumman forrit, to draw watir. Quo' Jesus, "Let me have a scwp o' watir !"

8. (His disciples had a' gane to the citie for meat.)

9. Quo' the Samaria-wumman, "Hoo is't that ye, bein a Jew, are seekin drink fras me, a Samaria-wumman ?" (For the Jews haes nae trokin nor neeborliness wi' the Samaria-folk.)

10. Quo' Jesus, "Gin ye kent God's Gift, and wha it soud be that said 'Gie me a scwp o' watir,' ye wad haes socht fras him the Leevin' Watir—and gotten't too !"

11. Said the wumman to him, "Sir, ye haes naething to lat doon the waal, and the waal's unco deep ; whaur fin' ye the Leevin Watir ?"

12. "Ye canna be greater nor oor forebear Jaucob, wha gied us the waal, and slackened his ain drouth wi't, and the drouth o' his bairms—and his beasts !"

13. Jesus said to her, "Wha may drink this watir will be drouthie syne ;

14. "But wha drinks o' the watir I gie him, sal be drouthie nevirmair ; for the watir I gie him sal be in him an unseen waal, springin up intil Life Eternal !"

15. The wumman cry't oot, "Sir, lat me haes this watir ! no to be drouthie, and ne'er to fash to come to the waal again !"

16. Quo' Jesus, "Gang awa, and ca' yere gudeman, and come again belyve !"

17. But the wumman said to him, "I haena a gudeman !" Quo' Jesus, "Ye haes done richt to say ye haena a gudeman ;

18. "For ye haes had fyve ; and the ane ye haes e-noo is no yere ain gudeman ; ye spak truth thar."

19. Quo' the wumman, "Sir, I jalouse ye maun be a Prophet !

20. "Oor forebears worshipped this vera mountain ; but yere folk say Jernusalem's the place whaur folk soud worship—"

21. Jesus pat in, "Wumman, luppen to me ! the 'oor's at haun, whan naither here, nor yet thar, sal they worship the Faither !

¹ V. 6. "They biggit batter than they kent" (Emerson). Jaucob didna ken he was howkin a waal for his Lord to drink oot o' !

22. "Ye ken-na what ye see' ; but we ken what we worship ; and salvation comes fras among the Jews.

23. "But the 'oor is at haun, and e'en noo it comes, whan God's ain worshippers sal worship the Faither in the truth and wi' the Spirit—for the Faither wad hae sickle to seek him.

24. "God is a spirit ; and wha worship him maun e'en do aye i' the spirit and wi' the truth."

25. The wumman says, "I ken Messiah's comin, that folk ca' 'The Christ' ; whan he comes, he'll tell us a'."

26. Jesus spak — "I that's noo speakin t'ye am 'The Christ'!"

27. On the back o' this cam the disciples, and ferlied that he soud be speakin wi' the wumman ; but nane o' them speir't, "What are ye seekin ?" nor, "Hoo is't that ye talk wi' the wumman ?"

28. Than the wumman, leavin her watir-stoup, gaed awa to the citie, and cry't oot to the men,

29. "Co' way ! and see a man that tellt me a' that evir I did ! Is he no the Messiah ?"

30. Then they gaed oot o' the citie to come till him.

31. But atween times his disciples war ask-askin him, "Maister ! wull ye no eat ?"

32. But quo' he to them, "I hae meat that ye ken-na !"

33. And aye they speir' aye o' anither, "Think ye ony aye brocht him ocht to eat ?"

34. Quo' Jesus, "It's meat to me to do his wull that sent me, and finish his wark !

35. "Div ye no say, 'Fowr montae, and than the hairst ?' But unsteek yere een and see the fields—they're whitenin till the hairst e'en noo !

36. "And the shearer wins his fee, and gaithers till him an eternal hairst ; and the sawer and shearer are baith blythe thegither !

37. "And the auld proverb comes true ower again, 'Ane saws, and synge anither shears !'

38. "I bade ye to a hairst whauron ye hadna toiled : ither men toiled, and ye are entered on their reward."

39. And mony o' the Samaria-folk lippened on him for the wumman's sake, wha aye threepit, "He tellt me a' that evir I did !"

40. See whan they cam till him they besocht him to bide wi' them ; and he stoppit twa-thrie days thar.

41. And a hantle mair believed whan they heard his ain word ;

42. And quo' they to the wumman, "Noo we believe—no for yere report—for oor ain lugs hae heard him ; and noo we ken that he is the Anointit Ane, the world's Saviour !"

43. And twa days efter he gaed forth again intil some o' the pairts o' Galilee.

44. For Jesus his sel testify't that "a Prophet had nae reputae in his ain kintra-side."

45. Syne he cam intil the pairts o' Galilee, and the folk thar acceptit him, for they had seen a' that he did at the Feast in Jerusalem ; (for they ae weal gaed up till the Feast).

46. And aye mair he cam up till Galilee-Cana, whaur he made the watir wine. And there was a certain hie officer, whase son was ill at Capernaum.

47. As aye as he got a sough o' Jesus comin oot o' Judea intil Galilee, he gaed till him, and besocht him to come doon and heal his son ; for he was in extremitie.

48. Jesus answer't him, "Gin ye see-na signs and ferlies, ye're set again believin."

49. The great man says to him, "Sir, come awa doon, 'or my bairn dee !'

50. Quo' Jesus to him, "Gang yere gate ; yere son leeves !" The

¹V. 26. The Jews lookit for a Messiah to fecht the Romans ; Jesus wadna let them say he was the aye. But this wumman waitit for a Messiah to shaw her the truth ; to her he reveal'd his sel.

man lippened the word o' Jesus to him, and took the gate.

51. And as he was e'en noo gang-in doon, his servants met him wi, "Yere son's leevin!"

52. Syne he speir't at them the 'oor the illness took a turn; and quo' they, "Yestreen, at ane o'clock o' the day, the fivver gaed awa."

53. Sae the faither kent it was at that 'oor Jesus said to him, "Yere son leaves!" and he his sel believed and his hale hoose.

54. This is the second wunner-wark Jesus did, hain come oot o' Judea intil Galilee.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Jesus at Bethesda. The Jews wad neither ha'e him heal nor preach: "It's no the Sabbath!" quo' they.

EFTIR thir things thar cam a Feast o' the Jews; and Jesus gaed up till Jerusalem.

2. Noo, in Jerusalem, by the sheep-port is a pool ca'd (i' the Hebrew) Bethesda, and beside it fyve porticoes.

3. In thae lay a hantle o' folk; sick, blin', lameters, and dwined-awa anes, waitin for the steerin o' the watir.

4. For an angel (quo' they) gaed doon whiles intil the pool, and set the watir astear; than whaeever first stappit in was made hale o' his compleint.

5. And a particular man thar had been belpless for acht-and-threety year.

6. And Jesus seein him lyin, and kennin he had lang been sae, says to him, "Wad ye be made hale?"

7. The feckless ane answer't, "Sir, I ha'e nae ane to pit me in; but whan I'm eatlin to hirple doon, some ither ane staps in fore me!"

8. Quo' Jesus to him, "Up¹! tak up yere couch, and gang!"

¹ V. 8. Tak tent hoo ready the Lord was to heal the body! Wasn't no, pairtly, to schaw us that he was e'en as ready to heal the saul!

9. And at ance the man was made hale, and took up his couch, and walkit; and that vera day was the Sabbath-day.

10. Sae said the Jews to him wha was made hale, "This is the Sabbath-day! it's no alloood for ye to be carryin yere couch!"

11. He answer't them, "The ane that made me hale, he order't me, 'Tak up yere couch, and gang!'"

12. Than speir't they at him, "Wha was't that said t'ye, 'Tak up yere couch and gang!'"

13. And he wha was made hale kent-na wha it was; for Jesus had withdrawn his sel, a great thrang bein about.

14. Syne Jesus, lichtin on him i' the Temple, says to him, "Sae, ye are made hale; sin nae mair, that something waur come-na t'ye!"

15. The man gaed awa, and tell't the Jews it was Jesus wha made him hale.

16. Sae the Jews persecutit Jesus, and wad fain ha'e kill't him, for doin thir things on the Sabbath-day.

17. But Jesus answer't them, "My Faither works e'en till noo, and I too work."

18. Sae the Jews etlit mair and mair to kill him: for he badna only broken the Sabbath (quo' they) but mair—had said that God was his Faither, makin his sel God's marrow.

19. Than said Jesus to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, The Son dis naething o' his sel alienarlie, but sic as he sees the Faither do: for siclike things the Faither dis, thae also dis the Son as weel.

20. "For the Faither lo'es the Son, and schaws till him a' things he dis his sel: and greater warks than thir wull he schaw him, that ye may ferlie.

21. "For e'en as the Faither feshes up the deid, and gies life to them, sae sel the Son gie life to wham he wull.

22. "For the Faither judges nae

man, but has gien ower a' Judgment to the Son ;

23. "Sae that a' men soud gie honor to the Son, e'en as they gie honor to the Faither.

24. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, The man wha hears my word, and lippens on him wha sent me, has Life for Aye, and comes-na intil condemnation ; but he is come out o' death intil Life.

25. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, The 'oor is comin, and e'en noo is, whan the deid sal bear the voice o' the Son o' God, and they wha hear sal leave !

26. "For e'en as the Faither has life within his sel, sae has be giftit to the Son to has life within HIS SEL !

27. "And has gien to him pouer to gie judgment as weel, for that he is the Son o' Man.

28. "Mak nae ferlie o' this ; for the 'oor is comin whan a' in their graves sal bear his voice.

29. "And sal come forrit ; thae wha has weel dune, to the up-risin o' Life : and they wha has ill dune, to the up-risin o' condemnation.

30. "I can o' my ain sel, allenarlie, do naething ; like as I hear, sae I judge ; and my judgment is richtous ; seein I seek-na my ain wull, but the Faither's wull wha sent me.

31. "Gin I gie witness o' mysel, my witness needna be ta'en.

32. "Thar is anither wha witnessees o' me ; and I ken the witness he bears o' me is true.

33. "Ye sent till John, and he bore witness to the Truth.

34. "But I has need o' man's testimonie ; but thir things I say, that ye might be saved.

35. "He was a licht that lowed and glintit ; and ye war fain for a wee to glorie in his licht.

36. "But I has greater witness than the like o' John ; for the warks the Faither has gien me to do—the vera warks I do—bear me witness that the Faither has sent me.

37. "And the Faither his sel wha

sent me, has gien witness o' me. Ye nevir heard his voice, nor saw his form !

38. "Naither has ye his word abidin ye ; for the Ane he has sent, him ye lippen-na.

39. "Ye seek in the Scriptures ; for in them ye think ye haes Life for Aye : and it is e'en thae that testify o' me.

40. "And ye winna come to me that ye nicht haes Life.

41. "I receive-na glorie fras men.

42. "But I ken ye weel, that the love o' God is wantin in ye.

43. "Heres am I, come in my Faither's name, and ye winna receive me : gin some ither soud come in his ain name, ye'll receive him.

44. "Hoo can ye believe, receivin gloria ane fras anither ? and the glorie that comes fras the only God ye seek-na !

45. "Think-na I'll wyte ye afore the Faither : thar's ane accusin ye, e'en Moses, on wham ye lippen yersels.

46. "For gin he had lippened Moses' word, ye wad bae lippened me ; for he wrate o' me.

47. "But gin ye lippen-na his words penned, hoo sal ye lippen my words spoken ?"

CHAPTIR SAX.

Fyne thosoun' hungry anes gaed breid ; but Jesus caudna pernoud them that their souls war hungry.

SYNE a' thae things war by, Jesus gaed ower till the ither side o' the Loch o' Galilee, ca'd the Loch o' Tiberias.

2. And great thrangs cam aftir him, for that they saw the ferlies he wrocht on sick folk.

3. And Jesus gaed up intil a mountain, and sat doon thar among his disciples.

4. And the Pasche was nar-haun, a Feast o' the Jews.

5. When Jesus had liftit up his een, and had seen sic a great com-

pany come till him, he says to Philip, "Hoo sal we buy braid, that a' thae may eat?"

6. And this he said to try him: for he kent hissel what he wad do.

7. Quo' Philip, "Twa hunder siller pennies in braid wadna be eneuch for them a', that ilka ane soud hae a wee."

8. And ane o' the disciples, Andro, Simon Peter's brither, says to him,

9. "Thar's a callant here, wha has fyve barley-bannocks, and twa wee speldrins; but what wad thae be amang sae mony?"

10. Quo' Jesus, "Mak the men sit doon!" Noo thar was a rowth o' gerss i' the place. Sae the men sat a' doon, aboot fyve thoosand o' them.

11. And Jesus took the bannocks, and whan he had gien thanks, he gied to the disciples, and the disciples to them that war sitten doon; and eke o' the speldrins, as mickle as they wad.

12. Whan they war a' satisfy't, quo' he to his disciples, "Gaither up the mools and bits that are ower, sae that thar be naething wastit."

13. Sae they gather't them up, and filled twa creels wi' the broken bits o' tha fyve barley-bannocks, remainin ower to them wha had eaten.

14. Than thae men, whan they had seen the ferlie wrocht by Jesus, cry't a', "This is, o' a certaintie, yon Prophet that was to come intil the world!"

15. Whan Jesus kent that they wad come, and tak him wi' the strang haun to mak him a King, he withdrew again intil a mountain, by hissel alone.

16. And whan the gloamin was come, his disciples gaed doon till the loch.

17. And enter't intil a smack, and gaed ower the loch, airtin for Capernaum. And it was noo mirk, and Jesus wasna come to them.

18. And the sea raise wi' a great wun' blawin.

19. And whan they had row't thrie or fourt mile, they see Jesus walkin on the loch, and comin nar-haun till the smack; and they war frichtent.

20. And he speak up to them, "It is I! be-na frichtent!"

21. Than they war fain to receive him intil the boat; and belyve the boat was to land, whaur they had airtit.

22. The day aftir, wben the folk staunin on the ither shore saw that was nae boat thar-about but the ane the disciples gaed intil, and that Jesus gaed-na wi' them intil the smack, but that the disciples had gane awa by their sels:—

23. (Hoosever thar cam ither boate frae Tiberias, nar-haun the bit whaur they had braid, aftir that the Lord had gied thanks:)

24. The folk tharfor, seain that naither Jesus nor his disciples war thar-abouta, took boat, and cam till Capernaum seekin for Jesus.

25. And whan they had fund him on the ither side o' the sea, quo' they to him, "Rabbi, whan cam ye here?"

26. Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, ye seek me, no sae muckle that ye saw wunner-warks, but that ye did eat o' the bannocks, and filled yersels.

27. "Seek-na for perishin meat, but for that meat that bides until Eternal Life, whilk the Son o' Man sal gie ye: for him has the Father, e'en God, sealed."

28. Quo' they to him, "And what maun we do, to work the warks o' God?"

29. Jesus answer't them and said, "This is God's wark, that ye lippen on him God has sent."

30. Syne they said to him, "What ferlie div ye schaw, that we could see and lippen? What div ye?"

31. "Oor forbears did eat manna i' the waste; as it is putten doon, 'He gied them braid oot o' Heeven to eat'."

32. Than said Jesus to them,

"Truly, truly say I t'ye, It waana Moses gied ye the breid oot o' Heeven; but my Faither he gies ye the raal Breid fræ Heeven!"

33. "For God's Breid is he wha comes doon oot o' Heeven, and gies Life to the world."

34. Than said they to him, "Lord! aye gie us sic breid!"

35. Quo' Jesus to them, "I am the Breid o' Life! wha come to me sal hung'er nae mair: and wha lippen on me sal be drouthie nevir!"

36. "But say I t'ye, ye haes seen me, and yet ye believe-na."

37. "They a' come to me that the Faither gies me; and wha comes to me, nevir in onygate wull I ca' him awa'!"

38. "For I haes come doon fræ Heeven, no to do the wull o' my ain, but the wull o' him that sent me."

39. "And here is the Faither's wull wha sent me:—That oot o' a' he haes gien me I soud tine nae, but soud raise a' up again at the Last Day."

40. "And this is his wull wha sent me:—That ilk ane seein the Son, and lippenin on him, may win Life for Aye; and I sal raise him up at the Last Day."

41. Than the Jews yammer't at him, for that he said to them, "I am the Breid that cam doon fræ Heeven."

42. Quo' they, "Isna this Jesus, Joseph's son? Hoo is't than that he says he cam doon fræ Heeven?"

43. Sae Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "Cavil-na amang yersels."

44. "Nae man comes to me, gin the Faither wha sent me dinna draw him: and I wull raise him again at the Last Day."

45. "The Prophets pat doon,

'And God sal teach them a.' And sae ilk man wha hears, and has taen in the lear o' the Faither, comes to me."

46. "No that ony man has o'er set een on the Faither, only he wha is o' God—He has seen the Faither!"

47. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha believes me has Life for Aye!"

48. "That Breid o' Life am I!"

49. "Yere forebears did eat manna i' the wilderness, and dees't."

50. "But here is the Breid that cam doon fræ Heeven, that a man may eat o' it, and no dees!"

51. "The Leevin Bred that cam doon fræ Heaven is mysel; gin ony man eat this Breid, he leaves for Aye: and the breid I sal gie is my flesh, that I wull gie for the world's lifa."

52. But the Jews had an unco bruilzie anent it, amang theireis, and cry't oot, "Hoo can this man gie us his ¹ flesh to eat?"

53. Than quo' Jesus to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Gin ye eatna the flesh o' the Son o' Man, and drink his blude, thar is nae Life in ye!"

54. "Wha eats my flesh, and drinks my blude, wins Life Eternal; and him wull I raise again at the Last Day."

55. "For my flesh is vera meat, and my blude is vera drink."

56. "And wha eats my flesh and drinks my blude, bides in me, and I in him."

57. "E'en as the Evir-leevin Faither sends me, and I leve by him, sae he wha eats o' me, sal s'en leve by me!"

58. "This is e'en the Breid that cam doon fræ Heeven; no like as yere forebears wha did eat manna, and dees't: wha eats o' this Breid levees for aye!"

¹ V. 44. It ians that some men are nevir drawn o' the Faither; but rather that (as the Jews a' profess to believe i' the Faither) they war to believe that the that cam to Christ, cam wi' the gude-wull and drawin o' the Faither.

V. 52. The Jews schawed an unco want o' thocht, in no seein at ance that "the flesh" and "the blude" was a parable. In place o' speirin the meanin o't, they focht again it. The world is swair to own its doonsem.

59. Thir things said he i' the Synagogue, teachin in Capernaum.

60. But a hantle o' his followers, when they heard that, said: "These things are unco hard; wha can bide tae listen till them?"

61. Jesus, kennin in himself what his followers war mutterin aboot it, says to them, "Are ye anger't at this?"

62. "What, than, gin ye see the Son o' Man gang awa up whaur he was afore?"

63. "The Spirit gies folk life: the flesh is nae profit: my words that I gie ye are spirit and are life."

64. "But thar are some o' ye wha dinna lippen me." For Jesus kent frae the vera first wha was unbelievin, and wha wad betray him.

65. And quo' he, "Sae it was I said t'ya, that nae man comes to me gin it warna gien him o' my Faither."

66. Frae that time oot, a hantle o' his followers reistit on him, and gaed nae mair wi' him.

67. Than quo' Jesus to the Twal', "Are ye gaun awa, too?"

68. Quo' Simon Peter, "Wham soud we gang till? It is ye wha has the words o' Eternal Life!"

69. "And we lippen and ken that ye are The Anointit Ane, the Son o' the Leevin God!"

70. But quo' Jesus, "Hae I no waled oot ye twal', and yet ane is a deevil?"

71. He spak o' Judas Iscariot, Simon's son; for he it was that wad betray him, bein ane o' the Twal'.

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

The Feast o' the Bothies. Waitir for drouth: the Jews wadna ha'e it.

EFTRIIR thaes things, Jesus gaed up and doon a' Galilee; for he wadna gang i' the land o' Judea, for the Jews settid to kill him.

2. Noo the Jews' Feast o' the Bothies was nar-haun.

3. Sae said his brethren to him, "Gang awa aff to Judea, sae that

yer disciples may see yer works that ye do!"

4. "For nae man dis siclike works unkent, gin he ells to be kent his sel. Gin ye do sic things, lat the world see ye!"

5. (For his brethren theirsels believed-na in him).

6. But quo' Jesus to them, "It's no my time yet; your time is aye at haun!"

7. "The wark canna hate you: but it hates me, for I gie testimonie again it that its works are ill."

8. "Gang ye awa to this Feast: I'm no gann e-noo, for my time's no here yet."

9. And syne, aftir thaes words, he bade yet in Galilee.

10. But aftir his brethren had gane up, he gaed up to the Feast as weel; no afore a' the folk, but like as it war bidlin.

11. And the Jews war seekin him at the Feast; and quo' they, "Whaur is he?"

12. And thar was an unco tulzie amang the folk anent him; for, quo' some, "He's a gude man!" ither said, "Na, he's but castin glamor ower the folk!"

13. Hoosever, nae spak oot openly aboot him; for they war fleyt o' the Jews.

14. Noo, aboot the mids o' the Feast-time, Jesus gaed up until the Temple to teach.

15. And the Jews ferlied, and quo' they, "Hoo kena this man leal, yet he ne'er learned?"

16. Jesus answered them, and quo' he, "The rede I redd iana mine, but his wha sent me.

17. "Gin ony man do God's wull, he sal ken aboot the rede, gin it be frae God, or gin I speak mysel, alenarie.

18. "Wha speaks allenar, o' his sel, seeks but his ain glorie; but wha seeks the glorie o' him that sent him, yon same man is leal and true; and nae fauseness in him."

19. "Was't no Moses that gied ye the law; and yet name o' ye is keepin'it. Hoo is't ye gang aboot to kill me?"

20. The folk answer't, and quo' they, "Ye hae a demon; wha gang aboot to kill ye!"

21. Quo' Jesus to them, "I hae done as wark, and ye a' ferlie."

22. "Moses gied ye circumceesion (no that it is o' Moses, but raither o' the faithers), and on the Sabbath-day ye circumceesae ane.

23. "Gin, than, ye on the Sabbath-day circumceesae a man, see that Moses' law be-na broken, are ye anger't at me for makin' a man ilka haet hale on the Sabbath-day?"

24. "Judge-na o' things as they seem to the ee, but judge richt judgment."

25. Than quo' some o' them o' Jerusalem, "Is this no be they seek to kill?"

26. "But look! he speaks out banldly, and they say naething to him. Hae the rulers come to ken that this is the Anointit Ane?"

27. "But than we ken this man, and hoo he comes; but when the Anointit Ane sal come, nae¹ man kens hoo he comes!"

28. Than cry't oot Jesus, teachin' i' the Temple, "Ye baib ken me, and ye ken whaur I come frae. I amna come o' mysel; but he wha sent me is true—he wham ye ken-na!"

29. "But I ken him; for I am frae him, and he sent me."

30. Than they socht to grip him; but as yet nae man pat hauns on him, for his ain 'oor wasna yet come.

31. And mony o' the folk lippen'd on him; and quo' they, "Whan the Anointit comes, wull be do mair wunner-warks than thae this man dis!"

¹ V. 27. The Doctors o' the Law first pat oot a wrang description o' the Anointit Ane, and than condemned oor Lord afore the folk, for that he didna marrow wi' their description! The same is done wi' Christ now; and wi' Christ's folk!

32. The Pharisees heard o' the folk mutterin' sic things aboot him; and the Pharisees and the Heid-priests sent oot officers to tak him.

33. But Jesus gaed on—"Yet a wee while, and I am w'y'e, afore I gang till him that sent me."

34. "Ye may seek me, but ye winna fin' me; and whaur I bide ye canna come!"

35. Than quo' the Jews amang theirsels, "Whaur wull be gang that we canna fin' him! Wull he gang awa to the here-awa there-awa tribes amang the Gentiles, teachin' the Gentiles?"

36. "Whatna saying is this that he said, 'Ye sal seek me, an' no fin' me'; and, 'Whaur I bide ye canna come?'"

37. I' the hinmaist day, that great day o' the Feast, Jesus stude and cry't oot, "Gin ony man be drouthie, let him e'en come to me and drink!"

38. "He wha lippens on me, as it is putten doon i' the Scriptur, 'Oot frae him sal flow rivers o' Leevin Watir!'"

39. But this spak he o' the Spirit, that they sal see wha lippen on him; for the Holie Spirit wasna yet gien; for Jesus wasna yet glorify't.

40. And a hantle o' the folk, whan they heard a' this, said, "Surely this maun be the Prophet!"

41. Ither wheen—"This is the Messiah!" But quo' some, "Sal the Messiah come oot o' Galilee?"

42. "Has the Scriptur no said, oot o' the toon o' Bethlehem, whaur Dauid was?"

43. Sae they war sindry i' their minds amang theirsels aboot him.

44. And a wheen o' them wad fain haes laid hand o' him; but nae man pat haun on him.

45. Than cam the officers back to the Heid-priests and Pharisees, and quo' they to them, "Why hae ye no brocht him?"

46. Quo' the officers, "Ne'er man spak like this man!"

47. Quo' the Pharisées to them,
"Are ye glamor'd as weel?"
48. "Hae ony o' the Priests or the
Pharisées lippened on him?"
49. "But a curse bides on this
folk, wha ken-na the law!"

50. But quo' Nicodemus to them
(the ane that cam till Jesus by nicht,
and ane o' their scels),

51. "Dis oor law condemn a man
'or it hear him, and ken what he
dis?"

52. But they flang back at him,
"Are ye o' Galilee too? Seek ye,
and look—for oot o' Galilee comes
nae Prophet!"

53. And ilka man gaed till his ain
hoose.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

The ill-deedie wumman (no the only sinner). Jesus tells the folk o' Jerusalem the truth, but they wouldna hear: 'or lang it was writh, and they bude hear.

JESUS gaed oot-by till the Mount
o' Olivea.

2. And on the morn, early, he
cam again till the Temple, and the
folk a' gaither't aboot him; and he
sat doon to teach them.

3. And the Scribes and Pharisées
brocht till him a wumman ta'en in
adultery; and whan they had settin
her i' the mids.

4. Quo' they to him, "Maister!
this wumman was ta'en i' the vera
act o' adultery.

5. "Noo Moses, i' the Law, gied
commann to stane siclike; but what
say ye?"

6. This said they for temptation,
to hae something to wyte him wi'.
But Jesus loutit doon, and gaed on
writin in the yird wi' his fing'er.

7. Sae whan they gaed on, ask-
askin him, he straughtit his sel, and
quo' he to them, "The ane that's
wantin sin amang ye, lat him cast the
first stane at her!"

8. And ance mair he loutit his sel
doon, writin on the grun'.

9. And they that heard him slippit

cannilie oot, frae the suldest o'men to
the last ane; and Jesus was left
alone, wi' the wumman staunin i' the
mida.

10. Whan Jesus straughtit his sel
up, and saw nae but the wumman,
he says to her, "Whaur are they
that wytit ye? Has nae man gien
judgment on ye?"

11. And she says, "Nae man, my
Lord!" And quo' Jesus, "Nae mair
div I pass judgment on ye: gang
yere ways, and sin nae mair!"

12. Than again spak Jesus to
them, and said, "I am the world's
Licht! the man wha follows me
walks-na i' the mirk, but sal hae the
licht o' Life!"

13. The Pharisées then replied to
him, "Ye gie witness o' yersel; yere
ain witness, allenar, is nae prufe!"

14. Jesus answer't them, and quo'
he, "E'en gin I bear witness for my-
sel, my witness is leal and true; for
I ken whaur I cam frae, and whaur
I gang till: but ye ken-na whaur I
cam frae, and whaur I gang."

15. Ye judge aftir the flesh; I
judge name.

16. "Aye, and gin I did judge,
my judgment wad be true; for it
isna I mylane, but I and the Faither
wha sent me.

17. "And e'en i' yere ain Law it's
putten-doon, 'The witness o' twa
witnesses is prufe.'

18. "I am ane, gien witness o'
myself; and the Faither wha sent me
gies witness o' me."

19. Than said they to him,
"Whaur is yere Faither?" Quo'
Jesus, "Ye ken-na me, nor ken ye
my Faither; gin ye kent me, ye woud
hae kent my Faither as weel!"

20. Thir words spak Jesus i' the
Treasury, as he was teachin i' the
Temple; and nae man put hauns on
him, for his 'oor wasna yet.

21. Than again Jesus says to
them, "I gang my ways; and ye sal
seek for me, and sal dee i' yere sins;
and whaur I gang, ye canna come!"

22. Than quo' the Jews, "Wull he mak awa wi' his sel? for he says, 'Whan I gang, ye canna come.'"

23. And he said to them, "Ye are free aneath; I am fræ Aboon; ye are but o' this wairld; I am-na o' this wairld."

24. "Sae said I t'ye, 'I' yere sins ye sal dee!' for gin ye believe-na that I am the Ane, ye sal dee i' yere sins!"

25. Than speir't they at him, "Wha are ye?" And Jesus says to them, "E'en juist as I said to ye at the first.

26. "Mony things hae I to say, and mony things hae I to judge o' ye; natherless, he wha sent me is true; and I gie to the wairld what I has heard o' him."

27. They kent-na that he spak to them o' the Faither.

28. Than said Jesus to them, "Whan ye hae up-listit the Son o' Man, ye sal ken I am he, and do naething o' mysel; but o' the leair o' my Faither, see speak I thae things.

29. "And he is aye wi' me wha sent me: the Faither leaves-me-na alone; for I aye dae the things that please him."

30. And speakin thir words, mony believed on him.

31. Than said Jesus to thae Jews wha had lippened him, "Gin ye bide in my word, than are ye my followers truly.

32. "And the truth sal ye ken, and the truth maks ye free."

33. But they answered him, "Abra'm's seed are we, and nar war slaves to ony: hoo say ye than, 'Ye sal be made free?'"

34. Jesus says to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha works sin, is sin's servant!"

35. "And the servin-man bides-na i' the hoose for aye; but the Son bides for aye."

36. "Gin than the Son maks ye free, truly ye're be free!"

37. "I ken ye are o' the seed o'

Abra'm; but ye are seekin to mak awa wi' me, for that my word bides-na in ye."

38. "What I hae seen wi' my Faither I speak; and what ye hae heard fræ yere faither ye do!"

39. They answered, and quo' they to him, "Abra'm is oor Faither!" Jesus says to them, "Gin ye war Abra'm's bairna, ye wad do Abra'm's warka.

40. "But noo ye wad mak' awa wi' me, a man wha tells ye the truth, whilk I hae heard o' God: Abra'm did-na see!"

41. "Ye dae yere faither's warks!" Than said they to him, "We be-na o' fornication; we hae as Faither, God!"

42. Jesus said to them, "Gin God war yere Faither, ye wad e'en lo'e me: for I cam forth and cam fræ God; and I cam-na o' mysel, but he sent me.

43. "Why dae ye no ken my sayin? e'en for that ye canna hear my word!"

44. "Ye are o' yere faither the deevil; and his wull dae ye. A murderer was he fræ the first, and bade-na i' the truth. And whan he speaks a lee, he speaks o' his ain; for he is a leear, and the faither o' a leeara.

45. "And for that I tell ye the truth, ye lippen-na on me."

46. "Wha o' ye fastens sin on me? And, gin I say the truth, why is't ye lippen-na on me?"

47. "He that is o' God, hears God's words: ye dinna hear them, tharfor, for ye are-na o' God!"

48. Than answer't the Jews, and quo' they, "Dae we no say weel that ye are a Samaritan, and hae a deevil?"

49. Jesus answer't, "I has nae deevil: but I honor my Faither, and ye wad dishonour me."

50. "And I seek-na for my ain glorie; thar is Ane that seeks and judges.

51. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Gin a man keep my sayin, he sal ne'er see death!"

52. Than said the Jews to him, "Noo ken we ye has a deevil; for Abr'am is deid, and the Prophets are deid; and ye say, 'Gin a man keep my sayin, he sal ne'er pree o' death.'

53. "Are ye greater nor oor faither Abra'm, wha is deid? and the Prophets that are deid; wham wad ye mak yersel?"

54. Jesus answer't, "Gin I glorifyt mysel, my glorie is but naething; it is my Faither wha glorifies me; wham ye ca' yere God."

55. "Yet hae ye no kent him; but I ken him; and gin I soud say, 'I dinna ken him,' I soud be a leear, like as ye are yersels: but I ken him, and keep his word."

56. "Yere faither Abra'm was fain to see my day; and he saw it, and it blythened him!"

57. Than said the Jews to him, "Ye are-na¹ fifty year auld yet, and hae ye seen Abra'm?"

58. Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Afore Abra'm was, am I!"

59. Than grippit they stanes to hurl at him; but Jesus hid his sel, and gaed oot o' the Temple, throws amang them a', awa.

CHAPTIR NINE.

Acc that gets his sight weel, and gies his testimonie weel.

AND as he gaed by he saw a man wha was blin' fras he was born.

2. And his disciples speir't at him, "Maister! whase sin was't? the man's ain sin, or his faither and mither's, that he was born blin'?"

3. Jesus answer't, "Naither his ain sin, nor his faither's and mither's;

but for that the works o' God soud be seen in him.

4. "I manu do the works o' him that sent me, while it is day: the nicht comes on, when man canna work.

5. "While I am in the world, I am the world's light."

6. Whan he had said this, he spat on the grun', and made clay o' the spittle, and pat the clay on the blin' man's een.

7. And had him "Gang awa, wesh ye in the pool o' Siloam" (whilk means "Sent"). He gaed his gate tharfor, and wesh't, and cam back seein.

8. Than the neebors, and the folk that afore had seen him, and kent the beggar, said, "Isna this the ane that sat and beggit?"

9. Some again, "It is he!" Ithers, "It's like him!" Quo' he, "I am he!"

10. Sae they speir't at him, "Hoo than are yere een unsteekit?"

11. He answer't, and quo' he, "The man they ca' Jesus made clay, and pat it on my een, and tell't me, 'Gang yere ways to the Pool o' Siloam, and wesh ye!' And I gaed and I wesh't, and I gat my sight."

12. And quo' they to him, "Whaur is he?" He said, "I ken-na."

13. They fesh till the Pharisees the man that o' auld time was blin'.

14. Noo it was the Sabbath, the day that Jesus wrocht the clay, and unsteekit the man's een.

15. Ance mair the Pharisees speir't at him, hoo he had gotten his sight! Quo' he, "He pat clay on my een, and I wesh't—and I see!"

16. Sae quo' some o' the Pharisees, "This man is no o' God, for he keeps na the Sabbath!" Quo' itbers, "Hoo can a man fu' o' sin do sic wunner-warks!" And thar was contention amang them.

17. Than said they again to the man that was blin', "What say ye

¹ V. 57. What gar't them say "fifty"? He was jimpily past thretty. Was't the gray hair, afore it's time, stealin on his temples? or was't the wearied look o' a man bearin sins no his ain, that misleared them? Aihins we ken-na.

about him, ain' be has open'd yere e'en?" Quo' he, "He is a Prophet!"

18. But the Jews wadna believe—
anent the man's bein blin', and
winnin to his sight—till they ca'd
the parents o' him that had gotten
his sight.

19. And they speir't at them, "Is
this yere son, wha, as ye say, was
born blin'? Hoo than is he noo
seuin?"

20. His parents answer't, and quo'
they, "We ken weel that this is oor
son; and that he was born blin' ;

21. "But hoo he noo sees, or wha
has unsteekit his een, we kenna: he
is come to age; speir at him: he his
ain sel wull tell ye."

22. Thir things spak the parents,
for that they war fley't o' the Jews;
for the Jews had plottit amang
theirsels, that gin ony man soud own
him to be the Christ, he soud be
puttan oot o' the kirk.

23. And sae said his parents, "He
is come to age; speir at him!"

24. Sae they ca'd back again the
man that had been blin', and quo'
they to him, "Gie the praise to
God! we a' ken that this man is no
a gude man."

25. But quo' he to them, "Gin he
be a gude man or an ill man, I ken
na; as thing I dae ken, that ance I
was blin', and noo I see!"

26. And than again they said to
him, "What wast he did till ye?
Hoo did he unsteek yere een?"

27. He answer't, "I tellt ye juist
a-noo, and ye didna haer me! Why
wad ye hear it ower again? wull ye
be his disciples?"

28. And they misca't him, and
said, "Ye are his disciple! but we
are Moses' disciples!"

29. "We ken that God has spoken
to Moses; as for this ane, we kenna
whaur he is frae!"

30. The man answer't, and quo'
he, "Why, here is an unco ferlie;
that ye kenna whaur he is come frae,
and yet he has unsteekit my een!"

31. "We ken that God hears-na ill
men; but gin ane worships God, and
dis his wull, him he hears."

32. "Sin' the wairld begude was
it ne'er heard that ony ane unsteekit
the een o' a man born blin'!"

33. "Gin this man ¹ warna o' God,
he coud do naething!"

34. They answer't, and quo' they
to him, "Ye war born in sin, oot
and oot; and wad ye teach us?"
And they cuist him oot.

35. Jesus was tellt that they had
cuisten him oot; and as suns as he
faund him he says to him, "Dae ye
believe on the Son o' God?"

36. He answerin said, "And wha is
he, Lord? sae as I may believe on
him?"

37. Jesus says to him, "Ye has
baith seen him, and it is he wha is
speakin w'ye!"

38. And he cryt oot, "Lord, I
believe!" and he worshipp't him.

39. And quo' Jesus, "For judg-
ment cam I tae this wairld; that the
blin' may see, and the seein be made
blin'."

40. And thae o' the Pharisées that
war wi' him heard thir words, and
quo' they to him, "Are we blin', as
weel?"

41. Jesus says to them, "Gin ye
war blin', the sin wadna be on ye;
but noo ye say, 'We see!' yere sin
is whaur it was!"

CHAPTIR TEN.

*Jesus is a leal Shepherd: his flock is o' many
Airsels. The Jews wad fain haes tairn his
life.*

"**T**RULY, truly say I t'ye, He wha
comes-na ben by the door intil
the fauld, but speels up by some gate
o' his sin, is but a thief and a reiver."

3. "But he wha comes ben by the
door is the herd o' the sheep."

3. "To him the keeper unsteeks

¹ V. 33. The blin' man preached weel!
Ane that is healed o' Christ kens the
Healer! This man, in efter days, wad
be a stark Christian!

the fauld ; and the sheep hear his voice ; and he ca's by name his ain sheep, and taks them oot.

4. " And whan he has lettent oot his ain, he gangs afore them, and the sheep follow him, for they ken his voice.

5. " But nae fremd-ane wull they follow ; for they kenna the voice o' fremd folk."

6. This parable spak Jesus to them ; but they kent-na what he spak to them aboot.

7. Than Jesus spak to them again, " Truly, truly say I t'ye, I am the door o' the sheep !

8. " A' that e'er cam afore me are but thieves and reivers ; but the sheep heard-them-na.

9. " I am the door ; gin ony man come ben by me, he sal be saved, and sal gang oot and in, and fend weel.

10. " The reiver comes-na but for to steal, and kill, and ding doon. I come that they may hae life, and mair rowth o't.

11. " I am the Gude Shepherd ; the gude shepherd gies his ain life for his sheep.

12. " But the orra man for a fee, wha isna the herd, and anchts-na the sheep, whan he sees the wolf comin doon, lea's them and flees ; and the wolf grips them, and skails them abreid.

13. " The orra man flees, for that he is but for a fee, and lo'e-na the sheep.

14. " I am the Gude Shepherd, and ken my ain, and my ain ken me.

15. " And the Faither kens me, and I ken the Faither ; and I gie my ain life for the sheep.

16. " And ither sheep hae I, no o' this fauld : them too maun I bring hame, and they sal ken my voice ; and they sal win to be as flock, wi' as Shepherd !

17. " And for this dis my Faither lo'e me, for that I lay doon my life, that I micht tak it again.

18. " Nae man rives it fras me, but I lay it doon o' mysel. I hae strenth to lay it doon, and strenth to tak it up again. This comannan hae I o' my Faither."

19. Thar was a bruile ane mair amang the Jews at thir sayina.

20. And a bantle o' them said, " He has a demon, and is wud ; why listen ye to him ? "

21. Ither some—" Thir are-na the words o' ane wi' a demon ! Cau a demon unateek the een o' the blin' ? "

22. And it was at the Feast o' The Dedication, in Jerusalem : it was winter ;

23. And Jesus was gaun in Solomon's Porch, i' the Temple.

24. Than the Jews cam aboot him, sayin, " Hoo lang dae ye keep us in a swither ? Gin ye be the Christ, lat us ken plainly ! "

25. Jesus answer't, " I tall't ye, and ye wadna believe ; the ferlies that I dae in my Faither's name, bear witness o' me.

26. " But ye believe-na, for that ye arena o' my sheep.

27. " My sheep hear my voice, and I ken them, and they follow me.

28. " And I wull gie Eternal Life to them, and nane sal rive them oot o' my haun.

29. " My Faither, wha has gien them to me, is michtier nor I, and nane is fit to rive them oot o' my Faither's haun.

30. " I and my Faither are ane."

31. The Jews gather't up stanes to stane him.

32. Jesus answer't them, " Mony are the gude warks I hae schawed ye fras my Faither ; for whilk o' thae dae ye stane me ? "

33. The Jews answer't, and quo'

1 V. 25. The great warks that he did—mair nor ony man ever did—either pruv'd that he was mair favor't o' God than ony man afores him, or that he was Divine. In aither case, they sood haes believed the words o' ane mair plainly up-haunden o' God ! Gin ye tak in as truthe aboot Christ, it wull lead ye to mair !

they, "For nae gude wark div we stane ye ! but for blasphemin ; and for that ye, a man, are makin yersel God ! "

34. Jesus answer't, "Is't no patten doon i' yere Law, 'I said ye are gods ?'

35. "Gin he ca'd them gods, till wham the word o' God cam—and the Scriptur isna to be broken—

36. "Say ye o' him the Faither consecrates, and sends into the world, 'Ye blaspheme !' for that I said, 'I am the Son o' God ?'

37. "Gin I div-na the works o' my Faither, dinna believe me !

38. "But gin I div them—e'en gin ye believe-na me, believe the works ! sae ye may ken and may believe that the Faither is in me, and I am in the Faither !"

39. Than they entled again to grip him ; but he gaed forth out o' their haun,

40. And gaed awa again ayont the Jordon, to the place whaur John was at first baptizin : and he bade thar.

41. And mony folk cam till him ; and quo' they, "John schawed nae ferlies ; but a' things that John spak aboot this man war true !"

42. And mony believed on him thar.

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.

The kindly folk o' Bethanie. Death, and death's Maister.

NOO, a particular ane was ill ; Lazarus, o' Bethanie ; Mary's toon, and her sister Martha's toon.

2. It was the same Mary wha anointit the Lord wi' the ointment, and dightit bis feet wi' her hair, whase brither Lazarus was ill.

3. Sae his sisters sent word to him, "Lord, see ! the lad ye lo'e is sick !"

4. Whan Jesus heard it, he said, "This illness is no to bring death, but the glories o' God ; sae as God's Son might be glorify't."

5. Noo Jesus had tender love for Mary, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6. Whan, than, he heard he was ill, he ye bade thar twa days i' the bit whaur he was.

7. Eftir that, quo' he to his disciples, "Lat us gang into Judea again !"

8. The disciples say to him, "Maister ! the Jews e'en noo entled to stane ye, and wull ye gang tharawa again ?"

9. Jesus answer't, "Are thar no twal' oors to a day ? Gin ony man gang i' the day, he stoiters-na, for that he sees the licht o' this world.

10. "But gin ane walk i' the nicht, he stoiters, for that the licht isna in him."

11. Thir things quo' he ; and eftir he said to them, "Oor freend Lazarus is faun on sleep ; but I gang that I may wauken him oot o' sleep !"

12. Than quo' the disciples, "Lord, gin he sleep, he maun be on the mend !"

13. But Jesus spak o' his deuin ; while they thocht he had spoken o' his takin rest in sleep.

14. Than said Jesus plainly to them, "Lazarus is deid !

15. "And I am weel pleased, for yere sakes, I wasna yonner, sae as ye may believe ; name-the-less, lat us gang to him !"

16. Than Tammas (he wha was ca'd "The Twin") says to his neebore, "Lat us a' gang, too, that we may ¹dee wi' him !"

17. Than, when Jesus cam, he faund he had been i' the tomb for four days.

18. Noo, Bethanie was nar-haun Jerusalem, no twa mile awa.

19. And mony folk o' the Jews had come oot to Martha and Mary to console them ower their brither.

¹ V. 16. I wuss we kent mair o' Tammas ! It was in deid earnest he said this. In fact, Christ was juist gann till his deid, when he airtit his gate to Jerusalem !

20. Than Martha, as suns as she kent Jesus was comin, gaed oot and met him ; but Mary sat yet i' the hoose.

21. See says Martha to Jesus, "Lord ! gin thou had been here, my brither hadna dee't !

22. "And s'en yet, I ken that whate'er thou may ask o' God, God wull gie it thee !"

23. Quo' Jesus to her, "Yere brither sal rise again !"

24. Martha says to him, "I ken he sal rise again, i' the Risin at the Last Day !"

25. Jesus said to her, "I am the Risin-again and the Life ! Wha lippens on me, s'en gin he dee, yet sal he leave !

26. "And whassae leeves, lippennin on me, sal dee nae mair ! Dae ye believe this ?"

27. Quo' she to him, "Aye, Lord ! I believe thou art God's Son, wha was to come intil the warld !"

28. And whan she had said this, she gaed her ways, and ca'd Mary her sister, unkent, sayin, "The Maister is come, and is seekin' ye !"

29. And as suns as she kent it, she raise quickly, and gaed till him.

30. Noo Jesus waana yet come to the toon, but was i' the place whaur Martha met him.

31. Sae the Jews wha war i' the hoose to console her, whan they saw Mary rise up o' a suddaintie and gang oot, followt her, sayin amang theirsels, "She gangs to the tomb, to wail thar !"

32. Than Mary, bein come whaur Jesus was, fell doon at his feet, sayin to him, "Lord ! gin thou had been here, my brither hadna dee't !"

33. Whan Jesus saw her cabbin, and the Jews a' greetin that cam wi' her, he was unco touched at the heart, and was wrocht-on.

34. And quo' he, "Whaur has ye laid him doon ?" They say to him, "Lord, come awa and see !"

35. Jesus grat.

36. The Jews than said, "See hoo he lo'ed him !"

37. But a wheen o' them said, "Coud-na this man, wha unsteokit the een o' the blin', hae caused e'en this man to leave ?"

38. Jesus, groanin at this within his sel, comes to the tomb. Noo it was a cave, and a stane was putten ower it.

39. Jesus said, "Tak ye awa the stane !" Martha, the sister o' the deid man, says, "Lord ! by noo the corp wull be rank, for he has been four days deid !"

40. Jesus says to her, "Did I no say t'ye, that gin ye wad believe, ye soud see the glorie o' God ?"

41. Than took they awa the stane. And Jesus liftit up his een, and said, "Faither ! I thank thee that thou did hear me.

42. "And I ken that thou aye hears me ; but for the sake o' a' the folk staunin here I said it, that they may ken that thou did send me."

43. And whan he had sae said, he cryt wi' a soondin voice, "Lazarus ! hither ! Come !"

44. And the deid cam forth, bund haun and fit wi' deid-claes ; and his heid bund roond wi' a naipkin. Jesus says to them, "Lowse him, and lat him gang !"

45. Than a hantle o' the Jews wha cam to Mary, and saw a' that he did, believed on him ;

46. But a wheen o' them gaed their gate to the Pharisees, and tellt them what Jesus had done.

47. The Heigh-priests and the Pharisees than gaither't a Cooncil ; and quo' they, "What are we to do ? for this man dis mony wunner-warks.

48. "Gin we lat him thus be, a' folk wull lippen to him ; and the

¹ V. 38. Here war a wheen o' the Jews yammerin amang their sel's, at his no doin eneuch mighty works afore them. It was ill to dree ; and Jesus groaned inwardly at the hardness o' their hearts.

Romans wull come, and tak' awa oor place and oor kintra frae us!"

49. But ane o' them, Caiaphas, he bein Heigh-priest that year, said to them, "Ye ken naething ava!"

50. "Nor tak intil account, that it is better for us that so man soud dee for the nation, and no that the bairn nation soud be cuttit aff!"

51. Noo this he spak, no o' his ain sel; but bein Heigh-priest that year, he foetauld that Jesus soud dee for the nation:

52. And no for that nation alienarlie; but that he soud gather thegither in ane a' God's bairns scattert abroad.

53. Sae, frae that day forrit, they plouit thegither to mak awa wi' him.

54. Sae Jesus gaed nae mair freely amang the Jews; but gaed awa intil the kintra-side nar-haun the wilderness, intil a city ca'd Epbraim; and bade thar, wi' his disciples.

55. Noo the Jews' Pasche was nar-haun; and mony gaed up frae a' the kintra-side to Jerusalem afore the Pasche, to purify their soles.

56. Than socht they for Jesus; and quo' they amang their soles, as they stude i' the Temple, "What think ye? wull he no come up to the Feast?"

57. Noo baith the Heigh-priests and the Pharisees had gien a commaun, that gin ony ane kent whaur he was, he soud schaw it, that they might grip him.

CHAPTR TWAL.

Mary ance mair at Jesus' feet. He rides intil Jerusalem. The licht gauin to lea' them.

THAN Jesus, six days afore the Pasche, cam to Bethanie, whaur was Lazarus, that he had raised frae the deid.

2. And they made him a supper; and Martha ser't at the table; but Lazarus sat wi' him, among the guests.

3. Than Mary took a pund o' ointment, the raalnard, unco precious, and anointit Jesus' feet; and dichtit his feet wi' her hair; and the bairn hoose was fu' o' the perfume o' the ointment.

4. But ane o' his disciples, Judas, says (he wha wad betray him),

5. "Hoo is't this ointment warrae rather sell't for thrise bunder siller pennies, and gien to the puir?"

6. Noo this said he, no that he cared ocht for the puir, but for that he was a thief, and bured the wallet, and made awa wi' what gaed intil't.

7. Than said Jesus, "Dinna pit her aboot! has she no been bainin it for my buryin day?"

8. "For ye haes aye the puir w'ye; but ye haena me aye w'ye!"

9. The feck o' the folk amang the Jews kent he was thar; and they cam oot, no for Jesus' sake alienarlie; but s'en to see Lazarus as weel, wham he had raised frae the deid.

10. But the Heigh-priests socht hoo they might mak awa wi' Lazarus as weel;

11. For that by reason o' him, a hantie o' the Jews gaed awa, believin on Jesus.

12. On the morn, a great companie o' folk, wha bad come to the Feast, when they heard say that Jesus was comin to Jerusalem,

13. Tuik branches o' the palm-trees, and gaed oot to meet him, and cry't oot, "Hosannah! Blessin on him wha comes i' the name o' the Lord! the King o' Israel!"

14. And Jesus, whan he had ta'en a young as, sut himself on't; as it is putten doon,

15. "Fear-na, O dochter o' Zion! for see, yere King comes, sittin on an as's cowt."

16. Thir things did-na his disciples think o' at the first; but whan Jesus was glorify't, than mindit they that thir things war putten-doone anent him, and that they had done thir things to him.

17. Sae the thrang o' folk that war wi' him whan he ca'd Lazarus frae the tomb, and raised him frae the deid, hure witness.

18. And for this cause the baill multitude gaed oot to meet him, for they had heard tell that he had done this great ferlie.

19. Than the Pharisess said amang their sels, "See ye hoo ye mak nae heidway ! Look ! the world is gane aftir him !"

20. Noo, thar war certain Greeks amang the folk that cam up to worship at the Feast.

21. And thir men cam to Philip, wha was o' Bethaaida o' Galilee, sayin to him, "Sir, we wad fain see Jesus !"

22. Philip eam and tell't Andro ; and than Andro and Philip tell't Jesus.

23. And Jesus answer't them, and quo' he, "The 'oor is come for the Son o' Man to be glorifyt."

24. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, gin a pickle o' wheat fa'na into the yirb and dee, it bides allenar ; but gin it dee, it brings muckle increase.

25. "Wha lo'es bis life, sal tine bis life ; and wha hains-na bis life i' this world sal bain it for Eternity !

26. "Gin ony man wad ser' me, lat him follow me ; and whaur I bide, thar sal my servant bide ; gin ony man ser' me, my Father wull gie him honor.

27. "And noo is my saul unco wanrestie ; and what sal I say ? Faither ! save me frae this 'oor ! But e'en for this cam I intil this 'oor !

28. "Faither, glorify thy name !" Than cam thar a songb o' a voice oot o' the lift, sayin, "I hae baith glorifyt it, and wull again glorify it !"

29. A' the folk, tharfor, that stude by, said it thunner't. But ither some, that "An Angel spak to him !"

30. Jesus answer't, and said to them, "This voice cam-na for my sake, but for yours.

31. "Noo is the ¹ turnin-point for this world : noo sal this warld's prince be cuisten oot !

32. "And I, gin I be lifit up fras the yirth, wull wyle a'men to me !"

33. This said he, meanin whates kind o' death he wad dee.

34. And a' the folk answer't him, "We has heard oot o' the Law that the Anointit Ane bides for aye ; and hoo say ye, 'The Son o' Man's to be upliftit ?' Wha is this Son o' Man ?"

35. Than cryt Jesus to them, "Yet for a wee while is the licht wi' ye. Walk ye while ye has the licht, that the mirk fa' na on ye ; for wha gangs i' the mirk kens-na whaur be is gaun.

36. "Whilst ye has the licht, believe i' the licht ; sae sal ye be bairns o' the licht !" Thir things spak Jesus, and ga'ed awa, and keepit his sel hidlin frae them.

37. But aftir doin sae mony great warks amang them, yet believed they-na on him ;

38. That the saying o' Esaiab the Prophet nicht come gude whaur he said, "Lord, wha has happened to oor word ? And by wham has Jehovah's airm been seen ?"

39. Tharfor, they didna believe, for that Esaiab said again,

40. "Their e'en are blindit, and their heart made hard ; that they soudna see wi' their e'en, nor understand wi' their heart, and be turned, and I soud heal them !"

41. Thir things quo' Esaiab whan he saw his glorie, and spak o' him.

42. Name-the-less, e'en amang the Heigh-priests, a hantle believed on him ; but being slayt o' the Pharisess, they didna own him, for fear they soud be putten oot o' the Kirk.

43. For they lo'ed to be roos'd o'

¹ V. 31. John's word is "krisis." It isnae mickle judgment (i' the sense o' pronouncin sentence) as decidin ! It was noo to be seen whether Christ or Santan soud prevail. We ken brawlio wha wau the day.

men mair nor to be commandit o' God.

44. Jesus cry't, an quo' he, " Wha believes on me, believes na on me allenarie, but on him wha sent me.

45. " And wha looks on me, looks on him wha sent me.

46. " I am come for a licht to the world, that wha believes on me soud nae mair bide i' the mirk.

47. " And gin ony man hear to my words, and winna keep them, I jndge-bim-na; for it wasna to judge the world, but to save the world that I cam.

48. " Wha winna hear me, and winna hae my words, has ane to judge him: the word I hae gien oot, that sal condemn him i' the Last Day.

49. " For I haena spoken by myself; but the Faither wha sent me, he gied it to me, what I soud gie oot, and what I should speak.

50. " And I ken his commoun is Life-for-Aye: that whilk I speak, tharfor, e'en as the Faither has said to me, see I speak."

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

The hinsaint Supper wi' the Twa'. The fit-weshin, the kindly talk, and the sorrowfu' treason.

NOO, afore the Pasche, Jesus kennin that his 'oor cam on, whan he soud gang oot frae this world to the Faither—as he had lo'ed his ain i' the world, he lo'ed them to the hinsaint.

2. And the Supper gaun on, the Enemy haen noo putten intil the heart o' Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him—

3. Jesus, kennin that the Faither had gien a' thing intil his hauns, and that frae God he cam, and to God was returnin,

4. Gat up frae Supper, and lay doon his robes, and girded his sel wi' a tocel,

5. And ayne he teamed watir intil a basin, and begude to wash the dis-

ciples' feet, and to dight them wi' the tocel aboot him.

6. And belyve he cam to Simon Peter: he says to him, " Lord! wad ye wash my feet ? "

7. Jesus answer't to him, " Ye kenna e-noo what I dae, but ye sal ken eftir."

8. Peter says, " Nevir, and is nae gate, sal ye wash my feet ! " Jesus answer't him, " Gin I wash-ye-na, ye hae nae pairt wi' me ! "

9. Simon Peter says to him, " Lord! no my feet, allenar, but my hauns and my heid as weel ! "

10. Jesus says to him, " Wha is clean, needs-na but his feet wash't to be a' clean; and ye are clean—but no a' ! "

11. For he kent wha wad betray him; see said he, " Ye arena a' clean."

12. Sae whan he had wash't their feet, and ta'en his robe to him, and ta'en his place again, he said to them, " Ken ye what I hae done to ye ? "

13. " Ye ca' me ' Maister ' and ' Lord ' ; and ye say weel; for see I am.

14. " Gin I than, the Lord and the Maister, hae mysel wash't yere feet, ye soud be washin ane anither's feet

15. " For I hae suttent ye an example, to do as I hae done t'ye.

16. " Truly, truly say I t'ye, a servant isna aboon his maister, nor the ane that is sent oot as great as as the ane wha sends him.

17. " Gin ye ken thir things, happy are ye to be doin them !

18. " I speak-na aboot ye a'; I ken wham I hae waled oot; but that the word soud come to pass, ' He wha eats my breid lifts up his heel again me ' .

19. " And frae noo I am tellin ye aforehaun; see whan it is come to pass, ye may believe I am he.

20. " Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha welcomes ony ane I send, welcomes me; and wha welcomes me, welcomes him that sent me."

21. Sayin thir things, Jesus was wrocht-on in his spirit, and quo' he, "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Ane frae 'mang yere seis sal betray me!"

22. Than the disciples glower't at ane anither, dootsome about wham he might be speakin.

23. Noo, leanin on Jesus' bosom, was ane o' his disciples, ane that Jesus lo'ed.

24. Simon Peter than raxes ower to him, and says, "Tell us wham he is speakin o'."

25. He, leanin back on Jesus' hreist, says to him, "Lord! wha is't?"

26. Jesus answer't him, "It is he to wham I sal dip the morsel, and gie it." And he dippit the morsel, and gied it to Judas Iscariot, Simon's Son.

27. And aftir the morsel, Sautan cam intil his heart. Than Jesus says to him, "Whate'er ye dae, haste wi't."

28. Noo, nae man at the Supper kent what-for he spak this to him.

29. For some thocht, seein Judas bured the wallet, that Jesus had tell't him, "Buy what we need anent the Feast"; or that he was to gie to the puir.

30. He than, receivin the morsel, synge gaed oot; and it was nicht.

31. Sae, noo he was gane oot, Jesus says, "Noo the Son o' Man is glorify't, and God glorify't in him.

32. "Gin God be glorify't in him, God sal e'en glorify him in himself, and sal noo glorify him.

33. "Bairns, I am wi' you but for a wee. Ye sal seek me, and, like as I tell't the Jews, sae speak I noo—Whaur I gang, ye canna come!"

34. "I gie ye a new commann, 'Ye sal lo'e ane-anither; e'en¹ as I hae lost'd you, that ye soud lo'e ane-anither!'

35. "Sae sal a' folk ken ye are

followers o' me, gin ye hae love to ane-anither."

36. Simon Peter says to him, "Lord! whaur dae ye gang to?" Jesus answer't to him, "Whaur-awa I gang, ye canna follow me e-noo; but ye sal follow me aftir."

37. Quo' Peter to him, "Hoo is't I canna follow ye e-noo? I'll lay doon my life for ye!"

38. But Jesus answer't, "Wull ye lay doon yere life for me? Truly, truly say I t'ye, the cock craws-na, till ye hae thrice disowned me!"

CHAPTIR FOWRTKEN.

The Disciples in amaze; willin to be led, but unco haur. Tender as a mother w' her bairns, the Spirit will airt them.

"DE ye-na cuisten-doon in heart;
D ye lippen on God; lippen on me as weel."

2. "My Faither's Hoose has mony bowers; if no, I wad hae tell't ye. I gang to husk a place for ye."

3. "And gin I gang to buak a place for ye, sae come I again, and tak ye to mysel; that whaur I bide, ye may bide."

4. "And whaur I gang, ye ken; and the gate ye ken."

5. Quo' Tammes to him, "Lord! we dinna ken whaur ye're gaun, and hoo can we ken the gate?"

6. Quo' Jesus to him, "I am the gate, the Truth, and the Life! ilka man wha comes to the Faither, comes throu me."

7. "Gin ye had kent me, ye soud hae kent my Faither as weel; and frae this forrit ye ken him, and hae seen him."

8. Quo' Philip to him, "Lord, schaw us the Faither, and we sal be content!"

9. Jesus says to him, "Hae I been sae lang w'ye, and e'en yet ye haena kent me, Philip? Wha¹ sees

¹ V. 9. A' we ken o' God, is throu the Son! He it was that led Isra'el throu the desert, and spak by the Prophets; and he it is that is God and Guide to us noo. The Disciples kent a' this brawlie aftir-haun!

¹ V. 34. The newness o' the commann was, to lo'e ane anither as Christ had lo'ed them! The Maister's example is the stranchtest road we can tak to perfection! See his teachin o' humilitie, i' the fit-weshin; v. 4-15.

me, sees the Faither. And hoo d'ye say, 'Schaw us the Faither !'

10. "Canua ye lippen me, that I am in the Faither, and the Faither in me ? And the words I speak t'ye, I speak no allenarlie and o' mysel ; but the Faither, wha bides in me, e'en he dis the warks.

11. "Lippen me—I am in the Faither, and the Faither is in me; or e'en lippen me for the warks their soels !

12. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Wha believees on me sal do my warks, and e'en greater ; for I gang awa tae my Faither.

13. "And a' that ye ask in my name, e'en that wull I do, that the Faither micht be glorifyt i' the Son.

14. "Gin ye ask ocht in my name, that wull I do.

15. "Gin ye lo'e me, keep my commauns !

16. "And I sal pray to the Faither, and be eal gie ye another Guide, that he may be wi' ye for aye—

17. "The Spirit o' a' Truth—wham the world receives-na, for it sees him-na, nor yet kans him. Ye ken him, for he bides w'ye, and sal be in ye.

18. "I winna lea' ye to yersels, I come t'ye.

19. "Yet a wee, and the world sees me nae mair ; but ye see me : seein I leave, ye sal levee.

20. "At that day ye sal ken that I am in the Faither—ye in me, and I in you !

21. "The man wha kans my commauns, and has keepit them, is the ane that lo'es me ; and my Faither lo'es him that lo'es me—and I wull lo'e him, and schaw mysel to him."

22. Judas says to him (no Icariot), "Lord ! hoo is't ye are to schaw yersel to us, and no to the world ?"

23. Quo' Jesus to them, "Gin a man lo'es me, he keeps my words, and my Faither wull lo'e him ; and we wull come to him, and bide wi' him.

24. "Wha lo'es-me-na keeps-na my words ; and the word ye hear is no allenarlie mine, but the Faither's wha sent me.

25. "A' thir things I has spoken t'ye, while I forgather't wi' ya.

26. "But the Guide, the Holie Spirit, wham the Faither sends in my name, he sal e'en learn ye a' things, and feash a' things up to yere mind, whatsoe'er I has said to ye.

27. "Peace I lea' wi' ye; my peace I gie ye ; no as the wORLD wad gie, gie I t'ye. Dinna lat yere heart be dowie, nor be ye fley't.

28. "Ye has heard tell hoo I said t'ye, 'I gang awa, and come again !' Gin ye lo'ed me, ye wad be blythe to hear me say, 'I gang to the Faither !' for my Faither is mair nor I.

29. "Sae noo I has tellt ye, afore it is come, that when it is come ye soud believe.

30. "And frae this on, I'll no say muckle to ye : for this wORLD's Prince comes ; but has nae hand o' me !

31. "But I speak, that the wORLD may come to ken that I lo'e the Faither ; and as the Faither commandit, e'en sae I dae 'Come, lat us gang awa !'

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

The Vine-stock and the branches. But lat ilka man tak tent, that the Vine-stock looks mair for frute nor for leaves, on the branches !

"I AM the richt Vine-stock, and my Faither is the Dresser o' the Vine-yaird.

2. "Ilka branch in me that bears-na frute be taks awa ; and ilka ane bearin frute he prunes it, sae as it soud produce the mair.

3. "Noo ye has been sae pruned, by the word I has spoken t'ye.

4. "Bide in me, as I bide in you. The branch canna bear frute allenarlie ; it maun bide in the Vine-stock : sae mair may ye, gin ye bide-na in me.

5. "I am the Vine-stock ; ye are

the Branches. He wha bides in me, and I bide in him, that man brings forth rowth o' frute: for wantin me ye naething can do.

6. "Gin ony man¹ bide-na in me, he is cuisten oot as a fushionless branch, and dwines awa; and folk soop them thegither, and set them alowe, and they are brunt.

7. "But gin ye bide in me, and my words bide in you, ask ye what ye wad hae, and it sal be dune t'ye!

8. "And this gate is my Faither made glorious—that ye dae bear rowth o' frute: sae are ye my disciples!

9. "E'en as the Faither has lo'ed me, sae e'en hae I lo'ed you: bide ye in my love.

10. "And gin ye keep my commauns, ye sal bide in my love; e'en as I, keepin' my Faither's commauns, bide aye in his love.

11. "Thir things has I said t'ye, sae as my joy sal bide wi' ye, and yere joy be fu' and skailin ower.

12. "Here is my commaun—That ye lo'e ilk ither, e'en as I lo'ed you.

13. "Nae man has evir mair love than this—to lay doon his life for his freends.

14. "Noo ye are my freends, gin ye do my commauns.

15. "And frae this oot, I dinna ca' ye servants, for the servant kens-na what the maister dis: but I hae ca'd ye 'freends'; for a' that I hae heard frae my Faither I hae tell't you.

16. "Ye hae-na made wale o' me, but I hae made wale o' you, and made ye sterk; sae as ye soud gang and bring forth frute, and frute that sal bide: that a' things ye seek frae the Faither i' my name, he may gie ye.

17. "O' thir things I gie commaun—that ye lo'e ane anither.

¹ V. 6. Tak tent here, hoo oor frutefulness afore God a' depends on bein in Christ! Wantin him, oor best warks are but like the pitif' sproactin' o' the sinder't twig—sun to birsle up i' the sun!

18. "And gin the world be bitter again me, ye ken it hatit me first, afore you.

19. "Gin ye war o' the world's ain, the world wad lo'e its ain; but—for that ye are-na o' the world, but waled by me oot o' the world—sae the world has ill-wull t'ye.

20. "Keep mind o' the word I gied ye, 'The servant isna aboon the Maister!' Gin they hae persecutit me, they wull e'en persecute you; gin they mind my sayin, they wull mind yours.

21. "But a' sic things wull they do t'ye for sake o' my name, e'an for that they ken-na him wha sent me.

22. "And gin I hadnna come and spoken to them, this sin hadnna lain at their door: but noo they has nae hap for their sin!

23. "He wha ill-wulls me, ill-wulls my Faither as weel.

24. "Gin I hadnna dune i' their mids sic warks as nae ither man e'er did, this sin hadnna been their's; but noo hae they baith seen and ill-wulled me and my Faither.

25. "But the word is come to pass whilk is putten doon i' their Law. 'They ill-wulled me, wantin a cause!'

26. "But whan the Dear Freen' is come—him I send ye fras the Faither, the Spirit o' Truth, wha comes frae the Faither—e'en he sal gie witness o' me.

27. "And ye, as weel, sal gie witness; for that ye hae been wi' me fras the first."

CHAPTIR SAXTEEN.

Tenderness in sorrow. Many things to be said, but they war slow in the uptake. The end drawis on.

"THIR things has I tell't ye, that ye soudna stoiter, and be dazed.

2. "Ye sal be putten oot o' the Kirk: aye, the time is at haun that gin ony ane sheds yere blude, he wull fancy he sers God!

3. "And a' thas things wull they

do t'ye, for that they ha'e naither kent my Faither nor me.

4. "But I haes tellt ye thase things, sae whan the time comes, ye sal ca' to mind I tellt ye o' them. And thir things I gied-ye-na at the first, for I waa w'ye.

5. "But noo I gang my gate to him wha sent me; and nae o' ye speir at me, 'Whaur gang ye?'

6. "But, for that I haes said thir things t'ye yere hearts are fu' o' dool.

7. "Nathelless, I tell ye true; better for you that I gang awa; for till I gang awa, the Dear Freen' winna come t'ye; but gin I gang, him wull I send t'ye.

8. "And whan he is come he wull convince the 'wrold o' sin, and o' richtness, and o' judgment.

9. "O' sin—for they lippen-na on me.

10. "O' richtness—for I gang to the Faither, and ye see me nae mair.

11. "O' judgment—for this wrold's Prince is judged.

12. "Mony are the things I haes to say t'ye, but ye canna thole them noo.

13. "But whan he is come, the Spirit o' a' truth, he wull xirt ye intil a' the trnht: for he speaks-na o' his sel alienarlie; but what he hears he sal speak: and he sal open t'ye things no yet come.

14. "He sal glorify me: for he sal tak o' mine, and schaw to you.

15. "A' that the Faither has is mine; and aye said I, 'He sal tak o' mine, and schaw to yon.'

16. "A wee while, and ye see-me-na, and than again, a wee while, and ye sal see me—for I gang to the Faither."

17. Than amang their sels the disciples said, "What is't he says to us? 'A wee while, and ye see-me-

na; and than a wee while and ye sal see me?'" and, 'For I gang to the Faither!'

18. Saes they speir't. "What is't he says, 'A wee while?'" We canna ken what he says!"

19. Noo Jesus kent they war fain to speir at him; and said to them, "D'ye seek amang yersels to ken o' what I said, 'A wee while ye see-me-na, and than a wee while and ye sal see me?'

20. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, ye sal greet and maen, but the wrold sal be blythe; and ye sal ha'e dool, but yere dool sal come to be blytheness.

21. "A wumman in her bearing-panga has dool, for that her 'oor is on her; but as sune as she has borne the bairn, she minds nae mair the pang, for blytheness that a man is born intil the wrold.

22. "A' ye ha'e dool and sorrow e-noo; but I wull be w'ye again, and yere heart sal be blythe; and yere blytheness nae sal tak awa frae ye.

23. "And i' that day ye sal need to seek to me for nocht. Truly, truly say I t'ye, onything ye sal seek o' my Faither in my name, he wull gie ye.

24. "Till this time haes ye socht for ² naething in my name: seek, and ye sal ha'e; that ye may haes rowth o' joy.

25. "Thir things haes I gien ye, as it war, in parables; but the time is at haun that I speak nae mair to ye in parables, but sal schaw ye plainly o' the Faither.

26. "Than sal ye seek in my name; and I say-na I wull pray to the Faither for ye—

27. "For the Faither his ain sel lo'es ye, for that ye haes lo'ed me, and haes lippened that I cam oot frae God.

¹V. 8. Tak ye tent here, hoo the Spirit labors wi' every man i' the wrold! Nae aye can say, "The Spirit nevir spak to me;" nae mair than a man can say, "Jesus didna dee for me!"

²V. 24. Hoo dour to learn that it was throwe him they were to look for a' things! Kitirhans, they, nae mair nor oorsels, ever thocht o' askin for oay-thing, unless throwe him!

28. "I cam frae the Faither, and am come to the warld; again, I lea' the warld, and gang to the Faither."

29. Quo' the disciples to him, "Aye, noo ye speak to us plain, and divna speak to us in parables!"

30. "Noo see we weel that ye ken a' things, and need-na ony ane to speir at ye: by this token we ken ye cam forth frae God!"

31. Jesus answer't, "Dae ye noo believe?"

32. "Tak tent! the 'oor is at baun—aye, is e'en noo here—that ye sal be a' skailt, ilka man awa to his ain, and sal lea' me alano: and yet I am ne'er alano, for the Faither is aye wi' me."

33. "But thir things hac I said t'ye, that ye nicht has peace. I' the warld ye has dool and sorrow eneuch; but blythely haud yersels; I hac grippit the warld, and putten it doon."

CHAPTIR SEEVENTEEN.

The prayer to tak wi' us when we wad prevail. O to be aye wi' him, as he wad hae us!

SAE spak Jesus, and than liftit up his een aboon, and said, "Faither, the 'oor is here! Glorify thy Son, sae that thy Son soud e'en glorify thee;

2. "E'en as thou hast gien him authoritie ower a' leevin, that he nicht gie Life-for-Aye till as mony as thou hast gien him.

3. "And here is Life-for-Aye, that they soud ken thee, wha art the true God aboon, and Jesus the Christ, sent by thee.

4. "Thee has I glorify't on the yirth; I hac wrocht the wark thou gied me to do.

5. "And noo, O my Faither! glorify me Aboon wi' thyself, e'en wi' the glorie I bure wi' thee afore a' warlds!"

6. "I hac schawn forth thy name to the men thou did gie me oot frae the warld: they war thine, and o'

thine ain thou did gie me: and they haes keepit thy word.

7. "And they haes come to ken that a' things thou hast gien me are o' thyself.

8. "For I haes gien them the words thou gied me; and they haes taen them ben to them, and stickeely ken that I cam forth frae thee; and they haes happened that thou sent me.

9. "For them I pray; no for the warld, but for them thou giest me; for they are thy ain.

10. "And a' things mine are thine; and a' things thine are mine; and I in them am glorify't!

11. "And now I am nae mair i' the warld; I come ben to thee! but thir hide i' the warld. Faither aye holie! keep by thy ain name's nicht a' thou g'eat me, that they may be ane, e'en as we are ane!"

12. "The time I was wi' them i' the warld, I keepit them i' thy name; thae thou gied me I keepit, and name o' them is tint, saviu only the son o' the pit: that the Scripture nicht be carry't oot.

13. "And noo, hame to thee come I! And a' thir things I speak i' the warld, sae as my joy nicht come to pass in them.

14. "Tby word has I gien them; and the warld has ill-willed them, for that they ¹arena o' the world's ain: e'en as I am-na o' the world's ain.

15. "I pray na they soud be taen oot o' the warld, but that thou keep them fras the ill o't.

16. "For they are-na o' the warld's ain, e'en as I am-na o' the world's ain.

17. "Consecrate them throws thy truth; thy word is truth.

18. "As thou did pit me until the warld, e'en sae has I putten them until the warld.

19. "And for them I consecrate

¹ V. 14. The world has aye ill-willed and despised thae that warna like itsel! To be misca'd by the world, is gey aften a token o' grace.

myself, that eke they soud be consecrate i' the truth.

20. "Noo for thir, allenarlie, dae I pray; but eke for them wha sal lippen me throwe their tellin.

21. "That a' they may be aye; e'en as thou, Faither, in me, and I in them, that they may be aye in us; sae as the wold may ken that thou sent me.

22. "And the glorie thou gied me, I hae e'en gion them; sae as they may iodeed be aye, e'en as we are but aye.

23. "I in them, and thou in me; that they may be perfets in aye; and that a' the wold may ken that thou sent me, and has love to them, e'en as thou hast love to me.

24. "Faither, I wad mair, that they wham thou gies me, soud be wi' me whaur I bide; that they may set een on my glorie whilk thou has gien me; for thou lo'ed me 'or the fundation o' the yirth.

25. "O Faither o' a' Richt! the wold hasna kent thee; but I hae kent thee; and thir hae come to ken that thou sent me oot.

26. "And I has deponed to them thy word, and wull depone; sae as the love—e'en like sic as thou has for me—may be within them, and I myself within them."

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.

Betrayed by Judas; disowned by Peter; and forsaken o' the lave. Jesus, strung in his ain innocence, stands afore Pilate.

THIR things hain said, Jesus gaed oot wi' his disciples, ower the burn Kedron, whaur was a gairden, intil whilk he enter't, wi' his disciples.

2. But Judas as weel, wha was betrayin him, kent the place; for Jesus ast forgather't thar wi' his disciples.

3. Sae Judas, ha'ing a band o' men gien to him, wi' officers frae mang the Heigh-priests and Pharisees, comes yonder, wi' bowets and wapins.

4. But Jesus, kennin a' things that soud come to him, gangs forrit and says to them, "Wham seek ye?"

5. They answer't him, "Jesus, the Nazarene." He says to them, "I am he!" Noo, Judas, wha was betrayin him, stude amang them.

6. Whan, than, he had said to them, "I am he!" they stoiter't backlin, and fell to the grun.

7. Than again he speir't at them, "Wham seek ye?" And they said, "Jesus the Nazarena."

8. Jesus answer't, "I hae tauld ye I am he; gin tharfor ye seek me, lat thir gang their ways."

9. That the word nicht come to pae whilk he said, "Thas thou gied me I hae keepit, and nane o' them is tint."

10. Simon Peter, ha'ing than a sword, drew it, and strack the Heigh-priest's servin-man, and sned aff his richt lug. The servin-man's name was Malchus.

11. Than cry't Jesus to Peter, "Sheath the sword! The cup my Faither has gien me, sal I no drink it?"

12. Than the band, and the Captain, and the officers o' the Jews, grippit Jesus, and bund him;

13. And cairry't him to Annas at first, for he was guide-faither to Caiphas, wha was Heigh-priest that year.

14. Noo it was Caiphas wha gied coonseal to the Jews, that it was profitable that aye soud dee for the lave o' the nation.

15. Noo Simon Peter and the ither disciple war followin Jesus; that disciple was kent o' the Heigh-priest, and gaed in wi' Jesus intil the Coort o' the Heigh-priest.

16. But Peter was at the door, oot by. Than gaed oot the ither disciple, and spak to the porteraas, and brocht in Peter.

17. Than said the maid (the porteraas) to Peter, "Are ye, too, o' this man's disciples?" Quo' Peter, "I am no!"

18. And the servin-men and officers stude thar, ha' in made an ingle wi' coals, for it was cauld; and they warmed their sels; and Peter, as weel, was wi' them, and stude and warmed his sel.

19. The Heigh-priest than speir't at Jesus, anent his disciples, and anent his teachin.

20. Jesus answer't him, "Wi' a' plainness o' speech I spak to the world. I was aye teachin i' the kirk and i' the temple, whaur a' the folk aye gang; and hidlins I ha'e said naething.

21. "Why dae ye speir at me? Speir at thee that heard me, what I tell't them? They a' ksn what I said!"

23. And syne whan he had sae said, ane o' the officers staunin by, gied Jesus a daud wi' his loof, sayin, "Dae ye answer aee the Heigh-priest?"

23. Jesus answer't to him, "Gin I ha'e said ill, bear ye witness o' the ill; but if no, why dae ye elour me?"

24. Noo Annas sent him hurn' to Caiaphas the Heigh-priest.

25. But Simon Peter stood warmin bis sel. They said to him, "Are-na ye ane o' his disciples?" He denied, sayin, "I am no!"

26. Ane o' the Heigh-priest's servants, a freend o' him whase lug Peter sned aff, says, "Did I no see ye i' the gairden wi' him?"

27. Than Peter denied again; and at ance the cock craw'd.

28. Than took they Jesus frae Caiaphas intil the Judgment-ha'; and it was early: and they their sels gaed-na intil the Judgment-ha', that they soudna be defiled—sae as they could eat the Pasche.

29. Pilate then gaed oot to them, and says, "What dae ye wyte this man wi'?"

30. They answer't, and quo' they, "Gin he war-na an ill-doer, we wad-na ha'e ¹ gien him ower to ye."

31. Than quo' Pilate to them, "Ye yeresels tak him, and try him conform to yere law." But quo' the Jews to him, "We hae nae pouer to pit ony man to deid!"

32. That Jesus' ain sayin nicht come to pass whilk he spak, zettin forth whatna death he soud dea.

33. Than Pilate gaed intil the Judgment ha' again, and ca'd Jesus, and quo' he to him, "Are ye the King o' the Jews?"

34. Jesus answer't, "Say ye this o' yere ain sel, or did ither tell ye me?"

35. Quo' Pilate, "Am I a Jew? Yere ain folk and the Heigh-priests ha'e gien ye up to me: what haes ye done?"

36. Jesus answer't, "My Kingdom isna o' this world: gin my Kingdom was o' this world, my servants wad fecht, that I soudna be gien up to the Jews: but noo is my Kingdom no frae here!"

37. Quo' Pilate to him, "Are ye a King, than?" Jesus anewer't, "Ye weel say I am a King. For this end was I born, and for this end cam I to the world, to gie witness o' the truth. Ilka ane wba is o' the Truth hears my voice."

38. Pilate says to him, "What is Truth?" And whan he had sae said he gaed oot again to the Jews, and quo' he to them, "I find nae fault in him!"

39. "But ye haes a way o' haesin ane lowseed at ilka Pasche; sae wull ye that I lowse for ye 'The King o' the Jews'?"

40. But they a' eryt oot again, sayin, "No this man, but Barabbas!" Noo Barabbas was a reiver.

V. 30. This trokin atween the Kirk and the Civil pouer, has been often dunes ane syne; the kirkmen condemnin, and the statesman slayin: baith guilty o' innocent blude! Jesus didna seem to ha'e a freend that daur speak up for him.

CHAPTIR NINETEEN.

*His croon the thorns ; his thron the cross ;
his couch the tomb—but none the less a
King ! A when weel-wishers come
forrit.*

THAN Pilate took Jesus, and had
him scourged.

2. And the sodgers wrocht a croon
oot o' thorna, to pit on his heid ; and
they cleedit him in a purple robe.

3. And quo' they, "Hail, King o'
the Jews ! " And they daudit him
wi' their haunes.

4. Sae Pilate gangs forth again,
and quo' he to them, "Look, I feash
him forth t'ye, eae as ye may ken I
find nae fault in him ! "

5. Than Jesus cam forth, wearin
the croon o' thorna, and the purple
robe. And Pilate cry't to them,
"Look at the man ! "

6. Whan the Heigh-priests and the
officers saw him, they cry't oot,
"Crucify ! Crucify ! " Pilate says
to them, "Tak ye him to crucify ;
for I find nae fault in him ! "

7. The Jews answer't, "We hae
oor ain law, and aneath oor law he
soud dee, for that he makes his sel
God's Son ! "

8. Whan Pilate heard that sayin,
he was a' the mair fley't.

9. And gaed again intil the Judg-
ment ha', and says to Jesus, "Whaur
are ye frae ? " But Jesus answer't
him-na.

10. Than quo' Pilate to him, "Dae
ye no speak tae me ? Dae ye no ken
I has pouer to crucify ye, and pouer
to lat ye gang ? "

11. Jesus answer't, "Ye coud has
nae pouer ava again me, gin it warna
gien ye frae Aboon : sae be wha
deliver't me to ye has the chief sin."

12. And frae that oot, Pilate wad
fain lowned him ; but the Jews cry't
oot, "Gin ye lat this man gang, ye
arena Cesar's freend ; ilka ane that
mak oot his sel a king, speaks contrar
to Cesar ! "

13. When Pilate heard that, he
brocht Jesus forth, and sat his sel

doon in the Judgment-seat, in a place
ca'd "The Plainstanes," but i' the
Hebrew, "Gabbatha."

14. And it was the preparation-
day o' the Pasche, and aboot the ¹
saxt 'oor o' the day ; and quo' he to
the Jews, "Look at yere King ! "

15. But they cry't oot, "Awa, awa
wi' him ! Crucify him ! " Quo' Pilate
to them, "Wad I crucify yere King ? "
The Heigh-priests reply't, "We hae
nae King but Cesar ! "

16. Than he gied him up to them
to be crucify't. And they took Jesus,
and led him awa.

17. And he, cairryin his cross, gaed
forth intil a place ca'd "The Skull,"
whilk same is ca'd i' the Hebrew,
"Golgotha"—

18. Whaur they crucify't him ;
and wi' him ither twa, here and
yonder, and Jesus atween.

19. And forby, Pilate wraite a title,
and pat it on the cross. Noo that
was putten on't, "Jesus the Nazar-
ene, the King o' the Jews."

20. And it was sae that a hantle
o' the Jews read this title ; for the
bit whaur Jesus was crucify't was
nar-haun the citie ; and it was
written i' the Hebrew, and eke i' the
Latin and Greek.

21. Than quo' the Heigh-priests o'
the Jews to Pilate, "Dinna write
'King o' the Jews,' but 'He said,
'I'm King o' the Jews ! ' "

22. Pilate answer't, "What I hae
written, I hae written ! "

23. Than the sodgers, whan they
had crucify't Jesus, took his cleedin,
and made it a' intil fourt pairts, to
ilka ane, ane—and his inner coat as
weel. Noo the inner coat was
wantin ony seam ; a' wrocht in' as
piece frae the tap doon.

24. They said ane till anither,

¹V. 14. The feck o' the MSS. say "saxt" ;
a wee wheen o' them only, say "third." But we canna help thinkin it was nine
o'clock o' our time, and that a wee bit
error has cruppen intil the text. See the
ither Evangelista.

"Let us no rive it, but cast lots for't, whase it sal be!" Sae was fulfilled the Scriptur, that said, "They pairt my garments for theirsela, and on my cleedin caist they lota." Thae vera things the sodgers did.

25. But staunin by the cross o' Jesus war his mither, and his mither's sister, Mary (sae o' Cleophas), and Mary o' Magdala.

26. Sae whan Jesus saw his mither, and the disciple wham he lo'ed staunin hy, he says to the mither, "Wumman, see yere son!"

27. Again, he says to the disciple, "See! yere mither!" And frae that oor the disciple took her to his ain hoose.

28. Eftir this, Jesus, kennin that a' things war noo endit, that the Scriptur might be dune, said, "I hae drouth!"

29. A cog was thar, fu' o' soor wine; and they dippit a sponge in't, and pat it on a wand o' hyssop, and brocht it to his mou'.

30. Whan Jesus had gotten the soor wine, he cry't, "It is done!" and loutin doon his heid, gied up his spirit.

31. Than the Jews—seein it was the Preparation—that the bodies soudna bide on the crosses ower the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a great day), craved Pilate to hae their legs broken, and they be taen doon.

32. Than cam the sodgers; and brak the legs o' the first, and o' the ither, wha war crucify't wi' him.

33. But whan they cam to Jesus, and they coud see he was e'en noo deid, they brak-na his legs.

34. But ane o' the sodgers, wi' a spear, proddit his side, and oot o' cam blude¹ and watir.

¹ V. 34. Gin the pericardium was fu' o' clottit blude and watir, the heart maun hae been burs'n. And gin he dee'st o' a literal broken heart, and no the ordinary lingerin death o' the crucifixion, gut-he-na his prayer aboot the "cup passin frae him"? (Mark xiv. 36, and note); and "fell-he-na intil the hauns o' the Lord, and no intil the hauns o' men"? (II. Sam. xxiv. 14).

35. And he wha beheld it, has gien witness; and his witness is truth; that ye might believe.

36. For thae things cam aboot that the Scriptur soud be fulfill't, "No a bane o' his sal be broken!"

37. And ance mair, anither Scriptur, "They sal look on him they hae pierced!"

38. And efter thir things, Joseph o' Arimathea (bimesel a disciple o' Jesus), craved Pilate that he might tak awa Jesus' body; and Pilate loot him sae dae. Syne he cam, and took awa the corp.

39. And eke cam Nicodemus (he wha at the first cam to him by nicht), bringin a hantle o' myrr and aloes, throwe-ither; aboot a hunner-wecht.

40. Sae they took the body o' Jesus, and row't it i' the linen wi' the spices; as is the manner o' the Jews wi' the deid.

41. Noo at the bit whaur he was crucify't was a gairden; and i' the gairden a new-made tomb, in whilk man was ne'er yet laid.

42. Thar, than, laid they Jesus, on account o' the Preparation o' the Jews; for the tomb was nar-by.

CHAPTIR TWENTY.

"Joy comes i' the mornin!" Mary Magdalene, Peter, and Tammes; but Tammes was dour aboot believin.

BUT on the first day o' the week, Mary o' Magdala comes ear—for it was yet mirk—to the tomb; and she sees the stane taen awa frae the tomb.

3. Than she rins, and gaes to Simon Peter, and to the ither disciple wham Jesus lo'ed, and says to them, "They hae ta'en awa my Lord oot o' the tomb, and we kenna whaur they hae laid him!"

3. Sae Peter gaed oot, and the ither disciple, to gang to the tomb.

4. And they ran baith thegither; and the ither ane ootran Peter, and cam first to the tomb,

5. And he, loutin doon, saw the linen claihths lyin ; but he gaed-na in.

6. Than Peter comes, stir him, and gaed intil the tomb, and saw the linen claihths lyin ;

7. And the napkin that was row't about his heid, no lyin wi' the linen claihths, but row't up in a place by itsel.

8. And than gaed in the ither disciple wha cam first to the tomb ; and he saw, and believ't.

9. For till noo they kent-na the Scriptur, that he soud rise frac 'mang the deid.

10. The disciples than gaed awa again to their ain hame.

11. But Mary stood oot-by, at the tomb, and ¹greetin ; and as she grat, she loutit doon, and peert intil the tomb.

12. And saw twa Angels in white, sittin, ane at the heid, and the tither at the fit, whaur the corp o' Jesus had been laid.

13. And they say to her, "Wum-man, why greetin sae ?" She says to them, "For that they has taen awa my Lord, and I kenna whaur they has laid him !"

14. Sayin this, she turned aboot, and saw Jesus staunin, and kent-na that it was Jesus.

15. Jesus speak to her, "Wum-man, why greetin sae ? Wham dae ye seek ?" She, takin him to be the gairdener, says to him, "Sir, gin ye has cairry't him awa, tell me whaur ye has laid him, and I'll tak him awa."

16. Jesus says to her, "Mary !" She turned hersel, and cries oot, "Rabboni !" as muckle as to say, "Maister !"

17. Jesus says to her, "Stay-me-na ! for I am-na yet gans up to the Faither ; but gang ye to my brethren, and tell them, 'I gang up to my Faither and yere Faither, and to my God and yere God !'"

¹V. 11. Like a rainbow throws the rain. Mary saw in her tears what Peter and John saw-na wi' plain vision !

18. Mary Magdalene cam and tell't the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had said thir things to her.

19. Than, the same day at e'en—the first day o' the week—whan the doors war ²steikit whar they war gaither't, for dreid o' the Jews, cam Jesus, and stude i' the mids, and said to them, "Peace be t'ye !"

20. And whan he had said this, he schawed them his hauns and his side. Than the disciples rejoiced, seein the Lord.

21. Than said Jesus to them again, "Peace be t'ye ! As the Faither has sent me, e'en sae send I you !"

22. And whan he had sae said, he breathed-oot on them, and says to them, "Receive ye the Halie Spirit !

23. "Whase sins ye forgie, they sal be forgi'en to them ; and whase sins ye retain, they are retained to them."

24. But Tammas, ane o' the Twal, the ane ca'd "The Twin," wasna wi' them whan Jesus cam.

25. The ither disciples than said to him, "We has seen the Lord !" But he said to them, "Gin I see-na in his hauns the prent o' the nails, and gin I pit-na my fing'er intil his side, I canna believe !"

26. And stir an aucht-days again, his disciples war in, and Tammas wi' them, Jesus comes—the doors being steikit—and stude i' the mids, and says, "Peace be t'ye !"

27. Than says he to Tammas, "Rax oot yere finger, and see my hauns ; and rax here yere haun, and pit it intil my side ; and be-na dootin, but believin !"

28. And Tammas, answerin, said to him, "My Lord ! and my God !"

²V. 19. Here, and v. 26, the doors war steikit, yet Jesus comes ben. Profane wits has demandit "Hoo cam he in ? throwe the key-hole ?" He wha made a' things, winna be barred-oot by a door ! He cam and gaed as he wad ; and mortal een warnt aye permittit to see hoo.

29. Jesus says to him, "Tammes! for that ye haes seen me, ye believe; happy they wha haena seen me, and yet believe!"

30. And mony ither ferlies maist truly did Jesus afore his disciples, whilk arena putten doon i' this buik.

31. But thir are putten doon, that ye soud believe that Jesus is the Christ; and believin, ye might haes life in his name.

they see an ingle o' coals thar, and fish ower it; and breid.

10. Jesus says to them, "Bring some o' the fish ye haes noo ta'en!"

11. Simon Peter gaed up, and fecht the net to lan', fu' o' muckle fish, a hunner and fifty-thrie; and yet for a' they war mony, the net wasna riven.

12. Jesus says to them, "Come awa and eat!" And no ane o' them ventur't to speir at him, "Wha are ye?" kennin it was the Lord.

13. Jesus comes, and takes the breid, and gies them; and the fish as weel.

14. This is e'en the third time Jesus shawed his sel to his disciples, aftir he was risen frae the deid.

15. Sae whan they had eaten, Jesus says to Simon Peter, "Simon, son o' John! Love ye mair than thir do?" He says to him, "Aye, Lord! thou kens I treasur thee!" He says to him, "Feed my wee lambs!"

16. He says to him again, a second time, "Simon, son o' John! Love ye me!" He says to him, "Aye, Lord! thou kens I treasur thee!" He says to him, "Herd my sheep!"

17. He says to him the third time, "Simon, son o' John! treasur ye me me!" Peter was wae that he said to him the third time, "Treasur ye me!" And he said to him, "Lord! thou kens a' things; thou weel kens I treasur thee!" Jesus says to him, "Feed my pair sheep!"

18. "Truly, truly say I t'ye, Whan ye war young, ye girt yersel, and stappit oot whaur ye wad; but whan ye sal be auld, ye sal rax oot yersel, and another sal gird ye, and carry ye whaur ye wad-na."

19. Thus spak he, to signify by whatna ¹ death he soud glorify God.

1 V. 19. John, it is maist like, wrate his Gospel aftir Peter's deid; and the tale o' his crucifixion that has come doon to us, may be fecklie true; it evens weel wi' verse 18.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.

Peter, Tammes, and a whilk moir, at the Loch o' Tiberias. Jesus eats meat wi' them; and sees Peter richt again.

EFFIR thir things, Jesus schawed his sel again to the disciples at the Loch o' Tiberias; and he schawed his sel thus:—

2. Thar war thegither Simon Peter, and Tammes, ca'd "The Twin," and Nathaniel o' Galilee-Cana, and they o' Zebedee, and twa ither o' the disciples.

3. Simon Peter says to them, "I gang to the fishin!" Quo' they to him, "We, too, gang wy'e!" They gaed oot, and enter't intil the boat; and that night they tuik naething.

4. But whan the morn was dawin, Jesus stood on the strand; but his disciples keant-na that it was Jesus.

5. Than said Jesus to them, "Bairns, haes ye aiblins ocht to eat?" They answer't him "Na!"

6. He said to them, "Cast ye the net on the richt side o' the boat, and ye sal fin'!" Sae they cuist, and noo they coudna draw't for the rowth o' fish.

7. Noo that disciple wham Jesus lo'ed says to Peter, "It is the Lord!" As sune as Peter heard it was the Lord, he bund his coat aboot him—for he was strippit—and cuist his sel intil the sea.

8. And the ither disciples cam wi' the wee boat (for they warna far frae lan', but some fifty faddoms aff), trailin the net o' fish.

9. As sune as they cam to the lan'

And when he had said this, he says to him, "Follow ye me!"

20. Peter, turnin about, sees the disciple whom Jesus lo'ed followin, the ane wha leant again his breast at supper, and said, "Lord! wha is't that betrays thee?"

21. Peter, seein him, says to Jesus, "Lord! and this man, what o' him?"

22. Jesus says to him, "Gin I wull that he wait till I come, what is't to you? Ye follow me!"

23. This sayin than gaed oot amang the brethren, that that dis-

ciple wasna to dee. But Jesus said na, "He canna dee!" but "Gin I wull that he wait till I come, what is't to you?"

24. This is the disciple that testifies o' thir things, and penned thir things, and we ken that his testimony is true.

25. And mony ither things are thar that Jesus did; see that gin aiblins they war to be penned every ane, I tak it that e'en the world itsel wadna haud the buiks that wad needs be penned.

ACTS.

CHAPTR ANE.

Luke dedicatrs a second buik to his friend. Peter and the lave wad pit aue in Judas' place.

THE first historie I made, O Theophilus, anent a' that Jesns begude baith to do and to teach,

2. Till whatna day he was taen up, aftir that he had by the Holie Spirit gien commauns to the Apostles he had waled oot;

3. And to wham he schawed his sal leevin aftir his sufferans, by mony sure and certain tokene, appearin to them throwe forty days, and speakin o' the things anent the kingdom o' God.

4. And companyin wi' them, chaiged them no to gang awa frae Jerusalem, but to bide for the promise o' the Faither, "Whilk," quo' he, "ye haes heard o' me.

5. "For in sooth John bapteez't wi' watir, but ye sal be bapteez't in Holie Spirit no mony days frae noo!"

6. And sae they, whan they cam thegither, speir't at him, "Lord, do thou at this time bring back the kingdom to Isra'el?"

7. And he said to them, "It isna for you to ken times and seasons, whilk the Faither has keepit in his ain haun.

8. "But ye sal haes strenth, aftir the Holie Spirit is come to ye; and ye sal be witnessees for me baith in Jerusalem, and in a' Judea and Samaria, and to the far-awa' ends o' the yirth."

9. And whan he had said thir things, while they war lookin on, he was liftit up; and a clud happit him oot o' their sicht.

10. And while they lookit, peerin intil the heevens, as he gaed up, twa men stude by them in white cloedlin;

11. Wha said, "Ye men frae Galilee! why stann ye peerin intil the lift? The same Jesus, wha has been ta'en frae you intil Heeven, sal come in like manner as ye haes seen him gang intil Heeven."

12. Than to Jerusalem they returned frae the Mount Olivet, whilk is nar-haun Jerusalem—a Sabbath-day's journey aff.

13. And whan they enter't, they gaed up intil the laft, whaur they bade; baith Peter, and John, and James, and Andro, Philip and Tammes, Bartholomie and Matthew, James (he o' Alpheus), and Simon the Zealot, and Judas o' Jamea.

14. Thae a' bade wi' ae mind in prayer; wi' certain weemen; and Mary, Jesus' mither, and wi' his brithers.

15. And i' thae days stude Petar up i' the mids o' the brethran, and said (thar war a hantle o' folk thegither—about sax score),

16. "Man, brethran! the Scriptur needit to be brocht to pass, whilk the Holie Spirit i' Daavid spak afore, anent Judas, wha airtit thae that grippit Jesus.

17. "For he was countit wi' us, and had gien to him a pairt in this service.

18. ("Noo this ane gaither't to him a field oot o' the reward o' iniquity; and fa'in heidlang, he brak throwe i' the mids, and a' his inwards teemed oot.

19. "And it was kent till a' the folk o' Jerusalem; sae that yon field they ca'd 'Aceldama,' or The Field o' Blude.)

20. "For it is putten doon i' the buik o' the Psalms, 'Lat his dwallin be desolate, and nae man bide tharin; and his overseein lat anither ane tak.'

21. "Sae, oot o' the men wha ¹ haes cuisten in their lot wi' us, a' the days the Lord Jesus was ower us—gaun in and oot—

22. "Beginnin at the Baptizin o' John, to the day he was taen up frae us, aye o' thae bude be a witness wi' us o' his Risin."

23. And they pat twa forrit; Joseph, ca'd Barsabas, and wha was forenamed "Justus"—and Matthias.

24. And prayin, they said, "Lord, thou wha kens the hearts o' a', lat it be kent whilk aye o' thir twa thou doest wale oot,

25. "To tak the place in this service and apostleship, frae whilk Judas gaed agley, that he micht gang to his ain place."

26. And they gied oot their lots for them; and the fa' was for Matthias; and he was coontit in aye wi' the Eleven.

CHAPTIR TWA.

The wondrous day o' Pentecost. A' folk hear the word i' their ain tongue. Many brecks is; and they a' bide thergither in loove.

AND whan the day o' Pentecost was come aboot, they were a' thegither iu as place.

2. And a' of a suddent cam the sough o' a mighty rushin wun', and it filled a' the place whaur they sat;

3. And that was seen amang them like dividit tongues o' fire, on ilka aye o' them.

4. And they war a' fu' o' the Holie Spirit, and spak wi' ither tongues, as the Spirit gied them words.

5. Noo that war bidin at Jerusalem gude men oot o' a' kintrics 'neath the skies.

6. And whan the songh o' this gat oot, the thrang cam a' thegither, and

kant-na what to think, whan they heard them speak, ilka man in his ain tongue.

7. And they war eair amazed, and ferlied, sayin, "Arenae a' thae that speak folk o' Galilee?

8. "And hoo is't we hear ilk in oor ain tongue in whilk we war born?"

9. "Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the folk wha bide in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia,

10. "In Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and frae Lybia aboot Cyrene, and visitors frae Rome, and eke Jews, and proselytes,

11. "Cretans and Arabians—we hear them speakin in oor ain tongues o' God's wunner-warks!"

12. And they war a' amazed, and in a swither, sayin aye to anither, "What mann a' this be?"

13. But some, jeerin, said, "Thir men has been made fu' wi' new wine!"

14. But Peter, staunin up, wi' the Eleven, lift up his voice, and quo' be, "Men, Jews! and a' ye wha dwall at Jerusalem! be this kent t'ye a': and gie ye hearin to my words!

15. "For thir arena drucken, as ye jalouse, it bein but nine o'clock.

16. "But this is what was spoken by Joel the prophet:

17. "'And it sal be i' the hinner-maist days, says God, I teem oot my Spirit on a' flesh; and yere sons and yere dochters sal prophesie, and yere young men sal see visions, and yere auld men sal dream their dreama.

18. "'And e'en on my servitors and my handmaids i' thae days sal I teem oot o' my Spirit; and they sal prophesie.

19. "'And I sal gie ferlies i' the lift aboon, and tokens i' the yirth under; blude and fire-flauchs, and blindin reek.

¹ V. 21. This gars us see that was a hantle o' followers and weel-wishers farby the Twal! Folk whilk mak the mistak o' Elijah, thinkin that are few or nae o' the godly to the fore (I. Kings, xix. 10).

² V. 4. Jesus promis't that whan he gaed awa hame, he wad send them the Holie Spirit. And noo they wad ken the Maister had gotten his aic, and was safe at hame, whan the promise cam!

20. "'The sun sal turn to mirkness, and the mune to blude, afore the comin o' the day o' the Lord—the great and notable day !

21. "'And it sal be, that ilka ane wha sal ca' on the name o' the Lord sal be saved !'

22. "Ye men o' Israal ! hear thir words ! Jesus the Nazarene, a man suttent apart amang ye by wunner-warks, and ferlies and tokens, whilk God wrocht by him amang ye ; as ye ken yer sels,

23. "Him, bein (i' the marked-oot coonsel and fore-kennin o' God) deliver't up, ye by the hauns o' lawless anes has crucify't and slain.

24. "Wham God raised up, lowsin the stoun's o' death ; for it couldna be possible he soud be handen o't.

25. "For Dauvid spak anent him : 'I saw the Lord, aye forment me ; for he is at my richt haun that I soudna trimle :

26. "'Sae was my heart blythe, and my tongue rejoic't ; aye, and mair, my flesh sal eke hide in hope :

27. "'For thou winna desert my saul i' the place o' spirita, nor will thou gie thy Holie Ane to see corruption.

28. "'Thou did mak me to ken the paths o' life ; thou shalt mak me fu' o' joy i' thy presence.'

29. "Men ! Brethren ! may I no speak freely tye o' the patriarch Dauvid, that he, his sel, baith dee't and was bury't, and his tomb is amang us to this day ?

30. "But bein a prophet, and kennin that God had sworn wi' an aith to him, that amang his bairns Ane soud sit on his thron ;

31. "He, forseein this, spak o' the Risin-Again o' Christ ; that naither his anel was desertit i' the place o' spirita, nor his flesh saw corruption.

32. "This Jesus has God raised up ; and we are a' witnesses o'k.

33. "Sae, bein by God's richt haun up-liftit, and winnin frae the Father the promise o' the Holie Spirit, he

has shed forth this whilk ye noo see and hear.

34. "For Dauvid ascendit-na intil the Heevens ; but his sel said, 'The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou at my richt haun,

35. "'Till I mak a fit-brod o' thy faes !'

36. "Noo than, lat a' Israel's hooseken for a certaintie, that God has made him baith Maister and Anointit —this Jesus, wham ye crucify't."

37. And whan they heard this, they war struck to the heart, and said to Peter and the lave o' the Apostles, "Men ! Brethren ! what are we to do ?"

38. And Peter said, "Repent ye, and be baptize't i' the name o' Jesus Christ—for the pittin-awa' o' yere sins ; and ye sal win the gift o' the Holie Spirit.

39. "For the promise is to you, and your bairns, and to a' thae far-awa ; e'en to as mony as the Lord oor God may ca' to him."

40. And wi' mony mair words testify't he, sayin, "Deliver yersels frae this thrawart generation !"

41. Than they that welcomed his word till them war baptize'nt ; and that day war addit aboot three thousand saula.

42. And they bade steive i' the teachin' o' the Apostles, and in fellowship, in the breckin o' bread, and i' the prayers.

43. And fear fell on ilka ane ; and mony war the wunner-warks and tokens throwe the Apostles.

44. And a' the believin anes war the gither, and had a' things throwe-ither.

45. And they sell't their mailine and baddins, and portioned a' oot, as ony ane had need.

46. And day by day, bidin aye the gither i' the Temple, and breckin breid frae hoose to hoose they did tak their meat wi' blythe and aefauld hearts ;

47. Landin God, and haein gude-will o' a' the folk. And the Lord addit daily o' the saved.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

The lameter at the "Bonnie" yett. The fearless preachin o' Peter. Nae mair denials noo.

NOO Peter and John war gau into the Temple for the 'oor o' prayer: thrie o'clock.

2. And a lameter, feckless fras his mither's womb, was e'en noo carryt; wham they set doon daily at the yett that is ca'd "Bonnie"; to seek awmons fras thae gau into the Temple;

3. Wha, seein Peter and John gau forrit to the Temple, socht fras them an awmons.

4. And Peter, settin his een on him—and sae did John—said to him, "Look ye on us!"

5. But he was mindin them, as lookin for something fras them.

6. Than Peter said, "Siller-and-gowd bide-na wi' me; but what I hae gie I t'ye! In the name o' Jesus Christ o' Nazareth, rise ye, and gang!"

7. And he took him by the richt haun, and strauchtit him up; and strenth com intil his feet and cuibanes.

8. And lowpin up, he stude, and gaed. And he gaed wi' them intil the Temple; gangin, and lowpin, and gien praise to God.

9. And a' the folk saw him, gangin, and laudin God.

10. And they saw and kent that it was he that sat at the "Bonnie" yett o' the Temple; and they war a' fu' o' wunner and misdoot at what had befaun him.

11. And as the lameter that was made hale grippit Peter and John, a' the folk panged thegither aboot them in the porch ca'd "Solomon's Porch," unco fu' o' wunner.

12. And whan Peter saw this, he speak: "Ye man o' Isra'! whaurfor ferlie ye at this man! or glower aye at us as gin by some pocer or holiness o' oor ain we had gar't this man to gang!"

13. "The God o' Abra'm, o' Isaac, and o' Jacob, the God o' oor faithers, has glorifyt his Son Jesus; wham ye gied up, and disowned him forneint Pilate's face, when he was mindit to assaillzie him.

14. "But ye disowned the Holie and the Richtous, and socht for a favor a murderer to be gien t'ye.

15. "And slew him wha brocht Life! wham God has raised fras the deid; o' the whilk we are witnesses.

16. "And by lippenin on his name, has his name gar't this man to haes strenth, wham ye see and ken: aye, e'en this lealness that comes by him, has gien this perfete soondness for next ye a'.

17. "And noo, brethren! I wat that throwe want o' wit ye did it—as e'en yere rulers.

18. "But the things that God schawed afore-hann, throwe the mou' o' a' the propheta, that the Anointit Ane soud dree, has he sae brocht to be.

19. "And noo, repent ye, and turn again, that a' yere ill deeds may be scored oot; sae as times o' refreshin may come fras afore the face o' the Lord!

20. "And that he may send Christ Jesus, wha before was gien t'ye.

21. "Wham the Heeven mauns welcome, to the time o' restorin o' a' things, o' whilk God has spoken by the mooth o' a' the holie propheta that hae been sin' the wold beguda.

22. "For Moses¹ said, 'A Prophet sal the Lord God raise up to ye fras mang yere brethren, like me; him sal ye bear, whatae'er he may say t'ye.'

23. "'And sae it sal be, that every saul that winna hear that Prophet, sal be cuttit-aff fras 'mang the folk.'

¹ v. 22. Tant ye, hoo aye maun aye staun on the same ground as anither, before he can convince him! Noo, they baith held to Moses and the propheta; "and," quo' Peter, "they a' speak o' Jesus!" And a hantie o' them lippen'd the word.

24. "Aye, and a' the prophets, fras Samu'l and a' that follow't, as mony as spak, tell't o' thir daye."

25. "Ye are the bairns o' the prophets, and o' the covenant that God covenantit wi' oor faithers, sayin to Abra'm, 'And in yere ain seed sal a' the hoosehoulds o' the yirth be bless'd!'

26. "To you first, God, raisin up his Son, sent him blessin ye, in yere turnin awa, ilk ane o' ye, fras yere eids!"

CHAPTIR FOWR.

The Apostles before the Council. They pray, no for safety, but for faith and bravery; and the very yirth trembles as God says, "Aye!"

AND, as they war speakin to the folk, that cam on them the priesta, and the Captain o' the Temple, and the Sadducees;

2. Bain sair put-about that they soud be teachin the folk, and preachin throwe Jesus the Rain-Again fras the deid.

3. And they grippit them, and pat them in ward till the morn; for it was noo the gloamin.

4. But mony o' thae that heard the word believed; and the number o' the men cam to be aboot fyve thousand.

5. And, it cam, on the morn, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6. Wi' Annas the Heigh-priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and a' the lave o' the Heigh-priest's kin, war gaither't thegither in Jerusalem.

7. And whan they had putten them i' the wids, they speir't, "By whatna pooer, or whatna name, haes ye done this?"

8. Than Peter, fu' o' the Holie Spirit, answer't, "Ye rulers o' the nation, and elders!

9. "Gin we be this day taan to task anent the gude deed done to the feckless man, by whase hauns he is made hale,

10. "Be it kent till ye a', and till a' the nation o' Isra'el, that i' the name o' Jesus Christ o' Nazareth, that ye crucify't, wham God raised fras the deid, o'en by him this man stanns afore ye hale."

11. "Here is the stane lichtlied by ye that bigg, and it is made the copin o' the corner.

12. "And thar is salvation in nae ither; for thar isna anither name 'neath the skies gien to men, whaurby we mair be saved."

13. Noo, whan they saw the boldness o' Peter and John, and detectkit that they wantitlear, and war common folk, they ferlied at them; and they took tent that they had been wi' Jesua.

14. And seein the man that was made hale stannin wi' them, they coud say nae mair again it.

15. But, ordering them oot o' the Court, they coonsell't amang theirsels,

16. Sayin, "What are we to do wi' thir men? for indeed that a great wunner-wark has been done by them, is noo weel kent to a' the folk o' Jerusalem; and we canna lichtlie it;

17. "But see as it spreads abroad nae far'er amang the folk, let us stricklie chairge them to speak to nae man i' this name, fras this oot."

18. And they ca'd them in, and gied them the sweeping chairge no to speak awa, nor to teach, i' the name o' Jesus.

19. But Peter and John, answerin said, "Gin it be richt for us to list to you, mair than to God, judge yersels!"

20. "For we canna forbear speakin oot the things we hae seen and heard!"

21. And whan they had gien them mair warnin, they loot them gang, no seein boo they coud punish them, on account o' the folk; for a' glorifyt God for what was done.

22. For the man on wham this ferlie o' healin was wrocht, was mair nor forty year auld.

23. And bein let gang, they cam to

their ain folk, and gaed ower a' that the Heigh-priests and the elders had said.

24. And they, whan they heard it, liftit up their voice to God wi' as heart, sayin, "Soveran Ane! thou that did mak the heeven and the yirth, and the sea, and a' things in the same,

25. "Wha, by the Holie Spirit, by the mon' o' Dauvid¹ thy servant, said, 'Why raged the nations ? and the folk wi' their minds fu' o' feckless things ?

26. "'The kings o' the yirth stude up, and the rulers forgather't, again the Lord, and again his Anointit Ane.'

27. "For o' a truth they war gaither't in this citie, again thy Holy Ane Jesus, that thou did anoint, baith Herod and Pontius Pilate, wi' Gentiles and folk o' Isra'el,

28. "To do what thy baun and thy mind had markit-oot aforebaun to come to pass.

29. "And as to things e-noo, Lord, look hoo they wad dannton us ! and gie to thy servants a bauldness to speak thy word ;

30. "E'en while thou sal rax oot thy baun to heal ; and that tokens and ferlies may be dune i' the name o' thy Holie Ane, Jesus."

31. And whan they had prayed, the hoose trimil't whaur they war gaither't ; and ane-and-a' o' them war fu' o' the Holie Spirit ; and they spak the word o' God wi' a bravery.

32. And a' the thrang o' them wha believed war o' as heart and as saul ; and nae man said ocht o' his haddin or his plenishin, was his sin ; but they had a' things throwe-ither.

33. And the Apostles, wi' great power, gae witness o' the Risin-Again

o' the Lord Jesus ; and muckle love was bidin on them.

34. Naither was thar ony amang them that wantit ; for as mony as aucht hooses or grund sell't them, and brocht the prices o' what they sell't,

35. And pat them doon afore the Apostles' feet ; and a proportion was gien to every ane as ilk ane had want.

36. And Joseph, wha was ca'd Barnabas (that is, the Son o' Gude-Guidin), a Levite, a man o' Cyprus,

37. Haein a bit grund, sell't it, and brocht the siller, and pat it doon at the Apostle's feet.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Ananias and Sapphira: wha could haue gien as little or as muckle as they likit, but leet about the siller.

NOO a certain man, Ananias, wi' Sapphira his wife, sell't a propertie,

2. And keepit some o' the siller hidline, his wife kennin o't, and brocht some o't, and pat it doon at the Apostles' feet.

3. And Peter said, "Ananias ! Whaurfor has Sautan fill't yer heart, to play fause to the Holie Spirit, and to keep hidlins some o' the siller frae the grund ?

4. "Whiles ye had it, wast no yere ain ? And whan ye sell't it, wast no i' yere ain baun ? Hoo hae ye imagin't thir things in yere heart ? for ye didna deal fause-heartit wi' men, but wi' God !"

5. And Ananias, hearin thir words, fell doon and deet' ; and muckle fear fell on a' that heard.

6. And the young men raise, and row't him up, and burre him oot, and buryt him.

7. And stir about thrie 'oor, his wife cam in—no kennin ocht that was dune—

8. And Peter speir't at her, "Tell me, sell't ye the grund for nae and nae ?" And she said, "Aye ; for nae and nae."

¹ V. 25. We are tell't that the Jews, in oor ain day, dinna like to expon this second Psalm ; it testifies ower muckle aboot Jesus. Nae doot this wad be ane o' the hits oor Lord exponed to the twa gaun to Emmaus.

9. Than said Peter, " Hoo is't ye
hae coonsell't thegither to temp the
Spirit o' the Lord ! See ! the feet o'
them that hae bary't yere gudeman
are at the doo'r, and sal cairry ye
oot ! "

10. And she fell juist doon at his
feet, and dee'st ; and the young men
cam in and faund her deid, and bare
her oot, and bury't her by her gude-
man.

11. And great fear cam on a' the
Kirk, and on a' that beard thir things.

12. And mair : by the bauns o' the
Apostles war mony tokens and ferlies
wrocht amang the folk : and they war
a', wi' a' mind, in Solomon's Porch.

13. But o' the lava, thar war name
o' them venturin to come in wi'
them ; but the folk a' laudit them.

14. And believers mair war addit
to the Lord, thrangs baith o' men
and weemen :

15. See muckle, that they e'en
cairry't oot the sick folk till the
causey, and pat them doon on beds
and couches, that (gin nae mair), the
shadow o' Peter, as he cam by, micht
fa' on a wheen o' them !

16. And thar war comin thegither,
the vera thrang frae ither cities roond
Jerusalem, feshin sick anea, and that
war fashed wi' unclean spirits ; and
they war healed ilka anea.

17. Than raise up the Heigh-priest,
and a' they that war wi' him (they o'
the sect of the Sadducees), and war
fu' o' anger,

18. And grippit the Apostles, and
pat them i' the to'booth.

19. But the Angel o' the Lord, by
nicht, cam and unsteokit the doo're o'
the to'booth, and fesh't them oot, and
said,

20. " Gang ye, and tak yere staun
i' the Tempie, and tell the folk a' the
words o' this life ! "

21. And whan they heard this, they
enter't i' the dawin to the Temple,
and spak. But the Heigh-priest cam,
and tha'e that war wi' him, and order't
the Coonell thegither, and a' the men

o' aild o' Isra'l, and sent to the to'-
booth to hae them brocht.

22. But the officers that cam faund
them-na i' the prison, and gaed back
again, and tell't,

23. And quo' they, " The to'booth
faund we steikit, and a' safe ; and
the keepers stannin at the doors ;
but whan we had open't, we faund
nae man within."

24. And whan the Heigh-priest and
the Temple-captain, and the boomaist
o' the priests, beard thir things,
they dootit i' their sels aboot them—
what a' this wad come till !

25. But thar cam aue and tell't
them, " Look ! The men ye pat i'
the to'booth are staunin i' the Temple,
and teachin the folk ! "

26. Than gaed the Captain, wi'
the officers, and fesh't them wi' a'
courtesie—for they war fley'd o' the
folk, least they micht hae been staned.

27. And whan they had brocht
them, they set them forment the
Heigh-Council. And the Heigh-
priest spair't at them, sayin.

28. " Did we no charge ye stricklie
no to be teachin i' this name ? And
see ! ye hae fill't a' Jerusalem wi'
yere teachin, and ettle to bring this
man's blude on us ! "

29. Than answer't Peter and the
Apostles, " It behoves us to mind
God, mair nor mind man !

30. " The God o' oor faithers
raised-again Jesus, that ye slew,
hingin him on a tree !

31. " Him has God upliftit at his
richt hann, to be a Prince and a
Saviour, to gie repentance to Isra'l,
and remission o' sins.

32. " And we are his witnesses o'
tha'e things ; and eas too is the Holie
Spirit, that God has gien to them
that obey him."

33. Whan they heard that, they
war cut to the heart, and coonsell't
thegither to kill them.

34. But thar raise aue o' the Heigh-
Coonell, a Pharisee, Gamaliel, a
doctor o' the Law, handen in honor

o' a' the folk, and gae orders to pit the man oot for a wee.

35. And quo' he to them,¹ "Men o' Isra'el; tak tent to yersels, what ye ȝettle to do wi' thir men!"

36. "For langsyne raise Thendan, makin his sel oot to be somebody; aboot whom a hantle o' men gaither't, aboot four hunder: wha was kill't; and as mony as war perswadit o' him war skail't, and cam to nocht.

37. "Eftir him raise Judas o' Galilee, i' the days o' the enroolin; and drew awa' muckle folk eftir him: he too perish't; and a' as mony as follow't him, war cuisten abreed.

38. "And anent thir things I say, lat bide thir men! for, aiblins gin this couuseil or this wark be o' men, it wull fa'!"

39. "But gin aiblins it be o' God, ye canna ding it doon; least ye e'en be fund fechtin again God."

40. And to him they gree'd; and, bringin forrit the Apostles, they bade them be cloured, and charged them no to be speakin' i' the name o' Jesus; and loot them gang.

41. And they gaed oot frae the face o' the Heigh-Cooncil, blythe that they war coontit wordie o' dreein ill for Jesus' sake.

42. And day-by-day i' the Temple, and i' the booses, they war aye teachin, and preachin Jesus Christ.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Deacons to tak tent o' the needy. Stephen taen haud o'.

NOO, i' thae days, thar gat up a murmurin amang the Grecian Jews again the Hebrew anea, aboot the weedows bein overlookit i' the giesen-oot o' the daily breid.

2. And the Twa' brocht the thrang o' the disciples thegither, and quo' they, "It's no bonnie that we sond

¹ V. 35. The pawky, worldly-wyse advice o' Gamaliel, is no to be follow't by na. Gin we waitit to see whilk side cam oot best, wha wad mak the onset? The worldling aka, "Wull it succeed?" The Christian speirs, "Is it right?"

les' the service o' the Word o' God, and ser' tables.

3. "Sae, brethren, look ye oot frae 'mang yersels seeven men o' gude name, wyss men, fu' o' the Spirit, that we may set ower this maitter.

4. "But we wull mainteen oorsels aye in prayer, and i' the service o' the Word."

5. And the word was weel thocht o' o' a' the thrang; and they named Stephen, ane fu' o' faith and the Holie Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte frae Antioch.

6. Wham they set forment the Apostles; and whan they had prayed they set their hauns on them.

7. And the word o' God grew uocolie; and the feck o' the disciples multiply't in Jerusalem; and an unco thrang o' the priests follow't the faith.

8. And Stephen, fu' o' love and poer, wrocht great warks and feries amang the folk.

9. But certain anea raise up, o' the Synagogue ca'd "O' the Freemen," baith Cyrenians and Alexandrians, and thase frae Cilicia and Asia, arguin wi' Stephen.

10. And they warna fit to staun again the wisdom and the Spirit he spak wi'.

11. And they set on men, wha said, "We hae heard him lichtlie Moses, and lichtlie God!"

12. And they made a steer amang the folk, and elders, and scribes, and cam on him, and grippit him, and harl't him to the Cooncil,

13. And set up witnesses forsworn, wha said, "This man is aye speakin ill o' the Holie Place, and the Law;

14. "For we hae heard him threep that this Jesus o' Nazareth sal whammle ower this place, and sal do awa wi' the orderin that Moses gied us."

15. And a' that war i' the Cooncil glowerin at him, saw his face e'en like an Angel's face!

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Stephen discourses to the Heigh-Council. Ill men (sin they has nae ither reply), can aye hirri stanes.

THAN quo' the Heigh-priest, "Are thae things sae?"

2. And he said, "Men! Brethren and faithers, hear! The God o' Glorie schawed his sel to oor faither Abra'm, whan he was in Mesopotamia, afore he bade in Haran;

3. "And said to him, 'Come ye oot frae yere ain lan', and frae yere ain kin, and come to sic a lan' as I sal airt ye!'

4. "Than cam he oot o' the Chaldean's kintra, and dwalt in Haran; and fras thar, ither his faither was deid, he cam to this lan', whaur ye noo dwall.

5. "And he gied him nae portion in't; no, no sae muikle as to set his fit on; yet he promised he wad gie it him in poassession, and to his seed ither him, whan as yet he hadde a bairn.

6. "And God spak thus—that his seed soud tarry in a fremd lan'; and they soud mak them bondmen, and misuse them fowr-bunner year.

7. "'And the folk that haو them in thrall wull I judge,' said God; 'and syne sal they come and ser' me i' this vera place.'

8. "And he gied him a Covenant o' circumceesision; and Abra'm begat Isaac, and circumceesed him at the aucht day; and Isaac, Janeob; and Janeob the twal' patriarcha.

9. "And the patriarcha, fu' o' envie, sell't Joseph awa to Egypt; but God was wi' him.

10. "And deliver't him oot o' a' his sairs, and gied to him favor and leir afore Pharaoh the king o' Egypt;

¹ V. 2. Tak ye tent, that the hail o' Stephen's discourse is to the effect that God had covenants wi' his ain, and worship fras them, lang afore Moses' Law; and sin' the worship o' God was afore the Ceremonial Law cam, see it may weel be ither it is dune!

and he made him to be governor ower a' Egypt, and ower a' his boose.

11. "Noo thar cam a dearth ower a' Egypt and Canaan; and oor faithers faund nae mainteeneance.

12. "But whan Janeob kent that was corn in Egypt, he sent oot oor faithers ance;

13. "And at the second sending-oot, Joseph was kent o' his brethren; and Joseph's freends war kent o' Pharaoh.

14. "Than sent Joseph, and took to him his faither Janeob, and a' his kin, seeventy-fyve saula.

15. "And Janeob gaed doon to Egypt. And he dee't thar, he and oor faithers,

16. "And war carryt ower to Shechem, and laid doon i' the tomb that Abra'm bocht wi' siller fras the son's o' Hamor o' Shechem.

17. "But whan the time promised cam nar, the time God gied to Abra'm, the folk grew to be mony, and war multiplyt in Egypt.

18. "Till a new king cam up, wha kent naething o' Joseph.

19. "And the same wrocht in a guilefu' way wi' oor faithers, and misused them, sae that their young bairna soud be cuisten oot, to the end they soud dee.

20. "I' the whilk time Moses was born, and he was bonnie to God; and he was nouriced thrie month i' the boose o' his faither.

21. "And whan he was cuisten oot, Pharaoh's dochter took him, and nouriced him for her ain son.

22. "And Moses was instruckit in a' the leir o' the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and deeds.

23. "And whan he cam to be forty year auld, it cam intil his heart to gang and see his brethren, the sons o' Isra'il.

24. "And seein ane o' them wranged, he took his pairt, and deliver't him that dreid the wrang, and strack doon the Egyptian.

25. "For he thocht his brethren

soud hae kept hoo God by his haun
wad bring them deliverance: but
they understande na.

26. "And on the morn he schawed
his sel to them as they tukied the-
gither, and wad hae putten them at
ane again, sayin, 'Man! ye are
brithers; why dae ye do wrang, ane
to anither?'

27. "But the ane that did his
neibor wrang, aboved him awa', sayin,
'Wha made ye a maister or a judge
ower us?'

28. "'Wad ye kill me, as ye kill't
the Egyptian yestreen?'

29. "And Moses fled awa' at this
sayin, and tarryt i' the land o' Midian;
whaur he begat twa sons.

30. "And whan forty year had
gane ower, thar schawed himsel to
him i' the wilderness o' Mount Sinai
an Angel, in a lowin fire, in a bua.

31. "And Moses, lookin on, ferlied
uncolie at the ¹eight; and as he cam
nar to see't, the Lord's voice cam to
him.

32. "'I am the God o' thy
faithers, the God o' Abra'm, Isaac
and Jaucoh.' Than Moses quaked,
and daurna look on.

33. "And the Lord said to him,
'Lowse the shoon o' yere feet, for
the place ye staun on is holie grun'!'

34. "'I hae seen, I hae seen, the
ill-doin to my folk that are in Egypt,
and hae heard their maen; and I am
comedoon to richt them. And uoo
co'way! I'll send ye to Egypt!'

35. "This same Moses, wham they
cuist aside, sayin, 'Wha made ye a
maister and a judge?' the same God
sent baith for a maister and a de-
liverer wi' the haun o' the Angel that
appear't to him i' the bua.

36. "The same led them oot, eftir
he had schawn ferlies and tokens i'
the land o' Egypt, and i' the Reid
Sea, and i' the wilderness forty year.

37. "This is yon Moses, wha said
to the children o' Isra'el, 'A Prophet

• V. 31. "It lowed and lowed, and was
nae the wear!"

sal the Lord yere God raise up to
ye o' yere brethren, like to me.'

38. "This was he wha was wi' the
Kirk i' the wilderness, wi' the Angel
that spak to him in Mount Sinai,
and wi' oor faithers; wha had gien
to them leevin testimonies to gie
to ns.

39. "To wham oor faithers wadna
gie heed; but enist him oot fras
them, and turned back again, i' their
hearts, to Egypt.

40. "Saying to Aaron, 'Mak us
gods to gang afores us! As for this
Moses, wha brocht us oot o' Egypt's
lan', we kenna what has come o'
him!'

41. "And they made a cauf i' thae
days, and brocht a sacrificee to the
idol, and joyed i' the wark i' their
ain haunes.

42. "But God turned, and gied
them up to worship the host o' the
sky, as it is putten doon i' the
prophet's book, 'Did ye offer to me
slain beasse and sacrificees forty year
i' the wilderness, O hoose o' Isra'el?'

43. "'And ye liftit the tent o'
Moloch, and Remphan's star, yere
god—images that ye made to worship
them—and I wull tak ye awa ayont
Babylon.'

44. "Oor faithers had the Tent o'
Witness i' the wilderness, e'en as
he appointit wha spak to Moses,
that he soud mak it conform to the
pattern he had seen.

45. "Whilk eke oor faithers that
followt, brocht in wi' Joshua, whan
they cam intil the possession o' the
nations, wham God pat oot fras before
oor faithers' faces to the days o'
Dauvid.

46. "Wha fauod favour forment
God's face, and wad fain provide a
dwallin-place for the God o' Jaucoh.

47. "But Solomon biggit him a
hoose.

48. "But yet the Maiest High
dwalls-na in hooses made wi' bauns;
conform to what the prophet says,—

49. "'The Heaven's my thron,

and the yirth's my fit-brod ; whatna
hoose wad ye bigg me, quo' the Lord ;
or whaur's the place o' my rest ?

50. "Was't-na my ain haun made
a' thae things ?"

51. "Stiff-neckit and thrawn ! un-
circumcised in heart and lugs ! ye
aye hae a plea wi' the Holie Spirit !
as yere faithers, see div ye.

52. "Wham o' the prophets didna
yere faithers persecute ? And they
kill't them wha schawed aforebaun
o' the comin o' the Righteous-Ane, o'
wham, e'en noo, ye hae been the
 betrayers and murderers !

53. "Ye wha had the law by
ordinance o' Angels, and haena keepit
it !"

54. Noo, as they heard thae things,
they war stricken to the heart, and
they gnash't at him wi' their teeth.

55. But he, fu' o' the Holie Spirit,
lookit up aye to heaven and saw the
glorie o' God, and Jesus staunin on
God's richt haun !

56. And said, "Look ! I see the
heevens unsteekit, and the Son o'
Man staunin on God's richt haun !"

57. But they cry't oot wi' a lood
voice, and hoppit their lugs, and ran
on him a' thegither ;

58. And cuist him oot o' the citie,
and staned him ; and the witnesses
pat doon their claes at the feet o' a
young man ca'd Saul.

59. And they stanned Stephen, be-
seechin, and sayin, "Lord Jesus !
tak ye my spirit !"

60. And he kneel'd doon, and cry't
wi' a soondin voice, "Lord, set-na
doon to them this sin !" And whan
he had see said, he fell asleep.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

*The false man o' Samaria ; and the least
man frae Ethiopia.*

AND Saul was ane wi' them, in his
death. And thar gat up, that
day, an unco persecution again the
Kirk-folk o' Jerusalem ; and a', except
the Apostles, war scattered abraid

throws a' the kintra-side o' Judea
and Samaria.

2. And godly men bare Stephen
awa', and made sair lamentin ower
him.

3. But as for Saul, he made waste
o' the kirk, gangin intil a' hooses,
and harlin aff men and weemen to
prison.

4. See they war a' scattered
abraid ; and gaed everygate preachin
the Word.

5. And Philip gaed doon to
Samaria-citie, and preached the Word
to them.

6. And a' the folk wi' as mind
gied gude tent to the things Philip
spak ; seein and hearin a' the wunner-
works he wrocht.

7. For foul spirits, skirlin wi' rage
and pain, cam oot o' a hantle pos-
sess'd anes ; and mony wi' palsies,
and that war lameters, war made
hala.

8. And thar was unco joy i' that
citie.

9. But thar was ane ca'd Simon,
wha his sel i' that citie carryt on
witchery, and glamor't the folk o'
Samaria, lettin on that his ain sel was
some great ane.

10. And to him they a' gied heed,
frae the least o' them to the heichest,
for quo' they, "This man is God's
great poser !"

11. And they gied tent to him ;
for that he had lang glamor't them
wi' witcherries.

12. But whan they lippened to
Philip, preachin the Gude-word o'
the Kingdom o' God, and the name
o' Jesus Christ, they war baptischt,
baith men and weemen.

13. Than Simon his sel believed
wi' the lave ; and, bein baptischt, be-
marrowed wi' Philip, wunneran at
the great works and tokens that war
wrocht.

14. Noo, whan the Apostles at
Jerusalem heard tell that Samaria
had received God's word, they sent
to them Peter and John :

15. Wha, whan they cam doon,
prayed for them that they might haes
the Holie Spirit.

16. For till this time he hadna fawn
on ony o' them : only they had been
bapteezt i' the name o' the Lord
Jesus.

17. Then laid they their hauns on
them, and they received the Holie
Spirit.

18. And whan Simon saw that the
Holie Spirit was gien throwe the
layin-on o' the Apostler hauns, he
wad haes gien them siller ;

19. And quo' he, "Gie me as weel
this pooper, that on wham I lay hauns,
he may haes the Holie Spirit !"

20. But Peter says to him, "Per-
ish yere siller wi' yersel ! for thinkin
to strok for the gift o' God wi'
siller !

21. "Ye haes naither airt nor pairt
here ; for yere heart isna aefund
afore God !

22. "Sae repent ye o' this yere
wickedness ; and pray God gin aiblins
the thocht o' yere heart may be for-
gien t'ye.

23. "For I can see ye are i' the
bitterness o' gall, and the shackles o'
sin !"

24. Quo' Simon, "Pray ye the
Lord for me, that name o' these things
ye haes said befa' me."

25. And they, whan they had tes-
tifyt and gien oot the word o' the
Lord, gaed back to Jerusalem,
preachin the Gude-word in a bantie
o' the wee touns o' the Samaritans.

26. But an angel o' the Lord spak
to Philip, "Awa to the South ! to
the road frae Jerusalem to Gaza ; i'
the desert !"

27. And he raise, and gaed awa ;
and mark ! a man o' Echiop, an
officer heigh in authority under
Queen Candace o' the Ethiopians, the
chamberlain o' her treasur, had come
till Jerusalem for to worship ;

28. And was gaun hame again, and
was sittin in his chariot, readin the
Prophet Esaiah.

29. Then the Spirit says to Philip,
"Gang nar, and join in wi' this
chariot."

30. And Philip ran till him, and
heard him readin the Prophet Esaiah ;
and quo' he, "Are ye un'erstaunin
what ye're readin ?"

31. And quo' he, "Hoo can I, gin
some aine dinna airt me ?" And he
besocht Philip to sit up beside him.

32. The bit o' the Scriptur he was
readin waa, "He was taen oot as a
sheep till the slaunchtir ; and as a
lawn lamb afore his shearer, sae was
he quate ;

33. "In his lowliness justice was
deny't him ; and wha sal speak o' his
seed ? for his life is cuttit aff frae
the yirth."

34. And the officer says to Philip,
"I pray ye, wham speaks the Pro-
phet o' t' o' his sel, or o' some ither
ane ?"

35. And Philip open't his mou' ;
and beginnin at that same word, de-
clar't till him Jesus.

36. And as they gaed on their way,
they cam till a certain watir ; and
the officer says, "See, here is watir !
what is to binner me bein bap-
teezt ?"

37. And Philip said, "Gin ye be-
lieve wi' a' yere heart, ye may !" And
he answer't, "I believe that
Jesus Christ is God's Son !"

38. And he order't the chariot to
stop, and they gaed doon baith intil
the watir, Philip and the officer ; and
he bapteezt him.

39. And whan they cam oot o' the
watir, the Spirit o' the Lord cairryt
awa Philip, and the officer saw him
nae mair ; and he gaed on his way
blythe and joyfu'.

40. But Philip was seen at Azotus ;
and gaun on, he preached the Gude-
word in a' the cities, till he cam to
Ceasarea.

¹ V. 37. This verse isna fund in a hantle o' the MSS. But nae doot he did confess, in words as weel as deeds, his belief in Jesus.

CHAPTIE NINE.

Saul, rugin like a wild bers', is tane hand o' by the Lord. Peter did some o' the great works o' Christ.

AND Saul, yet belchin oot threat-
anine and blude again the Lord's
folk, gaed to the Heigh-priest.

2. And craved fras him letters to
Damascus, to the kirks, sae as gin
they faund ony o' "The Way,"
aither men or weemen, he soud fesh
them in thrall to Jerusalem.

3. But, as he gaed on, he cam nar-
by Damascus; and a' o' a suddaintie,
thar lowed aboot him a licht fras the
lift,

4. And, fa' in to the yirth, he
beard a voice sayin to him, "Saul! Saul! why are ye pursuin me?"

5. And he said, "Wha, my Lord,
are ye?" While he answer't, "I
am Jesus, that ye are pursuin!"

6. "But rise ye, and gang ye intil
the citie, and it sal be tellt ye what
ye are to do."

7. And the men wha war wi' him
stude speechless, hearin a voice, but
seenin nae man.

8. And Saul gat him up fras the
grund, and whan he opened his een
he saw nae; sae, takin him by the
haun, they airtit him intil Damascus.

9. And he was 1' thrie days wantin
sicht, and naither did eat nor drink.

10. Noo there was a disciple at
Damascus, by name Ananias; and
the Lord, in a vision, said to him,
"Ananias!" And quo' be, "See!
here am I, Lord!"

11. And the Lord said to him:
"Arise, and gang awa to the street
ca'd 'Straucht,' and speir in Judas'
boose for ane Saul by name—o'
Tarsus; for ken! be is prayin;

12. "And he has seen in vision
ane Ananias comin in, and pittin his

¹ V. 9. Like till Ezekiel, wha sat doon
astonish't seaven days (Ezek. iii. 15), we
needna ferlie aboot Saul (ilka thing he
had leeven for whamm'l's ower and
destroyed), bein thrie days in amaze!
It's an awfu' wark to pu' a' doon, and
bigg a' ower again!

hauns on him, that he soud win
back his sicht."

13. But said Ananias, "Lord! by
a hantle o' folk hear I o' this man;
and hoo muckis skaith he has done
to thy saints at Jerusalem.

14. "And i' this vera place he has
pocer fras the Heigh-priests to bind
a' thaes that seek thy name."

15. But the Lord says to him,
"Gang yere ways; for a favored
vessel is this ane to me, for the
bearin o' my name afore nations, and
kings, and the sons o' Isra'l."

16. "For I wull schaw to him
what unco things he maun dree for
the sake o' my name."

17. And Ananias gaed his ways,
and cam intil the boose: and layin
hauns on him, says, "Saul! Brither!
The Lord—Jesus, that thou saw on
the way heretill—has bid me come,
that ye might haes yere sicht, and be
fu' o' the Holie Spirit."

18. And at ance fell fras his een as
it war scales; and he gat sicht, and
raise, and was baptizeit.

19. And whan he had meat, ha was
revived. Than was Saul a wheen
days wi' the believers that war at
Damascus.

20. And at ance, i' the kirks, he
proclaimed Jesus, that he was God's
Son.

21. But they ferlied that heard
him: and quo' they, "Isna this the
ane that made havoc o' them that
socht this name in Jerusalem?" And
cam here, etlin the same, that be
micht tak them in bonds to the
Heigh-priest!"

22. But Saul gather't strenth the
mair, and silenced the Jews that
dwalt at Damascus, demonstratin
that "This Ane is the Messiah!"

23. But, whan mair days war come
and gane, the Jews colleagued the-
gither to slay him.

24. Hoobeit, their colleaguein was
made kent to Saul. And they gaif
dit tha ports day and nicht to kill
him.

25. Than the disciples took him at nicht, and loutit him doon ower the wa' in a creel.

26. And whan he was come the lenth o' Jerusalem, he entit to join his sel' to the disciples ; but they war a' fley't o' him, and jalouised that he was a fause ane.

27. But Barnabas took him, and brocht him to the Apostles, and tell't them hoo, gaun his gate, he saw the Lord, and that he spak to him ; and hoo Saul had spoken bauldly at Damascus, in Jesus' name.

28. And he was ane wi' them : gaun in and oot at Jerusalem.

29. And he spak bauldly i' the name o' the Lord Jesus ; and he was haein speech wi' the Hellenists, and reasonin wi' them ; but they war seekin hoo to kill him.

30. The brethren, boobedit, cam to ken o't, and brocht him doon to Cesarea, and sent him awa till Tarsus.

31. See than the Kirk, a' throwe Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, had rest, and was biggit-up, and was gaun on i' the fear o' the Lord ; and by the airtin o' the Holie Spirit was increased.

32. Noo it cam aboot that Peter, gaun throwe a' the assemblies, eke cam doon to the saunts that dwalt at Lydda.

33. And thar he lichtit on a man by name Eneas, wha was bedridden for aucht year ; a paralytic.

34. And Peter says to him, "Eneas ! Jesus the Christ heals ye ! Rise, and mak yersel' bed !" And he raise at ance.

35. And a' that dwalt in Lydda and Sharon saw him ; and they turned to the Lord.

36. Noo in Joppa was a wumman, a disciple, Tabitha (ca'd Dorcas, that is "Gazelle") ; this ane was fu' o' gude warks and aumouses that she did.

37. And it cam aboot i' thase days that she took ill, and deet. And weeshin her, they laid her i' the laft.

38. And bein that Lydda was harliaun Joppa, the disciples, bein tall't that Peter was thar, sent twa men to him, entreatin him to mak nae delay in comin to them.

39. And Peter raise, and gaed wi' them ; and whan he was come, they led him intil the laft ; and thar stude by a' the weedows, greetin, and schawin the coats and manteals that Dorcas made, while she was wi' them.

40. But Peter pat them a' oot, and, fu'in on his knees, pray'd ; and turning roond to the corp, cry't "Tabitha ! Rise !" And she opened her een ; and seein Peter, sat up.

41. And giein her a haun, he raised her up ; and cryin in the saunts and weedows, he presentit her leavin.

42. Noo, it cam to be kent a' throwe Joppa ; and a hantle believed on the Lord.

43. And it cam aboot that he bade a gude wheen days in Joppa, wi' ane Simon, a tanner.

CHAPTIR TEN.

Cornelius follow't, conform to the licht he had ; and the Lord sent him mat' licht.

1. THAR was a man in Cesarea, ca'd Cornelius, officer in a core ca'd "The Italian."

2. Devout, and fearin God, wi' a his hoose ; giean aumous to the folk and prayin to God aye.

3. He saw in plain vision, about thrie o'clock i' the day, an Angel o' God comin in to him, and sayin to him, "Cornelius ! "

4. Noo he, settin his een on him, and bein unco fley't, said, "What is't, my Lord ?" And he said to him, "Yere prayers and aumouses are come up to be keepit in mind afore God.

5. "And noo, send aff men to Joppa, and fesh ane Simon, ea'd Peter ;

6. "He bides wi' ane Simon, a tanner, that has his hoose by the sea."

7. And whan the Angel that spak to him was gane, he ca'd twa servin-men, and a godlie sodger, o' thase waitin on him;

8. And whan he had tell't them a' things, he sent them awa' to Joppa.

9. Noo, on the morn, as they gaed on their way, and cam nar to the citie, Peter gaed up to the hoose-tap to pray, aboot the denner-time.

10. And he grew unco hungry, and wad fain eaten a wee; but whiles they war preparin, he fell intil a dwaum;

11. And saw the lift unsteekit, and a kind o' veschel comin doon, as a great sheet loutit doon by the four corners;

12. In whilk war a' the beass and creatures o' the yirth, and birds o' the air.

13. And a voice cam to him, "Arise, Peter, kill and eat!"

14. But Peter said, "Noo sae, Lord! for at nae time did I eat ocht that was common or unclean."

15. And a voice the second time cam to him, "Whatna things God has made pure, ca' thou no common!"

16. Noo this was dune thrice, and than the veschel was taen up again intil the lift.

17. But as Peter was in a swither, what aiblins this vision he saw might mean, see! the men sent by Cornelius, haein speir't oot the hoose o' Simon, stude forntent the yett,

18. And spak, and speir't "gin Simon, ca'd Peter, was enterteened thar?"

19. And while Peter consider't the vision, the Spirit said to him, "See! thrie moon seek ye.

20. "Arisin, gang doon, and gae wi' them, haein nae fears; for I haesent them."

21. Than Peter, gaun doon to the men, said, "Tak tent! I am he that ye are seekin; what is the cause o' yere comin?"

22. And they said, "Cornelius, an officer, a gude man, and fearin God,

well-thocht o' by a' the folk o' the Jews, was tell't by a Holie Angel, to send for ye to his hoose, and to hear words frae ye."

23. Bringing them in than, he enterteened them. And on the morn he gaed awa' wi' them; and a whean o' the brethren frae Joppa gaed wi' him.

24. And the day aftir he cam intil Cesarea. Noo Cornelius was lookin for them, and had brocht thegither his kin and bosom-freends.

25. And it cam aboot, that as Cornelius met him, he loutit doon at his feet, and did reverence to him.

26. But Peter raised him, sayin, "Staun up! for I, too, mysel, am but a man!"

27. And sae, talkin wi' him, he gaed in; and found mony that had come thegither.

28. And said to them, "Ye weel ken hoo it isna an allocoed thing for a man—a Jew—to join himself, or come to aye o' anither nation; and Gud has schawn me that I've to ca' nae man common or unclean.

29. "And sae, wi' nae argle-barglin, I cam whan I was sent for; I ask, than, for why ye sent for me?"

30. And Cornelius said, "Four days syne, I was praying at the thrie-o'clock in my hoose¹; and behauld! a man stude afore me in bricht cleedin,

31. "And said, 'Cornelius! yere prayer is heard'; and yere sumouses are keepit in mind o' God.

32. "'Send than to Joppa, and ca' hither Simon, ca'd Peter; bidin i' the hoose o' aye Simon, a tanner, by the sea.'

33. "And sae at ance I sent for

¹ V. 30. It looks as gin "the thrie-o'clock," the 'oor o' prayer i' the Temple (chap. 3, 1) was keepit by mony godlie folk i' the auld days.

² V. 31. Aiblins Cornelius was, o'en noo, aye o' God's hairs; but God wad haes him to be acquaint wi' the new revelation o' Jesus as the Sin-Bearer.

their ain folk, and gaed ower a' that the Heigh-priests and the elders had said.

24. And they, whan they heard it, litit up their voice to God wi' ae heart, sayin, "Soveran Ane! thou that did mak the heeven and the yirth, and the sea, and a' things in the same,

25. "Wha, by the Holie Spirit, by the mon' o' Dauid¹ thy servant, said, 'Why raged the nations ? and the folk wi' their minds fu' o' feckless things ?

26. "'The kings o' the yirth stude up, and the rulers forgather't, again the Lord, and again his Anointit Ane.'

27. "For o' a truth they war gaither't in this citie, again thy Holy Ane Jesus, that thou did anoint, baith Herod and Pontius Pilate, wi' Gentiles and folk o' Isra'el,

28. "To do what thy baun and thy mind had markit-oot aforebaun to come to pass.

29. "And as to things e-noo, Lord, look hoo they wad daunton us ! and gie to thy servants a baulkness to speak thy word ;

30. "E'en while thou sal rax oot thy baun to heal ; and that tokens and ferlies may be dune i' the name o' thy Holie Ane, Jeusa."

31. And whan they had prayed, the hoose trimilt whaur they war gaither't ; and ane-and-a' o' them war fu' o' the Holie Spirit ; and they spak the word o' God wi' a' bravery.

32. And a' the thrang o' them wha believed war o' ae heart and ae saul ; and nae man said ocht o' his haddin or his plenisbin, was his ain ; but they had a' things throwe-ither.

33. And the Apostles, wi' great pooer, gae witness o' the Risin-Again

o' the Lord Jesus ; and muckle love was bidin on them.

34. Naither was thar ony amang them that wantit ; for as mony as aucht hooses or grund sell't them, and brocht the prices o' what they sell't,

35. And pat them doon afore the Apostles' feet ; and a proportion was gien to every ane as ilk ane had want.

36. And Joseph, wha was ca'd Barnabas (that is, the Son o' Gude-Guidin), a Levite, a man o' Cyprus,

37. Haein a bit grund, sell't it, and brocht the siller, and pat it doon at the Apostle's feet.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Ananias and Sapphira : wha could haes gien as little or as muckle as they likit, but leet about the siller.

NOO a certain man, Ananias, wi' Sapphira his wife, sell't a propertie,

2. And keepit some o' the siller hidlin, his wife kennin o't, and brocht some o't, and pat it doon at the Apostles' feet.

3. And Peter said, "Ananias ! Whaurfor has Sautau fill't yer heart, to play fause to the Holie Spirit, and to keep hidlin some o' the siller frae the grund ?

4. "Whiles ye had it, was't no yere ain ? And whan ye sell't it, was't no i' yere ain baun ? Hoo haes ye imagin't thir things in yere heart ? for ye didua deal fause-heartit wi' men, but wi' God !"

5. And Ananias, hearin thir words, fell doon and dee't ; and muckle fear fell on a' that heard.

6. And the young men raise, and row't him up, and burre him oot, and buryt him.

7. And aftir about thrie 'oor, his wife cam in—no kennin ocht that was dune—

8. And Peter speir't at her, "Tell me, sell't ye the grund for sae and sae ?" And she said, "Aye ; for sae and sae."

¹ V. 25. We are tell't that the Jews, in oor ain day, dinna like to expon this second Psalm ; it testifies ower muckle aboot Jesus. Nae doot this wad be ane o' the hits oor Lord exponed to the twa gaun to Euromaa.

9. Than said Peter, "Hoo is't ye
hae coonsell't thegither to temp the
Spirit o' the Lord ! See ! the feet o'
them that hae bury't yere gudeman
are at the door, and sal cairry ye
oot !"

10. And she fell juist doon at his
feet, and des't ; and the young men
cam in and faund her dead, and bare
her oot, and bury't her by her gude-
man.

11. And great fear cam on a' the
Kirk, and on a' that beard thir things.

12. And mair : by the bauns o' the
Apostles war mony tokens and ferlies
wrocht amang the folk : and they war
a', wi' ae mind, in Solomon's Porch.

13. But o' the lave, thar war nane
o' them venturin to come in wi'
them ; but the folk a' laudit them.

14. And believers mair war addit
to the Lord, thrangs baith o' men
and weemen :

15. Sae muckle, that they e'en
cairry't oot the sick folk till the
causey, and pat them doon on beds
and couches, that (gin nae mair), the
shadow o' Peter, as he cam by, micht
fa' on a wheen o' them !

16. And thar war comin thegither,
the vera thrang frae ither cities roond
Jerusalem, feshin sick anea, and that
war fashed wi' unclean spirits ; and they
war healed ilka anea.

17. Than raise up the Heigh-priest,
and a' they that war wi' him (they o'
the sect of the Sadducees), and war
fu' o' anger,

18. And grippit the Apostles, and
pat them i' the to'booth.

19. But the Angel o' the Lord, by
nicht, cam and unsteekit the doores o'
the to'booth, and fesh't them oot, and
said,

20. "Gang ye, and tak yere staun
i' the Temple, and tell the folk a' the
words o' this life !"

21. And whan they heard this, they
enter't i' the dawin to the Temple,
and spek. But the Heigh-priest cam,
and thae that war wi' him, and order't
the Cooncil thegither, and a' the men

o' aild o' Isra'el, and sent to the to'-
booth to hae them brocht.

22. But the officers that cam fann'd
them-na i' the prison, and gaed back
again, and tell't,

23. And quo' they, "The to'booth
faund we steikit, and a' safe ; and
the keepers stannin at the doores ;
but whan we had open't, we faund
nae man within."

24. And whan the Heigh-priest and
the Temple-captain, and the boomaist
o' the priests, heard thir things,
they doocit i' their sels aboot them—
what a' this wad come till ?

25. But thar cam aue and tell't
them, "Look ! The men ye pat i'
the to'booth are staunin i' the Temple,
and teachin the folk !"

26. Than gaed the Captain, wi'
the officers, and fesh't them wi' a'
courtesie—for they war fley'd o' the
folk, least they micht hae been staned.

27. And whan they had brocht
them, they set them forment the
Heigh-Cooncil. And the Heigh-
priest speir't at them, sayin.

28. "Did we no chairge ye strickle
no to be teachin i' this name ? And
see ! ye hae fill't a' Jerusalem wi'
yere teachin, and ettle to bring this
man's blude on us !"

29. Than answer't Peter and the
Apostles, "It behoves us to mind
God, mair nor mind man !

30. "The God o' oor faithers
raised-again Jesus, that ye slew,
hingin him on a tree !

31. "Him has God upliftit at his
richt hann, to be a Prince and a
Saviour, to gie repentance to Isra'el,
and remission o' sins.

32. "And we are his witnesses o'
thae things ; and sae too is the Holie
Spirit, that God has gien to them
that obey him."

33. Whan they heard that, they
war cut to the heart, and coonsell't
thegither to kill them.

34. But thar raise aue o' the Heigh-
Cooncil, a Pharisee, Gamaliel, a
doctor o' the Law, hauden in honor

o' a' the folk, and gae orders to pit the man oot for a wee.

35. And quo' he to them,¹ "Men o' Isra'el; tak tent to yersels, what ye icht to do wi' thir men!"

36. "For langsyne raise Thendas, makin his sel oot to be somebody; aboot whom a hantle o' men gaither'd, aboot fowr hunder: wha was kill't; and as mony as war perswadit o' him war skail't, and cam to nocht."

37. "Eftir him raise Judas o' Galilee, i' the days o' the enrollin; and drew awa muckle folk eftir him: he too perish't; and a' as mony as follow't him, war cuisten abreed."

38. "And anent thir things I say, lat bide thir men! for, aiblins gin this coonseil or this wark be o' men, it wull fa'!"

39. "But gin aiblins it be o' God, ye canna ding it doon; least ye e'en be fund fechtin again God."

40. And to him they gree'd; and, bringin forrit the Apostles, they bade them be cloured, and charged them no to be speakin' i' the name o' Jesus; and loot them gang.

41. And they gaed oot frae the face o' the Heigh-Cooncil, blythe that they war coontit wordie o' dreein ill for Jesus' sake.

42. And day-by-day i' the Temple, and i' the booses, they war aye teachin, and preachin Jesus Christ.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Deacons to tak tent o' the needy. Stephen taen haud o'.

NOO, i' thae days, thar gat up a murmurin amang the Grecian Jews again the Hebrew anea, aboot the weedows bein overlookit i' the giesen-oot o' the daily braid.

2. And the Twal' brocht the thrang o' the disciples thegither, and quo' they, "It's no bonuie that we sond

¹ V. 35. The pawky, worldly-wyes advice o' Gamaliel, is no to be follow't by us. Gin we waitit to see whilk side cam oot best, wha wad mak the onset? The worldling saks, "Wull it succeed?" The Christian speirs, "Is it right?"

lea' the service o' the Word o' God, and ser' tables.

3. "Sae, brethren, look ye oot frae 'mang yersels seeven men o' gude name, wyes men, fu' o' the Spirit, that we may set ower this maitter."

4. "But we wull mainte'en oorsels aye in prayer, and i' the service o' the Word."

5. And the word was weel thocht o' o' a' the thrang; and they named Stephen, ane fu' o' faith and the Holie Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a proselyte frae Antioch.

6. Wham they set forment the Apostles; and whan they had prayed they set their hauns on them.

7. And the word o' God grew unicollie; and the feck o' the disciples multiplyt in Jerusalem; and an unco thrang o' the priests followt the faith.

8. And Stephen, fu' o' love and pooer, wrocht great warks and feries amang the folk.

9. But certain anea raise up, o' the Synagogue ca'd "O' the Freemen," baith Cyrenians and Alexandrians, and thase frae Cilicia and Asia, arguin wi' Stephen.

10. And they warna fit to staun again the wisdom and the Spirit he spak wi'.

11. And they set on men, wha said, "We hae heard him lichtlie Moses, and lichtlie God!"

12. And they made a steer amang the folk, and elders, and scribes, and cam on him, and grippit him, and harlit him to the Cooncil,

13. And set up witnesses forsworn, wha said, "This man is aye speakin ill o' the Holie Place, and the Law;

14. "For we hae heard him threep that this Jesus o' Nazareth sal whammle ower this place, and sal do awa wi' the orderin that Moses gied us."

15. And a' that war i' the Cooncil, glowerin at him, saw his face e'en like an Angel's face!

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Stephen discourses to the Heigh-Council. Ill man (sin they has nae ither reply), can aye hirr stanes.

THAN quo' the Heigh-priest, "Are these things sae ?"

2. And he said, "Men ! Brethren and faithers, hear ! The God o' Glorie schawed his sel to oor faither Abra'm, whan he was in Mesopotamis, afore he bade in Haran ;

3. "And said to him, 'Come ye oot frae yere ain lan', and frae yere ain kin, and come to sic a lan' as I sal airt ye !'

4. "Than cam he oot o' the Chaldean's kintra, and dwalt in Haran ; and fras thar, aftir his faither was deid, he cam to this lan', whaur ye noo dwall.

5. "And he gied him nae portion in't ; no, no sae muuckle as to set his fit on ; yet he promised he wad gie it him in possession, and to his seed aftir him, whan as yet he hadna a bairn.

6. "And God spak thus—that his seed soud tarry in a fremd lan' ; and they soud mak them bondmen, and misuse them fowr-bunner year.

7. "'And the folk that haes them in thrall wull I judge,' said God ; 'and syne sal they come and ser' me i' this vera place.'

8. "And he gied him a Covenant o' circumceesion ; and Abra'm begat Isaac, and circumceesed him at the auchth day ; and Isaac, Jacob ; and Jacob the twal' patriarcha.

9. "And the patriarchs, fu' o' envie, sell't Joseph awa to Egypt ; but God wae wi' him.

10. "And deliver't him oot o' a' his sairs, and gied to him favor and leair afore Pharaoh the king o' Egypt ;

¹ V. 2. Tak ye tent, that the hail o' Stephen's discourses is to the effect that God had covenants wi' his ain, and worship fras them, lang afore Moses' Law ; and sin' the worship o' God was afore the Ceremonial Law cam, sae it may weel be aftir it is dune !

and he made him to be governor ower a' Egypt, and ower a' his hoose.

11. "Noo thar cam a dearth ower a' Egypt and Canaan ; and oor faithers faund nae mainteinance.

12. "But whan Jacob kent that was corn in Egypt, he sent oot oor faithers ances ;

13. "And at the second sending oot, Joseph was kent o' his brethren ; and Joseph's freends war kent o' Pharaoh.

14. "Than sent Joseph, and took to him his faither Jacob, and a' his kin, seventy-fyve saula.

15. "And Jacob gaed doon to Egypt. And he dee't thar, he and oor faithers,

16. "And war carryt ower to Shechem, and laid doon i' the tomb that Abra'm bocht wi' siller fras the son's o' Hamor o' Shechem.

17. "But whan the time promised cam nar, the time God gied to Abra'm, the folk grew to be mony, and war multiplyt in Egypt.

18. "Till a new king cam up, wha kent naething o' Joseph.

19. "And the same wrocht in a guilefu' way wi' oor faithers, and misused them, sae that their young bairns soud be cuisten oot, to the end they soud dee.

20. "I' the whilk time Moses was born, and he was bonnie to God ; and he was nouriced thrie month i' the hoose o' his faither.

21. "And whan he was cuisten oot, Pharaoh's dochter took him, and nouriced him for her ain son.

22. "And Moses was instruckit in a' the leair o' the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and deeds.

23. "And whan he cam to be forty year auld, it cam intil his heart to gang and see his brethren, the sons o' Isra'el.

24. "And seein ane o' them wranged, he took his pairt, and deliver't him that dreid the wrang, and strack doon the Egyptian.

25. "For he thocht his brethren

a man aftir my ain heart, wha sal do a' my wull.'

23. "O' this man's seed, has God, conform to his own promise, brocht to Isra'el, a Saviour, Jesus.

24. "John haein preached afore his comin the baptizin' o' Repentance, to a' Isra'el's folk ;

25. "And as John performed his task, he said, 'Wha tak ye me to be ? I am-na he ! But, tent ye ! aye is comin aftir me, the shoon o' whase feet I am-na fit to lowse !'

26. "Men ! brethren ! bairns o' Abra'm's race ! and whasae amang ye fears God ! to you the word o' this salvation is sent out !

27. "For they o' Jerusalem, and their rulers, kennin naither him nor the words o' the prophets that are read ilka Sabbath-day, they hae e'en fulfillt them in condemnin him.

28. "And e'en though they faund nae cause o' death in him, yet demandit they o' Pilate that he soud be slain.

29. "And whan they had finisht a' things anent him whilk had been putten doon, they took him doon fras the tree, and laid him in a tomb.

30. "But God waukened him fras 'mang the deid.

31. "And he was seen for a gey wheen days, to thae wha cam up wi' him fras Galilee to Jerusalem ; wha, at this present, are his ee-witnesses to the people.

32. "And to you we are giean the Blythe-message, as to the promise made to the faithers.

33. "That God has fulfillt the same to our bairns, by raisin up Jesus ; as it is putten doon i' the first¹ Psalm, 'My Son art thou ! This day hae I begotten Thee !'

34. "And, in that he raised him fras 'mang the deid, noo nae mair to fa' back to corruption, he thus says,

'I wull gie you the faithfu' lovin-kindnesses o' David !'

35. "Sae as in anither place he says, 'Thou winna gie thy Holy Ane to see corruption !'

36. "For David his sel, aftir he had ser'd God in his ain life-time, fell sleepin, and was laid wi' his faithers, and saw corruption :

37. "But he that God waukened up saw corruption nane !

38. "Sae be it kent to you, man ! brethren ! that throws this man is proclaimed to you the lowsin' o' sin !

39. "And throws him, a' wha believe are justifyt fras a' things, no possible by Moses' law to be justifyt fras.

40. "Tak tent, than ! see that come-na on ye spoken o' in the prophets :

41. "'Tak tent, ye that geck ! and ferlie ye, and dwine awa ! For I work a wark i' your days, a wark ye'se no believe though aye set it plain aftir ye !'

42. And whan they skailt fras the kirk, they desir't that thir words soud be tallt them the neist Sabbath.

43. Noo, whan the kirk brak up, thar followt mony o' the Jews, and o' the godlie seekers, wi' Paul and Barnabas ; wha, speakin till them, heartit them up to continue in God's love.

44. But on the comin Sabbath, marhaun the hail citie cam thegither to hear the word o' the Lord.

45. But the Jews, seein the thrangs, war fu' o' jealousie, and spak again thas things that Paul said, miscain' them.

46. And Paul and Barnabas, wi' great freedom o' speech, said, "It was necessar that the word o' God soud first be spoken to you : seein ye ha'e cuisten it fras ye, and adjudge yersels no wordis o' eternal life—than, turn we to the Gentiles !

47. "For see has the Lord bidden us : 'I hae set thee up for a licht to the Gentiles, that thou may be for

¹ V. 33. Sae mony o' the best MSS. The "first" and the "second," as we ha'e them, the Jews aften read as one.

salvation to the far-awa ends o' the yirth ! ”

48. And as the Gentiles heard this, they war pleased, and glorifyt the word o' the Lord ; and as mony as had come to be disposed to eternal life, believed.

49. And the word o' the Lord was spread abraid in a' that kintra-side.

50. But the Jews steered up the godlie weemen o' gude-standin, and the heid men o' the citie, and raised up a feud again Paul and Barnabas, and cuist them oot o' their bordera.

51. But they, flaffing the stoor aff their shoon again them, cam to Iconium.

52. And the disciples war filled wi' joy and wi' the Holie Spirit.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

Had ony o' Christ's disciples sic ups and doons as Paul ? Gairn to be worshipped ; and than clourvd wi' stones, and left for dedl ! But it's a' werl wi' him, lang-syne !

NOO, it cam aboot in Ioonium, that they gaed until the Jews' kirk, and saw spak, that thar believed—baith o' Jews and Greeks—an unco thrang.

2. But the misbelievin Jews steered up and misleared the saul's o' the Gentiles, and gart them be turned again the brethren.

3. Sae, a gey while they bade, speakin oot freely i' the Lord, wha burs witness to the word o' his love, grantin tokene and ferlies to be dune by their hauns.

4. But the bouk o' the citie was dividit ; and some war wi' the Jews, and some wi' the Apostles.

5. And whan thar was an onset, baith o' the Gentiles and Jews, wi' the rulers, to diabonor them and stane them,

6. They kent o't, and fled oot-by until the cities o' Lycaonia, to Lystra and Derbe, and the kintra thar-about.

7. And thar they proclaimed the Joyfu-message.

8. And at Lystra, thar was sittin a man, feckless in his feet, a lameter frae his mither's womb, wha never gaed.

9. The same man heard Paul speak ; wha, strickly observin him, and perceivin that he had faith to be saved,

10. Cryt oot wi' a soondin voice, “ Stann ye up on yere feet ! ” And he lap up, and walkit aboot.

11. And whan the thrang saw what Paul had done, they cryt oot i' the tongue o' Lycaonia, “ The gods, appearin like men, haes come doon to us ! ”

12. And they war ca' in Barnabas, “ Jupiter ” ; but Paul, “ Mercurie,” seein he was the main speaker.

13. And the priest o' Jnpiter, whose shrine was forntent the citie, brocht owzen and garlands tae the ports, along wi' a' the thrang, and wad haes dune sacrificee.

14. But, bearin o't, the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul, rivin their mantells, ran forrit amang the folk, cryin oot,

15. And sayin, “ Men ! why are ye doin sic things ! We are but men, o' like natur wi' you ; deliverin to ye the Joyfu'-message, that ye soud turn awa frae sic witless things, to the leavin God, wha made heeven and yirth, and the sea, and a' things in them.

16. “ Wha, in bygane time hindered-na the nations to gang their ain gate ;

17. “ Though he left-na his sel wantin testimonie—doin gude frae aboon, giean us rain and frutafu' seasons ; fillin fu' o' joy yere hearta.”

18. And e'en wi' thair sayins, jimpily restrained they the thrang, that they sondins sacrificee to them.

19. But thar cam Jews frae Antioch and Ioonium ; and, persuadin the thrang, and i' stannin Paul, they

¹ V. 19. Tak tent, hoo se day they war adored, and again in a handclap stanned ! The praise o' the warld is to be as little heedit as its spite !

barled him oot-by frae the citie ;
judgin him to be deid.

20. The disciples stanin roon, hoo-
beit, ha, risin up, cam intil the citie ;
and neist day gaed forth wi' Barna-
bas to Derbe.

21. Deliverin the Blythe-message
to that citie as weal ; and, makin
many disciples, they returned to
Lystra and Iconium, and to Antioch.

22. Makin stive the sauls o' the
disciples, entreatin them to bide i'
the faith ; sayin, " Throws a hantle
o' afflictions maun we win to the
Kingdom o' God."

23. And, appointin for them elders
in ilka assembly, and wi' prayer and
fastin—they gied them ower to the
Lord in wham they pat their trust.

24. And gaun throwe Pisidia, they
cam intil Pamphylia ;

25. And, proclaimin the word in
Perga, they cam doon the leath o'
Attalia ;

26. And frae that they sailed for
Antioch, frae whaur they had been
gien ower to the favor o' God for the
wark they performed.

27. Sae, hasin come, they convened
thegither the assembly, and gaed
ower a' things that God did wi' them ;
and hoo that he had nnamekit a door
o' faith for the Gentiles.

28. And they bade a gey while wi'
the disciples.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

*A great plea ower circumcision. Freedom
carries the day. Paul and Barnabas
disagree.*

AND some, comin frae Judea, war
instructin the brethren, " Gin
ye be-na circumceesed, conform to
Moses' law, ye canna be sav'd ! "

2. But eftir that was nae sma'
disputin and quaistenin wi' them,
by Paul and Barnabas, they settled
for Paul and Barnabas, and ither
frae amang them, to gang up to the
Apostles and Elders, at Jerusalem,
anent this quaisten.

3. Sae they, bein set forrit by the

Kirk, and gaun throwe baith Phenicia
and Samaria, declared the turnin-
about o' the Gentiles ; and gar't the
brethren haes great joy.

4. And, comin to Jerusalem, they
war welcomed by the Kirk, and the
Apostles, and the Elders ; and gaed
ower a' the things God had dune by
them.

5. But thar stude forrit some o'
the sect o' the Pharisees, wha be-
lieved, threepin : " It is necessar to
circumcees them, and chairge them
to keep Moses' law ! "

6. And the Apostles and Elders
war gotten thegither to consider this
maitter.

7. But eftir a hantle o' quaistenin,
Peter, staunin up, says to them :
" Men ! brethren ! Ye a' ken weel,
that, a gey while syna, God made
wale amang us, that the Gentiles frae
my mooth soud bear the Blythe-
message, and believe.

8. " And God—wha take tent o'
the heart—bure testimonie ; gien
them the Holie Spirit, e'en as to us :

9. " And made nae differ ava
atwixt us and them ; purifyin their
hearts by faith.

10. " And noo, hoo are ye tempin
God ! wi' layin a yoke on the
disciples that naither oor faithers nor
we war stive eneuch to carry.

11. " But still we haes faith, throwe
the Lord Jesus Christ, that we're be
saved ; e'en in like manner as they."

12. And a' the folk keepit whush't ;
and they hearkened to Paul and
Barnabas, narratin a' the tokens and
wunner-warks God did amang the
Gentiles by them.

13. But eftir they had dune, James
answer't, sayin, " Men ! brethren !
hearken to me ! "

14. " Simon has narrated hoo God
at first did come to wale oot o' the
Gentiles a folk for his name.

15. " And to this is conform the
words o' the prophet, e'en as it is
putten doon :

16. " Eftir thir things wull I

return, and heize up again the tent o' Dauid that is faun doon ; and its ruins wull I raise and set up again.

17. " That the lave o' men may seek eftir the Lord ; e'en a' the Gentiles on wham has been invoked my name,

18. " Says the Lord, wha makes a' thir things kent frae the beginnin o' the wold."

19. " Sae my judgment is, that we soudna fash thae wha 'mang the Gentiles are turnin to God ;

20. " But that we soud send letters to them that they keep awa frae the pollutions o' eidola, and frae lecherie, and frae things strangl't, and frae blude.

21. " For Moses,¹ o' auld time, citis by citis, has thae proclaimin him, being read i' the kirks ilka Sabbath-day."

22. Than seemed it to be weal to the Apostles and the Elders, wi' the bail Kirk, to send waled oot men fras 'mang them to Antioch, wi' Paul and Barnabas ; Judas, ca'd Barabas, and Silas ; foremaist men amang the breithren.

23. And wrate by tham : " The Apostles and the elder brethren, to the brethren throwe Antioch and Syria, and Cilicia, that are fras oot the Gentiles—greetin !

24. " Forasmuckle as we hear that some gaun oot fras us, haes putten ye-aboot wi' teachin, unsittlin yer souls ; to wham we gied nae sic instructions ;

25. " It seems guude to us assembled, bein o' se mind, that, walin oot men, we soud send them to ye, wi' oor weel-lo'ed Barnabas and Paul.

26. " Men wha haes putten their lives in pawn for the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

27. " We haes sent, than, Judas and Silas, and them, that by word o'

¹ V. 21. Moses, and the morals o' the Auld Testament, James thought, war weel kent amang the Jews ; but the Gentiles wantit a wee airtin in guude morals.

mooth they may report the same things.

28. " For it seemed weal to the Holie Spirit and to us, no to be layin ony mair burden on ye, save thir necessar things :

29. " To keep awa fras eidol sacrificees, and fras blude, and fras things strangl't, and fras lecherie : oot o' whilk keepin yersels clear, ye sal do weal. Fare-ye-weel ! "

30. Sae they, bein sent awa, gaed doon to Antioch ; and, gaitherin the thrang thegither, deliver't the letter.

31. And they, readin it, rejoiced ower the consolation.

32. And Judas and Silas, theirsels bein propheta, wi' mony words comfortit and upbiggit the brethren.

33. And eftir makin a delay, they war sent awa in peace fras the brethren to them wha sent them oot.

34. Name-the-less,² it pleased Silas to bide still thar.

35. But Paul and Barnabas bade in Antioch, teachin and proclaimin the Blythe-message o' the word o' the Lord ; wi' mony others.

36. But eftir a gey wheen days, Paul says to Barnabas, " Let us turn again, and look in on the brethren, in ilka city whaur we proclaimed the word o' the Lord ; and see hoo they fare ! "

37. Noo Barnabas was min't to tak wi' them John, wha was ca'd " Mark."

38. Whaurus Paul thocht best no to tak him wi' them wha turned awa fras Pamphylia, and gaed-na wi' them to the wark.

39. And thar raise a shairp contention³ atwixt them, sae that they sindered the ane fras the ither ; and Barnabas, takin wi' him Mark, sailed oot for Cyprus.

² V. 34. This verse is no in the best MSS.

³ V. 39. We kenna wha was richt and wha was wrang, ament the maitter o' Mark : but we jalousie that a wee mair forbearance on ilka side might haes hindered this rupture—or eune southered it up !

40. But Paul, walin Silas, gaed oot, being putten ower intil the Lord's favor by the brethren.

41. And he gaed throwe Syria and Cilicia, strenthenin the kirks.

CHAPTR SAXTEEN.

The Blythe-message intil Europe, wi' pain and travail.

AND he cam intil Derbe and Lystra, and behauld ! a particular disciple was thar, named Timothy, son o' a believin Jewess, but o' a Greek faither ;

2. Wha was weel-spoken o' by the brethren at Lystra and Iconium.

3. This ane Paul wad hae to gang oot wi' him. And he took and circumcised him, on accoont o' the Jews i' thae pairts—for they a' kent that his faither was a Greek.

4. And as they gaed throwe the cities, they deliver't intil their keepin the word that had been gien oot by the Apostles and Elders in Jerusalem.

5. Sae war the assemblies made strang i' the faith, and increased in numbers day by day.

6. And they gaed by the Phrygian and Galatian kintra, haein been forbidden by the Holie Spirit to proclaim the word i' the Province o' Asia ;

7. And comin alang Mysia, they etted to gang intil Bythinia ; but the Spirit o' Jesus didna alloo them :

8. And, gaun by Mysia, they cam doon to the Troad.

9. And a vision appear't to Paul i' the nicht : thar stude a Macedonia-man, and entreatit him, sayin, "Come ye ower intil Macedonia, and bring us help !"

10. Noo, seein the vision, at ance we socht to gang oot intil Macedonia ; concludin that God had bidden us proclaim the Blythe-message to them.

11. Settin sail, than, frae the Troad, we held straught to Samothracia ; and on the morn to Neapolis ;

12. And frae thar to Philippi, whilk is a chief citie o' that pairt o'

Macedonia—a "Colony." And we war in yon citie a wheen daya.

13. And on the Sabbath we gaed oot o' the port by a watir-side, whaur we thocht thar wad be a place for prayer ; and, sittin doon, we war speakin to the weemen that cam thegither.

14. And a particular wumman, hy name Lydia, a purple-seller, o' the citie o' Thyatira, ane devout toward God, heard us ; whase heart the Lord open't, that she soud tak gude tent to what Paul spak.

15. Noo, whan she was baptis't, and her houseauld, she besoacht us, sayin, "Gin ye hae judged me to be leal to the Lord, come awa to my hoose, and bide thar !" And she gar'd us see do.

16. And it cam aboot, as we war gain to the place o' prayer, a lass wi' a spirit o' magic met us, wha brocht her maisters muckle siller by her soothsayin.

17. This ane, followin Paul and us, was aye crying oot, "Thir men are 'servants o' the Maist Heigh God ; wha are airtin ye i' the way o' salvation !"

18. And this she was doin a gey wheen daya. But Paul, sair putten-aboot, turned and said to the spirit, "I charge ye, i' the name o' Jesus Christ, to come oot o' her !" And it cam oot that vera 'oor.

19. But her owners, seein that eke the hope o' their gains was thus far-awa', laid hand on Paul and Silas, and har'l't them intil the merkit-place to the rulers,

20. And bringin them afore the magistrates, quo' they, "Tbir men are an unco pest to oor citie—they bein Jews—

21. "And are settin forth customs that are naither to be acceptit nor dune—we bein Romans."

¹ V. 17. Paul, nae mair nor his Maister, wad hae the deevil gien testimonia for him ! We maun hae nae airt nor pairt wi' Santan !

22. And a' the thrang raise up again them : and the magistrates strippin aff their claes, gae orders to clour them wi' rods.

23. And, layin on them mony stripes, they cuist them intil the To'booth, chairgin the jailer to keep them siccar.

24. Wha, on siccans a charge as this, cuist them intil the beimaist dungeon, and stell'd their feet siccar i' the stocks.

25. And aboot the midnight, Paul and Silas war prayin, and hymnin God ; and the prisoners war hearin them.

26. And a' at ance cam a great yirdin, sae that the fundations o' the prison trim'l't ; and at ance a' doors unsteekit, and a' bonds war lossed.

27. Noo the jailer, rais'd oot o' his sleep, and seein a' the prison-doors unsteekit, drawin his blade, wad ba made awa wi' his sel, thinkin the prisoners a' fled.

28. But Paul cryt oot wi' a lood voice, "Lat nae skaith come t'ye ! for we are a' here !"

29. And he ca'd for a licht, and rush'd in ; and trim'l't, and fell doon afore Paul and Silas,

30. And bringin them oot, said, "My Lords, what maun I be doin, that I may be sav'd ?"

31. And they said, "Hae faith in the Lord Jesus, and ye sal be sav'd ; yersel and yere hoose !"

32. And they spak to him the word o' the Lord, and to a' that war in his hoose.

33. And, takin them wi' him, in that 'oor o' the nicht, he wesh'd their stripes, and was baptis't, he and a' his, on the spot.

34. And feashin them intil his apairtments, he set a table afore

them, and had unco rejoicin, wi' a' his hoosehould—believin in God.

35. But whan day cam, the magistrates sent to the officers, sayin, "Let gang thae men !"

36. And sae the jailer tell't the words to Paul, "The magistrates hae sent that ye micht gang ; sae noo, gann forth, depart in peace !"

37. But Paul said, "They has cloured us in public—and uncondemned—men that are Romans, and they has cuisten us intil a dungeon ; and noo dae they send us oot bidlins ? Noo sae ! but lat them come their sels and lead us oot !"

38. Noo the officers took back to the magistrates thir declarations ; and they war taen wi' fear, hearin they war Romans ;

39. And, comin, they besocht them ; and, leadin them oot, they entreatit them to gang awa frae the citie.

40. And they, comin oot o' the To'booth, gaed to Lydia ; and, seein the brethren, they consoled them ; and gaed awa.

CHAPTIR SEEVENTEEN.

Paul brings the news o' Athens to Macedonia that was mair nor their oot ! But only a wee when o' them wad hae it !

SAE, gaun on throws Amphipolis and Apollonia, they cam intil Thessalonica, whaur the Jews had a kirk.

2. And Paul, e'en as he aye did, gaed in to them ; and for thrie² Sabbaths reasoned wi' them frae the word,

3. Openin up and makin plain, that it was necessar for the Anointit Ane to suffer, and to rise frae amang the deid, and that "This vera Ane is

*V. 2. It seems to mean thrie weeks ; tho' aiblins "thrie worship-days ;" for it is weel kent noo that the Jews met i' their kirks on Settermdays, Mondays and Thursdays. But thir, I jalouse, only gies us his ministry amang the Jews. He was maist like, a gey while at Thessalonica. (See Phil. iv. 16).

4 V. 23. The gude way is no aye as even as a green loanin : Paul ne'er dootit his commission, for a' the ill that cam wi't. Nae mair said we !

the Anointit, e'en Jesus, wham I am settin forth amang ye!"

4. And a wheen frae 'mang them war perswadit, and cuist in their lot wi' Paul and Silas; as weel as the devout Greeks vera mony, and a hantle o' weemen, e'en the chief anes.

5. But the Jews, ill pleased, and takin to theirsels the merkit-men, ill-deedie loons—and makin a bruitzie, set a' the city in an uproar; and, makin an onset on Jason's hoose, they socht to gie them ower to the rabble.

6. But no finding them, they harled Jason and a wheen ither brethren to the rulers, cryin oot, "Thae that haes thawn a' the inhabited yirth intil a tulzie—the same haes come here!"

7. "And Jason has gien them welcome; and thir are a' contrar to the laws o' Cesar, sayin, 'Thar is anither King, Jesus!'"

8. And the rulers, and a' the folk, war unco putten-aboot, whan they heard thae things.

9. And, takin caution frae Jason and the lave, they loot them gang.

10. And the brethren at ance, by nicht, sent aff baith Paul and Silas to Berea; wha, when they gat thar, gaed intil the Jews' kirk.

11. But thir men war nobler than the anes in Thessalonica, in that they welcomed the message wi' aefauld minds, day by day looking weel to the word, gin thir things war eor or no.

12. And sae, a hantle o' them believed; and eke o' the Greek weemen o' gude estate, and o' men, a gey wheen.

13. But whan the Jews o' Thessalonica cam to ken that the word o' God was preached by Paul in Berea, they cam thar as weel, steerin up the folk.

14. And than the brethren sent oot Paul, to gang the lenth o' the sea; but baith Silas and Timothy bade thar still.

15. Noo the men that airtit Paul, set him on the lenth o' Athens; and takin back wi' them word to Silas

and Timothy to come to him as suue as they might, they returned.

16. But while Paul, in Athens, was looking for them, his heart lowed within him, perceivin that the citie was a' gien ower to eidols.

17. Sae he was reasonin i' the kirk wi' the Jews and the devout anes; and i' the merkits ilka day wi' thae he met wi'.

18. And some, e'en amang the wyse anes o' the Stoicks and Epicureans, stude up again him: and a wheen war sayin, "What, aiblins, might this ¹gaberlunzie-man be wantin to say?" Ithers spak, "He maun be a settar-up o' foreign eidols;" for that he has gien oot the Blythe-message o' Jesus and the Risin-Again.

19. And sae, layin hand o' him, they had him up to the Areopagus, sayin, "Can we no get to ken what this new teachin is that ye are speakin?"

20. "For ye are feshing in fremd things to our bearing: we wad ken, than, whatna things thair are!"

21. Noo, a' Athenians, and the fremd folk hidin thar, had leisure for nocht ells, but to hear or to tell o' some new ferlie.

22. And Paul, staunin in the mida o' the Areopagus, said, "Men! Athenians! In a' things how unco mindfu' ye are in ²worship, I perceive.

23. For as I gaed by, and took tent o' the objects o' yere worship, I lichtit on a shrine wi' this legend, 'To a God no kent.' What, than, ye adore unkennin, I mak plain to ye.

24. "The God that made the world, and a' things in't—he wha is

¹V. 18. "Gaberluuzie-man": they spak o' Paul as gin he had been but a gatherer-up o' mools aneath the table o' Wisdom. "He a philosopher indeed!"

²V. 22. Paul didna geck at their worship; but he wad hac them weck the God o' a' things.

Maister o' Heeven and yirth—no in haun-made temples dwalls, as tho' he wantit ocht;

25. "Nor wi' human bauns needs waitin on, sin he his sal gies a' their life and breath, and a' thinga.

26. "He has made a' ane—ilka nation o' men—to bide on the face o' the yirth; spannin oot the seasons, and the limits o' their dwallin:

27. "That they might ba seekin God; gin aiblins they might graip estir him, and fin' him; tho' he be-na far-awa fras ony o' us.

28. "For in him we leave, act and exist; as e'en thaē amang yere ain bards hae said, 'For his offspring, too, are we!'

29. "Bein than, God's offspring, we sondra think that that whilk is Divine is like to gowd, or siller, or stane—carved wi' skill and device o' man.

30. "The times o' ignorance God heedit-na; noo, he chariges a' men, in a' places, to repant:

31. "Inasmuckle as he has set a day, in whilk he sal judge the hale yirth in equity, by a Man that he has appointit; o' wham he has gien surety to a' men, in that he has raised him fras the deid."

32. But whan they heard o' the Risin-fras-the-deid, a wheen geek't at him; but ither some, "We will hear ye again anent this."

33. See Paul gaed forth oot o' their mids.

34. But some men wha joined theirsels to him, believed; amang them, e'en Dionysius the Areopagite Judge, and a wumman by name Damaris, and ither wi' them.

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.

The Jews at Corinth. Gallio wadna listen to them. Paul lea's Europe.

EFTIR thir 'things, lea'in Athens, he cam to Corinth.

2. And, lichtin on a particular Jew, by name Aquila, a Pontus man by nativity, late come fras Italy, and

his wife Priscilla—for Claudius had gien orders for a' Jews to lea' Rome—he cam to them.

3. And for that he was o' the same trade, he bade wi' them, and wrocht; for they war tent-makers by trade.

4. And he was reasonin i' the kirk ilka Sabbath; and perswadit Jews and Greeks.

5. Than, whau baith Silas and Timothy cam deon fras Macedonia, Paul was led on in his preachin, demonstratin to the Jews that Jesus was the Ancointit Ane.

6. But as they set theirsels to oppose and revile, shakin oot his raiment, he said to them, "Yere blude be on yere ain heid; I am clear! Fras this oot I gang to the Gentiles!"

7. And, flittin fras thence, he cam intil the hoose o' a man by name Titus Justus, devout toward God; whose hoose was neiber to the kirk.

8. But Crispus, the kirk-ruler, believed i' the Lord, wi' his hale hoosehould. And a hantle o' the Corinthians, hearin, war believin, and war baptizezt.

9. And the Lord said hy nicht to Paul, in a vision, "Be-na fleyt; and spare-na to speak!"

10. "For I am wi' ye; and mane sal set upon ye, to do ye ill; for I hae a hantle o' folk i' this citie."

11. And he bade a year and sax month; teaching amang them God's word.

12. But when Gallio was Proconsul o' Achaia, the Jews made an onset on Paul, and had him up for trial.

13. Sayin, "This ane is perswadin men to worship God, contrar to the law!"

14. Noo, whan Paul was aboot to open his mou', Gallio says to the Jews, "Gin it indeed had been a maitter o' stour and strife, and ill-deedie wickednes, O Jews! I wad hae reason to thole w'ye:

15. "But gin they be quastens anent words, and names, and laws o'

vere ain—ye sal see to that yersels !
Nae judge o' siccan things sal I be !”

16. And he cuist them oot frae the coort.

17. And they a', grippin hand o' Soostenes, the kirk-ruler, cloured him i' the presence o' the coort. And Gallio¹ took nae heed o' thir things.

18. But Paul, still bidin a gey wheen days wi' the brethren, than bade them fareweal, and sailed awa to Syria ; and wi' him Aquila and Priscilla ; he shavin his heid in Cenchrea, for he had made a vow :

19. And than cam ower intil Ephesus ; and he left them abint thar ; but he, his sel, gaed intil the kirk, and reasoned wi' the Jews.

20. And tho' they war seekin to haes him bide langer, he didna consent :

21. But bad them fareweal, sayin, “I wull come back t'ye, gin God wull !” and set sail frae Ephesus ;

22. And landin at Cesarea, and gaun up and salutin the kirk, he gaed doon to Antioch ;

23. And, takin some time, he gaed forth, gaun throws a' thae pairts in order—Galatia and Phrygia—puttin heart intil the disciples.

24. Noo, a Jew, Apollos by name, an Alexandrian born, a man o' lear, cam doon to Ephesus, bein michtie i' the word.

25. The same had been instruckit by hearin the way o' the Lord : and bein warm-heartit, was speakin and teachin eidentlie aboot Jesus, kennin but the baptism o' John.

26. He, too, begude to speak frealy i' the Jews' kirk. But Priscilla and Aquila, haein heard him, took him to them, and mair carefully exponed to him the way o' God.

¹ V. 17. Gallio, his brither Seneca says, was a cannie, weel-behav't man. He had nae patience wi' sic a thrawn, unco set as thae Jews war : and rock't-na what was done see lang as the general peace o' the toon waensa interfer't wi'. He is no to be taen as a type o' dour insenability.

27. And he being ready to gang throws intil Greece, the brethren wrate to the disciples to tak him in joyfully ; wha, comin thar, helpit weel thae wha believed, wi' his gifts.

28. For, wi' unoo vigor, he publicly confoundit the Jews oot and oot, makin plain by the Word that Jesus was the Ancientit Ane.

CHAPTIE NINETEEN.

Paul at Ephesus. An wae takin f' the theatre.

AND it cam aboot while Apollos was in Corinth, that Paul, gann throws the heigher pairts, cam intil Ephesus ; and found a wheen disciples,

2. And to them quo' he, “Gat ye the Holie Spirit whan ye believed ?” But they said, “On the contrar, we warna tellt thar was ony Holie Spirit !”

3. And he said, “What, than, war ye baptizeet intil ?” And quo' they, “Intil John's baptism.”

4. And Paul said, “John baptizeet a baptizeein o' Repentance, sayin to the folk comin to him, that they soud pit faith in him comin aftir him, e'en in Jesus.”

5. Noo, hearin this, they war baptizeet intil the name o' the Lord Jesus.

6. And Paul, pitten his hauns on them, the Holie Spirit cam doon on them, and they spak wi' tongues, and prophesy't.

7. And they war aboot twal ; ¹ a' men.

8. And he gaed intil the kirk, and spak openly for aboot thrie month ; reasonin and persuadin anent God's kingdom.

9. But as a bantle o' them hardenad theirsels, and wadna be persuadit, speakin ill o' “The Way” afore a' the folk—he left them, and

¹ V. 7. Thir disciples war a' men ; nee weemen amang them. Oor English is no perfectly plain on that point.

set the disciples apairt, day by day discoorain in the schule o' Tyrannus.

10. Noo this ga'ed on for twa year; see that a' folk dwallin i' the Province o' Asia heard the Lord's word; Jews and Greeks.

11. And God did warks o' pooer, ayont the ordinar, by the hauns o' Paul.

12. See that frae his body to the sick anes war carryt naipkins and aprons, and the illnesses gaed frae them: foul spirits eke gaed oot.

13. But particular anes o' the gangrel Jews, exorcists, took on them to ca' ower thaes haein' foul spirita, the name o' the Lord Jesus, sayin, "I depone t'ye by Jesus, preached o' Paul!"

14. Noo, thar war seeven sons o' ane Sceva, a Jewish heigh-priest, wha did see.

15. And the man wi' the foul spirit cryt, "Jesus I ken, and Paul I weel ken; but wha may ye be?"

16. And the man the foul spirit was in, lap on them, and ower-cam them; see that, disjaskit and cloured, they escapit frae that hoosa.

17. And this cam to be kent by a' baith Jews and Greeks dwallin in Ephesus; and thar cam a fear on them, and the name o' the Lord Jesus was exaltit.

18. And mony o' thaes that believ'd cam, confessin openly, and turnin awa frae their practeecea.

19. A gey wheen, too, o' thaes that trok't in magical secreta fesh't their buiks, and brunt them afore them a'; and they reckon't up what they cam to, and faund it fifty thouaan' allerpieces.

20. See, in sic pooer, was the word waxin and prevailin.

21. Noo, aftir a' thaes things, Paul had it in his heart, whan he had gane throwe Macedonia and Greece, to gang forrit tp Jerusalem; and quo' he, "Ane I has been thar, it is necessar for me to see Rome as weel!"

22. And, sendin aff into Macedonia twa o' thaes waitin on him, Timothy and Erasus, he bade for a wee in Asia.

23. But thar raise, at that time, an unco stour anent "The Way."

24. For ane, Demetrius by name, a siller-smith, makin siller shrines for Diana, was winnin for the tradesmen nae sma' patronage.

25. Wham, bringin thegither, and them wha wrocht amang sic things, he said to them, "Men! ye ken weel that oot o' this trade we win oor gear.

26. "And noo ye see and hear that no only at Ephesus, but nar-baun in a' Asia, this Paul, perswadin, has turned awa' mony folk, sayin, 'They bude be nae gods that are made wi' hauns.'

27. "And no only is thar danger that this oor trade may be ill-spoken o'; but e'en that the temple o' the great goddess Diana may be lichtlied, and a' her dignity pu'd down: till wham the hall o' Asia, and a' the world gie worship!"

28. Noo, hearin this, and bein fu' o' wrath, they made an unco cry, sayin, "Michtie is Diana o' the Ephesians!"

29. And the citie was fu' o' the stour; and they panged theirsels wi' as mind into the theatre, layin hand o' Gaine and Aristarchus, Macedonians, fellow-travellers o' Paul's.

30. And Paul was mindit to gang in amang the thrang; but the disciples wadna lat him:

31. And a wheen o' the Asiarchs¹ also, freends o' his, sent to him, entreating him no to gang into the theatre.

32. And see some cryt oot as thing, and some anither; for the gatherin had come to be a' throwe-

¹ V. 31. Thair war local rulers i' the Province. The Romans war wynn i' their generation; i' the mair civiliz'd lands, lea'muckle local pooer wi' the folk'sseln.

ither, and the maist pairt kent-na why they had forgather't.

33. And they heized up Alexander frae the mids o' the folk ; the Jews puttin' him forrit ; and Alexander, wavin his hand, wad haes made his defence to the folk.

34. But whan they cam to ken he was a Jew, wi' a voice they a' cry't oot, for the lenth o' twa 'oors, " Mighty is Diana o' the Ephesians ! "

35. But the Toon-clerk, quatin doon the folk, said, " Men ! Ephesians ! wha o' men is thar that disna own that the Ephesian-city is shrine-keeper o' the great Diana, and o' that whilk fell doon frae Jupiter ! "

36. " Thir bein things no to be gainsayed, it is needfu' that ye be quate, to begin wi' ; and to do nae-thing rash.

37. " For ye brocht thir men—naither harryin temples, nor misca'in yere goddessa.

38. " Sae, gin Demetrius and the tradesmen wi' him, haes ony plea wi' ony ane, the Coort-days are keepit, and thar are advocate ; lat them implead ane anither.

39. " But gin something mair ye seek, lat it be settled i' the lawfu' assembly.

40. " For we are in danger o' bein wytit wi' riot and revolt, anent this day ; seein we haes no a single cause to plead in gien an account o' this concourse."

41. And whan thir things war said, he skail't the assembly.

CHAPTR TWENTY.

The sleepie lad at Troas. The Elders o' Ephesus instructit.

AND whan the tulzie was ower, Paul sent for the disciples, and chairgin them, he quat them, and gaed oot till Macedonia.

2. Gaun throwe thae pairts, and gien them muckle coonseil, he cam intil Greece.

3. And haesin spent thrie months, whan the Jews laid plots for him as

he was gaun to sail awa till Syria, he made up his mind to gang back throwe Macedonia.

4. And thar gaed wi' him the lenth o' Asia, Sopater o' Pyrrhus, a Berean ; and Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus ; and Gaius frae Derbe ; and Timothy ; and o' Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5. Thir, gaun afore, war stoppin for us in Troas ;

6. While we sailed awa, stir the days o' the Sad Breid, frae Philippi ; and cam till them at Troas in fyve days, biding thar seeven days.

7. And on the first day o' the week, whan we a' cam thegither to brek breid, Paul was discoorsin to them, bein ready to gang awa i' the morn, and spak on till midnicht.

8. And thar war mony lichts i' the last whaur we had forgather't.

9. Noo thar sat a lad, by name Eutychus, i' the winnock ; and, as Paul was lang preachin, bein owercome wi' sleep, he fell frae the third laist, and was liftit up deid.

10. But gaun doon, Paul fell on him, and pat his arms aboot him ; and quo' he, " Be-na makin a steer ; for his life is in him ! "

11. And sae, gaun up, and brekin breid, and eatin a wee, he spak a gey while, e'en till the dawin ; and sae gaed on.

12. And they brocht the lad leevin, and war muckle comfortit.

13. Noo we, gaun forrit till the ship, sailed till Assos, frae thar to tak up Paul ; for sae had it been trystit ; be gaun on on fit.

14. And sae whan we forgather't wi' him at Assos, we took him up, and cam to Mitylene.

15. And fras thar, sailin awa on the morn, we cam forment Chios ; and on the neist day we edged intil Samos ; and on the neist again, we cam to Miletus.

16. For Paul was mindit to gang by Ephesus, that he soudna siblin spend time in Asia ; for he hastit, gin

it war possible for him, to be at Jerusalem again the Pentecost.

17. Yet frae Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and socht to haes the Elders o' the Kirk.

18. And whan they war come to him, he said to them, " Ye weel ken, frae the first day I set fit in Asia, hoo I was w'ye, the hail time ;

19. " Wi' service to the Lord in a' humbleness, and tears and toils, whilk cam on me by the doobleness o' the Jews ;

20. " And hoo I keepit naething hidlin, o' the things that war gude ; tellin it ower t'ye, and teachin it in public, and frae as boose to anither.

21. " Bearin witness baith to Jews and Greeks, anant repentance to God, and faith to oor Maister, Jesus Christ.

22. " And noo, mark ! I gang in bonds to the Spirit, journeyin to Jerusalem—kenniu-na what aiblins sal befa' me yonner ;

23. " But only this, that the Holie Spirit bears me witness, frae as citie to anither, that shackles and sorrows are waitin for me.

24. " Yet, on nae account, dae I haud my life lo'esome to mysel, gin sae I may end weel my coorse, and the darg gien me by the Lord Jesus ; to testify to the Blythe-message o' God's favor !

25. " And noo, tak tent ! I ken that nae mair dae ye see my face ! ye 'mang wham I hae gane, proclaimin the Kingdom.

26. " Sae, tak I yersels to witness, this vera day, that I am free frae the blude o' a' men.

27. " For I keepit-na back oicht, but spak a' God's coonseil t'ye.

28. " Tak tent, than, to yersels, and to a' the ¹ hirsel, in whilk the Holie Spirit has set ye for bishops ; to ahspherd the Kirk o' the Lord, whilk he cost for his sel wi' his ain blude.

29. " I ken, that whan I am gane, unco wolves sal come intil yere mida, devoorin the flock.

30. " And frae amang yersels sal men rise up, speakin thrawn doctrees, sae as to wyle awa followers eftir them.

31. " Sae tak ye gude tent ; mindin, that for thrie year, by nicht and day, I gied mysel nae rest, admonishin ilka ane, wi' tears.

32. " And noo, I gie ye ower to God, and to the word o' his gude favor ; wha is strang to bigg ye up, and to gie you yere portion amang a' that are sanctifly't.

33. " Frae nae ane wad I fain haes had siller, or gowd, or raiment.

34. " Ye ken yersels, that thir vera hauns wrocht sair for my ain necessitie, and for them that war wi' me.

35. " In a' things I gied ye to ken that sae workin it behoves us to gie strenth to the feckless ; and to keep in mind the words o' the Lord Jesu, whan he said, ' Happy, raither, to gie than to get ! ' "

36. And sayin thir things, he bow't his knees, wi' a' o' them, and prayed.

37. And they a' grat sair, and fain on Paul's neck, they tenderly kiss'd him.

38. Carin maist o' a' for what he had said, " Nae mair dae ye see my face ! " And they set him on, the lenth o' the ship.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.

Paul, haurit by the Jews, fa's intil the haunes o' the Romans.

NOO, rivin coorsels awa frae them, we set sail ; and rinnin straucht on, we cam to Cos ; and on the morn to Rhodes ; and free thar to Patara.

2. And findin a ship gann ower to Phenicia, we gaed on board and set sail.

3. Comin in sight o' Cyprus, and leavin it on oor left, we sailed to Syria, and pat intil Tyre ; for thar was the ship to unlade.

¹ V. 28. Tregelles has it, " wee flock."

4. And, lichtin on disciples, we bade thar seeven days: wha war gien Paul warmin, by the Spirit, no to be gaun up till Jerusalem.

5. And whan we had passed the days, gaun forth, we war takin up oor voyage; and they a', wi' wives and weans, convoyed us as far as oot o' the citie; and we loutit doon on oor knees on the sands in prayer;

6. And tore oorsels asunder: and we gaed intil the ship, and they turned back again tae their hames.

7. And finishin oor voyage frae Tyre, we cam alang to Ptolemais; and salutin the brethren, we bade wi' them as day.

8. And on the morn, gann on, we cam till Cesarea; and findin the hoose o' Philip the Evangelist, ane o' the Seven, we bade wi' him.

9. The same had fowr dochters, maidens, wha prophesy't.

10. And still bidin a wheen days, ane cam doon frae Judea, a propheet, by name Agabus.

11. And comin till us, he liftit Paul's girdle, and fankit his ain feet and hauns, and quo' he, "Thir things says the Holie Spirit, 'The man whase aucht this girdle, sal the Jews see bin' in Jerusalem, and gie him intil Gentile hauna.'"

12. And whan we heard thir words, we entreatit him—baith we and thae o' that same place—no to gang up till Jerusalem!

13. Than answer't Paul, and quo' he, "Why wad ye be greetin, and brek my heart! for I staun ready no only to be bon', but e'en to dee, at Jerusalem, for the Lord Jesus Christ!"

14. And see—as he wasna to be perswadit—we quat, sayin, "The Lord's wull be done!"

15. And, efter thae daye, we packed oor luggage, and gaed up till Jerusalem.

16. And thar gaed up wi us some o' the disciples o' Cesarea, and brocht us till aue Mnason, o' Cyprus, an

auld disciple; whaur we war to lodge.

17. And whan we cam till Jerusalem, the brethren war joyfu' to welcome us.

18. And on the morn Paul wad gang in till James; and a' the Elders cam in.

19. And, salutin them, he tallt them a' the things—ane by ane—that God had dune by him amang the Gentiles.

20. And they, hearin, magnifyt God. And quo' they to him, "Ye see, brither, hoo mony myriads war amang the Jews wha believe; and they are a'—to begin wi'—unco fu' o' zeal for the Law.

21. "Noo, they hae been tallt aboot ye, that ye teach a forsakin o' Moses, to a' the Jews that are 'mang the Gentiles; sayin no to circumcissons their bairns, nor walk by the auld customs.

22. "What than wull it be? for they bude hear that ye are come.

23. "See, do this we say: Fowr men are wi' us, wi' a vow on them.

24. "Tak ye thir wi' ye, and be purifyt wi' them, and gie something wi' them, and they sal shave their heids: and a' sal come to ken that the clash they beard aboot ye was naething; but that ye are keepin i' the ranks; mindin weel the Law.

25. "But anent the Gentiles that believe, we hae gien oot and affirmed that they soud gaard their selis anent idol-sacrifice, and blude, and fras stranglit, and fras lecherie."

26. Than Paul, takin wi' him the men the neist day, and bein purifyt wi' them, was gaun intil the Temple to signify the endin o' the days o' purification, till siccan a time as an offeran soud be offer't for ilka ane o' them.

1.V. 23. We kenna gin Paul did weel to tak this advisement. We canna see ony gude that was to come o't. It is a kittie point; and ablin we are wryns no to answer; but juist to think!

27. Whan than the seeven days war nar-haun endit, the Jews fras Asia, seein him i' the Temple, made a tulzie amang the folk, and grippit him.

28. Cryin oot, "Men! Isra'elites! co'way and help! This is the man wha is speakin again the people, and the law, and this place everygat! Aye, and has e'en brocht Greeks intil the Temple, and has profaned this holie place!"

29. For afore this they had seen Trophimus the Ephesian, i' the citie wi' him; and they jaloused he had brocht him intil the Temple.

30. And the haill citie was in a steer; and a' the folk ran thegither, and they harled Paul oot fras the Temple; and a' the doors war stekkit fast.

31. And as they ettied to slay him, news gaed to the chief officer that a' Jerusalem was in a tulzie.

32. Wha at ance takin to him sodgers and captains, ran doon on them. And they, seein the officer and the sodgers, quat clourin Paul.

33. Sae, comin on, the officer laid hand o' him, and order't him to be bund wi' twa chains; and speir't wha he nicht be? and what he had dune?

34. But ane and anither was aye shoutin oot something els i' the thrang. Sae, seein he coudna get to ken for certain, on accoont o' the din, he order't him intil the Castle.

35. But whan they cam to the stairs, it behov't him to be heized up by the sodgers, sae eair was the onset o' the folk.

36. For a' the thrang war comin eftir, and cryin oot, "Awa' wi' him!"

37. And whan he was noo gaun intil the Castle, Paul says to the officer, "May I say something t'ye?" And he said, "Dae ye ken Greek?"

38. "Ye arena, than, yon Egyptian, that afore noo raise a revolt, and took intil the wilderness the four thousand men that war manslayers?"

39. Paul said, "I am a man wha am a Jew, ane o' Tarsus in Cilicia; a citizen o' nae mean citie: and mair, I beg o' ye to let me speak to the folk."

40. And whan he had gien him leesence, Paul, stappin on the stairs, waved his haun to the thrang; and whan a' was quate, he spak to them i' the Hebrew tongue, sayin:

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWA.

Paul's speech: they hear him till he touches their prejudices; and than, nae mair! It is unco like oor ain time!

"MEN, brethren and faithers! Will ye hear my defence afore ye, at this present?"

2. And whan they heard that he spak to them i' the Hebrew speech, they keepit the mair whush't; and he said,

3. "I am a man, a Jew, born in Tarsus o' Cilicia; but brocht up i' this citie, at Gamaliel's feet, strickle trained in a' the auld ways: bein fras the first fu' o' zeal for God, as a' ye are this day.

4. "And I persecutit 'The Way' to the death, grippin and giean ower to dungeons baith men and wee-men.

5. "As e'en the Heigh-priest can witness for me, and a' the Elders: fras wham I get letters to oor brethren, and journey't to Damascus, ettlin to fesh thae wha had gane thar, to Jerusalem, that they woud be dealt wi'.

6. "And it cam aboot as I gaed on, and cam nar to Damascus, aboot noon, on a suddaintie, oot o' the lift, cam an unco licht a' aboot me.

7. "And I fell to the yird; and heard a voice sayin to me, 'Saul! Saul! why soud ye be pursuein me?'

8. "And I answer't, 'Wha art thou, my 'Lord?'" And he said to

¹V. 8. "Lord" here is a term o' great respect: no that Paul, at the time, kent God was speakin to him. He kent that eftir.

me, 'I am Jesus o' Nazareth, that ye are pursuin !'

9. "And thaes wi' me saw in fact the licht, but they kent-na the words o' him speakin to me.

10. "And I speir't, 'What maun I do, my Lord?' But the Lord said to me, 'Up! and gae intil Damascus; and thar ye sal be tell't a' things ye has to do !'

11. "And as I coudna see, for the glorie o' that licht, bein airtit by the hann o' thaes that war wi' me, I gaed intil Damascus.

12. "And ane Ananias, a worshippin man conform to the Law, weel-spoken o' by a' the Jews bidin thar,

13. "Comin in to me, and staunin ower me, says to me, 'Saul! brither! look up!' And I, that vera 'oor, lookit up on him.

14. "And he said, 'Oor faithers' God appointit ye that ye nicht ken his wull, and see the Rightous Ane, and hear words frae his mooth.

15. "'For ye sal be a witness for him, to a' men, o' the things ye haes seen, and did hear.

16. "'And noo why are ye delayin? Rise; be baptizezt, and wesh awa yere sins, prayin to his name !'

17. "And it cam aboot again, when I cam back to Jerusalem, that I fell into a dwaum;

18. "And he was sayin to me, 'Haste ye, and gang oot frae Jerusalem; for they winna tak yere witness o' me !'

19. "And I said, 'Lord, they ken that I pat in dungeons, and cloured i' the kirks, thaes believin on thee !'

20. "And whan Stephen thy martyr's blude was shed, e'en I mysel was staunin by, and approvin; and took charge o' their cleedin wha slew him."

21. "But he said to me, 'Awa! for I wull send ye oot far awa, to the nations !'

22. Noo they hearkened as far as

this word; and than cryt a' oot, sayin, "Awa wi' siccan a ane frae the yirth! for it isna fit he soud leeven!"

23. And as they made an ootery, and rived their manteels, and cuist stoor intil the air,

24. The officer gied orders to fesh him intil the castle; saying he was to be put to the test wi' rods, that he nicht ken why they war in siclike shoutin again him.

25. And as they war tyin him wi' the tows, Paul says to the captain that stnde by, "Is it allowed to ye to clour a man, a Roman, and no condemned?"

26. And whan the captain heard that, he gaed till the chief officer, sayin, "What are ye aboot? For this man is a Roman!"

27. And the officer cam, and quo' be, "Tell me, are ye a Roman?" And he said, "Aye."

28. And the officer said, "I, wi' spendin muckle siller, gat this citizenship." But Paul said, "I was born till't."

29. Than at ance they gaed aff wha soud has putten him to the test: and the officer was fleyt whan he faund he was a Roman, and that he had tied him up.

30. And on the morn, wantin to ken till a cartaintie why he was wytit by the Jews, he lowsed him frae his bonds; and orderin a' the Heigh-priests, and a' their Cooncil, to come thegither, he fesh't Paul doon, and set him in their mida.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-THRIE.

The Cooncil ends in a trials. Plotting again Paul: who is sent on to the Governor.

AND lookin siccarlis at the Cooncil, Paul says, "Men! brethren! I, in a gude conscience, has leev'd on afore God, till this day!"

2. And Ananias, the Heigh-priest, gae orders to them staunin by, to clour him on the mow'.

3. Than Paul said to him, "God sal clour you, ye whithit wa' ! For sit ye thar to judge me by the Law, and gar clour me, contrar to the Law !"

4. But they stannin by said, "Dae ye speak ill o' God's Heigh-priest ?"

5. And Paul said, "I kent-na, brethren, that this was the Heigh-priest ; for it is putten doon, 'O' the Ruler o' yere nation ye are-na to speak ill.'"

6. But whan Paul cam to ken that the ae pairt war Sadducees, and the tither pairt war Pharisees, he cryt oot i' the Cooncil, "Men ! brethren ! I am a Pharisee, and a bairn o' Pharisees ! Avent the hope and Risin-again o' the deid am I quais-ten'd this day !"

7. Noo, whan he had said this, thar was a great fa'in-oot atwixt the Pharisees and Sadducees ; and the thrang was sinder't in twa.

8. For the Sadducees say, "Thar is nae Risin-again, nor ony Angel nor spirit ;" but the Pharisees hand to baith.

9. And thar raise a great cry : and a wheen o' the Writers o' the Pharisees' pairt raise, and contendit, sayin, "We fin' naething wrang wi' this man : aiblins a spirit spak to him ; or an Angel !"

10. And whan a great thrivin took place, the chief officer, fleyt lest Paul sond hae been rived in blads wi' them, order't the sodgers to gae doon and tak him wi' the strang haun, and fesh him intil the castle.

11. But that nicht the Lord stude ower him, and said, "Be o' gude heart, Paul ! for as ye did gie gude witness o' me in Jerusalem, nae mann ye in Rome teatisfy for me !"

12. And whan day cam, the Jews made a plot, and colleagued thegither under a ban, sayin they wad eat-na and drink-na till siccan a time as they had slain Paul.

13. And thar war mair nor forty wha war trytit i' this plot.

14. Wha, comin' to the ¹ Heigh-priests and Eldera, said, "We hae putten oorsels under a great ban, that we wad eat-na nor drink-na till we hae slain Paul.

15. "Noo, than, mak ye it appear to the chief officer—he bringin him doon to ye—that ye are wantin to speir oot some mair anent him : and we, or evir he comes nar, are waitin to kill him."

16. But Paul's nevoy heard o' their plot, and gaed, and cam intil the castle, and tell't it to Paul.

17. And Paul, ca' in in ane o' the captains to him, said, "Tak ye this lad to the chief officer ; for he has a thing to report to him."

18. He, than, takin him wi' him, led him intil the chief officer, and says, "Paul, the prisoner, ca' in me to him, wad hae me fesh this young lad to ye, as haein something to say t'ye."

19. And tha chial officer, took him by the haun, and gaed aside, and speir't at him, "What is't that ye hae to report to me ?"

20. And he said, "The Jews seek that on the morn ye wad bring Paul doon to the Cooncil, as gin they wad speir oot something mair anent him.

21. "But gin ye no in tae them ! for thar are waitin o' them mair nor forty men, wha hae putten their sels under a great ban, to eat-na and drink-na till they hae kill't him : and e'en noo are they waitin, lookin for a promise fras ya."

22. The chief officer than demittit the lad, giean him chairge, "Let nae man ken that ye hae tell't thir things to me !"

23. And ca' in to him twa o' the captains, he said "Mak ready twa

¹ V. 14. We needna ferlie at the Heigh-priests colleaguin wi' murderers, when a hantle o' the same men wad be the ones that fee'd Judas to betray his Lord ! But what an awfu' state o' public morals ! Nae wonder the wrath fell !

unner sodgers, that they may gang the leath o' Cesarea ; and seeventy horsemen : and twa unner spear-men—by nine o'clock.

24. "And provide beans, that, pittin Paul tharon, they may bring him till Felix the Governor."

25. And he wrate a letter thus :

26. "Clandius Lysias, to the maist excellent Governor Felix : gude wises !

27. "This man was grippit by the Jews ; and wad haes been slain by them ; thaam cam I doon wi' a force and rescued him, comin to ken that he was a Roman.

28. "And, desirin to ken for what they war wytin him, I led him doon to their Heigh-Cooncil :

29. "And perceiv't him to be wytit wi' things o' their ain law, but accus't o' naething wordie o' death or bonds.

30. "And whan it was tell't me that thaar was a plot again the man, to be cairryt oot by them, I sent him to you ; telling his accusers that they micht speak afore you again him."

31. Sae the sodgers, as it was order't them, took Paul, and brocht him i' the nicht till Antipatras.

32. But oo the morn, they gaed back to the castle, and loot the horsemen gang on wi' him.

33. Wha, comin till Cesarea, and giean the letter to the Governor, presentit Paul to him.

34. And he, hasin read the letter, and speir't o' what Province he wis, whan he kent he was o' Cilicia,

35. "I wull hear ye," quo' he, "whan yere accusers sal come" ; giean orders he soud be keepit i' tha palace o' Herod, under gaird.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FOUR.

Paul afore Felix.

AND, fyve days aftir, the Heigh-priest cam doon, wi' a wheen o' the Elders ; and a spokesman, ane Tertullus ; and deposed again Paul afore the Governor.

2. And whan he was ca'd, Tertullus begude to mak accusation, sayin, "Inasmuckle as by you we obtein great peace, and gude comes to this nation throwe yere wisdom,

3. "We receive it aye, and in ilka place, maist excellent Felix, wi' a' thanks.

4. "But, that I be-na wearisome t'ye, I entreat ye to hear na, i' yere courtesie, for a wee wheen words.

5. "For, findin this man a pest, and teachin treason amang a' the Jews i' the hale inhabited-world, and a heid ane o' the sect o' the Nazarenes ;

6. "Wha settled to pollute e'en the Temple : him we grippit, and wad haes tried conform to oor Law ;

7. "But the chief officer Lysias cam wi' muckle pooer, and tuik him oot o' oor hannis ;

8. "Orderin his accusers to come to you ; frae wham ye yersel wull be able, on speirin anent a' thir things, to establish wi' accuracy, a' that we wytte him wi'."

9. And the Jews a' joined i' the chairge, threepin that thir things war nae.

10. And whan the Governor had signed for him to speak, Paul answer't, "Inasmuckle as I ken ye haes been thir mony year judgin this nation, I das wi' gude heart mak my defensie,

11. "Seuin that ye may mak oot clearly, that nae mair days are gane nor twal', sin' I gaed up till Jerusalem to worship,

12. "And naither faund they me i' the Temple argle-barglin wi' ony ane, or gaitherin a thrang, nor yet i' the kirks, nor i' the citie.

13. "Nor can they lead prufe o' what they noo wytte me wi'.

14. "But this muckle I confess t'ye, that, conform to 'The Way,' whilk they ca's a Schism, nae das I ser' my faither's God ; hauding fast a' thae things that are putten doon i' the Law and i' the Propheta.

15. "Haein a hope wi' God, whilk

they theirsels hand, that thar sal be a Risin-again baith o' the gude and the ill.

16. "And o' this I am makin a task, to hae a gude conscience aye ; baith toward God and man.

17. "Noo, efter a gude wheen years, I cam to feash aumous to my nation, and offerans :

18. "Amang whilk they faund me, purifyt i' the Temple ; no wi' a' thrang, nor wi' ony steer ;

19. "But a wheen Jews fras Asia made the steer : wha sud hae been here, and makin accusatioo, gin they had ocht again me.

20. "Or lat thir here tell what ill they faund in me, as I stude afore the Cooncil ;

21. "Gin it be-na for this ae thing, whan I cryt oot, staunin amang them, 'Anent the Risin-fras the deid am I wytit afore ye this day ! ' "

22. But Felix delayt them, to hae mair certain knowledge o' "The Way" ; sayin, "Whan Lysias the chief officer sal come doon, I will determine yere maitter."

23. Gien orders to the captain to keep him, and alloo proper freedom, and hinder nane o' his ain acquaintance fras comin to him.

24. And efter a wheen days, Felix cam wi' Drusilla his ain wife, a Jewess ; and sent for Paul, and listened to him anent the faith in Christ.

25. Noo, as he was reasonin o' justness, and self-guidin, and a Judgment to come, Felix was terrifyt, and quo' he, "Gae yere ways enoo ; but whan I fin a 'fit time, I will send for ye."

26. And he was lookin that siller nicht hae been gien him by Paul :

² V. 25. Felix's "fit time" nevir cam, that we ken o'. He heard Paul aft (v. 28) but repentit-na. His name o' blythe import ("happy") was bat a mockery ; oot o' the twa, Paul, shackl't wi' ains, and forfouchten wi' labor, was the happy one !

so he sent for him aftner, and had converse wi' him.

27. But whan twa year had gane by, Felix was succeedit by Portius Festus ; and, to gain favor wi' the Jews, Felix left Paul a prisoner.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-FYVE.

Paul appeals fras Jerusalem to Rome. Better Nero, whose mind had yet to be made up, than the Jewish Cooncil, a' determined on his death !

AND whan Festus was come intil A the Province, efter thrie days, he gied up to Jerusalem.

2. Than the Heigh-priest, and the heid-men o' the Jews, deponed again Paul, and entreaitit him,

3. And socht for thirsels a favor again him ; seekin that he wad send for him to Jerusalem ; hasin a plot to kill him on the way.

4. But Festus answer't, that on the ae haun, Paul was keepit in ward in Cesarea ; and on the ither haun, that he himself was gann doon shortly.

5. "Let them, than," quo' he, "wha hae pocer amang ye, gae doon wi' me, and wytte this man, gin thar be ony wrang in him."

6. And efter he hade amang them no mair than aucht or ten days, he gaed doon to Cesarea ; and on the morn, sittin in judgment, order't Paul to be brocht.

7. And whan he cam, the Jews that had come doon fras Jerusalem stude roond aboot, and led mony andair chairges again Paul, that they coudna mak gude.

8. While Paul defendit himself : "Naither again the Jews' Law, nor again the Temple, nor again Cesar, has I done wrang ava ! "

9. But Festus, willin to do the Jews a favor, answer't Paul, "Are ye ready to gang up to Jerusalem ? thar, anent thir things, to be judged afore me ? "

10. But Paul said, "I am stannin forment Cesar's judgment-seat, whaur I soud staun ; to the Jews I has

dune nae wrang; s'en as ye canna but perceive.

11. "For gin—on the ae haun—I be a wrang-doer, or haes dune ocht wordies o' death, I am ready to dee: or—on the ither haun—gin the things they wyte me wi' are naething, nae man can grant me as a favor to them! I appeal tae Cesar!"

12. Than Festus, whan he had speech wi' his Coonsellers, answer't, "To Cesar ye has appeal'd; to Cesar ye sal gang!"

13. And aftir a wheen days had gane by, Agrippa the King, and Bernice, cam doon to Cesarea, and salutit Festus.

14. And as they bades thar a gude wheen days, Festus laid Paul's case afore the King; and quo' he, "Thar is a particular man left in ward by Felix;

15. "Anent wham, whan I was at Jerusalem, the Reigh-priests and Elders o' the Jews laid information;

16. "To wham I made answer, 'It isna the way o' the Romans to gie up a man as a favor, afore the accused has the accusers face to face, and haes liberty to mak his defences for his sel, anent the wrang he is wytit wi'.'

17. "And eae, wban they war come here, wi' nae delay I sat on the tribunal, and order't the man to be brocht.

18. "Anent wham, whan his accusers stude up, they brocht forrit nae sic ill things as I was lookin for:

19. "But some quaiestens anent their ain worship; and o' a'ne Jesus, wha is deid; but wham Paul threepit was leavin.

20. "And, seein I was dubious aboot sic quaiestens, I speir't at him, 'Gin he wad gang to Jerusalem, and thar be tried concernin the things!'

21. "But as Paul appeal'd to the hearin o' the Emperor, I commandit him to be keepit till sic time as I micht send him up to Cesar."

22. And ¹ Agrippa says to Festus, "I am mindit to hear the man myself!" "The morn," quo' he, "ye sal hear him."

23. Sae, on the morn, whan Agrippa was come, and Bernice, wi' unco display, and war enter't intil the place o' hearin, wi' baith captains o' thosands, and the held men o' the citie, at Festus' orders Paul was brocht oot.

24. And Festus says, "King Agrippa, and a' men here convened, ye see this man, anent wham ains and a' o' the Jews made a plea wi' me, baith in Jerusalem and here, cryin oot that he soudna be alloo'd to leave ony langer.

25. "But I gaither't that naething wordie o' death had he dune. But as this man himsel appealed to the Emperor, I determined to send him.

26. "Anent wham I haes naething certain to write to my lord. Sae I haes brocht him afore you, and mair particularly afore thee, King Agrippa, to the end that frae the examination had, I micht haes something I could write:

27. "For it disna seem reasonable to me, to send a prisoner, and no wi' him the chairges laid again him."

CHAPTIR TWENTY-SAX.

Paul tells hoo he becam a Christian. It affects Agrippa a weel.

THAN Agrippa said, "It is per-
mittit ye to speak anent yersel.
And Paul waved his haun, and
answer't for his sel.

2. "I coont mysel happy, King Agrippa, for that I may mak my defences afore you this day anent the things ² Jews wyte me wi'.

¹ V. 22. This Agrippa had some gude things aboot him: but he had made his wale, and taen the world for his portion, and wadna turn again. There are mony like him!

² V. 2. Afore Agrippa, and mair than ance, Paul says "Jews" (no "the Jews," as tho' his hale nation war again blin). Mony thousands believed (xxi. 20), and mony thochtifs' apes war seekin for licht.

3. "And the mair, as I ken ye are weel-acquaint wi' a' things belangin to the Jews, baith o' customs and o' quairtens. Thus I entreat ye to hear me patiently.

4. "The way o' my life, frae youth, whilk was at first amang my ain folk at Jerusalem, ken a' Jawa.

5. "Inasmuckle as they war takin tent to me frae the first—gin aiblins they war able to testify—that, accordin to the straitest sect o' oor religion, I leevered a Pharisee.

6. "And noo' for a hope o' the promise God made to oor faithers, I am staunin to be judged.

7. "To whilk promise, oor nation o' twal tribes, wi' intensitie o' service, nicht and day, hope to attain: anent whilk promise, O King, I am wytit by Jawa.

8. "What! is it no to be believ'd wi' you, that God raises the deid?

9. "I indeed thocht within mysel that I soud do unco mony things contrar to the name o' Jesus o' Nazareth.

10. "Whilk I did in Jerusalem; and mony o' the saunts barred I in dungeons, receivin authoritie frae the Heigh-priests; and whan they war putten to deid, I gied my vote again them.

11. "And, takin vengeance on them often, in a' the kirks, I strave to mak them blasphemie; and bein uncolie enraged again them, I pursued them the lenth o' foreign cities.

12. "And inasmuckle as I was gaun to Damascus, wi' authoritie and orders frae the Heigh-priest,

13. "At middle-day, on the road, I saw, O King, frae the lift, aboon the splendor o' the sun, a licht that lowed roond aboot me, and them that gaed wi' me;

14. "And whan we had a' faun to the yird, I heard a voice speakin to me i' the Hebrew tongue, 'Saul! Saul! why are ye pursuin me? It is ill for ye to kick again the prods!'

15. "And I said, 'Wha are you, my Lord?' And he says, 'I am Jesus, wham ye are pursuin!'

16. "'But rise ye, and staun on yere feet; for to this end has I appear't to ye; to fit ye to be a helper and a witness, baith o' what ye has seen, and i' thae things I sal appear tye:'

17. "'Deliverin ye frae amang the folk, and frae the nations, amang wham I am sendin ye forth.'

18. "'To unsteek their een, that they may turn them aboot frae the wirk intil the licht, and frae Sautan's rule to God; that they may haes their sins forgi'en, and haes their lot amang them wha are sanctify't by faith in me.'

19. "Wharfor, King Agrippa, I wasna dour anent the heevenlie vision:

20. "But made kent to a' thae in Damascus first, and in Jerusalem, and to a' the pairts o' Judea as weel, and to a' the nations, that they soud repent and turn to God, doin warkis wordie o' their repentance.

21. "On account o' thir things, Jawa, grippin me i' the Temple, etlit to slay me wi' their ain hauna.

22. "See than, haesin help o' God, to this day I staun, bearin witness baith to sma' and great; sayin nae ither word than thae things that baith the prophets and Moses said soud come;

23. "That the Christ bude suffer, gin he (foremaist o' thae that soud rise frae the deid!) wad declare licht baith to the folk and to the nations!"

24. But while he was sayin thir thing in his defensa, Festus, cryin oot, says, "Ye are wud, Paul! Yerelear is garrin ye be dementit!"

25. But quo' Paul, "I am-na wud, maist noble Festus! but declarations o' truth and o' a soond mind am I settin forth!"

26. "For weel kens the King aboot thir things; afore wham e'en wi' a' freedom am I speakin: for I

am no perswadit that ony o' thae things haes escapit him ; for this wasna done hidlin.

27. "Hae ye faith, King Agrippa, in the prophets ? I ken ye haes faith !"

28. And Agrippa says to Paul, "Wi' a wec fleochin think ye to mak me a Christian ?"

29. And Paul : "I wad pray to God, that wi' little or muckle, no only yersel, but a' that hear me this day, might come to be sic sort as I am—barrin thir shackles !"

30. And the King rase, and the governor, and Bernice as weel, and they that sat wi' them.

31. And haein withdrawn, they spak among their sels, sayin, "This man dis naething wordie o' shackles or dungeon !"

32. And Agrippa said to Festus, "This man could haes been set free, gin he hadna appealed to Caesar !"

CHAPTIR TWENTY-SEEVEN.

Paul, and the ship, and the sea ; o' the house o' God's log ! But the storm ends ; and what God will comes to pass.

AND whan it was settl't that we war to sail to Italy, they gied ower Paul and a wheen ither prisoners to a captain by name Julius, o' Augustus' hand.

2. And, gaun on board a ship o' Adramyttium, aboot to be sailin for the seaports o' Asia, we pat to sea ; Aristarchus, a Macedonian o' Thessalonica bein wi' ua.

3. And on the morn we pat into Sidon ; and Julius courteouslie treatin Paul, gied him liberty to gang to his freende and be enteen'd.

4. And free thar we pat oot to sea, and sailed to the lea o' Cyprus, for that the win' was contrar.

5. And, sailiu ower the sea aff Cilicia and Pamphylia, we cam to Myra, o' Lycia.

6. And thar, the captain fin'in an Alexandrian ship gaun to Italy, pat us on board her.

7. But, for a gude wheen days, gaun cannilia, and wi' some fresh winnin forment Ouidus—the win' no allooin us to reach thar—we sailed beneath the lee o' Crete, ower forment Salmone.

8. And wi' muckle wark coastin on, we cam till a particular place ca'd "Fair Havens," nar whilk was a citie, Lasea.

9. But a gude space o' time bein taen up, and sailin bein noo dangerous—for the Fast was e'en noo gane by—Paul gied them advisement,

10. Saying to them, "Sirs, I see that the voyage wull be wi' skraith and muckle loss, no alone to the lade and the ship, but eke o' our lives."

11. But the captain took mair tent to what the ship-master and the owner said, than to the things spoken by Paul.

12. And mair : the harbor no bein safe to winter in, the feck o' them gied advice to set sail oot, gin by ony means they might abline mak Phenice ; thar to winter : whilk is a harbour o' Crete, as ane looks ¹ Sou'-wast and Nor'-wast.

13. Noo, a south win softly blawin, thinkin they had gotten what they wantit, weighin the anchor, they sailed alang Crete, nar to the shore.

14. But no lang eftir, thar struck her a win', a tornado, ca'd "The East-Nor'-Easter" ;

15. And the ship, bein flaunchtit awa, and no bein able to look the win' i' the face, we gied her up, and war carryt alang.

16. And rinnin beneath the lea o' a sma' island ca'd Clanda, we war jimpily able to secure the boat.

17. Whilk haein taen up, they war uin halps, frappin the ship : and jalouin they might be cuisten on the Great Quicksand, they loot the veschel gang ; sas thae war carryt alang.

¹ V 12. The harbor is really open to the East, and beildit fras the West : but the sailors look to "the Sou'-wast and Nor'-wast" as they come intil't.

18. But, bein uncolic tossed wi' the tempest, on the morn they begude to fling the ladin overboard;

19. And on the third, the tacklin o' the ship.

20. But naither sun nor stars blinkin on us for mony days, and an unco storm lyin on us, at the end a' hope o' bein deliver't was gane.

21. But whan they had been lang wantin meat, Paul, stannin amang them said, "Sirs, ye sond haes listen't tae me, and no haes been settin sail frae Crete, to win this skaithe and loss.

22. "And, at this present, I coonsel ye to be o' gude heart; for loss o' life thar sal be nane amang ye; but the loss o' the ship.

23. "For ane stude by me this nicht, an Angel o' God, whase I am, and to wham I pay service,

24. "Sayin, 'Fear-ye-na, Paul! Afore Cesar ye sal staun: and be-hauld! God has gien to ye a' them that sail w'ye.'

25. "Sae, be o' gude heart, Sirs! for I haes faith in God that sae it sal be—i' the way tell't to me:

26. "Tho' on a particular island we man be wreck't."

27. But whan the fourteenth nicht was noo come, as we war driven aboot in Adria, aboot the midnight the sailors jaloused that some kintra was drawin nar-haun.

28. And soondin, they faund it twenty faddoms; and gaun a wee on, and soondin again, they faund fifteen faddoms.

29. And, dreidin they nicht ablinns be wreck't in some rocky bit, they cuist four anchors oot o' the stern, and wish't for the day.

30. But whan the sailors war seekin to escape oot o' the ship, and had loutit doon the boat intil the sea, as gin they wad tak oot anchor frae the bow,

31. Paul says to the captain, and to the sodgers, "Gin thaes bide-na i' the ship, ye canna be deliver't!"

32. Than the sodgers cast awa the tons o' the boat, and loot her fa' aff.

33. And till siccan a time as the dawin cam, Paul was entreatin them a' to tak meat, sayin, "A fourteenth day, this day, are ye makin, wantin meat, and gien yersels naething;

34. "Sae, I entreat ye, tak some meat; for this is for yere gude; for no a hair o' the heid o' ony o' ye sal perish!"

35. And haein said thir things, he took a laif, and gied thanks to God afore them a', and breckin it, begude to eat.

36. And sae, takin up gude heart, they theirsels took meat.

37. Noo we war—the hait number o' souls i' the ship—twa bunner and seaventy-sax.

38. And whan they had eaten eneuch, they eased the ship, thrawin oot the wheat intil the sea.

39. And whan the day cam, they didna ken the lan', but takin tent o' a particular cove, wi' a strand, they war etlin, gin it war possible, to drive the ship in.

40. And, cuttin awa the anchors, they loot them gang intil the sea; and lowsin the lashin o' the rudders, and heizin up the foresail to the gale, they held for the strand.

41. But, fa'in intil a place whaur twa currents met, they ran the ship a-grun': the bow remained fast, and was immovable; but the stern brak intil pieces wi' the onset o' the waves.

42. Noo, the sodgers etted to slay the prisoners, sae that nane o' them soud soom oot and get awa.

43. But the captain, wha desir't to deliver Paul, keepit them frar their intention, and direckit thaes that could soom—pittin aff first—to get to the lan'.

44. And the lave, some on deals, and some on ither things o' the ship. And sae it cam aboot, that a' war brocht safely throwe to the lan'.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-AUCHT.

Paul lands at Malta: and i' the end, wins to the citie o' the Emperor: (and beyle to the citie o' the great King!)

AND whan we had gotten safely A throwe, thau we kent that the island was ca'd Melita.

2. And the barbaric folk schawed us unco kindness; for they luntit a fire, and took us in, on accoont o' the rain that set in, and the cauld.

3. But whan Paul had gaither't some eldin, and had putten it on the fire, a viper cam oot wi' the heat, and grippit on his haun.

4. And whan the folk saw the beas' hingin fras bis haun, they said ane to anither, "To a certaintie this man is a murderer; and tho' he has escapit the sea, yet Justice suffers nae to leve!"

5. Natherless, he sheuk aff the beas' until the lowe, and gat nae skaith:

6. Tho' they war lookin that he wad haes swallowed, or fann doon doid. But whan they had waitit a lang time, and naething gaed wrang wi' him, they changed their minde, and quo' they, "He is a god!"

7. Neo, i' thae pairts was the estate o' the heid man o' the isle, by name Publius; wha made us welcome, and enterteened us thrie days wi' a' courtesie.

8. But sae it was, that Publius' faither was ill o' a fivver and a bluidie lax; and Paul, comin in, laid his hauns on him and prayed, and healed him.

9. And whan this had taen place, the ither wha i' the isle had illnesses, cam forrit, and war healed;

10. Wha, too, wi' mony kindnesses favor't us; and whan we sailed awa, they press't on us sic things as we miecht need.

11. And aftir thrie months we set sail in a ship that had been winterin i' the isle, an Alexandrian ship, wi' an ensign, "The Twin-Brithers."

12. And ca'in in at Syracuse, we staid thar thrie days;

13. And fras thar, wi' a sweep we cam roond to Rhegium; and aftir as day a South wind raise, and on the second day we was to Puteoli;

14. Whaur we faund brethren, and war entreatit o' them to bide seiven days; and me toward Rome we gaed.

15. And whan fras thar the brethren heard tell o' us, they cam oot to meet us the leath o' "Appiï Forum" and "Thrie Tavernis"; and seein them Paul bless'd God, and took heart.

16. And whan we war enter't Rome, Paul had leesance to bide by himself, wi' a sodger wha had ward o' him.

17. And it cam aboot, aftir thrie days, he ca'd thegither to him the heid men o' the Jews; and whan they had forgather't, he said to them. "Men! brethren! I, haes in dune naething contrar to oor folk, or the customs o' oor faithers, was gien up oot o' Jerusalem to the Romans.

18. "Wha, examinin me, wad haes releas't me, for that thar was no a cause o' death in me.

19. "But as the Jews protestit, I bude to appeal to Cesar—no as gin I had ocht again my ain nation.

20. "And sae I haes sent for ye, to see and speak wi' ye; for it is for the Hope o' Isra'el this chain dae I bear!"

21. But they said to him, "We oorsels naither had letters aboot ye fras Judea, nor did ony o' the brethren come and report ony ill o' ye.

22. "But we wad ye soud gis us yere mind; for anent this Sect, it is kent to us that it is on every-haun condemned."

23. Sae, hacin set a day, a hantle o' them cam to him at his lodgin; and to them he expouned, testifyin o' the kingdom o' God, and pereswadin them anent Jesus, baith fras Moses and the prophets, fras the dawin to the gloamin.

24. And some war perswadit o' the things he spak ; and others war dour.

25. And 'green-na amang their sels, they retir't ; Paul gien them ae word : "Weel said the Holie Spirit by Eealah the Prophet to yere faithers, sayin :

26. " 'Gang yere ways to this folk, and say, Wi' hearin ye sal hear, and no comprehend ; and seein, sal ye see, and no behankd ;

27. " 'For gross has this folk's heart become ; and wi' dour lugs they hear-na ; and their een has they steekit ; least they soud see wi' their een, and hear wi' their lugs, and wi' their heart understand, and soud turn again, and I soud heal them.'

28. "Be it kent to ye, than, that this salvation o' God is offer't to the nations ; and they wull hear it ! "

29. And when he had said this, the Jews gaed awa, and had unco argie-barglin amang their sels.

30. And he was a hale ¹ twa-year in his ain hired dwallin, and weel comed a' that cam in to him.

31. Settin forth the kingdom o' God, and exponin the things anent the Lord Jesus Christ, wi' a' freedom o' speech, nane hinderin him.

¹ V. 30. Luke breaks off the history sudainlie : nae doot he carry't it on till the day he quist writin ; tho' he dinna tell us what cam o' Paul.

CHAPTR TWENTY-AUCHT.

Paul lands at Malta: and i' the end, wins to the citie o' the Emperor: (and believe to the citie o' the great King!)

AND whan we had gotten safely a throwe, than we kent that the island was ca'd Melita.

2. And the barbaric folk schawed us unco kindness; for they luntit a fire, and took us in, on acoont o' the rain that set in, and the cauld.

3. But whan Paul had gaither't some eldin, and had putten it on the fire, a viper cam oot wi' the heat, and grippit on his haun.

4. And whan the folk saw the beas' hingin fras bis haun, they said ane to anither, "To a certaintie this man is a murderer; and tho' he has escapit the sea, yet Justice suffers nae to levee!"

5. Nathelless, he cheuk aff the beas' until the lowe, and gat nae skaith:

6. Tho' they war lookin that he wad hae swallowed, or fann doon doid. But wban they had waitit a lang time, and naething gaed wrang wi' him, they changed their minda, and quo' they, "He is a god!"

7. Noo, i' thase pairts was the estate o' the heid man o' the isle, by name Publius; wha made us welcome, and enterteened us thrie days wi' a' courtesie.

8. But sae it was, that Publius' faither was ill o' a fivver and a bludie lax; and Paul, comin in, laid his hauns on him and prayed, and healed him.

9. And wban this had taen place, the itheris wha i' the isle had illnesses, cam forrit, and war healed;

10. Wha, too, wi' mony kindnesses favor't us; and whan we sailed awa, they press't on us sic things as we micht need.

11. And aftir thrie monthe we set sail in a ship that had been winterin i' the isle, an Alexandrian ship, wi' an ensign, "The Twin-Birthers."

12. And ca'in in at Syracuse, we staid thar thrie days;

13. And fras thar, wi' a sweep we cam roond to Rhegium; and aftir se day a South wind raise, and on the second day we was to Puteoli;

14. Whaur we fann'd brethren, and war entreatit o' them to bide seeven days; and me toward Rome we gaed.

15. And whan fras thar the brethren heard tell o' us, they cam oot to meet us the leath o' "Appii Forum" and "Thrie Tavernis"; and seein them Paul bless'd God, and took heart.

16. And whan we war enter't Roma, Paul had leassance to bide by himself, wi' a sodger wha had ward o' him.

17. And it cam aboot, aftir thrie days, he ca'd thegither to him the heid men o' the Jews; and whan they had forgather't, he said to them. "Men! brethren! I, hae'in dune naething contrar to oor folk, or the customs o' oor faithers, was gien up oot o' Jerusalem to the Romans.

18. "Wha, examinin me, wad hae releas't me, for that thar was no a cause o' death in me.

19. "But as the Jews protestit, I bude to appeal to Cesar—no as gin I had ocht again my ain nation.

20. "And sae I hae sent for ye, to see and speak wi' ye; for it is for the Hope o' Isral this chain das I bear!"

21. But they said to him, "We oorsels naither had letters aboot ye fras Judea, nor did ony o' the brethren come and report ony ill o' ye.

22. "But we wad ye soud gie us yere mind; for anant this Sect, it is kent to us that it is on every-haun condemned."

23. Sae, hacin set a day, a hantle o' them cam to him at his lodgin; and to them he expouned, testifyin o' the kingdom o' God, and perswadin them anent Jesus, baith fras Moses and the prophets, fras the dawin to the gloamin.

and birds, and four-fittit beass, and crawlin things.

24. Sae God s'en gied them ower to vileness, i' the uncleanness o' their hearts ; sae as s'en to dishonour their sin bodies amang theirsels :

25. Wha trokit awa God's truth for a lee, and gied worship and service to what is made, raither than to the Maker—wha is blessed for aye ; Amen !

26. Sae for this, God gied them up to vile passions ; for s'en their weemen did change the nat'ral use for what is contrar to natur ;

27. And s'en sae the men, quattin the wumman, burned wi' desire ane to anither ; men wi' men actin unseemly, and receivin in theirsels the reward o' their error as was due.

28. And s'en as they didna seek to keep God i' their mind, God gied them ower to a reprobate heart, to do things no fittin :

29. Bein fu' o' a' unholiness, wickedness, selliness, malignity ; fu' o' envie, blude, strife ; twa-faced ; spitesfu' ; tale-pyets ;

30. Backbiters, haters o' God, insolent, liftit-up, boasters, inventors o' ill, risin up again parents,

31. Wantin sense, breakers o' covenants, wantin nat'ral affection, wantin kindness ;

32. Wha, kennin the holie sentence o' God, that they wha dae sic things are wordis o' death, no slane dae them, but are colleaguin wi' thae that sae practees.

CHAPTIR TWA.

God's even-handit justice, to Jew and Gentile alike : as law and as judgment for a'.

SAE, ye are s'en wantin a' excuse, O man ! whaever ye may be, that are condemnin ; for whaur ye are condemnin anither, ye are condemnin yersel ; for ye wha are wytin are siclike doin.

2. But we ken that the judgment o' God is true, on thae practeesin sic things as thir.

3. And are ye lippenin to this, O man ! wha are condemnin thae that practees sic things as thir, and yet are doin them, that ye sal escape the judgment o' God ?

4. Or, dae ye liethlie the unkindness, and forbearin, and langtholin o' God ; no takin tent that God's gudeness wad fain lead ye to repentance ?

5. But, wi' yere dour and unrepentin heart, ye are beapin up for yersel wrath in wrath's day, and the schawin-forth o' God's richtons condemnation :

6. Wha will gie to ilk ane s'en as his warks sal be ;

7. To thae, on the ae-haun, wha by patient continuin in gude warks, seek for glorie, honor, and immortality—life eternal :

8. To thae, on the ither haun, wha contend, and follow-na the truth, but follow ill—anger and wrath.

9. Dool and pain on ilka man's saul wha works oot ocht that is ill, baith to the Jew first, and eke to the Greek :

10. But glorie, and honor, and peace, to ilka ane wha dis that whilk is gude ; baith to the Jews first, and eke to the Greek.

11. For thar is nae walin-oot o' faces wi' God !

12. For as mony as has sinned, wantin the law, sal eke perish wantin the law ; and as mony as has sinned aneath the law, sal be condemned aneath the law.

13. For it isna thae that hear the law that staun richt wi' God ; but thae wha do the law sal be approuv'd.

14. For whan frem'd folk, thae wha has nae law, do by natur the warks o' the law—thir, wantin the law, are to thirsels a law :

15. Wha in vera deed gie prufe o' the law's wark, whilk is graven on their hearts ; their conscience giean testimonie in their thoichts, by ex-cusin or else wytin them,

16. In the day whan God sal judge

a' the secrets o' men, throws Jesus Christ, s'en accordin to my joyful message.

17. But if ye, ca' in yersel a "Jew," stann on "Law," and boast in God,

18. And ken his wull, and appruve the best things, and haes yere leair i' the Law,

19. And are perswadit that ye are yersel a leader o' blin' anea, a leicht to a' i' the mirk,

20. A guide for ignorant anea, a teacher o' bairns, haecin the shapin o' leair and truth in the Law:

21. Ye, than, that tell anither ! why dae-ye-na tell yersel ? Ye that are sayin, "Ane soudna steal !" dae ye steal ?

22. Ye that bid men no to commit adultery ; dae ye commit adultery ? Ye that scunner at eidola, dae ye rob the temples ?

23. Ye that haes yere boast i' the "Law," dae ye brek the Law, and dishonor God ?

24. For the name o' God, on yere account, is dishonored amang the nations ; s'en as it has been putten doon.

25. For, on the ae-haun, circumcision is a gain, gin ye are keepin the Law ; but, on the ither haun, gin ye be a breker o' the Law, than yere circumcision has come to be uncircumcision !

26. Gin aiblins then, the uncircumcised keep the holie biddens o' the Law, winna the uncircumcession be coontit as circumcision ?

27. And the uncircumcession o' natur, gin it carries oot the Law, sal condemn yon, wha wi' the letter and circumcision, brek throwe the law !

28. For he isna the "Jew," wha is but 'ane ootwardly ; nor is circumcision whilk is seen i' the flesh, the "Circumcession !"

29. But be is the "Jew" wha is ane within ; and true circumcision

is the circumcision o' the heart—in spirit, no in name, whase acceptanc isna o' men, but o' God.

CHAPTR THRIE.

The Law that condemns ; and the Gospel that saves.

WHAT way, than, is the Jew heigher ? or what gets he oot o' his circumcision ?

2. Muckle a' ways ; first this, that they war gien the word o' God.

3. For what gin some o' them had doots ? Sal their doots mak in vain lippenin to God ?

4. Never ! But lat God be true and ilka man a leear ; s'en as it is putten doon, "To the end thy words soud be uphauden, and thou soud prevail whan thou contends."

5. But gin oor wrang maks God's truth shine, what sal we say ? Is God wrang wha punishes ?—I am speakin as a man :

6. Far fras it ! Or hoo sond God judge the world ?

7. But gin God's truth appeared greater, to his glorie, by reason o' my leean, am I ony mair, as a sinner, to be condemned ?

8. And why no ? Juist as some slander us, and report us as sayin, "Lat us do ill, that gude may come !" whase condemnation is richt.

9. Weel, what than ? Are we heildin oorsels ? No the least ! for we haes already chaiged baith Jews and Greeks o' bein aneath sin ;

10. E'en as it is putten doon : "Thar is nane holie ; na, no ane !

11. "Thar is nane wyss ; thar is nane seekin oot God.

12. "They are a' gane a-gley ; they are a'thegither feckless ; thar is nane schawin love, no muckle as ane.

13. "Their hanis is like an open shenagh ; wi' their tongues they haes used doobleness ; the venom o' the asp is aneath their lips.

14. "Whase mou' is fu' o' baunin and bitterness.

¹ V. 28. Jews and Gentiles are a' ane afore God : his speirin is, "Hae ye faith, O man ?"

15. "Glegg are their feet to spill blude;

16. "Destroyis and sorrowis are i' their way-gaun;

17. "And a way-gaun o' peace hae they never kent.

18. "Nae fear o' God is afore their een."

19. Noo we ken that whatsoe'er the Law says, it says it to thae that are beneath the Law; see that ilka mou' may be stoppit, and the hail world may come beneath the judgments o' God.

20. Inasmuckle as by warks o' Law, sal nae flesh be made richtous in his sicht; for throwe the Law is the unveilin o' sin.

21. But noo, a' thegither sindry fras the Law, a richtousness o' God has been set forth, bein uphauden by the Law and the prophets;

22. E'en a richtousness o' God tbrowe faith in Jesus Christ, comin to a' wha hae faith; for a' are aye;

23. For a' hae sinned, and a' fail o' the glorie o' God;

24. Bein held richtous, freely, throwe hie ain favor, by the redeemin o' Christ Jesus;

25. Wham God set forth as oor coverin-ower, by faith in his blude; for the settin forth o' his richtousness to the passin-by o' oor suld sins,

26. To schaw the gudeness o' God, in his tholin at this time; to the end he might be richtous his sel, while declarin richtous the man wha believes in Jesus.

27. Whaur comes in gloryin, than? It is putten awa! On whatna principle? O' warks! Nay! But throwe the principle o' faith.

28. We are reckonin, than, that a man is held richtous by faith, sindry fras the warks o' the Law.

29. Or, is God the God o' Jews only? no o' the Nations as weel? Aye! eke o' the Nations!

30. Gin at least he be the God,

wha wull justify the circumceesion for their faith, and the uncircumceession by like faith!

31. Are we, than, makin the Law naething? No me! On the contrar, we are makin siecar the Law.

CHAPTR FOWR.

Abra'm and his faith: while we wad do weel to follow.

WHATNA than sal we say that Abr'am oor faither i' the flesh has gotten?

2. For gin Abra'm, by his warks, was acceptit as richtous, he had fundation for gloryin: yet no afore God.

3. For what is putten doon i' the buik? "Abr'am lippened God; and it was set doon as richtousness."

4. But to him wha works, the reward iena coontit by way o' favor, but by way o' debt.

5. While to him wha works-na, but lippens him wha justifies the ungodly—the faith o' him is coontit as richtousness.

6. E'en as Dauid schaws the weel-bein o' the man to wham God coonta richtousness, sindry fras warks:

7. "Happy they whase ill-deedinesses are forgi'en, and whase sins are happyt ower!

8. "Happy is the man whase sin the Lord diana haud again him!"

9. Comes than this blessain on the circumceession? or on the uncircumceession as weel? For we are sayin that "faith" was coontit to Abr'am as "richtousness."

10. Hoo than was it coontit? Whan in circumceession? or in uncircumceession? No in circumceession, but in uncircumceession!

11. And he was gien the sign o' circumceession, a seal o' the faith-richtousness he had in his uncircumceession: see that he might be the

1 V. 11. Tak tent hoo he proves faith to be the door to God; and no circumceession proves it e'en by Abra'm his sel!

great heid o' a' wha has faith while in their uncircumcession, that richtousness soud be coontit to them ;

12. And the great heid o' circumcession to them wha not only has circumcision, but wha follow the steps o' oor faither Abr'am in his uncircumcession.

13. For it wasna throws the Law that the promise was gien to Abra'm or to his seed, aent bein the heir o' the warld ; but throws the richtousness o' faith.

14. For gin they wha are o' "Law" war heirs, "faith" has failed ; and the promise has come to nocht !

15. For the law schaws wrath ; but whaur thar is nae law, thar is nae brekin o't.

16. Sae it is o' faith, that it may be by favor, in order that the promise may be siccar till a' the seed : no to that o' the law only, but ake to that o' the Abr'am-faith, wha is the great heid o' us a' ;

17. (E'en as it is putten doon, "The great heid o' mony nations has I made thee,") afore God wham he believed : e'en him wha raises the deid, and ca's things that are-na e'en as gin they war :

18. Wha, whan hope was gane, on hope held fast, that he might become faither o' mony nations ; e'en as it was spoken, "Sae sal be thy seed!"

19. And mainteenin strang his faith, he lookit-na on his ain body as bein dsid — bein e'en about a hunner-year-auld — nor Sarah's womb as deid ;

20. But lookin on the promise o' God, he becam strang in faith, and awither't-na wi' disbelief, giean glorie to God ;

21. And siccar i' the belief that what he had promised he was strang to perform :

22. And sas it was coontit to him for richtousness.

23. But it wasna for him alone that this was sae coontit to him ;

24. But ake for oor sakes, to wham it was to be coontit ; to us wha pit oor faith in him wha raised Jesus oor Lord frae the deid ;

25. Wha was deliver't up for oor sins, and was raised again for oor justifyin.

CHAPTR FYVE.

Receivin the Atonement. The ae sin that brocht in death, and the ae Offeran that brocht in life.

DEIN than coontit richtous by D faith, lat us has peace in God, by oor Lord Jeans Christ ;

2. By wham is the introducin we hae had, by oor faith, intil this favor in whilk we staun : and lat us rejoice i' the hope o' God's glorie.

3. And no this alone, but e'en rejoice in oor troubles ; kennin that troubles work oot lang-tholin ;

4. And lang-tholin, testin ; and testin, hope :

5. And hope maks-na ashamed ; for that God's love has been abed abreid in oor hearts throws the Holie Spirit gien to us.

6. For, we yet bein feckless, Christ in due season dee't for the ungodlie.

7. Far jimpily wad ony ane dee for an upright man ; yet siblins for a holie man ane might e'en daur death ;

8. But God commands his ain love to us, in that e'en while we war yet in sin, Christ dee't for us.

9. Muckle mair, than, bein noo coontit richtous throws his blude, we sal be sav't frae the wrath throws him.

10. For gif, bein faec, we war reconcilt to God throws his Son's death, hoo muckle mair — bein noo reconcilt — sal we be sav't in his life ?

11. And no only sae, but, rejoicin in God, throws oor Lord Jesus Christ ; throws wham, at this present, we receive the reconciliation.

12. For this reason — Juist as sin cam intil the warld throws as man,

and throwe sin death ; and sae to a' men death cam, for a' sinned :

13. For to the Law, sin was i' the wairld (but sin isna coontit up, gin thar war nae Law) ;

14. But death had pooer fras Adam doon to Moses, e'en ower thae wha hadnna sinned ¹ like to the sin o' Adam—wha is a likeness o' the Comin Ane.

15. But no as the fault, was the gift o' the favor : for gin by the fault o' aye, mony dee't ; mair was the favor o' God, and the free gift ; the favor o' the ae man, Jesus Christ, was mair sufficin' for the mony.

16. And no as throwe aye that sinned is the free gift. For the judgment was to condemnation on acoont o' aye fault ; whauras the lovin-favor is by mony faults to justification.

17. For gin throwe the fault o' aye, death had pooer throwe that aye—muckle mair they wha receive the unco plenitude o' the favor, and has gien to them the free gift o' richtousness, sal has pooer in life throwe Ane—Jesus Christ.

18. And sae—as throwe the aye fault, condemnation cam on a' men, sae throwe ae richtousness establish't, the free gift comes to a' men.

19. For e'en as throwe the disobedience o' ae man, the mony war coontit as sinners—sae throwe the obedience o' aye sal the mony be coontit richtous.

20. But Law cam in, that the offence might be seen to exceed : but whaur offences exceedit, the tender-love muckle mair exceedit.

21. That, e'en as sin had pooer, in death, sae tender-love soud has pooer, throwe richtousness, to Eternal Life, throwe Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAPTR SAX.

Deid to oor auld life is sin ; but leevin to the new life is Christ.

WHAT, than, are we to say ? Are we to gang on in sin, that mair tender-love may be seen ?

2. Awa wi' it ! Hoo sal we, wha dee't to sin, be leevin ony lang'r in't ?

3. Ken-ye-na that a' we wha war baptieer't intil Jesus Christ, war baptieer't intil his death ?

4. We wi' him war bury't, than, in oor baptiezin intil his death ; see that e'en as Christ was raised up fras 'mang the deid by the glorious pooer o' the Faither, sae we in the new life micht walk !

5. For, gin we hae been aye wi' him i' the image o' his death, nae doot sae sal we be i' the image o' his Risin-again.

6. Tak tent o' this, that oor auld man was wi' him crucify't, see that the body o' sin micht perish, that we soud ser' sin nae mair.

7. For he that has dee't, is quat o' sin.

8. Noo, gin we dee't wi' Christ, we threep that we sal e'en leeven wi' him ;

9. Kennin, that Christ, hein raised up fras the deid, dees nae mair : death has nae pooer ower him.

10. For the death that he dee't, he dee't to sin ² ance for a' ; but noo that he leeven, he leaves to God.

11. And sae you yersels coont yersels as deid to sin, but leevin to God, in Christ Jesus.

12. Dinna lat sin, than, has pooer i' yere deedin body, to gar ye mind its craikin ;

13. Nor gie ower yere pooers, as instruments o' wickedness, to sin ; but gie ower yersels to God, as gin leevin fras amang the deid ; and yere pooers as instruments o' holiness to God.

¹ V. 14. Some tak this to mean was beairns ; but we rather tak it as referrin to outrageous and wilfu' sins like Adam's. A' sins are ill enough ; but some are waur than the lava.

² V. 10. Ance for a' occasion, and ance for a' time : a thing that never needs to be repeatit.

14. For sin sal nae mair has pouer ower ye ; for ye are-na aneath the Law, but aneath Free-Favor.

15. And what than ? Are we to sin, for that we are-na aneath the Law, but aneath Free-Favor ? Far free that !

16. Div ye no ken, that to the aye ye are giean yersels ower to obey as servants, servants dae ye become to wham ye gie obedience : whether aiblins it be o' sin, to death ; or obedience, to holiness.

17. But thanks to God ! that bein been Sin's servants, ye gied obedienceoot o' the heart to yon form o' leair intil whilk ye war shapit ;

18. And, bein set free fras sin, ye war made into servants to Holiness.

19. I speak but as a man, for the waufulness o' yer flesh ; for e'en as ye gied ower yere pouers as servants to vileness, and lawlessness for lawlessness—sae, noo, gie ower yere pouers as servants to Holiness, for yore perfection !

20. For whan ye war Sin's servants, ye had naither airt nor pairt in holiness.

21. What frute had ye than, i' yon things ye are noo ashamed o' for the end o' sic is death !

22. But noo, bein set free fras sin, and made servants to God, ye hae frute to sanctification ; and at the lang-last, Eternal Life !

23. For the fee o' sin is death ; but God's gree is Eternal Life, in Jesus Christ, oor Lord !

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Mair about drein and leevin. The Law is richt, tho' it schaws us to be wrang.

KEN-YE-NA, brethren (for to sic as are leal to the Law am I speakin), that the Law has pouer ower a man for siccan a time as the lenth o' his life !

2. For the wumman mairry't to a husband is bund by law as lang as he leaves ; but gin aiblins the husband

dee, she has fu' libertie fras the rule o' her husband.

3. And eae, her husband leevin, gin she become anither man's, she wad be ca'd "adulteress" ; but gin aiblins the husband dee, she is free fras the rule, eae as to be nae adulteress, e'en tho' she become anither man's.

4. Sae than, my brethren, ye too war brocht to death throws the body o' Christ ; to the end ye might become anither's—his wha was raised fras the deid ; that we soud bring forth frute to God.

5. For whan we war in the flesh, thae passions o' sin, excited by the Law, wrocht in oor pouers, to bring forth frute to death.

6. But noo we are discharged fras tho Law, bein deid as to that by whilk we war hauden siccar ; sae that we might gie service in a new spirit, and no in the anld formality.

7. What, than, are we to say ? that the Law is sinfu' ? Far free it ! On the contrar, I had ne'er taen tent o' sin, gin it warna by the Law. For I hadna ony thocht o' covetin, gin the Law haiven said, "Ye sanna covet !"

8. But sin, makin an occasion, wrocht in me throws the commandment a' mainner o' covetousness. For, sindry fras the Law, sin was deid.

9. I mysel was leevin ance, sindry fras the Law. But the commandment cam, and sin lap to life, and I dee't.

10. And the commaun' — that whilk was to be for life—I fann'd to be, for me, death !

11. For sin, makin occasion o' the commaun', clean deceiv't me, and by it slew me.

12. Sae that, on the ae haun, the Law is perfete ; and the commandment holie, and just and gude.

13. Weel, than, did the gude become death to me ? Far fras it ! On the ither haun, it was sin, that is soud kythe as sin throws that whilk was gude, workin oot death in me ;

that by the commandment, sin soud be seen to be unco sinfu'.

14. For we ken that the Law is spiritual ; but I am but a creatur o' flesh ; sell't as to a maister, Sin !

15. For that whilk I am workin oot, I apprue-na ; for what I wiss-na that I pursue ; but what I hate, that dae I !

16. Gin, than, I dae what I wadna, I own that the Law is richt.

17. And noo, it isna I wha am workin it oot, but it is the sin that dwalls in me !

18. For I ken thar dwalls-na in me—that is in my flesh—as gude thing. For the desirin lies nar to me, but the workin-oot o' gude diana !

19. For it isna the gude I wiss for I dae : but raither the ill I wadna do I practesse.

20. But gin I dae that whilk I wadna, it is nae mair I wha am workin it oot, but the sin dwallin in me.

21. And sae, I fin thar is a principle,¹ that when I wad dae gude, the ill lies nar me !

22. For in my benmaist heart I joy in the Law o' God ;

23. But I see anither principle in my bodily pouers, fechtin again the principle o' my mind ; and takin me prisoner by the principle o' sin that is in my bodily pouers.

24. A waeosome man am I ! Wha sal rescue me oot o' the body o' this death ?

25. Noo, God be thankit ! And sae I mysel, wi' my mind, am in service to the Law o' God ; while wi' the flesh I ser' the principle o' sin.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

Paul wins agaynt the wirk, into a green Christian hope !

SAE than, thar is nae condemnation for thae that are in Christ Jesu.

2. For the principle o' the Spirit o'

Life in Christ Jesus deliver't us frae the principle o' sin and death.

3. For, what coudna be by the Law—in that it was feckless throwe oor flesh—God condemned sin i' the flesh, in sendin his ain Son i' the image o' oor flesh, and because o' sin.

4. That the holy ends o' the Law might be seen in us, wha walk conform to the Spirit, and no conform to the flesh.

5. For they wha levee conform to the flesh, wad raither hae the things o' the flesh ; but they followin the Spirit, wad hae the things o' the Spirit.

6. Sae, what the flesh prefers is but death ; but what the Spirit prefers, is indeed life and peace.

7. For what the flesh prefers is at enmity wi' God ; seein it disna gie itsel ower to God's law—nor in fact, can it sae dae.

8. And they wha hae their bein i' the flesh, canna pleaseur God.

9. But ye haena yere bein i' the flesh, but i' the Spirit, gin God's Spirit is bidio in ye : but gin ony ane hasna Christ's Spirit, he iana o' his.

10. But, gin Christ is in ye, the body is deid on accoont o' sin, but the Spirit is leevin on accoont o' holiness.

11. And gin the Spirit, wha raised up Jesus frae amang the deid, dwalls in ye, he that raised up Christ Jesus frae amang the deid sal e'en gie life to yero deedin bodies, on accoont o' his indwallin Spirit in ye.

12. Sae than, brethren, debtors are we—no to the flesh, conform to the flesh to levee—

13. For, gin conform to the flesh ye are leevin, ye are sure to be deedin ; but, gin i' the Spirit ye are slayin the deeds o' the body, ye sal levee.

14. For as mony as are airtit by God's Spirit, they are God's bairns.

¹ V. 21. No a law to be fellow't, but an ill principle to be condemned. Our English versions are obscure in main "law" in both senses.

15. For ye hadna putten in ye a spirit o' slavery, bringin ye back intil dreid; but ye had putten intil ye a spirit o' adoption, in whilk we cry't oot, "Abba! Faither!"

16. The Spirit himself is joint witness wi' oor spirit, that we are bairns o' God.

17. But, gin bairns—than heirs as weel! God's heirs, and joint-heirs wi' Christ; gin at least we jointly suffer, that we may be jointly glorify't.

18. For I coont that what we dree i' this present, is no wordie to be mentioned alang wi' the glorie to come, whilk is to be made kent throwe us.

19. For the fain-lookit-forrit o' the Creation is waitin for the revealin o' God's bairns.

20. For to vanity was Creation made subject—no o' its ain wull, but by him wha made it subject—

21. In hope that the Creation itself soud be deliver't frae the slavery o' corruptness, intil the liberty o' the glorie o' the bairns o' God.

22. For we ken that a' creation is maenin thegither, and travailin thegither, in bearin-pangs till noo;

23. And no only sae; but e'en we, wha hae the first-frute o' the Spirit, e'en we oorsels, within oorsels are maenin, fain-waitin for adoption—the redeemin o' oor body.

24. For in hope we are sav't; but hope beheld issa hope! for what ane sees, why dis he "hope" for?

25. But gin what we see-na we hope for, than patiently we wait, fain to hae it.

26. And in that vera way, the Spirit is giean us help in oor weakness; for e'en what we soud be prayin for i' the way we soud, we ken-na; but the Spirit himself helps oor intercessions, wi' fainness o' desire no to be utter't.

27. And he wha redds oot the heart kens what the Spirit approves,

for it is conform to God he pleads, on behaif o' the saints.

28. But we div ken that to them wha love God, a' things work thegither for guude; to thase wha are bidden anes, conform to his purpose.

29. For wham he afore approuved, he afore appointit, conform to the likeness o' his Son; that he might be First-born o' mony brethren.

30. And wham he afore appointit, the same anes he bade; and wham war bidden, the same anes he approuved; and wham he approuved, the same he declar't richtous; and wham he declar't richtous, the same he made glorioua.

31. Than what sal we say to thir things? Gin God be on oor side, wha is again us?

32. He wha hained-na his ain Son, but gied him up for us a', sal he no wi' the gift o' him, gie us a' things in his lovin favor?

33. Wha sal wyte God's choseen anes? God, wha declares them richtous?

34. Wha condemns? Christ? wha dee't (na, wha raither was raised again), wha is at God's richt haun, and pleadin in oor behaif?

35. Wha sal sinder us frae Christ's love? Sal trouble, or dool, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or skaithe, or sword?

36. E'en as it is putten doon, "For thy sake are we gien ower to death the hail day lang; we are coontit as sheep for the slaughter."

37. But, in a' thir things we are victorious—and mair nor victorious—by him wha loved us.

38. For I am perswadit that no life, and no death, nor Angels, nor heigh pouers,

39. Nor heigh tbings, nor laigh things, nor ony ither creatit thing, sal hae pouer to sinder us frae God's love, whilk is in Christ Jeans oor Lord!

CHAPTR NINE.

God's alqual way wi' Jews and Gentiles.

THE truth I say in Christ—I am na speakin fause—my conscience bein witnessain, alang wi' mysel in the Spirit,

2. That thar is muckle dool to me, and constant sorrow i' my heart,

3. For I mysel could haes wiss't mysel ¹devotit by Christ, for my brethren's sake, my kin efter the flesh;

4. Wha truly are Israelites; whase are the adoption, and glorie, and covenant, and law, and services, and promises;

5. Whase are the patriarchs; and o' wham accordin to the flesh is the Christ; be wha is heigher than a', God blessed for aye!

6. But, no in sic mannier as tho' the promises o' God had failed. For no a' wha are o' Isra'l are truly Isra'l.

7. Nor yet, gin they be a seed o' Abra'm, are they a' bairns: but, "In Isaac sal thar be coontit thee a seed!"

8. Thus: no the bairns o' the flesh are bairns o' God: but the bairns o' the promise are coontit as the seed.

9. For this word is ane o' promise: "At this time sal I come, and thar sal be to Sarah a son."

10. And no only see; but whan Rebecca bad conceiv't by ane, e'en by oor faither Isaac—

11. For they no bein yet born, nor had dune gude or bad, that the purpose o' God conform to choice soud remain; no o' warks, but o' him wha invitit—

12. It was said to her, "The elder sal eer' the younger."

13. E'en as it is putten doon,

¹ V. 3. Sinder't frae ony common use; as was an offeran i' the Temple. The sense is obscure; and we haena Paul to expone it. While it may mean torn frae a' things in this life, and frae life itsel', it dinna mean sinder't frae Christ for Eternity.

"Jaucob I lo'ed; Esau I appruv'dna."

14. What, than, sal we say? Is ony wrang-doin wi' God? Far frae it!

15. For to Moses he saysa. "I wull haes mercie on whamsoe'er I can haes compassion!"

16. See than, it is naither o' him that wad haes it, nor o' him that rins for't, but o' God wha gies mercie.

17. For the Scriptur says to Pharaoh, "For this vera thing I rais't thee up, that I might schaw in thee my pooer; see as my name soud be kent in a' the yirth."

18. And see, he ²has mercie on wham he pleases, and wham he wull he gars harden.

19. Ye may say to me, than, "Hoo, than, dis ho wyte? for wha can staun again his wull?"

20. Na, O man! wha are ye to be answerin God again? Sal the thing made say to him wha made it, "Why did thou mak me see?"

21. Or, haena the potter a richt ower the clay, oot o' the same dadd to mak ae pot to honor, but anither to a want o' honor?

22. What tho' God, desirin to schaw his ang'er, and to mak kent his pooer, tholed wi' uno patience the veschels o' wrath that had become fit for destrunction?

23. And that he nicht mak kent his rich glorie on veschels o' mercie he had afore prepar't for glorie;

24. Wham he had bidden; e'en us, no only frae amang Jews, but frae amang the nations as weel.

25. E'en as he says by Hosea, "I

² V. 18. We has ne side o' a great doctrine here: the ither side is whaur Christ dee'st for the hail world, and "preed o' death for a' men" (Heb. ii. 9). And in Eph. i. 4—"Acceptin us in him afore the up-biggin o' the world." Juist as sue in choosin a tree or vine, chooses ilka branch and shoot o't, tho' some o' thir may-na at the time be in existence. See when Christ was acceptit, his folk war acceptit wi' him.

wull ca' her that wasna my folk 'my folk!' and her that wasna weal-belov'd, 'my weal-beloved.'

26. And, "It sal be, i' the place whaur it was said, 'Ye are-na my folk!' e'en thar sal they be ca'd, 'Bairns o' the Leevin God!'

27. And Esaiah, too, cries oot about Isra'el, "E'en gin the number o' Isra'el's bairns be as the sand o' the sea, a wheen left sal be saved;

28. "For a perfete and close reckonin wull the Lord mak on the yirth."

29. E'en as Esaiah said afore, "Gin the Lord o' Hosts hadna left us a seed, we wad bae been as Sodom, and wad has been like to Gomorrah."

30. What, than, are we to say? This: that the nations, thae wha warna cairryin on richtousness, name-the-less laid hand o' a richtousness; a richtousness a' the same that it was by faith—

31. Whilst Isra'el, tho' cairryin on a rule o' richtousness, didna win their way to that rule.

32. And why? Juist this, that they war cairryin it on, no by faith, but as it war by warka. They stumbl't at that stane o' stumblin;

33. E'en as it is putten doon, "Behauld! I set in Zion a stane o' stumblin, and a rock o' offendin; and he wha lippens thar-till sal no be putten to shame!"

CHAPTIR TEN.

The richtousness o' faith the only richtousness that will staun!

DRETHREN! the fain desire o' my heart, and its prayer to God on their behaif, is for their salvation!

2. For I gie witness to them, that thay has a zeal for God, but no conform to wisdom.

3. For, no takin to them God's richtousness—and aye seekin to up-bigg their ain richtousness, they didna gie in to the richtousness o' God.

4. For Christ is what the Law

etles¹ at, i' the way o' richtousness, to ilka ane wha has faith.

5. For Moses has putten doon, anent the richtousness whilk is by the Law: "The man wha dis them sal levee by them."

6. Whauraa, the richtousness o' faith speaks like this: "Ye mann-na say i' yere heart, 'Wha sal speel up intil Heeven!'" (that is, for to feash Christ doon;)

7. "Or, 'Wha sal lowt doon intil the abyss?'" (that is, for to raise up Christ free amang the deid;)

8. But what says it? "That whilk is spoken o' is nar-haund ye; in yere mooth, and in yere heart": that is, the thing o' the faith spoken o'; whilk thing we mak kent—

9. That gin ye confess wi' yere mou' that Jesus is Lord, and has faith i' yere heart that God raised him frae amang the deid, ye sal be saved.

10. For in the heart ane has faith for richtousness, and the confession o' ane's mou' to salvation.

11. For nae says the Scriptur, "Nane that trust in him sal be putten to shame."

12. For thar is nae differ atween Jews and Greeks; for the same Lord o' a' is bountifu' to a' that cry to him.

13. For ilka ane—a' and every—wha may ca' on the name o' the Lord sal be saved!

14. Hoo than soud they ca' on ane ou wham they haena lippened? And hoo sal they lippin ane they haena heard-tell o'? And hoo wull they bear, gin-na some ane publishes?

15. And hoo sal they publish, gin they warna sent oot? E'en as it is putten doon, "Hoo bonnie are the

¹ V. 4. The Law airtit to Christ: and he wha did-na ken that, used the ceremonies and the teachins o' the Law in vain! Thar maun haen been a hauntie o' Jews i' the kirk at Rome: to them specially is this reasonin made.

feet o' thae bringin us a Joyfu'-message o' gude things!"

16. But they didna a' meekly hear the Joyfu'-message. For Esaiyah says, "Lord! wha lippens what we proclaim!"

17. And sae faith comes oot o' what is heard; and hearin comes by the word that is anent Christ.

18. But say I, Did they no hear? Aye indeed! "Intil a' the yirth gaed their voice, and to the ends o' the inhabitit-worl'd what they spak."

19. Again, say I, Didna Isra'l come to ken? First, quo' Moses, "I wull mak ye to be jealous ower a Nae-Nation; and anent a glaikit nation wull I gar ye be ang'ry."

20. But Esaiyah is ventursome, and quo' he, "I was fund o' thae wha socht-me-na; I cam to be kent o' thae wha speir't-na eftir me!"

21. But anent Isra'l he says, "The hail day lang rax't I oot my bauns to a dour and thrawart-speakin folk!"

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.

Isra'l cuttit af for want o' faith: but faith can graft them in again.

I SPEIR than, Has God chis'en awa his folk? Far frae it! I mysel am an Isra'lite, o' Abra'm's seed, o' Benjamin's tribe.

2. God disna east awa his folk he had afore appruv'd. Wat ye na—anent Elijah—what the Scriptur says, as he pled wi' God again Isra'l?

3. "Lord! thy prophets hae they slain; and thy altars hae they dung doon; and I am left allenar; and they seek for my life!"

4. But what says the answer to him? "I hae keepit for mysel seeven thoosand men, wha hae-na loutit a knee to Baal!"

5. Sae than, s'en at this present, thar is a wee wheen left, by way o' a favorin choice.

6. But gin it be by favor, it is nae

mair o' warks; else the favor isna favor.

7. Weel, what? That whilk Isra'l socht eftir, the same they forgather't-na wi'; but the chosen ones forgather't wi'; whanras the lave war blear't, and saw na.

8. E'en as it is putten doon: "God gae them a spirit that was sleeparis; een that they see-na wi', and lugs they hear-na wi', till this vera day."

9. And Davyid says, "Be their buird a snare, and a girm, and a stumbling, and an ill-return to them!"

10. "Be their een blear't, that they may-na see; and their back be aye loutit doon!"

11. But I say, Stumbl't they to the end they nicht fa'? Far frae it! But throwe the ill-daen o' them, salvation cam to the nations, to steer them up to be jealous.

12. And noo, gin their ill-daen was like muckle gear to the worl'd, and their loss like muckle gear to the nations—hoo muckle mair their abundance!

13. But to you am I sayin this—you o' the nations; inasmuckle as I am an Apostle to the nations; my office I mak muckle o'.

14. Gin, by ony means, I may steer up to be jealous my ain flesh, and save some frae 'mang them.

15. For, gin the castin-awa o' them was a worl'd's bringin-in, what sal the acceptin o' them be but like life frae the deid?

16. And gin the first frute was holie, the book o't mann be holie as weel; and gin the rute was holie, e'en sae the branches.

17. And gin some o' the branches war ta'en awa—while ye (bein a wild olive) war graftit in amang them—and was made wi' them to share o' the rute—o' the fatness o' the olive—

18. Hand-na yere beid aboon the branches! But gin ye boast, ken that ye bear-na the rute, but the rute you!

19. Ye may say, "The branches

war taen awa, that I might be graftit in!"

20. Weel! throwe their want o' faith they war broken; and ye by yere faith are staunin: look-na at lofty things, but has fear!

21. For gin God spared-na the nateral branches, tak tent that he spare-na you!

22. Gie tent, than, to God's kindness and rigor; upon thae that fell, rigor; but upon you God's kindness, gin aiblins ye bide aye in the kindness: else e'en ye sal be cuttit oot.

23. And e'en they (except aiblins they still bide in their lack o' faith) sal be graftit in; for God can graft them in again.

24. For gin ye war enttit-oot frae the nateral wild-olive, and, ayont natur war graftit intil a gude olive! boo muckle mair sal thir, the nateral branches, be graftit intil their ain olive tree!

25. For I wadna has ye no to ken this mytery, brethren, least ye be ower wyas in yere ain een, that a bleartness to a degree has come on Isra'el, till the abundance o'the nations sal come in:

26. And sae, a' Isra'el sal be saved; e'en as it is putten doon, "The Deliverer sal come oot o' Zion; he wull pit awa the ungodliness o' Jacob!

27. "And this is my covenant wi' them, i' the day that I tak awa their sins."

28. Anent the Joyfu'-message, they are contrar t'ye; but as to the Choosin, they are weel looed for the faithers' sake.

29. God never rues his biddin or his gifts!

30. For e'en as ye war at as time dour toward God, but at this time has gotten mercie by their dourness;¹

31. Sae, thir war dour, that by yere mercie they too may win mercie.

32. For God has coontit them a' dour, that he soud has mercie on them a'.

33. O, deepness o' God's riches, and wisdom, and knowledge! hoo unfathomable his judgments! and his ways unsearchable!

34. "For wha kent the Lord's mind? or wha becam his coon-sellor?"

35. Or wha first gied to him, and has it returned again?

36. For, by him, and throws him, and for him, are a' things! To him glorie for aye! Amen!

CHAPTIR TWAL'.

Christ's folk maun do as Christ dis; the warld is lookin on!

I ENTREAT ye, than, brethren, by the mercies o' God, that ye render yersels as a leevin, holie, weel-pleasin offeran to God—a proper, rational service.

2. And no to be conform to this warld, but to be transformed by the renewin o' yere mind, that ye may pit to the prufe what is God's gude, and perfete, and acceptable wull.

3. For, say I, by the favor gien to me, to ilka ane amang ye, no to be thinkin ower muckle o' his sel, ayont what he soud think o' his sel, but to think o' his sel discreetly; e'en as God gied to ilka ane his portion o' faith.

4. For, e'en as in as body we has mony pairts, but a' o' the pairts haen-a the same duty,

5. Sae we, the mony, are a' as body in Christ; but allenarlie are pairts ane o' anither.

6. Noo, haecin gifts by favor, and gifts differan accordin to the favor gien to us—gin it be prophecie, lat it be i' the proportion o' faith;

7. Or service, i' the service; or he that teaches, i' the teachin;

8. Or an exhorter, i' the exhortin;

¹ V. 30. The Jews wadna has Christ, and sae he bade to be preached to the Gentiles: sae, in the himmer end (v. 31), the Gentiles haecin the Gospel wull be the means o' the Jews takin hand o't.

he wha gies, lat him gie in aefauldness ; he that leads, to lead tentilie ; he that schaws mercie, to do it blythely.

9. Love without hypocriey, scunnerin at a' that is evil ; haudin fast to a' that is gode.

10. In britberly love schaw tender affection ane to anither ; in gien honor, surpassin ane anither.

11. In yere ¹actions no slothfu' ; in yere spirit fervent ; to the Lord fu' o' service ;

12. In hope rejoicin ; in trouble lang-tholin ; in prayer perseverin ;

13. Wi' the needs o' saunts basin fellowship ; in hospitality aye active.

14. Gie blessings to persecutors— blessings, and no curses.

15. Rejoice wi' the rejoicin, and greet wi' the tearfu'.

16. Ilk ane to anither seek the same thing ; no seekin heigh things, but forgatherin wi' lowly things. Be-na wyss i' yere ain conceit.

17. Return ill for ill to nane ; provide tbings honorable afore a' men.

18. Gin it be possible, as far as it lies in you, wi' a' men be at peace.

19. No seekin vengeance, beloved ; but gie place to ang'er ; for it is putten doon, "To me belangs vengeance ; I wull repay, says the Lord.

20. "Gin yere enemy hung'er, feed him ; gin he be drouthie, gie him drink ; for, sae doin, ye sal heap coals o' fire on his heid."

21. Be-na owercome wi' ill ; but owercome ye ill wi' gode.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

The saunt is a gode citizen ; and walks i' the licht.

LAT ilka saul submit itsel to the protection o' the public authoriti-

tie. For thar is nae authoriti but by God ; thae existin, exist by God.

2. Sae he that sets his sel again the authoriti sets his sel again the ordinance o' God : and they that oppose sal receive condemnation.

3. For rulers are-na a fear to gode warka, but to the ill. But wad ye no be fleyt o' the authoriti ! Dae ye that whilk is gode, and ye sal hae praise o' the same.

4. For he is God's servant t'ye, for that whilk is gode. But gin aihlins ye are doin ill, hae fear ; for he diana cairry the sword for nocht. For God's servant is he, punishin wi' wrath him wha practeeses ill.

5. And sae thar is a need o' submittin yersels, no only on account o' the wrath, but ake on account o' conscience.

6. For sae pey ye tribute as weel : for God's ceevil servants are they, takin tent to this vera thing.

7. Render, than, to a' their ²dues ; tribute to wham tribute ; tax to wham tax ; fear to wham fear ; honor to wham honor.

8. Awe nae man ocht, save love to ane anither ; for he wha lo'eas the ither fills up the Law.

9. Thus : "Ye canna commit adultery ; Ye canna commit murder ; Ye canna steal ; Ye canna covet" ; and gin thar be ony ither commandment, it is summed up i' this word, namely : "Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yer sel !"

10. Love to ane's neebor works nae ill ; love tharfor, is the pith o' the Law.

11. And, kennin the time, that it is an 'oor e'en noo for us to wankin oot o' sleep : for noo is oor salvation narer-hann than whan we first believed :

¹ V. 11. For that oor common English version says "business," some haes taen this to refer only to worldly things ; and haes e'en made it an excuse for worldly-mindedness. It includes a' things ; and is a rebuke for indolence.

² V. 7. The dues o' Government are taxes and quate behavior ; the dues o' my neebor are what I wad like him to do to me ; and aboon a' this, is a braid world that nae man enters, only God ! My haun for my freends ; my back for the burden o' life ; but my kae for God alone !

12. The nicht is far gane ; the dawin comes on. Pit we awa, than, the warke o' darkness, and lat us tak the wapins o' licht !

13. Let us work, honorably, as in the licht o' day : no in bruities and druckenness, no in lewdness and wantonness, no in castine-oot and envyin.

14. But pit ye on the Lord Jesus Christ ; and hae nae trokin wi' the flesh and its corrupt desires.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

*The eatin o' meat, and the keepin o' days :
see ye that it is done for the sake o' the
Lord, and no for the sake o' contention !*

1 ND forhy : ane that is weak i' the faith tak ye in, and no for the sake o' doots and disputes.

2. Ane, indeed, in his faith can eat a' things ; anither, wha is weak, eats what is vegetable.

3. Lat na the eatin ane despise him that eats-na ; and lat na him that eats-na condemn him that eats ; for God receives him.

4. Wha are ye that are judgin a frem'd ane's servant ? be salstaun or fa' till his ain maister ; but he sal be made to staun ; for God is strang to up-hand him.

5. Ane, indeed, thinka mair o' ae day nor anither ; whauras anither thinks muckle o' ilka day—lat ilk ane be well-perswadit in his ain mind.

5. He that regards the day, regards it to the Lord ; and he that eats, eats to the Lord, for he gies thanks to God : and he that eats-na, to the Lord he abstains, and gies thanks to God.

7. For no ane o' us leeven to his ain sel ; and no ane o' us dees to his ain sel.

8. For baith, gin aiblins we leeven, we leeven to the Lord ; and gin aiblins we dees, we dees to the Lord ; sae than, gif we leeven, or gif we dees, we are the Lord's.

9. For, ettilin than, Christ baith

dees and raise again, that he might hae the lordship ower the deid and the leevin.

10. But ye, why soud ye condemn yere brither ? Or ye, why soud ye lichtlie yere brither ? For we sal a' present oorsels at God's Judgment-seat.

11. For it is putten-doone : " As I leeve, says the Lord, ' To me sal lout ilka knee, and to God sal ilka tongue confess ! ' "

12. And sae ilka ane o' us sal for himself gie an account to God.

13. Sae, nae mair lat us be judgin ane anither, hut this discern ye raither—no to pit a stumblin-clog afores yere brither ; or a girm.

14. I ken, and has become perawadit by the Lord Jesus, that ¹ naething is unclean o' itsel ; only till him wha is reckonin onything to be unclean, till him it bude be unclean.

15. Noo, gif ower your meat yere brither is grieved—nae mair are ye gangan in love—dinna wi' yere eatin destroy that ane for wham Christ dees !

16. Lat na yere gude be ill-spoken o'.

17. For God's kingdom isna eatin and drinkin, but holiness and peace, and rejoicie in Holie Spirit.

18. For ane that is sae doin service to Christ, is weel-pleasin to God, and acceptit o' men.

19. The things o' peace, than, are we pursuein ; and the things that are for oor common up-biggin.

20. For the sake o' meat, be-na undoin God's wark. A' things, indeed, are clean ; but it is ill for the man wha eats wi' cause o' stumblin.

21. It is a grand thing no to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor to do onything whaurin yere brither is

¹ V. 14. Sae the Lord perswadit Paul ; and sae he perswadit Peter (Acts x. 16). But gin a brither's weak conscience aitna anither gate, we mairna condemn him ; but be cannie wi' him.

gart to stumble, or is snared, or is made feckless.

22. And ye, what faith ye haue, haue it to yersel afore God ! Weel is he wha condemna-na his ain sel in what he appruves.

23. But he that make a distinction atween meats is condemned gif he eat, for it wasna o' faith ; for what isna o' faith is sin.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

Jews and Gentiles a' to 'gree. Paul's labor and success.

WE that are strang soud be cairrying the burdens o' thae that are-na strang, and no be pleasin oorsels :

2. But ilk ane pleasur his neebor in that whilk is gude, wi' a view to his strenthenin.

3. For e'en Christ pleased-na himsel ; but as it is putten doon, "The ill-words o' thae that ill-ca'd thee fell on me !"

4. For as mony things as war putten doon afore-hann, war putten doon for eor leir, that throwe tholin and the consolation o' the Scriptures we soud haes hope.

5. Noo the God o' a' tholin and consolation gie ye to tak tent to the same thing ane wi' anither, accordin to Jesus Christ.

6. Sae that, wi' ae mind, and ae voice, ye may be magnifyin the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

7. And ae help ye ane anither, e'en as Christ helpit you, to God's glorie.

8. For I threep that Christ becam a servant o' circumceesion, in behauf o' the truth o' God, that he micht mak siccar the promises gien to the faithers.

9. That the nations, on the ither haun, micht magnify God for his mercies ; e'en as it is putten doon : "For this cause wull I confess to thee amang the nations ; and to thy name wull I sing psalms."

10. And again he says : " Be joyfu', ye nations, wi' his folk !"

11. And ance mair : " Gie ye praise, a' ye nations, to the Lord ! and dwell on his praises, a' ye folk !"

12. And again, Essiah says, " A rute sel thar be o' Jesse ; and he wha is risin to rule the nations : on him sal the nations hope."

13. Noo the God o' hope fill ye wi' a' joy and peace in believin, to the end ye may haes rowth o' hope, and pooer o' the Holie Spirit.

14. And I mysel, my brethren, am become perswadit o' ye, that ye yersels are filled wi' gudeness, fu' o' a' knowledge, and fit to coonseil ane anither.

15. Nane-the-less, I wrate the mair bauldly in pairt to ye, steerin up yere memories, because o' the favor o' God gien to me.

16. To the end I soud be a public servant o' Jesus Christ to the nations, giean service in the Joyfu'-message o' God, that the offeran o' the nations micht be weel-pleasin, made holie by the Holie Spirit.

17. I haes, than, the roosin o' mysel in Christ Jesus, as to the things o' God ;

18. For I winna daur to speak o' deeds whilk Christ wrocht-na oot for himsel by me, to the obeyin o' the nations, in word and deed :

19. In rowth a' signs and ferlies, in pooer o' the Holy Spirit, see that I frae Jerusalem and in a great sweep the lenth o' Illyricum, haes deliver't fully the Joyfu'-message o' Christ.

20. But in sic manner am I strivin to preach the Joyfu'-message —no whaur Christ's name was kent ; that I bigg-na on anither's foundation ;

21. But, e'en as it is putten doon : "They that warna tell't about him sal see ; and they wha haes-na heard sal understand."

22. For whilk thing I was, a gey wheen times, hinder't frae coming to ye ;

23. But noo, haein nae mair place in thir pairts, and haein a strang desirin a gude whean year to see ye,

24. Whane'er I micht be gaun intil ¹ Spain, I am in hope, whan gaun throwe, to see ye, and by you to be aften forrit on the way, gin aiblins wi' you first I am in pairt satisfee't.

25. But e-noo I am gaun to Jerusalem, to ser' the saunts.

26. For Macedonia and Achaia war weel-pleased to mak a certain gift for the poortith o' the saunts at Jerusalem.

27. They war aae pleased—and their debtors are they. For, gin in their spiritual things the Gentiles had a share—they soud i' their temporal things share wi' them.

28. Haein than completit this, and haein made siccar to them this frute, I wull come back, by you, to Spain.

29. I ken too, that whan I das come, I sal come i' the abundance o' the blessein o' Christ.

30. But I entreat ye, brethren, throwe oor Lord Jesus Christ, and the love o' the Spirit, to warse thagither wi' me, in prayers for me, to God;

31. That I may be rescued frae the unbelievin in Judea; and that my service for Jerusalem may be acceptable to the saunts:

32. And that joyfully I may come t'ye, throwe God's wull, and may be refreshed wi' you a'.

33. Noo the God o' a' peace be w'ye a'. Amen!

CHAPTIR SAXTEEN.

Salutations and weel-wishtis o' Paul.

FORBY, I command t'ye Phebs oor sister, as bein ane that ser's the kirk in Cenchrea,

¹ V. 24. We kenna gin he ever wan the leath o' Spain. Gif he did, it wad be efter the imprisonment tell't us in The Acta. But he had it in his heart, gin time and opportunity had stude him in stead, to preach in every land o' the baill world!

2. That ye may gie her a welcome i' the Lord, wordie o' saunts, and may uphaud her whaur she may haec need o' ye; for e'en she hersel uphaudit mony, and me mysel.

3. Salute² ye Prisca and Aquila, my marrowis in Christ Jesus;

4. Wha for my life offert their ain necks; to wham no onyl I gie praise, but a' the kirks o' the Gentilea.

5. And salute the gaitherin i' their hoose. Salute Epanetus, my dear ana, wha is first frute o' the Province o' Achaia to Christ.

6. Salute Mary, wha wrocht muckle for us.

7. Salute Andronicus, and Junias, my kin, and my fellow-captivea, wha are notit amang the Apostles; wha indeed war in Christ suner than mysel'.

8. Salute Ampliatus, a dear ane in the Lord.

9. Salute Urban, oor comrade in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10. Salute Apelles, ane appruv'd o' Christ. Salute thaes o' Aristobulus' family.

11. Salute Herodian, my kinsman. Salute thaes o' the family o' Narcius, that are in the Lord.

12. Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, wha toil in the Lord. Salute Persia, the weel-loved ane, wha indeed toiled muckle in the Lord.

13. Salute Rufus, chosen o' the Lord, and his (and my) mither.

14. Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the brethren wi' them.

15. Salute Philologus and Julias, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and a' the saunts wi' them.

16. Salute ans anither wi' a sacred kiss. A' the kirks o' Christ salute you.

² V. 3. Tak tent hoo mony kind words and speirins he sends to see mony folk in Rome. Their man is been an unco deal o' flittin aboot, i' thae days: aiblins mair amang the Jews than the ithera. It is gude no to write onything anent onyane that iana o' love!

17. But I entreat ye, brethren, to tak tent o' thae that mak the diveesions and offences, contrar to the leir ye war learned, and turn awa frae them.

18. For sic as thir ser-na our Lord Jesus Christ, but their ain waime; and, by their fleechin words and flatterin speeches, deceive simple safauld hearts.

19. For yere obedience has come to be kent o' a'; ower you, than, I rejoice; but I wad hae ye to be wyss to that whilk is gude, and innocent o' that whilk is ill.

20. But the God o' peace sal ding Sautan aneath yere feet sune! The tender-love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be w'ye!

21. Timothy, my marrow, salutes ye, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater my kinsmen.

22. I, Tertius, wha penned this Epistle, salute ye i' the Lord.

23. Gaius, the enterteener o' mysel and o' the hale kirk, salutes ye. Erastus the City Treasurer salutes ye; and Quartus oor brither.

24. The kindly love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ wi' ye a'! Amen!

25. Noo to him wha has power to dar ye siccarlie staun, conform to my Joyfn'-message, e'en the preachin o' Jesus Christ, accordin to the revealin o' the mystery, in by-gane ages keepit close,

26. But is make kent e-noo, throwe the prophecies o' the Scripture, conform to the wull o' the everlastin God, until obedience o' faith, to a' the nations made plain,

27. To the only wyss God, throwe Jesus Christ—to him be glory, for ever mair! Amen.

FIRST CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Paul likit-na the diversions o' the Corin-thians. The Cross o' Christ the as and only Fundation.

PAUL, ca'd as an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, by the wull o' God; and the brither Sosthenes;

2. To the Kirk o' God, sanctifyt in Christ Jesus, whilk is in Coriath, ca'd as saunta; wi' a' that ca' on the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ in a' places, their Lord and oors;

3. Tender love be to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4. I am thankin my God aye, anent ye, for the favor o' God gien to ye in Christ Jesus,

5. That in a' things ye had rowth in him, in a' word and knowledge,

6. E'en as the ¹ testimonie o' Christ was made siccar amang ye.

7. Sae that ye fa' ahint in nae gift o' grace; fain-waitin for the revealin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ;

8. Wha sal e'en mak ye siccar throwe a', unblameable i' the day o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

9. Leal and faithfu' is God, by wham ye war ca'd intil aane-ness wi' his Son Jesus Christ oor Lord.

10. But I entreat ye, brethren, by the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, that ye a' speak as ane, and that thar be-na amang ye diversions; but raither that ye be perfectly joined thegither i' the same mind, and the like conclusions.

11. For it has been signifyt to me, anent ye, my brethren, by thae o' Chloe, that strifes are amang ye.

12. But this, say I, that ilk ane o' ye says, "I am o' Paul;" and "I am

o' Apollos;" and "I o' Peter;" and "I o' Christ."

13. Has Christ been sinder't? Was Paul crucifyt in yere behaif? Or intil Paul's name war ye baptizeez?

14. I gie thanks to God that nae o' ye I baptizeez, gin it wara Orispus and Gaius;

15. That nae nicht say I baptizeez in my ain name.

16. Howbeit, I baptizeez too the family o' Stephanas: mair nor thir I kenna whether I baptizeez ony.

17. For Christ sent-me-na to baptizeeze, but to gie oot the Joyfu'-message; no in wisdom o' speech, least the cross o' Christ soud be made less o'.

18. For the message o' the cross is but havers to thae wha perish; hoobedit, to thae wha are rescued, e'en to ua, it is the pooer o' God.

19. For it is putten doon: "I destroy the wisdom o' the wyss anea, and set aside the discernment o' the discernin anea."

20. Whaur is a wyss anea? Whaur a writer? Whaur a disputer o' this warld? Has-na God made the wisdom o' the warld wileasness?

21. For, seein that i' the wisdom o' the warld, the warld kent-na God throwe its wisdom, it was God's gude pleasur, throwe the wileasness o' preachin, to save them that hae faith.

22. For baith Jews for ferlies are speirin, and Greeks for wisdom are seekin:

23. Whauras we proclaim a Messiah wha has been crucifyt; to the Jews, indeed, a stumblin-clog; but to the Greeks folly;

24. Name-the-less, to the bidden anea theirsels, baith Jews and Greeks, a Messiah; the pooer o' God, and the wisdom o' God.

¹ V. 6. *The Testimoniie o' Christ; the Meas-
age concernin Christ, as brocht to them
by Paul.*

25. For the "folly" o' God is wysser nor man; and the "weakness" o' God michtier nor man.

26. For look at yere bidden, brethren; that no mony wyss accordin to the flesh, no mony o' pooer, no mony heigh anes war chosen;

27. On the contrar, God chose the wittless things o' the world, that he soud shame thaer that are wyss; and the weak things o' the world God waled, to shame the things that are mighty;

28. And the laigh things o' the world, and the geck't-at things God waled—things no existin—that existin things micht be brocht to nocht.

29. Sae as nae flesh soud boast in God's presence.

30. But o' him are ye in Christ Jesus, wha has made wisdom fras God to us, and richtousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31. Sae, as it is putten-doon, "He that boasts, lat him boast i' the Lord."

CHAPTIR TWA.

Salvation diena come wi' the knowledge o' man. The natural man and the spiritual man.

AND I, whan I cam to ye, brethren, cam-na i' the way o' speech or wisdom that excelled, bringin to ye God's testimonie.

2. For I set doon my fit to ken naething amang ye, but Jesus Christ, and him as ane that had been crucifyt.

3. And I cam, in fecklessness and shrinking, and wi' muckle fear, to be wi' ye;

4. And my speech and my message warna wi' wheedlin words o' the wyss, but in demonstration o' spirit and pooer.

5. Sae that yere faith need-na staun in men's wisdom, but in God's pooer.

6. Wisdom, nane-the-less, we speak—amang experienced anes: wisdom hoobedit, no o' this world, nor o' the

great men o' this world—wha are to be a' putten-by;

7. But we speak God's wisdom in a riddle, the knowledge that had been keepit hidlin, whilk God designed aforehann, afore a' time, for oor glorie,

8. That no ane o' the great anes o' this world has come to ken; for had they come to ken, they wadna i' that case has crucifyt the Lord o' Glorie!

9. But, e'en as it is putten doon, "What-na things the ee' saw-na, and the ear heard-na, and man's heart conceiv't-na—sae mony things has God prepared for thaer that lo'e him!"

10. To nae, nane-the-less, has God reveal't them, by the Spirit; for the spirit kens a' things, e'en the deep things o' God.

11. For wha o' men kens man's things, but man's spirit that is in him? Sae, nane kens the things o' God, but God's Spirit.

12. But we gat, no the world's spirit, but the Spirit that is o' Ged, sae as we soud ken the things God gies to us by his favor;

13. Whilk things eke we speak, no in man-taught words o' lear; but in words spirit-taught to spiritual men, spiritual things exponin.

14. But a man o' flesh tak-na in the things o' God's Spirit; for they are daftness to him, and he canna get to ken them, for that they are to be spiritually redd oot.

15. But the spiritual man speirs oot a' things; but he his sel is speir't oot by nane.

16. For wha cam to ken the Lord's mind, that he micht gie him lear? But we ha'e Christ's mind.

'V. 9. While a hantle folk tak thir words as meanin the glorie o' the future life, it is better to look on them as settin oot the wisdom and the joy o' thaer that are born again. Paul, and the lave, had it a' (v. 10). And they gat naething contrar whan they gat hame to Glorie; only mair o't!

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Paul and Apollos. The temple o' God no to be defil't.

AND I, brethren, could only speak to ye as men o' flesh, as bairns in Christ; and no as to spiritual man.

2. Wi' milk I fed ye, and no wi' meat; for ye war-na yet able for't: nay! e'en yet ye are-na able!

3. For ye are yet fleshly; for whaur thar are amang ye jealousy and strife, are-ye-na fleshly, and gaun-on as men?

4. For whan ane says, "I, in sooth, am o' Paul!" but anither, "I am o' Apollos!" are ye no fleshly men?

5. Wha, than, is Apollos? and wha is Paul? Juist servants, throwe wham ye believ': e'en as the Maister gied to ilk ane.

6. I plantit, Apollos watir'; but God maks to growe.

7. Sae, than, naither he that plants is onything, nor he that watirs, but God that maks to growe.

8. And he that plants, and he that watirs, are baith ane: hoobeit, ilk ane sal hae his ain reward, e'en as his labour sal be.

9. For we are God's fellow-workers; and ye are God's mailin, God's biggin.

10. E'en as the favor o' God was gien me, as a wyss biggin-maister I lay a fundation, and anither bigga on't. But lat ilk ane tak tent hoo be biggs tharon!

11. For oicht ither fundation nane can lay but that whilk is laid, that is Jesus Christ.

12. But gin ony ane is up-biggin on the fundation, wi' gowd, siller, precious gems, wund, gerra, stibble—

13. Ilik ane's wark wull be made plain; for the day wull set it forth: and the lowe wull try ilk ane's wark, o' whatna sort it is.

14. Gin ony ane's wark whilk he has biggit tharon stauns, he sal hae his meed:

15. Gin ony ane's wark sal be brant up, he sal ¹ hae skaith; hoobeit, he his sal sal be sav't; yet as throwes the fire.

16. Kea-ye-na that ye are a temple o' God, and God's Spirit is dwallin in ye?

17. Gin ony man destroy God's temple, him wull God ² destroy; for the temple o' God is holie; whilk in sooth are ye.

18. Lat nae ane delude his sel: gin ony ane thinks he is wyss amang ye i' this warld, lat him become witless, in order that he may become wyss.

19. For the wisdom o' this warld is daftness wi' God. For it is putten-down, "He snares the wyss wi' their ain pawkiness."

20. And ance mair: "The Lord takis tent o' the reasonins o' the wyss, that they are havers."

21. Sae, lat nae boast o' men; for a' things are yere ain.

22. Gin aihline it be Paul, or Apollos, or Peter, or the warld, or life, or death, or things wi' us, or things to be—a' are yere ain;

23. But ye are Christ's: but Christ is God's.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Modesty enjoined. Paul wull fain has them do as he did.

SAE lat a man pit us doon as actin N. for Christ; as awmoners o' God's secret things.

2. And here, too, it is necessar that awmoners be fund honest.

3. But wi' me, it is a sma' thing that I soud be judged by you, or on

¹ V. 15. Hoo gude is the Lord, that when a' oor wark is wrang—gin we cittled purclie—we hae skaith, but are-na lost ooreels! But hoo it soud mak na tak tent, sae as we bigg-na wrang!

² V. 17. Ane "destroys" the temple, when he destroys the holiness o't. And gin be sae do, God wull destroy him! Paul has the saune word twice.

¹ man's day ; aye ! I am-na e'en judgin mysel.

4. For I ken nocht to wyte mysel wi' ; but this diena mak me richtous. But he wha judges me is the Lord.

5. And sae, judge nocht ower-sune, till the time the Lord comes, wha wull baith mak plain the hidlin things o' the mirkness, and wull schaw the thochts o' the heartes : and than, ilk ane's commandin sal come frae God.

6. But thir things, brethren, I hae (sae to speak), taen to mysel and Apollos, for yere sakes ; sae as in us ye nicht learn the leir, no to gang ayont what is pntten-doон : that ye soudna be swallin yersels up, ilk ane again anither.

7. For wha makes a differ atween ye ? And what hae ye that ye didna receive ? Noo, gin ye received it, wby soud ye swall up yersel as gin ye didna receive it ?

8. E'en noo hae ye become staw'd ; e'en noc hae ye become rich : allenar-lie, and sindry fraes na, ye hae gotten to be kings ! and I wad ye war kings, that e'en we nicht reign alang w'ye.

9. For sae it seems to me ; God has set forth us, the Apostles him-maist ; as gien ower to the deid : for a spectacle are we made to the warld—to Angels and to men.

10. We are made fules for the name o' Christ : but ye are wyas in Christ : we are feckless, but ye are strang : ye are honored, but we dishonored.

11. E'en to this 'oor, we hae hung'er, and drooth, and nakitness ; are clour'd, and cuistian-oot ;

12. We toil, workin wi' oor ain hauns ; whan misca'd, we bless ; whan persecutit, we thole it.

13. Whan defamed, we entreat ; we are made as the midden-heap o' the warld ; the dightins and orts o' a' things, e'en to this day.

14. No to shame ye dae I say thir

things ; on the contrar, I admonish ye as my weel-lo'ed bairna.

15. For it may be that ye hae ten thoosand teachers in Christ, yet surely no mony faithers—for in Christ Jesus I becam yere faither i' the Joyfu'-message.

16. I entreat ye, than, that ye be as I am.

17. For this reason, I send to ye Timothy, wha is my bairn, belov'd, and faithfu' i' the Lord ; wha wull gar ye to ca' to mind my ways whilk are in Christ, e'en as I teach, in a' places, in ilka kirk.

18. But some are swallowed-up, as gin I warna comin to ye.

19. But I wull come t'ye, sune ; gin it please the Lord ; and I sal get to ken—no the words o' thae that are swallowed-up—but the pooer.

20. For the Kingdom o' God iana in words, but in pooer !

21. Whatna o' them wad ye hae ? Soud I come t'ye wi' a rod ? or in love and the spirit o' meekness ?

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The ill-deedie man i' the Corinthian Kirk.
[T is the common clash that thar is uncleanness amang ye ; and sic uncleanness as is no e'en to be heard o' amang the nations ; that ane soud hae his faither's wife.

2. And ye hae been swallowed-up, and didna raither lament, that he nicht be taen oot o' the mids o' ye, wha did sic wark.

3. For I, absent in body, but present in spirit, hae gien judgment, as gin I war present, on him that has done this thing.

4. I' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, ye bein forgather't—and my spirit—wi' the pooer o' the Lord Jesus Christ,

5. That ye gie ower siccan aane to Sautan, for the destroyin o' the

² V. A. Set him back again intil Sautan's kingdom—the warld ; lea'in aye the door unsteekit, for him to return on repentence. It looks like as he did repente ; see II. Cor. ii, 7, 8.

¹ V. 3. See iii, 12. It isna "man's day," but God's Day, that sal mak a' things plain !

flesh, that the spirit may be sav't i' the day o' the Lord Jesus.

6. Yere roosin o' yersels is unseemly. Ken-ye-na, that a wee barm wull leaven the hale melder.

7. Pit awa, than, the auld leaven, that ye may be a new lump, accordin as ye are unleavened; for oor Paschal-Lamb has been slain: Christ.

8. Lat us than keep festival, no wi' auld leaven, naither wi' leaven o' vice and wickedness, but wi' the unleaven'd breid o' aefauldness and truth!

9. I wrate to ye in my epistle, no to be nar-freends wi' unclean anes;

10. Yet no avoidin a'-thegither the unclean anes o' this warl'd; or the covetous, or extortioners, or eidol-lovers; for than ye bude gang oot o' the warl'd:

11. But noo I send t'ye, no to be makin nar-freends, gin ony ane ca'd a brither ha unclean, or covetous, or an eidol-lover, or a mis-ca'er, or drucken, or an extortioner: wi' sic can a ane no e'en to eat.

12. For what has I wi' judgin thae oot-by? Is't no for ye to judge thae within?

13. But thae oot-by disna God judge? Sae pit oot the ill-deedie man frae amang yersels.

CHAPTIR SAX.

About law-pleas, and unholy leavin.

DAUR ouy o' ye, haesin a plea wi' his neebor, gang to the coort afore the unrichtous, and no gang afore the saunts!

2. Or ken-ye-na that the saunts sal judge the warl'd? And gin by you the warl'd is judged, are ye unfit for the sma'est tribunal?

3. Ken-ye-na that we sal judge Angels? hoo muckle mair, than, things o' this life?

4. Gin than, ye haes to judga things o' this life, wad ye haes thae to judge that ye esteem-na i' the kirk?

5. I speak this to shame you. Sae!

is it possible that isna amang ye a discernin man, ane fit to gie a judgement atween his brethren?

6. But brither has a plea wi' brither, and that afore unbelievers!

7. Nay, e'en noo are ye 'cuisten in yere plea! to haes law-pleas ane wi' another. Why div-ye-na raither tak wrang? Why div-ye-na raither thole defraudin?

8. Nay, but e'en ye yersels do wrang, and defraud; and that yere ain brethren!

9. Ken-ye-na that the ill-deedie sanna come intil God's Kingdom? Diuna be mislaered; naither unclean, nor eidol-lovers, nor adulterers, nor misca'ers, nor Sodomites,

10. Nor thieves, nor sellie, nor the drucken, nor thae that enree, nor extortioners, sal come to possess the Kingdom o' God.

11. And sic war some o' ye; bot ye had them washed awa, but ye war made pure, but ye war declar't richtous—i' the name o' the Lord Jesus Christ, and i' the Spirit o' oor God.

12. A' things are alloot' to me but a' things wadna profit me; a' things are alloot' to me, but I winna be behauden to ony.

13. Meats for the stammack, and the stammack for meats; but God wull bring to nooht baith it and them. The body isna for uncleanness, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.

14. God baith raised-again the Lord; and wull raise us throuwe his power.

15. Ken-ye-na that a' yere pairts are pairts o' Christ? Takin than the pairts o' Christ, sal I mak them the pairts o' a harlot?

16. Or ken-ye-na that he that joins his sal to a harlot is ae body? ("For," says he, "the twa sal be as flesh.")

17. Ye haes tint yere plea already, to gang to law afore pagana. The skith is in takin up the plea.

17. But he that joins his sel to the Lord is ae spirit.

18. Flee fras uncleanness! Ilka sin that a man may do is unco to his body; whauras, he wha commits uncleanness fesbes sin intil his ain body.

19. Or ken-ye-na that yere body is a temple o' the Holie Spirit within ye, that ye hae fras God? and that ye war-na yere ain?

20. In vera deed, ye war cost wi' a price; sae, magnify God in yere body.

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Husbands and wives. Makin use o' the marid, but no booin doon till't.

BUT, anent what ye wrate to me: B It is gude for a man no to be bund to a wumman.

2. Yet, because o' uncleanness, lat ilk man hae his ain wife, and ilk wumman her ain man.

3. Lat the husband render to the wife what is due; and in siclike mainner, the wife as weal, to the husband.

4. The wife haena authoritie ower her ain body, but the husband; and in siclike mainner the husband haena authoritie ower his ain body, but the wife.

5. Defraud-ye-na ane the ither, unless aiblins it may be for a wee, hy consent, that ye may hae mair time for prayer: and forgather again, lest Sautin tempt ye wi' incontinence.

6. This, hoobit, I am saying by permission, and no o' commandment.

7. I cond wuss a man to be like myself; but ilk ane has his ain gift fras God; ane this, and anither that.

8. Nane-the-less, say I to the unmarry't and to weedows: Weal for them gin aiblins they bide e'en as I am.

9. But, gin they haena continency, lat them mairry: for better is't to mairry than to be ower fain.

10. To the mairry't hoobit, I gie charge—yet no I, but the Lord—

that a wife gang-na awa fras her husband.

11. But gin aiblins she e'en be sinder't, lat her bide unmairry't, or else be reconcil't to her husband; and lat-na a husband pit awa a wife.

12. And to the lave say I (no the Lord), Gin a brither hae a wife, and she believes-na, and gin she herself is weel-pleased to dwell wi' him—lat him no send her awa.

13. And a wife wha has a husband that believes-na, gin he his sel is weel-pleased to dwall wi' her—lat her no lea her husband!

14. For the misbelievin husband is sanctify't in the wife, and the misbelievin wife is sanctify't in the husband: itherways, as the case is, yere¹ bairns war unclean; but noo are they holie.

15. Hoobit, gin the misbelievin husband is unyoking his sel, lat him be unyokin his sel! the brither or the sister hasna come into bondage in sic like: but God has enjoined upon us peace.

16. For hoo ken ye, O wife! but ye may save yere husband? Or hoo ken ye, O husband! but you may save yere wife?

17. But whether sae, ilk ane, as the Lord has portioned oot to him, ilk ane as God has fund him and ca'd him, sae lat him be walkin'; and sae enjoin I in a' the kirks.

18. Haein been circumceesed when ane was ca'd, lat him no be uncircumceesed. In uncircumceesion was ony ane ca'd? Lat him no become circumceesed!

19. Circumceession is naething, and uncircumceession is naething: but the keepin' o' God's commandments is a' thing.

¹ V. 14. Gin the faither and mither warne leavin thegither, it was e' ane as gin their mairriage was unlawfu': and their bairns wad be as unlawfu'. Sae, for their bairns' sakes, as weel as for peace's sake, and the Gospel's sake, lat them gree thegither.

20. Ilk ane, in the mainner o' life in whilk he was ca'd, see abide.

21. A thirlman war ye whan ca'd? Lat it no fash ye! but gin ye haes choice to be free, tak it.

22. For he that in the Lord was ca'd, whan a thirlman, is emancipate i' the Lord; in sielike, he wha was ca'd as a free man, is a bondman in the Lord.

23. Ye war coft wi' a price: become-na servants o' men.

24. Lat ilk ane, in that state in whilk he was ca'd, abide wi' God.

25. But, anent thae that are maidens, I haes haes commandments o' the Lord; but I gie ye my mind, as ane that haes had mercie fras the Lord to be true and leal.

26. This than, I wad say is seemlie i' the case, by streech of existin things, that it is weel for a man see to be.

27. Hae ye become bund to a wife? Seek-na to be loused. Are ye loused fras a wife? Seek-na a wife.

28. But gin ye e'en mairry, ye haena sinned: and gin a maiden mairry, she haena sinned. Nane-the-less, sic wull haes toessis-about i' the flesh. But I spare ye.

29. But e'en this say I, brethren; the time is wearin done; lat them wi' wives be as gin they haed name;

30. And them greetin, as gin they grat-na; and them rejoicin, as gin they rejoiced-na; and them buyin, as gin they obteene'd-na;

31. And them usin the world, as no bund-up in't; for the form o' this world is passin awa.

32. Moreover, I wad ye war free fras carkin care. The man no mairry't is tentie aboot the Lord's things, hoo he may pleasur the Lord;

33. Whaurae, the man mairry't, is tentie aboot his wife's maitters, hoo he may pleasur his wife, and see is dividit.

34. And thar is a differ atween a wife and a maiden: she that is no mairry't, is tentie aboot the Lord's

things, see as she may be holie in body and spirit; whaur-as she that is mairry't is tentie anent the world's things, hoo she may pleasur her husband.

35. This speak I, wi' an ee to yere ain gude; no that I wad cast a snare ower ye; but wi' an ee to what is seemly, and that ye may wait on the Lord untrammel't.

36. But gin ony man thinks he disna weal by his maiden, gin she pass the flooer o' her age, and need be, lat him do as he wad; he isna committin sin; lat them wed.

37. Nane-the-less, he that staunes siccar in his heart, no bein under necessity, but has pouer as anent his ain wull; and has made it up in his ain heart to keep his maiden, dis weel.

38. See, baith he wha gies in mairriage his ain maiden dochter dis weel; and he wha disna gie in mairriage dis e'en better.

39. A wife is bund as lang as her husband levees; but gin aiblins her husband is faun asleep, she is free to mairry wham she wull: only in the Lord.

40. But happier, gin she thus abide, in my judgment; and mair, I think I haes the Spirit o' God.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

Christian liberty anent meats and drinks: its wideness and its straitness.

NOO, anent eidol-sacrificees: "We ken that we a' haes knowledge." Knowledge swalls up, but love upbiggs.

2. Gif ony man thinks he kens a thing, he haana yet gotten to ken onything as he soud ken.

3. But, gif ony man loe's God, the same man is appruv't o' God.

4. Anent eidol-sacrificees: — we ken weel that an eidol is naething i' the world, and that tbar is nae God but ane.

5. For e'en gin thar be see-ca'd gods, gin they be in heeven or yirth

—e'en as thar are "gods" mony and "lords" mony ;

6. But to us thar is ae God, the Faither, by wham are a' things, and we for him ; and ae Lord Jesus Christ throws wham are a' things, and we throws him.

7. Hoobeit, that leair is no in a' ; but some, trokin¹ wi' the eidol, e'en till noo, wi' the eidol as a sacrificee, eat ; and their conscience, bein unco waff, is defiled.

8. But meat will-na gar us win ben to God ; naither, gin aiblins we eat-na, div we fa' short ; nor aiblins gin we eat, div we excel.

9. But tak ye tent, that by nae means this freedom is made a stumbling clog for the weak.

10. For gin aiblins ane sond see you, wha has knowledge, aittin in an eidol's temple, at meat, wull-na his weak conscience be made bauld to eat the eidol-sacrificees ?

11. Sae, than, the weak aue—the brither Christ dee't for—is brocht to ruin by yere knowledge !

12. But in sae sinnin again the brethren, and clouring their conscience whilk is weak, ye are sinnin again Christ !

13. Sae, in ony case ava, whaur meat is a snare to my brither, I'se in naewise eat flesh for evermair, that I mak-na my brither to stoiter

CHAPTIR NINE.

Paul speaks o' his aul. The battin and the prize.

WALK I no at liberty ? Am I no an Apostle ? Has I no seen Jesus Christ oor Lord ? Are ye no yersels my wark i' the Lord ?

¹ V. 7. Paul kent than an eidol was naething (v. 4.) ; but a ween brethren, tho' they worshipp't only God, believed in the existence o' eidols, as enemies o' God. Siccan aane coudna eat in an eidol's temple, be the meat ever so gude o' itsel : he wad feel he was trokin wi' the eidol. We can has some airtin here, for oorsels.

2. Gin to ither aues I am-na an Apostle, yet nae doot I am to you : for the seal o' my apostleship are ye i' the Lord !

3. My defence to thae wha quasiten me is this :

4. Hae-we-na richt to eat and drink ?

5. Hae-we-na richt to he leadin aboot a wife wha is a believer, as weel as the lave o' the Apostles, and the Lord's brethren, and Peter ?

6. Or has only I and Barnabas no the richt to lay doon wark ?

7. Wha gies service as a sodger, at his ain expense at ony time ? Wha plants a vine-yaird, and eats-na o' the frute ? or wha herds a flock, and takes-na o' the milk o' the flock ?

8. Am I sayin thir things as a man wad say ? Or isna the Lord sayin the same ?

9. For i' the law o' Moses it is putten doon, "Ye sanna muzzle the threshin ox." Is't for the owsen God has care ?

10. Or, was't for² oor sakes a' the gither he said it ? Aye ! for oor sakes was't putten doon : sae that hopin, the ploughman sond plough : and hopin to hae, ane sond thresh.

11. Gin we sawed for you spiritual things, is't a muckle thing gin we reap o' yere fleshly things ?

12. Gin ither use the richt ower ye, sondna raither we ? But we grippit-na this richt, but raither hoppit-up things, that naething sond hinder the Joyfu'-message o' Christ.

13. Ken-ye-na that they wha ser in holie things eat o' the things o' the holie place ? and they wha at the altar staun, wi' the altar share ?

14. E'en sae has the Lord ordeened, that they that declare the Gude-word, sal has their breid o' the Gude-word.

² V. 10. The mair ye'll seek, the mair ye'll see, that a' thae Auld Testament things has a meanin. As Tammes Binney said, "A' the Auld Testament histories are doctrines !"

15. Hoobeit, I haena taen ony o' thir things : and mair, I spak-na o' thae things, that eae it soud be done to me ; for I wad suner dee than that ony ane soud mak feckless my gloryin.

16. For, gin I declare the Joyfu'-message, it isna for me a cause o' gloryin : for a necessity is lyin on me ; for wae is me ! gin aiblins I be-na declarin the Joyfu'-message.

17. For gin I follow this thing o' mysel, I haes my meed ; but gin it isna o' mysel, than it is a factorship I haes been lippen'd wi'.

18. And what, than, is my meed ? this : That in declarin the Joyfu'-message, I may mak it free, and without cost ; that I may-na ower muckle use my richt i' the Joyfu'-message.

19. For e'en free as I am frae a', I am thirlman to a', that I micht win the mair.

20. To the Jews becam I as a Jew, aye as I micht win the Jews : to thae aneath the Law, as aneath the Law (no bein mysel 'neath the Law) that I sould win thae under the Law.

21. To thae no haein the Law, as no haein the Law (no bein without law to God, but aneath Christ's Law), aye as I micht win thae no haein the Law.

22. I becam to the weak, as weak mysel, that I sould win the weak ; to a' men haes I become a' things, that by a' thir means I micht save some !

23. But a' things div I for the sake o' the Joyfu'-message, that a partaker o't wi' you I micht become.

24. Ken-ye-na that they wha rin in a coorse a' rin, but that aye wins the gree ? Sae be rinnin, that ye may win !

25. But ilk ane strivin i' the games, is self-governin in a' things. They do it to obtean a fadin croon ; but we, aye unfadin !

26. And sae I am rinnin, as no at a ventur : sae fecht I, as no haiffin the air :

27. But I am haudin my body under, and garrin it do service ; least in onywise, haein proclaimed the Joyfu'-message to ithera, I mysel soud be cuisten aside !

CHAPTRIR TEN.

We manna tak tent o' the Jews' errors, and no do the like ; and walk close wi' God.

FOR I wadna haes ye unkennin. F bretbren, hoo oor forebears war a' aneath the clud, and a' gaed throwe the sea ;

2. And war a' baptizeez't intil Moses i' the clud and i' the sea.

3. And a' did eat like spiritual braid ;

4. And a' did drink like spiritual drink ; for they drank oot o' a spiritual rock that followt' them : the Rock, metholeesa, was Christ.

5. Hoobeit wi' mony o' them was God ill-pleased : and he dang them ower i' the wilderness.

6. Noo in thir things they becam lessons to us, that we soudna glaum at ill things, as eke they glaum'd.

7. Nor worship eidols, as some o' them : jnist as it is putten doon, "The folk sat doon to eat and drink, and raises up to mak sport."

8. Naither lat us do uncleanness, as some o' them did uncleanness, and fell in ae day thrie-and-twenty thoos-and.

9. Naither lat us tempt the ¹ Lord, e'en as some o' them temptit, and perish't wi' the serpents.

10. Naither lat us yammer, as some o' them yammer't, and perish't wi' the destroyer.

11. But thir things cam to them for examples. And they war puttin-doon for oor warnin, to wham the binner-end o' time has come.

12. Sae, lat him wha thinks he stanna, tak tent that he fa'-na !

¹ V. 9. A wheen o' the MSS. haes "Christ" bere. But gin we haes the true thoobt, that Christ led and ruled the Auld Testament Kirk, e'en as he dis the New, than thar wull bu nae differ awtwise "Lord" and "Christ."

13. Nae trial has come to ye but a human ane ; and God is leal and true, and winna lat ye be try't aboon what ye are fit to thole ; but wull mak wi' the trial a gate o' escape, that ye may be able to haud oot.

14. Whaur-for, my loved anes, flee frae eidol-worship !

15. As to discernin men I speak ; judge ye what I am sayin.

16. The cup o' blessin, we bless, is't-na the sharin o' the blude o' Christ ? The laif that we brek, is't-na the sharin o' the body o' Christ ?

17. Seein that we, tho' mony, are a' ae laif—as body ; for we a' o' the ae laif partak.

18. Look again at Isra'el accordin to the flesh : are-na they wha eat the sacrificees sharin wi' the altar ?

19. Yet am I sayin that an eidol-sacrificees is onything ? or that an eidol is onything ?

20. On the contrar: "What things the nations sacrificees, to the demons do they sacrificees, and no to God !" and I wadna hae ye to become marrows wi' demons.

21. Ye canna be drinkin the Lord's cup, and demons' cup ; ye canna be sharers o' the Lord's table, and demons' table.

22. Wad ye provoks the Lord to jealousie ? Are we sterker than he ?

23. A' things are alloo't, but a' things are-na for profit : a' things are alloo't, but a' things strengthen-na.

24. Lat nae ane be seekin allenarlie aftir his ain things ; but that whilk is his neebor'a.

25. Whatae'er is sell't i' the merkit, eat ; speirin-nane on behaif o' conscience.

26. "For the baill yirth is the Lord's, and a' its outcome !"

27. Gin ony o' the misbelievin bid ye, and ye tbink to gang, eat what-e'er is set afors ye, speirin-nane on behaif o' conscience.

28. But gin aiblins ane say t'ye, "This is a holie sacrificee !" eat-na,

for the sake o' him wha said see, and for conscience sake ;

29. "Conscience," say I ; no yere ain, but the ither'a. For boosoud my liberty be evened by anither man's conscience !

30. Gin I gratefully am partakin, why am I to be spoken again anent that whilk I am gien thanks ower ?

31. See, gin ye be eatin, or drinkin, or doin ocht, be doin a' to the glorie o' God !

32. Be ye free frae offence, baith to Jews and to Greeks, and to the Kirk o' God.

33. Accordin as I too am pleasin a' men ; no lookin for my ain gain, but the gain o' the mony, that they may be sav't.

CHAPTIR ELEEVEN.

*Men and weemen o' the worship o' the Kirk.
The Lord's Supper.*

BE ye like me, e'en as I follow Christ.

2. I gie ye praise that in a' things ye has mind o' me ; and e'en as I gied to ye the precepta, ye are haudin them siccar.

3. But I wad hae ye ken that the heid o' ilka man is Christ ; and the heid o' a wumman is the man ; and the heid o' Christ is God.

4. Ony man prayin or preachin, haein ocht on his heid, pits his heid under shame ;

5. But a wumman, prayin or preachin wi' her heid unavil't, pits her heid to shame : for it is as gin she had been shaven.

6. For gin a wumman diana cover hersel, lat her hair eke be shorn. But gin it be shamefu' in a wumman to be shorn or shaven, lat her be cover't.

7. For a man soudna cover his heid, inasmuckle as he is God's image and glorie ; but the wumman is man's glorie.

8. For the man is no o' the wumman, but the wumman o' the man.

9. For naither was man made for

the sake o' the wumman, but wumman for the sake o' the man.

10. For sae soud the wumman wear this permission on her heid ; conscious o' the Angels.

11. Hoobbeit, naither is the man wantin the wumman, nor the wumman wantin the man, in the Lord.

12. For e'en as the wumman is o' the man, sae is the man throws the wumman : but a' things are o' God.

13. Think for yers ain sals :—Is't seemly for a wumman, uncover't, to be prayin to God ?

14. Disna e'en natur tell ye, that a man, gin aiblins he has lang hair, it is a discredit to him ?

15. Whaur-as, a wumman, gin aiblins she has lang hair, it is a glorie to her ? For the lang hair has been gien to her for a coverin.

16. Gin, hoobbeit, ony ane thinks to be contrar, nae sic custom as this hae we, nor yet the kirks o' God !

17. But I gie ye this chaire, no to praise ye ava ; for that ye are-na comin thegither for the better, but for the waur.

18. For to begin : tho' ye div indeed come thegither i' the kirk, I am tell't that factions amang ye are springing up ; and I somewhat believe it.

19. For pairties amang ye that maun be ; that they that are acceptit amang ye may be schawn.

20. And sae, though ye come thegither intil a place, it iana to eat the Lord's Supper :

21. For ilk ane has his ain supper afore eatin ; and sae ane is hung'ry, and anither is steg'b't.

22. What ! hae-ye-na hooses to eat and drink in ? Or, div ye belittle God's kirk, and shame thae that hae nocht ? What am I to say t'ye ? Am I to compliment ye ? I compliment-ye-na !

23. For I had frae the Lord what I e'en tell't to you, that the Lord Jesus, that nicht in whilk he was betray't, took a laif ;

24. And gien thanks, brak it, and said, "This is my body that is gien for you ; this do, in memory o' me."

25. And in like manner the cup too, aftir the takin' o' supper, sayin, "This cup is the New Covenant in my blude : this div ye, e'en as aft as ye may drink o't, for the remembrance o' me."

26. For, sae often as ye may be eatin this laif, and drinkin this cup, ye are setting forth the death o' the Lord, till whatna time he may come.

27. Sae, whosoe'er may be eatin the laif, or drinkin the cup o' the Lord, in an unwordie way, sal be hauden for the body and the bluid o' the Lord.

28. But lat a man pit his sel to the test ; and in sic manner lat him eat o' the laif, and drink o' the cup.

29. For he that is eatin and drinkin, is eatin and drinkin condemnation to himself, gin he be-na' consecratin the body.

30. And sae that are amang ye, a hantle weak and pinin, and a gude whean fa'in asleep.

31. Gin, hoobbeit, we had been consecrating oorsels, we wadna i' that case hae been comin beneath condemnation.

32. But, bein brocht beneath judgment by the Lord, we are chasteen', that we soudna be condemned wi' the warld.

33. And sae ye, my brethren, whan ye come thegither to eat, wait ye ane for anither.

34. Gin ony man hung'er, lat him eat at hame, least ye but come thegither for condemnation : and for the lave o't, whan I come, I wull set a' in order.

¹ V. 29. The sense is a wee obscure. It seems to mean, takin this and the 31st verse thegither, that we maun consecrate oorsels, gin we wad be acceptit ; and gin we consecrate oorsels, the breid wull be consecrate, in our mind, and in oor mou'.

CHAPTR TWAL'.

A hantle mair o' the Corinths had gifis than hent weel hoo to use them. We're a' pairts o' ae body.

NOO, anent the "spiritual," brethren, I wadna hae ye i' the mirk.

3. Ye weel ken that whan ye war Gentiles, ye war led to their dumb eidolas, hoosoe'er ye might be airtit.

3. And sae, I gie ye to ken that nae, speakin wi' God's Spirit, maks oot Jesus to be ¹ accurst; and that nae ane can mak oot Jesus to be Lord, but wi' the Holie Spirit.

4. But braidlie-scattert' gifts that are, yet the ae Spirit:

5. And braidlie-scattert' service, yet the ae Lord:

6. And braid-scatterin o' inward wark that is; and aye the ae God, wha works inwardly a' things in a' men.

7. But to ilk aue is gien this schawin-forth o' the Spirit, to work whete'er is best.

8. For to aue is gien indeed throwe the Spirit, a word o' inner wisdom; to anither, the word o' ootward knowledge, by the same Spirit.

9. To anither, faith, by the ae Spirit, but to anither gifts for healin by the same Spirit.

10. To anither aue, wunner-warks and pooers; to anither, speakin for God; to anither, discernin o' spirits; to anither, mony tongues; but to anither, interpretin o' tongues.

11. But a' thir dae that ae and the self-same Spirit work inwardly, giean oot to ilk aue, allenartie e'en as he wull.

12. For e'en as the body is aue, and has a hantle o' members, but a' the members o' the body, mony as they may be, are ae body, sae e'en in Christ.

¹ V. 3. A wheen Jews, in Corinth and elsewhere, wad ca' Jesus Christ "curst"; and yet fausely mak oot they war speakin for God!

13. For in as Spirit, are we a' in ae body baptizit, either Jews or Greeks, either bond or free; and war made to a' drink o' ae Spirit.

14. For the body isna ae member, but mony.

15. Gin aiblins the fit soud say, "For that I am-na the haun, I am-na o' the body," is't than no o' the body?

16. And gin aiblins the lug soud say, "For that I am-na an ee, I am-na o' the body," is't than no o' the body?

17. Gin the hail o' the body war ee, whaur the hearin? or gin the hail hearin, whaur the smellin?

18. But noo, God plantit the members, ilk o' them, i' the body, juist as he pleased.

19. Gin hoobeit, a' had been ae member, whaur the body?

20. Whaur-as, noo, a hantle o' members—yet indeed but ae body.

21. Forby, the ee canna say to the haun, "I has nae need o' you!" nor yet the heid to the feet, "I has nae need o' you!"

22. But, on the contrar, muckle mair the members o' the body, seemin maist feckless, are needfu';

23. And the pairts o' the body we may deem to be wantin in honor, we pit on the mair honor; and oor less favor't pairts we busk the mair.

24. Whaur-as, oor weel-fair'd pairts are no in want. But God has mouldit the body weel; giean mair tender care to the pairt that was wantin.

25. That thar soud be nae sedition in the body; but the members hae like care aue ower anither.

26. And gin ae member dree ill, a' the members dree wi't; or gin ae member be magnifyt, a' the members are blythe wi' it.

27. Noo, ye are Christ's body; and allenartie, members:

28. Wham, indeed, God plantit i' the Kirk; first o' a' Apostles; second, prophets; third, teachers; helpers; airtins; kinds o' tongues.

29. Are a' Apostles? a' prophets? a' teachers? a' workers o' ferlies?

80. Has a' healin? Div a' speak wi' tongues? Div a' interpret?

31. But desire ye the chief gifts: and noo I airt ye till a better gate for't.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

The praise o' love: it is like God, frae wham it comes, perfect!

GIN aiblins I be speakin wi' a' the tongues o' man and o' Angels, and want love, I am nae mair nor dunnerin brass, or a jinglin cymbal.

2. And gin I has the gift o' foretellin, and ken a' hidden things, and a' lear; and gin I hae a' faith, sae as to gar mountains flit, but hae-na love, I am naething.

3. And gin I morsel-oot a' I hae intil bung'ry mort's, and gie up my body to the lowin fire, and hae-na love, I am nane the better!

4. Love tholes lang; is kind and cannie: love isna sellie, love vauntsna itsel, isna sune upliftit;

5. Demeans itsel discreetly; seeks-na her ain: isna gien to flytin; casts nae by-ganes.

6. Joys-na ower wrang, but alang wi' truth is blythe:

7. Tholes a' things, lippens a' things, looks forrit to a' things, drees a' things.

8. Love hides aye. But gin thar be¹ foretellins, they sal be endit; gin thar be tongues, they sal cease; gin thar be lear, it sal dwine awa.

9. For we ken but in pairt, and we prophesie but in pairt.

10. But whan the perfete is come, than a' that is in pairt sal be laid doon.

11. Whan I was a bairn, I spak like a bairn, I esteemed things like a bairn, I thocht like a bairn; but noo, bein a man, I hae putten-awa bairn-like things.

12. For noo we see but in a keakin-glass, a' dimly; but than, clearly, face to face: noo, in pairt I ken; but than sal I ken, e'en as I mysel hae been clearly kent.

13. But noo, firm bides Faith, Hope, and Love, thir thrie; but Love is boonaist o' them a'.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

Speakin wi' tongues; and hoo the Kirk may ha'e a blessein oot o't.

FOLLOW ye aftir Love: yet be ye fain to hae spiritual gifts; but amang them a', that ye may prophesy.

2. For he that speaks wi' anither tongue, isna speakin to men, but to God; for nae listens to him; still, i' the Spirit he is speakin deep things.

3. But he that is prophesying is speakin to men for their strenthenin, exhortation, and comfort.

4. He that speaks wi' a tongue is strenthenin his sel; but he that prophesies is strenthenin the Kirk.

5. Hoobeit, I desire ye to be speakin wi' tongues, but mair that ye may prophesy; for heigher is he that prophesies than he wha speaks wi' tongues — unless indeed he exponit it, that the Kirk may be strenthened.

6. And noo, brethren, gin I come to ye speakin wi' tongues, what better sal ye be, gin I divna speak to ye either by revelation, or wi' wisdom, or by preachin, or by exponin?

7. And sae e'en things no leevin, gien oot a soond, be it pipe or harp, gin they dinna mak a differ in the notes, hoo sal it be kent what is piped or what is harped?

8. For gin the trumpet gie a wafflin soond, wha wull pit on his graith for the fecht?

9. And ean ye, gin ye gie-na speech weel-kent, hoo sal it be up-taen? for ye wull be speakin to the air.

10. Thar may be an unco-mony

¹ V. 8. Prophecies and foretellins sal cease; no that they warne guid and true, but that a' is come to pass, and they are-na needit.

tongues in the wold, and no ane wantin sense.

11. Gin than I ken-na the meanin o' the tongue, I sal be to him wha is speakin like ane fremd ; and he that is speakin, fremd to me.

12. Sin' than ye be fain to hae Spirit-gifts, seek that ye may be forrit in strenthenin the Kirk.

13. And see, lat him wha speaks wi' a tongue, pray that he may expone it.

14. For gin I be prayin in a tongue, my spirit is prayin, but my mind isna nourish't.

15. What than ? I wull pray in the spirit, but I wad eke pray wi' the understandin : I wull praise wi' the spirit, but I wad eke praise wi' the understandin !

16. Els, gin aiblins ye be blessin i' the spirit, hoo sal he that is wantin in gifts say the "Amen," at yere giean o' thanks ? sin' he kens-na what ye are sayin !

17. For ye are indeed giean thanks weel, but the ither iana strenthen't !

18. I gie thanks to God that I speak wi' tongues mair nor a' o' ye.

19. But in the Kirk I wad rather speak fyve words wi' my understaunin, that I might gie ither lear, than myriads o' words in a tongue !

20. Brethren, be-na bairns in yere understaunins : but in a' that is base be ye bairns, while in yere understaunins be ye men.

21. I' the Law thar is putten-doone, "Wi' ither tongues and ither lips, speak I to this folk ; and no een see wull they listen to me, says the Lord."

22. Sae that tongues are for a testimonie, no to thae that has faith, but to thae wantin faith : but prophecie iana for thae that are wantin faith, but for they wha hae faith.

23. For gin the hail Kirk come thegither for the se thing, and a' be speakin wi' tongues, and thar come in men ungiftit, or wantin faith, wull they no report ye are wud ?

24. But gin aiblins a' are propheseyin, and thar come in ane wantin faith, or wantin gifts, he is convictit by a' ; he is pruv'd by a' ; the secrets o' his heart are made kent ;

25. And, fa'in doon on his face, he wull adore God, declarin that God is in ye indeed !

26. Hoo, than, is't, brethren ? Whane'er ye come thegither, ilk ane has a psalm, or an exhortation, or a revelation, or a tongue, or an interpretation : lat a' things be dune for up-biggin.

27. Gin it be in a tongue, lat it be wi' twa, or at maist by thrie, by turns ; and lat ane be exponin.

28. But gif thar be nane to expone, lat him be quate i' the kirk : to himsel lat him be speakin—and to God.

29. And as to the propheta, lat twa¹ speak, or thrie, and lat the ither discern.

30. But gin aiblins to anither a revelation is made as he is sittin, lat the first be quate :

31. For ane by ane ye can a' prophesy, that a' may learn, and a' hae consolation.

32. And the spirits o' the propheta are ruled by the propheta.

33. For God isna a God o' tulziea, but o' peace ; as in a' the kirks o' the saunts.

34. As for the wives, lat them be quate i' the kirks ; for it isna allo'd them to be speakin, but lat them be in submission, e'en as says the Law.

35. But gin they wad fain learn onything, lat them speir at their ain husbands at hame ; for it isna seemly for a wife to be speakin i' the kirk.

36. Was't frae you that the word

¹ V. 29. John Knox recommendit sic meetins "for propheseyin" ; ane he ca'd them : and that twa, or at maist thrie, only, soud speak, and then gang oot, till the lave had pronounced on what they had brocht forrit. It wasna dune by oor Scots folk ; but was gode advice, name-the-less.

o' God gae'd oot ; or to you alle-
arie did it come ?

37. Gin ony ane judges he is a
prophet, or spiritual, lat him say that
the things I am writing to ye are the
Lord's words.

38. But gin ony ane is ignorant
anent this, lat him bide ignorant.

39. Sae than, brethren, be fain to
prophesy, and forbid-na to speak wi'
tongues ;

40. But lat a' things be done
decently and in order.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

*A' about the Risan-again : mair here nor in
a' the lave o' the Word. It is ane o'
Paul's special messages frae the Lord
to us.*

NOO, I mak kent t'ye, brethren, the
Joyfu'-message whilk I mysel
spak to ye, whilk eke ye received,
and in whilk eke ye staun.

2. And throwe whilk ye are saved,
gin ye hand siccar the word I tell't
ye, in whilk I spak to ye the Joyfu'-
message ; gin ye haen-na lippened in
vain !

3. For I deliver't to ye, the first
thing, hoo that Christ deet for oor
sins, as said i' the Scripture ;

4. And that he was bury't ; and
that he has been raised—on the third
day, as said the Scripture ;

5. And that he schawed his sel to
Peter ; aftir, to the Twal'.

6. Aftir that he schawed his sel to
mair nor fyve hunder brethren at
ane ; the feck o' them remainin till
noo, but a wheen are faun asleep.

7. Aftir that he schawed his sel
to James ; and aftir, to a' the
Apostles ;

8. And last o' a', as to the un-
timely birth—e'en to me !

9. For I am but the least o' the
Apostles, wha am-na fit to be ca'd an
Apostle, for that I persecutit the
Kirk o' God.

10. But by God's favor I am what
I am : and his favor to me wasna
made vain ; but, mair aboundin than

they a' was I in toil : hoobeit, it
wasna I, but God's favor wi' me.

11. Sae, gin it be I or they, sae we
preach, and sae ye lippen'd.

12. Noo, gin Christ be proclaimed,
as bein risen frae 'mang the deid, hoo
say a wheen amang ye that " Thar is
nae Risan-frae-the-deid ! "

13. But, gin " Risan-frae-the-deid
thar be name," than no e'en Christ
has been raised !

14. And gin Christ haena been
raised, oor preachin, at last, is vain ;
and yere believin is a' vain !

15. And mair : we are schawn to
be fause-witnesses o' God ; for we
bore witness o' God that he raised
Christ ; wham he raised-na, gin the
deid be-na raised !

16. For gin the deid are-na raised,
Christ raise-na !

17. And gin Christ raise-na, yere
faith is a' in vain ; ye are yet in yere
sains !

18. And thae too, wha fell asleep
in Christ, perish't !

19. Gin we haes but hopit in Christ
in this life alone, we are o' a' men
maist to be pitied !

20. But noo, Christ has been
raised fras 'mang the deid, a first-
frute o' thame wha are faun asleep !

21. For sin, throwe a man cam
death, throwe a man comes eke the
Risan-frae-the-deid.

22. For as in Adam a' dee, sae in
Christ sal a' be made leevin.

23. But ilk ane followin in his
proper place : Christ, a first-frute ;
than they wha are Christ's, at his
comin :

24. Eftirhaun, than the end—
whane'er he delivers up the King-
dom to God the Faither ; whan a'
rule and authoritie is dune awa' wi'.

25. For he maun rule till whatna
time as he has putten a' his face
aneath his feet.

26. The last face that is dune awa'
wi', is Death.

27. " For a' things are to be
putten aneath his feet." But whaur

ane says, "A' things haes been putten aneath," it is plain that thar is an exception o' the Ane wha pat a' things aneath him.

28. But, whaur a' things are putten aneath him, than sal the Son hissel become subject to the Ane wha made a' things subject to him—that the Godhead may be a' in a'!

29. Or else, what is for them that are baptizeet for the 'deid? Gin the deid be-na raised ava, why than are they baptizeet for the deid?

30. And why soud we be rinnin intil danger ilka 'oor?

31. Ilk day I am deein, brethren—by a' the gloryin whilk I has ower you in Christ Jesus oor Lord!

32. Gif, like a man, I battled wi' wild beass in Ephesua, what is the profit to me? Gif the deid are-na to be raised, "Lat us eat and drink! for the morn we dee!"

33. Dinna be taen-in: "Ilt company corrupts gude conduct."

34. Wauken ye to soberneas, richtously; and sin-na; for a hantle ken-na God. To yere shame speak I.

35. But some may speir, "Hoo are the deid to be raised? and in whatna body are they to appear?"

36. Doitit ane! what seed, e'en ye saw, isna made leevin till it dee:

37. And what ye saw—no the bouk that sal come to be dae ye saw—but a bare pickle: be it wheat, or ony o' the lave.

38. Hoobeit, God gies it a bonk e'en as he has been pleased; and to ilk o' the seeds its richt bouk.

39. A' flesh isna ae kind o' flesh; but ane is flesh o' men, anither flesh o' beass, anither flesh o' fowla, and anither o' fishes.

40. And thar are heevenly bodies, and yirthly bodies. But ae kind o' glorie is the heevenly, and anither kind that o' the yirthly.

41. Thar is ae glorie o' the sun, and another kind o' glorie o' the moon, and yet another glorie o' the starne. Nay, thar is a differ, starn frae starn!

42. And sae i' the Rian-frae-the deid. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption;

43. It is sown in abasement, it is raised in glorie; it is sown in fecklessness, it is raised in power.

44. It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. Gin thar is a natural body, thar is eke a spiritual body!

45. And sae it is putten doon, "The first man, Adam, becam a leevin bein." But the last Adam, a life-giean Spirit.

46. Hoobeit, the spiritual cam-na first, but the natural: eftir that the spiritual:

47. The first man, o' the yirth, yirthly; the second man o' heeven.

48. Like as the yirthly ane, siclike are they that are yirthly; and like as the heevenly ane, siclike are they that are heevenly.

49. And e'en as we bire the likeness o' the yirthly ane, we sal e'en bear the likeness o' the heevenly ane.

50. Bnt I say this, brethren, that flesh and blinde canna iuherit God's Kingdom; nor is corruption to inherit holiness.

51. Tak tent! I unfauld to ye a riddle: We sanna a' fa' asleep; but a' sal be cheenged,

52. In a moment, in a blink, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet sal soond, and the deid sal be raised, incorruptible; and we'se be cheenged.

53. For this corruptible-man muin needs cleed itsel wi' incorruption, and this mortal cleed itsel wi' immortality.

54. Sae whane'er this corruptible has cleedit itsel wi' incorruption, and this mortal has cleeded itsel wi' immortality, than sal come aboot the word putten-doone, "Death was vitoriounly swallow'd up!"

¹ V. 29. We can jimpily get at the meanin here: maist like it is, "Baptizeet intil Ane that dee'st"; meanin Christ.

55. "Whaur, O Death ! is yere victory ! Whaur, O Death, is yere sting !"

56. Noo, Death's sting is sin ; and sin's power the Law :

57. But God hae thanks, wha gies us victory throue oor Lord Jeesus Christ !

58. Saes than, brethren beloved, be aye abidin, no to be moved ; unco aboundin i' the Lord's wark aye ; kennin yere toil isna in vain in the Lord.

CHAPTER SAXTEEN.

Siller for the pair saunta. A weel pairin words and salutations.

NOO, anent the siller for the saunta, e'en as I gae orders to the Kirks o' Galatia, sae e'en do ye.

2. On the first day o' the week, lat ilk ane o' ye lay-by by himself, gaitherin up, whatsoe'er he may be prosper't wi' ; least, whan I come, collections may be still gaun on.

3. But, whan I come, whae'er ye may approuve, them wull I send wi' letters, to cairry yere bountry to Jerusalem.

4. And, gin it be needfu' that I gang as weal, they sal gang wi' me

5. And I wull come to ye, at sic-like time as I gang throue Macedonia : for I div gang throue Macedonia.

6. And wi' you, aihlins, I may stop, or e'en winter ; and ye sal set me forrit on my journey.

7. For I divna desire to see ye e-noo, juist in passin ; for I am in bope to stop a gey while wi' ye, gin the Lord wull.

8. But I wull stop in Ephesus till Pentecost ;

9. For a door has been unsteekit for me, great and effectual ; and thar are a bantle adversaries.

10. But gin Timothy come, see ye that he may be wi'ye without dreid ; for, e'en as I, he is workin the Lord's wark.

11. Lat nae ane lightlie him ; but set him forrit in peace, sae as he may come to me ; for I am lookin for him wi' the brethren.

12. Anent oor brither Apollos : I entreatit him muckle that he wad gang to ye wi' the brethren, but his mind wasna to gang noo ; but he wull gang whan he sal has fit opportunity.

13. Tak tent : hand ye fast i' the faith ; be ye men ; be stark.

14. Lat a' things be carry't on in love.

15. And I entreat ye, brethren— ye ken the hoose o' Stephanus, a first-frnte o' Greece, and that they hae set theirsels to a service o' the saunta—

16. That ye submit yersels to sic-like as thae, and to ilk ane that is helpin in the wark, and toilin.

17. But I am blythe ower the comin o' Stephanus and Fortunatus and Achaeus ; for they made up for yere want.

18. For they gied reet to my spirit and yours. Be ye, than, ownin sic as thae.

19. The Kirks o' Asia salute ye. Aquila and Prisca, wi' the meetin in their hoose, salute ye muckle in the Lord.

20. A' the brethren salute ye. Salute ye ane anither wi' a sacred kiss.

21. The salutation o' me, Paul, wi' my ain haun.

22. Gin ouy ane loe-na the Lord, lat him be accursed ; ¹ Maranatha !

23. The tender love o' the Lord Jesus be wi'ye.

24. My love be wi'ye a', in Christ Jesus.

¹ V. 22. Twa Aramaic words, meanin "The Lord comes !" Paul left them in his Greek untranslatit, as we do i' the Scots. There is whiles an advantage in lettin a word nae bide : it sets folk speirin and thinkin.

SECOND CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

*About sorrows and fashes; and what for he
didna come to them awair.*

PAUL, an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, by God's wull, and Timothy oor brither, to the Kirk o' God whilk is in Corinth, wi' a' the saunts i' the baill o' Greece:

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and quateness, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3. Blest be the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, the Bestower o' a' mercies, and the God o' a' comfort,

4. Wha comfortit us in a' oor troubles, that we may e'en be able to comfort thae wha are in trouble, by the comfort we oorsels are comfortit, in God.

5. For e'en as the sufferans-o'-Christ are unco mony wi' us, sae throwe Christ oor comfort is unco great.

6. But, gin we be in trouble, it is the mair for yere consolation and salvation, whilk is workin to yere tholin the same as we are e'en noo tholin; and oor hope is siccar on yere behauf. Or, gin ye be comfortit, it is a' for yere consolation and salvation.

7. Kennin, that as ye are partakers o' the sorrow, sae sal ye e'en be o' the comfort.

8. For we wadna hae ye unkennin, brethren, o' oor trouble that befel us i' the Province o' Asia: hoo that in an unco mainner, ayont oor power, war we dung doon, sae that we e'en gied up the hope o' life.

9. But we cairry the sentence o' death in oorsels, that we soudna hae confidence in oorsels, but in God wha raises the deid.

10. Whaoot o' sae unco a death rescut us, and wull rescue; on

wham we hae turned oor hope that he wull again resucea.

11. Ye also, joinin thegither in prayer for us, that the gift granted to us by the prayers o' many, may be thankfully acknowledged.

12. For oor consolation is, the witness o' conscience, that in purity, and aefauldness afore God, no in wisdom o' man, but by God's favor, we sae leeved i' the warld—and mair owerflowin toward you.

13. For we are pittin doon nae ither things than what ye did read and own; and I trust ye wull aye own;

14. E'en as ye did e'en own us in a degree, that we war yere rejoicin, e'en as ye sal be oors i' the day o' the Lord Jesus.

15. Noo, in this mind I was gaun to come to ye, that ye might hae a second joy.

16. And to gang throwe you intil Macedonia; and to come back to ye, and by you to be set on forrit to Judea.

17. And this, was I gann to do wi' levity o' mind i' or siccan things as I decide, das I decide conform to the flesh, that wi' me thar soud be the "aye, aye!" or the "na, na."

18. But as God is true, oor word to ye isna "aye" or "na."

19. For God's Son, Jesus Christ, wha was proclaimed amang ye throwe us, throwe me, and Silas, and Timothy, wasna "aye" and "na," but it becam "aye" in him!

20. For, hoo mony God's promises may be, in him it is "aye," and in him it is "Amen," for the glory o' God throwe us.

21. But be wha maks us siccar (alang wi' you) for Christ, and wha anointit us, is God.

22. Wha eke seal't us for his sel,

and gied the first-frutes o' the Spirit in oor hearts.

23. But I tak God as a witness on my saul, that by way o' sparin ye, I keepit¹ fras comin to Corinth.

24. It iana that we haes rule ower yere faith, but are raither helpers o' yere joy: for by yere faith ye are stannin.

CHAPTIR TWA.

Paul advises that the ill-deevis (and now repenta) member o' the Kirk be forgy'en.

BUT I determined to mysel, no to come t'ye again wi' sorrow.

2. For gin I mak ye wae, wha is he that is to mak me blythe, savin him that I mak wae?

3. And I wrate this vera thing, least whan I cam I might haes had sorrow frae thae ower wham I soud haes had grund o' rejoicin; haein assurance anent ye a' that my joy is e'en the joy o' ye a'.

4. For ooten o' muckle fash and pain o' heart I wrate ye, wi' mony tears: no that ye soud be made wae, but that ye might come to ken the unco love I bear aee greatly t'ye.

5. Gin, than, ony ane has made sorrow, no to me has he made it; but—that I press-na ower strangly on ye—in paert to ye a'.

6. Eneuch for siccans aane was the rebuke gian by the mony;

7. See that, on the contrar, it is raither for you to forgie and comfort; least by his² unco sorrow sic aane soud be swallow't up.

¹ V. 23. He might haes fund cause for unco sharpness and reprove, gin he cam: sae, instead, he wad send them a letter. A letter diana get "het" whan ill-received, and whilst it is best!

² V. 7. The man he spak o', i' L. Corinthians v., they had putten oot; and noo on his repentance and weel-dooing, wadna tak in again! forgettin that Kirk-laws are solely for the gude o' the offender, and for the purity o' the Kirk. A mercif' faither or mither, or a mercif' Kirk, aye leas the door "on the neck," for the wanderin ane to come back!

8. And sae I entreat ye to mak siccar your love to him;

9. For e'en to this end I wrate, sae as I soud haes prufe o' you; gin, in a' things, ye war obedient.

10. Noo, to ans ye forgie ocht, I too! for e'en I—what I haes forgien—whaur I forgie ocht—for your sakes I forgie it, afore Christ.

11. Sae as we be-na oot-matched wi' Sautan; for we are-na ignorant o' his deceipta.

12. Forby, whan I cam to Troas, for Christ's Joyfu'-message, and a door was unsteakit to me in the Lord,

13. I had nae comfort in my saul, at no finding my brither Titus; but, biddin them God-speed, I gaed oot intil Macedonia;

14. But, to God be praise, wha at a' seasons gars us triumph in Christ, and maks the sweet savor o' his knowledge kent in ilka place throwe na.

15. That we are a sweet savor o' Christ to God, in thae that are saved, and in thae that are tint;

16. In thir, soothly, a savor oot o' death, death-like; but in thae, a savor oot o' life, life-like: and for thir things, wha is aqual?

17. For we are-na, as a handle are, corruptin the word o' God; but in a' safalndness, as o' God, in the sicht o' God, we speak o' Christ.

CHAPTIR THREE.

The New Covenant unco better than the auld.

ARE we to begin again to roose A' oorsels? Or haes we need, as a wheen ither, o' letters o' commendation to ye, or frae ye?

2. Yere ain aels are oor letter, written in oor hearts, kent and read o' a' men:

3. Schawin yarsels that ye are a message o' Christ, deliver't by us, inscrivit no wi' ink, but wi' Spirit o' the Leevin God; no in tablets o' stane, but in tablets, in hearts, o' flesh.

4. And siccian certaintie as this hae we, throwe Christ, toward God.

5. No as we war o' oor ainsels able, see as to reckon onything o' oorsels; but oor ability is o' God.

6. Wba e'en made us able to be messengers o' a new Covenant, no o' letter, but o' Spirit; for the letter slays, but the Spirit maks leevin.

7. But gin the message o' death, inscrivit in stane, cam amid glorie, see that the children o' Isra'el warna fu' able to look intil Moses' face, for the glorie o' his face—whilk glorie was to come till an end—

8. Hoo soudna raither the message o' the Spirit be in glorie!

9. For gin the message o' condemnation was in glorie, muckle mair the message o' richtousness is fu' o' glorie.

10. For, in sooth, that whilk was made glorious had nae glorie in comparison, on accoont o' the 'greater glorie—

11. For gif that whilk was to pass awa cam wi' glorie, muckle mair that whilk is to bide has glorie!

12. Haein, than, siccian a hope, we use unco plainness o' speech;

13. And no like Moses, wha put a veil ower bis face, see that the children o' Isra'el soudna fu'-look to the end o' that whilk was passin awa.

14. But their minds war drumlie. For e'en to this vera day, the same veil remains at the readin o' the auld Covenant, no' taen awa; for to be taen awa in Christ.

15. But to this day, whane'er Moses is read, a veil ower their hearts is lyin.

16. Hoobedit, whansoe'er a heart may turn toward the Lord, the veil is to be liftit aff.

17. Noo the Lord is the Spirit; and whaure'er the Lord's Spirit is that is liberty.

¹ V. 10. As the mune and starns, wi' a' their glorie, are as naething compared wi' the sun, see Moses' ordinances dwine awa in the licht o' the Gospel. They lichtit the mirk, but are-na needit i' the day.

18. But we a', wi' unveil't face, receivin and reflectin the glorie o' the Lord, are cheenged intil the self-same image fras glorie on to glorie, as fras the Lord the Spirit.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

In whatna maner he preached to them he expnes in a aefauld way.

AND see, haein this messaga, e'en as we had mercie gien na, we didna gie a' up;

2. But we disowned the secret things o' shame, and gang-na in deceit, nor in a twaefauld way dealin wi' the word o' God; but by the schawin o' the truth, seekin favor o' ilk man's conscience i' the sicht o' God.

3. But gin aiblins oor Joyfu'-message has onyway come till ye veil't—to them wha war perishin it cam to be veil't;

4. In wham the god o' this waird made drumlie their perceptions, least they soud discern the brichtness o' Christ's Joyfu'-message o' glorie, wha is the image o' God.

5. For we proclaim-na oor ainsels; but Christ Jesus as Lord, and oorsels as yere servitors for Jesus' sake.

6. For God, wha said, "Oot o' the mirk lat licht abine!" has lichtit-up oor hearts, to gie the licht o' the knowledge o' God i' the face o' Christ.

7. But we haes this treasur in veschels o' clay, that the owermasterin o' the pooer may be o' God, and no o' ua.

8. On ilka side pressed sair, but no helpless; switherin, but no lackin escape;

9. Pursued, but no abandoned; dung doon, but no made an end o';

10. Aye bearin aboot i' the body the puttan-to-deid o' Jesus; that see e'en the life o' Jesus nicht be schawn in oor body.

11. For evermair, we, the leevin, are deliver't up tae death, for Jesus'

sake, that Jesus' life nicht be schawn in oor mortal flesh.

13. See that death is wrocht in us, inwardly ; but life in you.

13. Hoebeit, we hae the same spirit o' faith, conform to what is putten-doон, "I had faith, thar-for spak I ;" sas we hae faith, and thar-for spak :

14. Lippenin that he wha raised up the Lord Jesus, wull also wi' Jesus raise us, and wull present us wi' you.

15. For a' things are for yere sakes, sas that, wi' grace aboundin throve the mony, it may mak the praise to abound the mair, to the glorie o' God.

16. Thar-for we are-na faint-heartit ; but e'en tho' oor outward man dwines awa, yet oor inward man is ilka day renewin.

17. For the wee bit passin sorrow that we hae, is workin oot for us, aye mair and mair, a mair excellent and eternal wecht o' glorie ;

18. Sae lang as we look-na for things seen, but for things unseen : for the seen things are but for a time, but the things no seen are for aye.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Paul is siccar in his faith o' comin glorie : the body may fail, but we fit to a better house !

FOR we ken, that gin aiblins oor yirdly sheilin be taen doon, we hae a biggin o' God, a dwallin no made wi' hauna, eternal i' the Heevens.

2. For truly, in this behaif we maan, unco fain to hae spread ower us oor hoose whilk is o' heeven ;

3. Gin sas that bein cover't, we sanna be fund nakit.

4. And vera truly, we that are i' the sheilin dae maen, bein handen doon : yet we are-na fain to be uncover't, but rather to cover oorsels ower ; that what is mortal nicht be swallow't up in immortality.

5. Noo, he wha wrocht us oot for this vera thing is God, wha e'en gied to us the first-frutes o' the Spirit.

6. Haein gude heart at a' times ; kennin that whiles bidin i' the body, we are awa frae the Lord ;

7. For we are gaun on by faith, and no by oor ain een.

8. We hae gude heart nane-the-less, and are pleased raither to gang frae oot the body, and to come ben to the Lord !

9. And sas we are unco fain—be we at hame, or awa frae hame—to pleasor him.

10. For we maan a' be made seen at the bar o' Christ, that ilk ane may hae conform to the things dune i' the body, o'en as he has dune, be they gude or ill.

11. Kennin than the dreid o' the Lord, we perswad men ; but to God we are weel-kent ; and I wad hope that e'en in yere consciences we hae been made weal-kent.

12. We dinna command oorsels again to ye, but gie ye opportunity to command us ; that ye may hae something for thae wha boast o' their outward things, and no in heart.

13. For e'en gin we war daft, it was for God ; or are douce and grave, it is for you.

14. For Christ's love rinks us in ; for we sas judge, that gin ane dee't for a', than in consequence a' dee't ;

15. And he dee't for a', that the leevin soud leeve nae lang'er to their sels, but for him wha on their behaif dee't and raise again.

16. Sae that we, frae this oot, ken nae man, conform to the flesh ; e'en gin we hae—conform to the flesh—kent the Messiah, yet noo, frae this oot, in siclike ken we him nae mair.

17. Sae than, gif ony man is in Christ, thar is a new creation ! auld things has gane by ; lo ! a' things are made new !

18. But they are a' o' God, wha reconcil't us to himself throwe

Christ, and gied to us the message o' reconciliation ;

19. Hoo that God, in Christ, was reconcilin the world to his ain sel, no coontin up to them their sins ; and did pit in us the message o' the Reconciliation.

20. For Christ, than, are we Envoyes, as gin God war entreatin throws us : we beseech, for Christ, "Be ye reconcil't to God !"

21. Him that kent nae sin has he made for us to be as ¹sin ; that ye might come to be a richtousness o' God.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Paul and his marrow : faithfu' and leal.

WORKIN thegither wi' him, we entreat ye no to receive the tender-love o' God in vain !

2. For he says, "At a favorable time I heard ye, and in a day o' salvation I befreendit ye." Tak tent ! Noo a favorable time ; lo ! noo a day o' salvation !

3. Gien nae occasion o' stumblin in onything, that oor ministration be-na wytit :

4. But in a' things commendin oorsels as God's servitors ; in muckle patience, in dool, in needs, in stretts,

5. In stripes, in imprisonments, in bruilziea, in toilins, in waukrifeness, in fastins,

6. In continence, in knowledge, in lang-tholin, in unco kindness, in the Holie Spirit, in aefauld love,

7. In the truthfu' word, in the pooper o' God, by the wapins o' richtousness i' the richt haun and the left ;

8. Throws glorie and shame, throws ill-report and gude-report, as imposters and yet aefauld ;

9. As frend and yet weel-kent ;

¹ V. 21. No that Christ was fund to haes sin, or was made a sinner ; but rather that he was made a Sin-offeran for us. He takes oor sins ; he gies us his richtousness : a blessed exchange for us !

as deein, and lo ! we are leevin ; as cloured, and no killed ;

10. As in dool, yet aye rejoicin ; as in poortith, yet makin mony rich ; as haudin naething, yet haudin siccar a' things ;

11. O Corinthians ! oor mooth is open t'ye ; oor heart is enlaigd !

12. Ye are-na held-in in us, but ye are held-in in yer ain affectiona.

13. Noo for a return to ye (as to my ain bairns I speak) be ye enlaigd as weel !

14. Be-na ²yokin yer sele thrawartlie wi' misbelievers ; for whatna aine-ness haes holiness and iniquity ; or hoo can licht marrow wi' mirkness ?

15. Or what-na aine-ness has Christ wi' Belial ! or what is atween a believer and a mis-believer ?

16. Or what-na aine-ness has a temple o' God wi' idols ? For ye are a temple o' God, wha is a leevin God ; e'en as God said, "I wull dwell in them, and gang in them, and wull be their God ; and they sal be my folk.

17. "Whaur-for, come ye oot o' their mida, and be ye allenar," says the Lord, "and touch-na the unclean thing ;

18. "And I wull tak ye in, and be a Faither to ye, and ye sal be to me for sons and dochters, says the Lord Almighty."

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Sorrow that brings forth joy. Titus found the Corinthians true and leal.

HAEIN than thir promises, belov'd anes, lat us mak oorsels free fras uncleannesses o' flesh and saul, makin holiness perfete i' the fear o' God.

2. Gis us a place in yare hearts ! We wrang'd name, we corruptit name, we defraudit name !

² V. 14. It is a pawkie plan o' Sautan to get a Christian to taigle his sel wi' a godless wife, or an ill-deedis pairtnor in business, or an ungodlie callin !

3. I am-na sayin this to wyt ye ; for, as I haes said afore, ye are in oor hearts to leve and dee wi' you.

4. An unco freedom o' speech haes I tye ; unco boastin haes I o' ye : I am fu' o' comfort, I am unco filled wi' joy in a' oor troubles.

5. For e'en whan we cam intil Macedonia, oor flesh had nae rest, but in a' ways war we in a sulzie : ootwardlie fechta ; inwardlie switherina.

6. Bot he wha comforts the humble anea, comfortit us, e'en God ; by the comin o' Titus.

7. And no allenar by his comin, but by the comfort whaur-by he was comfortit on yere account, whan tellin us o' yers fain desire, yere lamentation, yere zeal for me ; sae that I rejoiced the mair.

8. For, gin e'en I made ye wae wi' the letter, I am-na regrettin, tho' I did regret ; for I see that yon letter made ye wae—e'en gin it was but an 'oor.

9. But noo I am blythe—no that ye war made wae, but that ye war made wae to repentance ; for ye war made wae accordin to God, that ye nicht haes damage frae us in naething.

10. For dool accordin to God works repentance to salvation ; no to be regrettit. But the dool o' the world's-kind works oot death.

11. For behauld ! this vera thing—the makin wae accordin to God : what unco tentious it wrocht in ye ; what judgin o' yer sale ; what sair indignation, what fear, what fain desire, what zeal, what repayin ! In a' things ye haes schawn yersels to be pure in this maitter.

12. And sae, e'en gin I wrate t'ye, it wasna for his sake that did the wrang, nor for his sake wha dree'd the wrang, but that oor care on yere behaif nicht be made kent t'ye, in God's sicht.

13. And on this account we haes been comfortit ; but mair—we did

rejoices uncolie i' the joy o' Titus, that his heart was refresh't by ye a'.

14. Sae, gin I haes boastit onywise o' you to him, I wasna made to be shamed ; but as we tell't ye a' things truly, sae oor boastin afore Titus was seen to be true.

15. And his tender-love is a' the mair toward ye, whan he ca's to mind the obedience o' ye a', and hoo wi' fear and trimlin ye received him.

16. I joy than that in a' things I can lippen ye.

CHAPTER AUCHT.

The liberality o' the Macedonians made to stirr up a like liberality wi' the Corin-thians. "Ae thing ayne leads to another."

FORBY, we mak kent t'ye, brethren, the favor o' God schawn to the Kirks o' Macedonia.

2. That in a great trial o' sorrow, the rowth o' their joy aboundit intil a rich liberality.

3. That, accordin to their pooer, ayne e'en ayont their pooer, o' their ain accord,

4. They prayed us wi' entreaty, as to takin pairt in the giean to the saints.

5. And far ¹ ayont oor hopes ; giean their ain sels first to the Lord, and to us by God's will.

6. Sae that we exhortit Titus, that as he had made a beginnin, he soud also perfete in you this favor as weel.

7. And sae, as in a' things ye abound, in faith, and speech, and knowledge, and diligence, and in love to us—ye nicht abound too in this grace.

8. No by way o' commaun div I speak ; but for pittin the quality o' yers love to the test, on account o' ither's readiness.

¹ V. 5. The text isna vera clear : but sin' it wasna accordin to Paul's hopes, and be praises them sae muuckle, it is best to tak it as gairn "ayont" his hopes, as we has patten it doon here.

9. For ye understand the love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, in that he made his sel pair for yere sakes (tho' he was rich !) that ye, throws his poortith, micht be made rich.

10. And in this I gie ye my mind ! for this is weel for you, wha indeed begude a year syne, no only to do, but also to wull.

11. And noo, perfete the doin' o't: that e'en accordin to the readiness to wull, thar may be the cairryin oot o' what ye hae.

12. For gin the readiness to wull is set forth accordin to what a man has, it is appruv't; and no accordin to what he has no.

13. For I dinna say that ithers soud hae ease, and ye be burdened.

14. But by an aqual-sharin, yere rowth enoo soud be for their want; that their rowth soud e'en come to be for yere want; that thar may be aquality.

15. E'en as it is putten doon, " He that gaither't the mair had nane ower muckle, and he that gaither't the less lacked-na."

16. But God be praised, wha pat the same anxiety in the mind o' Titus anent ye.

17. For tho' he acceptit the exhortation, yet hein his sel unco diligent, he gaed till ye o' his ain wull.

18. And we joined wi' him the brither, whase praise in the word is throws a' the Kirks.

19. And no only sae, but wha was deputit by the Kirks to travel wi' us in this behaup, whilk is ser'd by us to the Lord's glorie, and to schaw oor zeal.

20. Haein it sae, that nae ane soud wyta us in this bounty we are awmoners o'.

21. Providin honorable things, baith in the aicht o' the Lord, and afore men.

22. And we has jointly sent wi' them oor brither wham we hae testit in mony things, at a' times, and fund diligent; but noo, muckle mair sae,

wi' the unco confidence he has toward ye.

23. Whether is it onything about Titus ? A pairtnet o' mine, and a fellow-worker wi' you. Or about oor brethren ? They are Apostles to the Kirks, and the gloris o' Christ.

24. Ye did schaw, tharfor, afore the Kirks, the exhibition o' yere love, and oor boastin on yere behaup tae them.

CHAPTIR NINE.

Mair about the siller for the saunta; and the blessin o' a liberal heart.

FOR anent the service for the saunta, it is needless for me to write to ye.

2. For I ken yere readiness o' mind, for whilk I roose ye afore them o' Macedonia, that Greece was ready a year syne; and yere zeal has steered up the lave.

3. But I hae sent the brethren, least oor boast on yere behaup soud be in vain in this respect; that, as I said, ye micht be prepar't.

4. Least, gif ablinis Macedonians cam wi' me, and found ye no ready, we (that we may-na be sayin "ye,") soud be putten to shame i' this confidence.

5. Sae I thocht it necessar to exhort the brethren that they soud gang forrit till ye, and mak up aforehaun yere promised liberality, sae as it micht be ready, as a gift gien, and no a thing extortit.

6. But as tae this : He wha saws sparesly, sal e'en reap sparesly; and wha saws wi' blesssins sal e'en reap wi' blesssins.

7. Ilk ane sae, e'en as he had it in his heart; no o' swairness, nor o' necessity; for "God lo'es a cheerfu' giver."

8. But God has power to mak a' favor to abound wi' unco rowth, toward ye ! sae that in a' things and at a' times, haein a sort o' plenty o' yere ain, ye may shonnd mair and mair in a' gude warka.

9. As it is putten doon : "He dis-
poned abroad ; He gied to the pair ;
His richtousness bides for aye."

10. Noo he wha gies "seed to
the sawer, and braid for eatin," sal
supply and mak lairge yere seed
sawn, and mak to flourish the cot-
come o' yere richtousness ;

11. In a' things bein made rich
to a' liberality ; whilk is workin oot
praise to God.

12. For the cairryin-oot o' this
public service iana only makin up for
the lack o' the saunts, but is ¹ frutefu'
o' mony praises to God.

13. For that mony, throws this
workin-oot o' this service, are magni-
fyin God for the obedience o' yere
confession to the word o' Christ,
and for the aefauldness o' yere gifts
for them and for a' ;

14. They their sels, wi' prayers on
yere behauf, are uno faim, for the
wonderfu' favor o' God to ye.

15. Praise be to God for his un-
measurable bounty !

CHAPTIR TEN.

*Paul defends his sel again clashes and ill-
reports.*

NOO I Paul, mysel, entreat ye by
the meekness and canniness o'
Christ ; wha ootwardly to the een
am lowly amang ye, but as awa am
bauld toward ye ;

2. I entreat, boobieit, that bein
present, I may-na be bauld wi' the
bauldness I wad hae again a wheen
wha look on us as gin we gaed
accordin to the flesh.

3. For tho' we are walkin i' the
flesh, we are-na battlin conform to
the flesh.

4. For the wapins o' oor warfare
are-na fleshly, but strang wi' God for
dingin doon stranghanlds,

5. Pu'in doon lofty thochts, and
ilka heigh thing that wad beize up

¹ V. 12. Paul kent that, helpin the pair
saunts, their ain hearts wad get a
bleasin ! Tak tent o' this principle i'
yere ain life !

itself contrar to the knowledge o'
God ; and takin captive ilka motive
intil subjection to Christ.

6. And haudin oorsels ready to
avenge a' disobedience, whanase'er
yers obedience may be seen.

7. Are ye lookin at things accordin
to their appearance ? Gin ony man thinks he is Christ's, lat him think
thus again till his sel', that e'en as he
is Christ's, eae are we Christ's.

8. For gif indeed muckle mair I
soud boast a wee o' oor poor, whilk
the Lord ga'e for up-biggin, and no
for dingin ye doon, I aanna be putten
to shame.

9. That I maun-na seem as gin
siblins I wad gliff ye wi' a letter.

10. For "his letters," says ane,
"are vera true, wechty, and o'poorer,
but his bodily presence is waff, and
his ² discourse o' nae account !"

11. But lat siccan a ane ken, that
o' whatna sort we are in oor letters
whan we are awa, eae sal we be
whan present, in oor wark.

12. For we are-na bauld to even
oorsels wi' some wha speak weal o'
their sels. But they, measurin their
sels amang their sels, and evenin
their sels wi' their sels, are wantin in
gude understandannin.

13. We, boobieit, no as regards
unmeasur't things, wull boast oor
sels ; but by the rule God has
measur't to us, to extend e'en to
the lenth o' you.

14. For it iana as gin we rax't-na
the lenth o' you, or war raxin oor
sels unduly ; for e'en the lenth o'
you war we aforebaun, wi' the Gude-
word o' Christ.

15. No as boastin o' unmeasur't
things, in ither men's labores ; but
haudin a hope by yere strang faith,
o' bein enlaiged accordin to oor
measur, for mair abundance,

² V. 10. The Greeks war mair taen up wi'
grau words than spiritual truths. And
Paul, as we ken, dwalt on the main
doctrines o' grace, and spelt-na for
praise on account of eloquence.

16. Intil the districts ayont ye, to carry the Gude-word ; and no by ony ither's rule o' things made ready, to boast.

17. But wha may boast, lat him boast i' the Lord ;

18. For it isna the ane that speaks weel o' his sel the Lord is pleased wi', but the ane the Lord speaks weel o'.

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.

The Corinthians soud has stidden-up for Paul ; but seisin they labelled him and his message, he had e'en to tak his ain pairt. It isna boastin to speak the truth !

I WAD that ye coud thole me in a wee fulishness : indeed ye are tholin me.

2. For I am jealous ower ye wi' the jealousy o' God : for I espoused ye to as husband, that I might gie ye ower as a pure maiden to Christ.

3. But I fear least in onywise, e'en as the serpent beguiled Eve wi' his craft, eae yere minds soud be airtit awa frae the aefauldness and purity that are for Christ.

4. For gin ane comin brings ye anither Jesus, wham we brocht-na, or ye receive anither Spirit wham ye hae-na received, or anither Gude-word that ye hae-na welcomed—ye might weel¹ thole him.

5. For I reckon to hae come nane short o' the maist pre-eminent Apostles.

6. But, gin I war² plain in my speech, yet no wantin in lear ! but in a' ways we made it kent in a' things to you.

7. Or, did I do wrang in loutin doon mysel that ye might be heizt up, in giean to ye the Gude-word for nocht ?

8. I took fras ither kirks, takin fees fras them that I soud aer' you.

9. And bein wi' you, and wantin, I wasna a burden tae ony man ; for my lack the brethren fras Macedonia made up. And in a' things I keepit mysel fras bein a burden, and eae wull I keep mysel !

10. E'en as the truth o' Christ is in me, i' this boastin I sanna be stoppit in a' the land o' Greece !

11. Whaurfor³ for that I lo'e-ye-na⁴ God kens better !

12. But, as I am doin, I wull do, that I may sued aff occasion fras thae wha seek for occasion ; that in what they glorie they be fund e'en as we are.

13. For sic men are fause apostles, deceifin' workers, cheengin theirsels intil Apostles o' Christ.

14. And nae ferlie, for Sautan his sel is cheengin his sel intil an Angel o' licht.

15. Nae unco ferlie, than, gin his servants, too, are cheengin theirsels as servants o' richtousness : whase end sel be e'en as their warks are.

16. And mair : lat nae ane tak me to be glaikit ; but e'en nae, as a glaikit ane bid me come ben, that I too may boast mysel a wee.

17. What I am sayin I am-na sayin stir the Lord ; but as in havers, in this confidence o' boastin.

18. Sio' mony boast theirsels i' the flesh, I wull boast as weel.

19. For ye thole fules without murmurin, bein wyss yersels.

20. For ye thole ane wha is makin bondmen o' ye—wha is devoorin ye, wha is reivin fras ye—wha is magnifyin his sel—wha is baffin ye on the face.

21. I speak by way o' lichtlein, as gin we war feckless. But whaur ony ane is bauld (I am speakin in a haverin way) I am bauld too !

22. "Hebreus" are they ! I am weel ! "Iralites" are they ! I am weel !

23. "Servitores o' Christ" are

¹ V. 4. Some render it "nae." But we tak the sense to be, that gin some ane could bring them a better Saviour and a better salvation than Paul had brocht, they wad do weel to tak it.

² V. 6. Learned and eloquent as a Jew, but provincial and rustic i' the classic cities o' Greece.

they? (As ans daft I am talkin,) I
e'en mair! In toils mair abundant;
in imprisonments muckle mair abundant;
in stripes ayont coontin; in
deaths aft.

24. Frae Jews, fyve times did I
hae the "forty-aave-ane."

25. Thrice was I cloured wi' rods;
ance staned; thrice ship-wreck't; a
day and a nicht hae I spent i' the
deep:

26. In journeyins aft; in perils o'
rivers; in perils o' robbers; in perils
fræ my ain folk; in perils 'mang
frem'd folk; in perils i' the citie; in
perils i' the desert; in perils i' the
sea; in perils 'mang fause brethren.

27. In labor and distress; in
watchins aft; in hung'er and drouth;
in fastins aft; in cauld and nakit-
ness.

28. And forby the things left oot,
that whilk comes on me day by day
—to tent a' the Kirks.

29. Wha is weak, and am-na I?
Wha is bein snared, and am-na I
burnin?

30. Gin ane manna boast, o' the
things I am weak in wull I boast.

31. The God and Faither o' the
Lord Jesu—be wha is blessed for
aye—kens that I speak-na fausely.

32. In Damascus, the native Gover-
nor 'neath Aretas the king, was
gairdin the citie o' the Damascenes
to grip me.

33. And throwe a winnock was I
loutit doon in a creel¹ by the wa',
and escapit his hannis.

CHAPTIR TWAL'.

*He gets awa fræ his toils and degradations,
and speaks o' his revelations.*

TO boast may be needfu' tho' it has
nae profit; aas I wull come to
visions and revelations o' the Lord.

¹ V. 33. Tak ye tent hoo Paul, efter a' his
toils and dangers, ends wi' this o' bein
smuggl't throwe the wa' o' the citie, and
loutit doon in a creel, as gin it was the
bitterest degradation o' his life! Fair
fa' the honest hauns that held the tow!
maist like they war weemen!

2. I ken a man in Christ, wha
fourteen years syne (and gin he was
in the body, or oot o' the body, I ken-
na—God kens), was clautht up, siccan
a ane as this, the leath o' the third
Heeven,

3. And I ken sic a man as this
(gin he was i' the body, or oot o' the
body, I ken-na—God kens),

4. That he was clautht up into
Paradise, and heard unutterable
things, whilk it is-na for a man to
speak.

5. For sic a ane as this wull I boast,
but for mysel I winna boast but in
my ain weaknesses.

6. For e'en soud I be fain to boast,
I canna be a fule; for I wull speak
truth. But I lat be, that nae ane
sond think o' me aboon what he sees
me to be, or hears fræ me.

7. And whaur-for, least by the
unco greatness o' the revelation I
soud be ower muckle upliftit, thar
was gi'en to me a stog i' the flesh, a
messenger o' Sautan that he micht
baff me.

8. In this behauf, I thrice entreatit
the Lord, that it micht gang fræ me.

9. And he said to me, "My tender
love is eneuch for thee; for my
strenth is 'perfited in weakness!'"
Maist blythely, than, wull I boast
myself raither i' my weaknesses, that
the pooer o' Christ may be ower me,
and around me.

10. Sae, than, I am content in
weaknesses, in skaithins, in necessi-
ties, in persecutions, in stretts—on
behauf o' Christ; for when I mysel
am weak, than am I stieve!

11. I haes become glaikit; ye haes
compelled me! For I micht weel
hae been commandit by you; for I
am naething short o' the maist pre-

² V. 9. That is, Christ's pooer schaws its
glorious and perfete wark i' the lives and
character, and amid the human weak-
nesses o' his folk. It is better for a man
to be putten into danger and trial, and
sustened throwe them a', than no to
hae the experience ava!

eminent Apostles—e'en tho' I be naething !

13. Truly, the tokena o' an Apostle war wrocht amang ye, in a lang-tholin; in signa, and feries, and pouers.

13. For in whatna way war ye made inferior to the lave o' the Kirks, exceptin that I mysel wasna burdensome to ye ! Forgive me this wrang !

14. Tak tent ! the third time I am haudin mysel in readiness to come to ye ; naither wull I be burdensome ; for I seek-na yours, but you ! For the bairns are na to be layin up gear for the parents, but the parents for the bairns.

15. For, unco blytbely wull I spend and be a' spent in behaif o' yere souls : tho', the mair I lo'e ye, the less am I lo'ed.

16. But, be it sae ! I didna burden ye. But bein pawkie, I tuik ye wi' guile !

17. Was thar ony aue o' thae I sent t'ye, by wham I tuik advantage o' ye ?

18. I entreatit Titus, and I sent him wi' the brethren : surely Titus didna take advantage o' ye ? Was't no i' the same spirit we walkit ? was't no i' the same fit-prints ?

19. Ye think, a' this time, we are makin apology t'ye ! Afore God, in Christ, are we speakin. But a' things, beloved, are for yere up-biggin.

20. For I am in fear, least in ony way, haein come, I soudna fin' in ye sic as I wad desire ; and that I soud be fund o' you sic as ye wadna. Least by ony means strivins, envies, belchins o' wrath, diveesions, ill-speakins, swallins, tulzies, be fund.

21. Least, haein come again, my God sal humble me amang ye, and I sal ha'e to mak maen ower mony o' thae wha had afore sinned, and haen-a repentit o' the uncleannesses, and lechery, and wantonness they war guilty o'.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

*Paul speaks smelly to them about their sin.
Ends wi' a blesvin.*

THIS third time am I come t'ye ! "At the mooth o' twa witnesses, or thrie, sal ilka word be made siccar !"

2. I tellt ye afore-haun, and div tellt ye afore-haun, as gin I war w'ye the second time, to a' thae wha sinned, and to the lave—that gin I come again, I wull-na spare !

3. Sin' ye are seekin a prufe o' Christ speakin in me, who isna feckless toward ye, but is mighty amang ye ;

4. For he was crucifyt oot o' weakness ; nane-the-less he leeves wi' God's pouer : for e'en we are weak in him, but we sal leeve wi' him, not o' God's pouer toward ye.

5. Try yersels, gin ye be i' the faith : pit yersels to the prufe. Or ken-ye-na o' yere ain sels gin Jesus Christ be in you ! except, sibling, ye be outerlins.

6. But I trust ye sal ken we arena orts nor outerlins.

7. But we pray God ye do nae evil : no that we may seem acceptit, but that ye may do what is bonnie, e'en tho' we be as outerlins.

8. For we haes nae pouer contrar to the truth, but only on the truth's side.

9. And we joy whane'er (we bein weak) ye are strang : and for this thing we pray, yere perfection.

10. Sae for this reason I tellt ye thir things, bein absent ; that bein w'ye I mayna need to deal smelly, accordin to the pouer the Lord ga'e me—no for pu'in doon, but for up-biggin.

11. But noo i' the end, brethren, rejoicin, restore yersels to order ; be consoled ; be o' the ae mind ; leeve thegither in peace ; and the God o' love and peace sal ba wi' ye !

12. Greet ye aue another wi' a sacred kiss.

13. A' the saunts salute ye.

14. The favor o' the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love o' God, and the indwelling o' the Holie Spirit, be wi' ye !

GALATIANS.

CHAPTR ANE.

They haif swa turned awa fras the plain faith. The Apostle challenges them for't.

PAUL, an Apostle, no fras men nor
thowre men, but thowre Jesus
Christ, and God the Faither wha
rais't him fras amang the dead,

2. And a' the brethren wi' me, to
the Kirks o' Galatia:

3. The peace and gude favor o'
God the Faither t'ye, and oor Lord
Jesus Christ,

4. Wha gied his sel for oor sins,
that he nicht deliver us oot o' this
present wairld, whilk is an ill ane;
conform to the wull o' oor God and
Faither,

5. To wham be glorie for evir and
evir. Amen!

6. I ferlie that thus sae sune ye
are changin fras him wha perswadit
ye intil Christ's love, intil some ither
"Gude-word,"

7. Whilk indeed isna ¹ anither
Gude-word! But that are some
wha are fashin ye, and wad damage
the Gude-word o' Christ.

8. But e'en aiblins it soud be we,
or an Angel fras Heeven, wha soud
bring ye anither Gude-word, differin
fras what we gied t'ye, lat him bo
accuse't!

9. As said we syne, sae say I noo
again, Gin ony ane gies ye a "Gude-
word" differin fras what ye gat, lat
him be accuse't!

10. For, at this time, div I per-
swad men, or dis God? Or div I
seek to please men? If aye I am
pleasin' men, Christ's servant am-
I-na!

¹V. 7. Like the unwankit claih that disna
sort wi' an auld coat (Matt. ix. 16), some
Jews war perswadin them to add Judais-
m to their faith in Christ. Hearin
o't, Paul writes. We manna lippen to
works; mair by token gin sic kind o'
works are noo mair enjoined.

11. For I mak kent t'ye, brethren,
as to the Gude-work whilk was tell't
by me; that it isna conform to
men;

12. For naither did I fras man
obtean it, nor was I learned it by
man, but throwre a revealin o' Jesus
Christ.

13. For ye heard, as anent my
mainner o' life at ae time, in Judaism,
that in an unco way I persecutit the
Kirk o' God, and laid it waste;

14. And was gaun on in Judaism
ayont my marrows amang my ain
folk, bein unco zealous for the tra-
ditions o' my forebears.

15. But wham it pleased God
(wha took me sindry fras my mither's
womb, and invitit me by his grace),

16. To reveal his Son in me, that I
soud deliver the Gude-word regairdin
him amang the heathen, at ance I
coonsell't-na wi' flesh and blude,

17. Nor gaed I up to Jerusalem
to them that war Apostles afore me;
but I gaed awa intil Arabia, and cam
back again to Damascus.

18. Thau, tbrie years eftir, I gaed
up to Jerusalem, to get acquaint wi'
Peter; and bade wi' him fyfteen
days.

19. But o' the lave o' the Apostles
saw I nane, but James, the brither o'
the Lord.

20. Noo, as to whatna things I
am tellin ye, tent ye! in presence o'
God, I am-na speakin fause.

21. And syne, I gaed intil the
kintra o' Syria and Cilicia.

22. Forby, I waana kent by face
to the Kirks o' Judea whilk are in
Christ.

23. Only they war hearin, "He
wha was persecutin us at ae time, is
noo preachin the Joyfu'-message o'
the faith that ance he laid waste!"

24. And they magnifyt God in me.

CHAPTIR TWA.

He tells a wee mair o' his life: nae doot the Galatians wad haes been pleased to haes still mair o'! We are "Galatians" oorsels, that way!

THAN, in the coorse o' fowrteen year, I gaed up again to Jerusalem, wi' Barnabas; takin Titus as weel.

2. And I gaed up by revelation; and laid afore them the Gude-word whilk I preach amang the nations; to their sels, privately, hoobait, wi' thae o' distinction, 'least by ony means I soud run, or had been riunin in vain.

3. And no e'en Titus, wha was wi' me, tho' he was a Greek, was com-pelled to be circumceesed.

4. And this was on accoont o' fause brethren, secretly brocht in; wha cam in but to spy oot oor liberty whilk we haes in Christ Jesus, that eas they soud bring us intil bondage;

5. To wham, no e'en for an 'oor, gied we place by sicc an a submis-sion; that the truth o' the Gude-word nicht still bide wi' you.

6. But frae thae held to be in repute—(whatsoe'er they war at ae time is naetbing to me, God accepts nae man's face)—thae o' repute addit naething to me.

7. But on the contrar, seein I was entrastit wi' the Gude-word to the uncircumceesion, e'en as Peter was to the circumceesion,

8. For be that wrocht in Peter for an apostleship o' the circumceesion, wrocht e'en in me for the heathen.

9. And seein the favor whilk was gien to me, James and Peter and John, wha war reputit pillars, gied to me and Barnabas a richt haun o' brittherhood, that we soud gang to

1 V. 2. Paul wad haes man o' note to see as he did i' the maister o' "The Law" amang the Gentiles. And it was better to convince them privately, than to ex-pone to them the haill maister frae the beginnin, in public.

the heathen, and they to the cir-cumceesion.

10. Only, that we "soud be mind-fu' o' the puir;" as to whilk, I was e'en fu' o' zeal, this vera thing to do.

11. But whan Peter cam to Antioch, I stude up again him to his face, for that he was to be wytit.

12. For, afore certain anes cam frae James, he did eat wi' the Ge-niiles; but whan they cam, he held back, and keepit his sel allenar, in fear o' thae o' the circumceesion.

13. And the lave war usin this doobleness wi' him, eas that e'en Barnabas was cairryt awa wi' their deceit.

14. But whan I saw they war nae gangin upright i' the truth i' the Gude-word, quo' I to Peter afore them a', "Gin ye—bein a Jew to begin wi"—leuve in a Gentile way, and no in a Jewish mainner, hoo div ye gar Gentiles to be Judaizin!

15. "We, Jews by natur, and no sinners frae amang Gentiles,

16. "Kennen that a man isna justifyt by warks o' Law, but only throwe faith in Christ Jesus, e'en we pit oor faith in Christ Jesus, that we soud be justifyt by faith in Christ, and no by warks o' Law: for by warks o' Law sal nae flesh be justifyt.

17. "Gin, hoobait, tho' seekin for justification in Christ, e'en we oorsels are fund sinners, is Christ than a bringer-in o' sin? Far frae it!

18. "For gin I bigg up again what-na things I pu'doon, I schaw mysel to be guilty.

19. "For I, throwe Law, des't to the Law, that I soud leuve to God!

20. "I has become crucifyt wi' Christ: nay, I leuve allenar nae lang'er, but Christ is leevin in me; and the life I noo haes i' the flesh, I leuve i' the faith o' the Son o' God, wha lo'ed me, and gied his sel up on my behaif.

21. "I am-na settin aside the grace o' God; for gin throwe Law is richtousness, Christ manna haes des't in vain!"

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Paul speirs why they left faid, and gae to the "Law."

0 GLAIKIT Galatians ! wha cuist glamour ower ye, afore whose vera een Jesus Christ was clearly schawn as a crucifyt Ane ?

2. I wad but ken this fras ye, Was't by the warks o' the Law that ye haes gotten the Spirit, or by the bearin o' faith ?

3. Are ye sae glaikit ? Eftir makin a beginnin i' the Spirit, are ye noo gaun to be perfittit i' the flesh ?

4. Tholed ye sic things for nocht ? (gin it yet be for nocht.)

5. He than that supplyt to ye the Spirit, and wrocht ferlies amang ye, did he it by warks o' the Law, or by hearin o' faith ?

6. E'en as Abra'm lippened God, and it was reckoned to him as richtousness.

7. Ken, than, that they o' faith, e'en they are bairns o' Abra'm.

8. And the Scriptur, lookin forrit to God justifyin the heathen throwes faith, announced aforaheun the Gude-word to Abra'm : "They sal be blest in thee ; e'en a' the Nations !"

9. Sae than, they o' faith are haesin a blessin alang wi' faithfu' Abra'm.

10. For as mony as are o' Law-warks, are 'neath a curse ; for it is putten doon, "Accurst is ilka ane wha gange-na on in a' things i' the Buik o' the Law, to do them !"

11. But that in Law, nae ane is hauden richtous wi' God, is plain ; for, "The richtous ane sal leeve by faith !"

12. But the Law isna "by faith ;" on the contrar, "He wha dis them sal leeve in them."

13. Christ redeemed us oot o' the curse o' the Law, bein made a curse on cor behaif : for it is putten doon, "Accurst is ilka ane bingin on a tree."

14. Sae that to the Nations the blessin o' Abra'm nicht come, in Jesus Christ ; that we soud haes the promise o' the Spirit by faith.

15. Brethren ! humanly am I speakin ; yet, a human covenant nae ane sets by, or adds to.

16. Noo, to Abra'm war the promises spoken, and to his Seed. It diana say, "And to seeds," as o'mony ; but as o' ane, "And to thy Seed," whilk is Christ.

17. But say I, A covenant e'en afore made siccar by God, the Law (whilk eftir fowr hunner and thretty years cam in), diana pit by, that it soud mak the promise feckless !

18. For gin aiblins the inheritance is "by Law," it is nae langer "by promise ;" but to Abra'm, by promise, bad God beatown it.

19. Why, than, the "Law" ? For the cause o' ein it was addit, till siccan a time as the Seed, to wham it was promised, soud come ; whilk Law was gien in chairge by messengers, at the haun o' a Mediator.

20. But the Mediator isna o' ane ; but God is ¹ane.

21. Was the Law, than, contrar to the promises o' God ? Far fras it ! for gin a law war gien that had pooer to gie life, truly, than, by Law soud haes been richtousness.

22. But the Scriptur stekkit up a' things as aneath sin, that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ soud be gien to thae that hae faith.

23. But afore faith cam, we war keepit siccar 'neath the Law ; shut in to the faith aboot to be made kent.

24. Sae that the Law has been oor bairn-keeper to tak us to Christ, that we soud, throwes faith, be declar't richtous.

25. But, faith haesin come, we are nae mair aneath a bairn-keeper.

26. For ye are a' sons o' God throwes the faith in Jesus Christ.

1 V. 20. A hantle mak the "Mediator" to be Moses : better, Christ. God is on the as side, and mankind on the ither ; and Christ comes between, and maks peace and concord. And tent ye, Christ was at Sinai, cairryin on the hail work there ! (Acts vii. 38).

27. For ye, as mony as war baptizt into Christ, haes putten on Christ.

28. Thar isna to be said "Jew" nor "Greek"; thar isna to be said "bond" nor "free"; thar isna to be said "male" nor "female"; for a' ye, thegither, are ane in Christ Jesus!

29. And, gin ye are Christ's, than are ye Abram's seed; and heirs, e'en as said the promise.

CHAPTR FOWR.

Christ the heir, maks us heirs wi' His sel; and delivers us frae the curse o' the Law.

BUT I say, sae long as the heir is a bairn, he diff'rena frae a servant, e'en tho' aiblins he be the laird o' a'.

3. But is aneath bairn-keepers and overseers, till the time set by the Faither.

3. Sae we too, whan we war bairns, war keepit in bonds to the ¹ hornbuik o' the world:

4. But whan the fu' time cam, God sent oot his Son, wha cam o' a wumman, wha cam aneath the Law,

5. That he might redeem thae aneath the Law, sae that we coud receive the adoption o' bairns.

6. And mair: for that ye are sons, God sent oot his Son's Spirit into oor hearts, cryin oot, "Abba! Faither!"

7. Sae ye are nae mair a servant but a bairn; and gin a bairn, than an heir, throwe God.

8. But than, in sooth, no kennin God, ye war in bondage 'neath thae that war by natur nae gods:

9. Whaur-as noo, efter that ye haes owned God (or raither been owned o' him), boo is't that ye are gaun back again to the feckless and beggarlie beginnins, to whilk ye wad fain, ower again, be in bondage?

¹ V. 3. "Klementa" or "rudiments"—between whilk the English swithers—are just the first lesson o' aye's leir; or the hornbuik, or alphabet-caird o' knowledge.

10. Ye precesely observe days, and months, and years.

11. I am fear't for ye, least by ony means I haes toiled for ye in vain!

12. Becoms ye as I; for that I too becam as yersels. Brethren, I entreat ye! In naething did ye wrang me!

13. But ye ken hoo that by reason o' a weakness i' the flesh, I preached to ye the Gude-word at the first,

14. And the temptation ye saw i' my flesh ye despised-na, nor scunner't at it! but took me to yere hearts as an Angel o' God; as Christ Jeans!

15. Whaur, than, is that happiness o' yours? For I witness t'ye that, gin it had been possible, yere ain een wad ye haes pykit oot, and gian to me!

16. Sae noo, hac I gotten to be yere fae, for that I deal leal wi' ye!

17. They zealousis seek ye, but no in a gude way; aye, they wad ² steek ye oot, that ye may seek efter them!

18. But it is gude, for a gude thing to be socht efter wi' zeal, at a' times, and no only whan I am wi' ya.

19. My bairns! o' wham again I am in birth-panga, till siccan a time as Christ be formed in you.

20. Aye! I coud wisst to be wi' ye e-noo, and to change my speech; for I am in a swither about ye.

21. But tell me, ye that wad fain be 'neath the Law! div ye no hear the Law?

22. For it is putten-doon, "Abra'm had twa sons; ane by a bondmaid, and ane by a free wumman."

23. But the ane by the bondmaid, hoobbeit, was born efter the manner o' the flesh; whauras the ane by the free wumman throwe a promise.

² V. 17. A wheen o' the MSS. say, "steek us out"; but the wechiest authorities say "ye." Paul mann mean, "They wad steek ye oot frae us, that they might haes ye to their sels!" As lang as they lo'ed Paul nae muckle, they wadna eithlie follow thir new teachers.

24. Whilk thinga, in sooth, are a parable. For thir weemen are twa covenants; ane frae Mount Sinai, bringin forth to bondage, whilk in sooth is Hagar.

25. For "Hagar" is Mount Sinai in Arabia; and is like to Jerusalem that noo is, and is in bondage wi' her bairna.

26. But the Jerusalem aboon is free, wha indeed is mither to us a'.

27. For it is putten-doон, "Rejoice ye barren that bure-na; brek oot intil shouts, ye that warna in birth-pangs! for mair are the bairns o' the desolat, than o' her that has the husband."

28. But we, brethren, estir the mainer o' Isaac, are bairns o' the promise.

29. But, just as than, the ane born estir the flesh persecutit the ane born estir the Spirit, e'en sae is it e-noo.

30. But what says the Scriptur? "Pit ye oot the bondmaid and her son; for in naegate sal the bairn o' the bondmaid inherit alang wi' the bairn o' the free."

31. Sae, brethren, we are-na the bondmaid's bairns, but the free wumman's!

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The freedom o' love. The works o' the Spirit, and the works o' the flesh.

W^I' freedom Christ makes us free: staun ye steive than, and be-na hauden fast wi' ony yoke o' bondage!

2. Tak tent! I Paul say t'ye, that gin ye receive circumcision, Christ wull profit ye nocht.

3. But I witness to ilka man again that receives circumcision, that he is a bund debtor to the hale Law.

4. Ye are set aside frae Christ, ye wha wad be justifyt i' the Law: ye are faun awa frae his favor.

5. For we throwe the Spirit, are fain waitin for the hope o' richtousness.

6. For in Christ Jesus, naither

circumceasian coonts for oacht, nor uncircumceasian; but faith, wrocht inwardly by love.

7. Ye gaed weel; wha taig'l't ye, that ye soudna comply wi' the truth?

8. This compliance waana o' him wha ca'd ye!

9. A wee barm wull gang throwe the hail melder.

10. I am perswadit o' ye i' the Lord, that ye winna be thrawart; but he that fashes ye sal dree his weird, whae'er he may aiblins be.

11. But I, brethren, gin I be preachin circumcision, why am I sae persecutit? for than had the bogle o' the "Cross" been dune awa.

12. I wad they e'en wad cut aff their sels, that fash ye.

13. For ye war ca'd in freedom, brethren: but turn-na yere freedom intil an indulgence to the flesh, but raither by yere love set' ye ane anither.

14. For the hale Law is bund up in ane word, this: "Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel!"

15. But gin ye gansh at and do-voor ane anither, tak tent that ye be-na destroyt ane o' anither.

16. On the ither haun, I say, Walk ye i' the Spirit, and the wull o' the flesh ye sanna fulfil.

17. For the flesh has dearies contrar to the Spirit, and the Spirit contrar to the flesh: for thir again ane anither are set; that ye ¹may-na do the things ye wad itherwise do!

18. But, gin than ye are led by the Spirit, ye are-na under the Law.

19. But plain to be seen are the works o' the flesh; whilk are adultery, lechery, wantonness,

20. Idolatry, divination, hatred, fa'in-oot, jealousy, wrath, factions, parties,

¹ V. 17. Tak-ye-na this verset (as some folk div) as a wail o' helpless weakness! It is hope and joy! The Spirit wull gar ye triumph, see that ye "may-na do" what yere ain human weakness and base desires wad has ye do.

21. Envyins, bludeshed, drucken-
ness, revellins, and sialike things ; as
to whilk I tell ye plainly, e'en as I
hae tellt ye afore, that they wha
practeese sic things as thir sanna in-
herit God's kingdom.

22. But the frute o' the Spirit is
love, happiness, peace, lang-tholin,
canniness, gudeness, lealness,

23. Meekness, self-gridin ; again
sic things as thir thar is nae law !

24. But they wha are o' Christ
Jesus, hae crucifyt the flesh, wi' its
desires and hankerins.

25. Gin we leve by the Spirit, by
the Spirit lat us e'en be airtit.

26. Lat us no be seekin for vain
glorie ; challengin anither, envyin
ane anither.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Hoo to walk, and what to glorie in.

BRETHREN, gin aiblins a man be
betrayt intil a fault, ye wha are
spiritual recover sic a ane i' the spirit
o' canniness ; lookin to yersel, least
ye yersel be temptit.

2. Upbaud ye ane anither's bur-
dens, sas sal ye perform the Law o'
Christ.

3. For gin a man thinks he is some-
thing, whan he is naetbing, he is but
deceivin his sel in his ain mind.

4. But lat ilka man test his ain
wark ; and than sal he hae pleasur
in himsel allehaarlie, and no in what
anither thinks.

5. For ilka man sal cairry his ain
back-burden.

6. Nane-the-less, lat him that is
instructit i' the Word hae ¹fellowship

wi' him that instructs, in a' gude
things.

7. Dinna deceive yer sals ; God issa
to be mocked ; for what a man saws,
the same sall he shear ;

8. For he that saws till his ain
flesh, oot o' the flesh sal haes corrup-
tion ; but he wha saws to the Spirit,
oot o' the Spirit sal haes Life-for-aye.

9. But in doin what is weel, lat us
no be cuisten-doон ; for in due time
we sal reap, gin we glie-na-up.

10. Sae than, e'en as we haes open-
ins, lat us work what is gude toward
a' men, special toward the hoosehauld
o' the Faith.

11. (See wi' sic muckle letters I
wrate t'ye, wi' my ain haun !)

12. As monie as wad mak a bonnie
scbwaw i' the flesh, they wad gar ye be
circumceesed, only that they soudna
dree persecution for the Cross o'
Christ.

13. For no e'en they wha haes be-
come circumceesed are their sals
observin the Law, but they wad haes
ye circumceesed, that they nicht
boast theirsels in your flesh.

14. But wi' me, lat it be far frae
boastin, gin it be-na in the cross o'
oor Lord Jesus Christ, throwe wham
the world to me is crucifyt, and I to
the world.

15. For in Christ Jesus naither
circumceesion is onything, nor uncir-
cumceesion, but a new creation.

16. And till as mony as are gann
on by this rule, peace and mercy on
them, and on the Iara'l o' God !

17. For the lave, lat nane glie ma-
faash ; for I bear about in my body
the brands o' the Lord Jesus !

18. Oor Lord Jesus Christ's favor
wi' yere spirit, brethren ! Amen !

¹ V. 6. Tho' Paul threeps that they wha
declare the Gude-word sond haes their
breid oot o' the Gude-word (I. Cor. ix. 14),
he dis it in a modest way, that he nicht
na seem to be seekin for his sel. Here
he ca's it "fellowship."

EPHESIANS.

CHAPTR ANE.

Paul uplyfis God afore the Ephesians, and praises him for them, and for the graces they had.

PAUL, an Apostle o' Christ Jesu, throws the wull o' God, to the saunts in Ephesus, and a' the leal anes in Christ Jesus :

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ !

3. Blessed aye, the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ ; wha bless't us in a' spiritual blessin on Heigh in Christ !

4. Conform to his acceptin us in him afore the up-biggin o' the world, that we soud be pure and wyteless in his presence ;

5. In love settin us oot aforehaun for adoption o' bairns, by Jesus Christ to himself, conform to the gude-pleasur o' his wull,

6. To the praise o' the glorie o' his lovin-favor, wi' whilk he favored us in the Beloved Ane :

7. In wham we hae salvation throwe his blude, the passin-by o' offences, e'en as by the richness o' his favor ;

8. Whilk he gar't to owerflow to us ; in a' wisdom and skill,

9. Makin kant to us the hidden secret o' his wull, e'en by his gude guidin that he ettled in his sel,

10. Lookin to the perfecteness o' the times, to bring thegither a' things for Christ o' things in heeven and things on yirth, a' in him ;

11. In wham e'en we war made an inheritance, bein set oot aforehaun by the purpose o' him wha works a' things by the coonsel o' his ain mind.

12. That we soud be for the praise o' his glorie, wha war the first to lippen to Christ.

13. In wham ye too, hearin the leal word, the Gude-tidins o' yere salvation—in wham lippenin, war seal't wi' the Holie Spirit o' promise.

14. Wha is the 'arles o' oor inheritance, till the possession be a' redeemed, to the praise o' his glorie.

15. For the same cause, I too, hearin o' yere faith i' the Lord Jesus, and the love ye hae to a' the saunts,

16. Am aye giean thanks on yere account, namin ye ower i' my prayers.

17. That the God o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, the Faither o' glorie, may gie ye a spirit o' wisdom and revealin in his knowledge :

18. Yere inward een bein fu' o' licht, that ye may come to ken what the hope o' his blythe-hidden is, what his rich inheritance o' glorie i' the saunts,

19. And what the unmeasured vastness o' his pooer toward us wha has faith, e'en as by the up haudin o' his micht,

20. Whilk he wrocht in Christ, raisin him frae 'mang the deid, and settin him doon amang a' the heevenlies, at his ain richt-haun,

21. Far up aboon a' rule, and authoritie, and pooer, and dominion, and ilka name that is named, no alone i' this world, but eke in that that is to come :

22. And "pat a' things under his feet" ; and gied him as heid ower a' things to the Kirk ;

23. Whilk in sooth is his body, the completion o' him wha completes a' in a' for himself.

¹V. 14. The Holie Spirit gies us here the same blessings as Aboon, only less o' them. We are here but broken vessels, and cauna hand muckle o' the Watir-o'-Life. But it is unco sweet ; and gars us be drouthis for mair !

CHAPTIR TWA.

Salvation the gift o' God. The foundation o' the saints' hope.

AND you, brocht to life, war deid in offences and sins;

2. In whilk ye gaed in time by-past, e'en as in the way o' this warld, conform to the ruler o' the poore o' the air, the spirit noo workin i' the bairns o' dourness;

3. Wi' wham e'en we oorsels had oor life at ae time i' the faimness o' the flesh, obeyin the craikins o' the flesh and o' the thochts; and war bairns o' wrath by natur, e'en as war the lave.

4. But God, plentsons in mercy, for his unco love he lo'ed us wi',

5. E'en tho' we war deid by oor sins, brocht us to life, alang wi' Christ (by tender-love are ye saved!);

6. And wi' him raised us up, and wi' him gied us heevenlie seats, in Christ Jesus;

7. That he might schaw i' the ages to come, the unco overgaua riches o' his love, in kindness to us in Christ Jesus;

8. For, it is by his love ye haes been saved, throwe faith; and this comes aboot, no frae you; it is God's free gift.

9. No frae warks, least ony ane soud boast;

10. For his ain wark are we oorsels; bein formed in Christ Jesus for gude warks, whilk God afore made ready that we soud gang in them.

11. Sae, keep ye in mind, that at ae time ye, Gentiles i' yere flesh, named "Uncircumcession" by the sae-ca'd "Circumcession" in flesh, made wi' hauns;

12. That ye war, at yon time staunin sindry frae Christ; bein fremd to the citizenship o' Iera', and bein strangers as to the covenants o' promise, wantin hope, and wantin God i' the warld!

13. But e-noo, in Christ Jesus, ye wha war ance far-awa, are made sib, in the blude o' Christ.

14. For he is the makin o' oor peace, wha made¹ baith to be aye, and dang doon the dividin-wa';

15. Haein, in his ain flesh, dune awa the hostility, and the law o' requirements in ordinances; that oot o' the² twa he soud mak to his sel as new-formed man; makin peace.

16. And soud reconcile them baith perfectly in ae body to God, throwe the cross; slayin the hostility by the same:

17. And cam, and deliver't the Gude-word o' "Peace to you o' the far-awa, and peace to the nar at-haun."

18. For it is throwe him we haes the comin-in—we baith—i' the ae Spirit, to the Faither.

19. Sae than, ye are nae mair frem'd-folk and gangrels; but are marrows o' the saints, and are o' the boosehanld o' God.

20. Bein up-biggit on the fundation o' the Apostles and Prophets; Christ Jesus his sel the heid cornerstone:

21. In wham the hale edifice i' the way o' bein fitly laid thegither, is growin to be a holie Temple o' the Lord.

22. In wham ye too are bein biggit thegither, intil a dwallin-place o' God i' the Spirit.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

The grace secret oot, that the nations war a' welcome to Salvation! The wondrous Love o' Christ.

AND sae I, Paul, prisoner o' Christ Jesus for you the Gentiles,

2. Gin at least ye haes heard o' the stewardship o' the grace o' God whilk was gien to me for you,

¹ V. 14. Baith Jews and Gentiles: ane in Christ, and aye at peace between theirsels; and the dividin-wa', like that i' the Temple, dung doon—noo that they baith ser' the same Saviour.

² V. 15. The Jews and the Gentiles.

³ V. 17. Paul has thir bonnie words, like a bit o' a sweet sang frae Esaiyah (lvii. 18).

3. That by way o' revelation was made plain to me the hidden secret, e'en as I wrate afore in a wee wheen words,

4. As to whilk ye may be able, by readin, to ken my knowledge o' the hidden secret o' Christ,

5. Whilk knowledge in the generations by-gane waana made kent to the sons o' men, as it is noo made plain to his holie Apostles and Prophets i' the Spirit—

6. That they o' the nations soud be aqual heirs, and aqual body, and aqual pairtners i' the promise in Christ Jesus, by the Gude-word.

7. O' whilk I was made a servitor, as by the free gift o' the tender-love o' God, gien to me, conform to the workin o' his power :

8. To me, wee-er than the wee-est o' a' saunta, was gien this gude-favor, to bring to the nations the Gude-word o' the uncoontit riches o' Christ.

9. And to gie licht as to what is the fellowship o' the secret quaisten that has been hid awa frae the former time in God, wha made a' things.

10. Sae that noo might be made kent to heevenlie pouers and authorities throwe the Kirk, the mony-faunkd wisdom o' God.

11. Conform to the ever-bidin purpose he settid in Christ Jesus cor Lord,

12. In wham we has bauldness o' speech, and o' approach, wi' assurance, throwe cor faith in him.

13. Sae, desire I, that ye swarf-na at my sorrows for you : whilk indeed are your gloria.

14. And for this I bend my knees to the Faither,

15. Frae wham the hale family i' heeven and yirth is named,

16. That he wad gie you, conform to the richness o' his glorie, wi' a' power to hae might i' the inward man,

¹ V. 10. No that the Kirk instructs thee : but that God, gatherin a Kirk amang the heathen, gies them enlarged concepcionis o' his might and his gracious love.

17. To hae Christ dwallin throwe faith i' yere hearts ;

18. Rutit and grundit, that ye may be strang to grip siccar, wi' a' ither saunta, what is the breidh and lenth, and heighness and deepness,

19. And to come to ken the love o' Christ, ayont a' tellin, that ye may be fu' wi' the fulness o' God.

20. Noo, to him wha has power over a' things, to do uncokie and unmeasurably abone a' things we can seek or think, e'en as his power works in us;

21. To him be the glorie, in the Kirk, and in Christ Jesus, to a' generations, and ages upon ages ! Amen.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

God's gifts to men : lat men sin nae mair.

ENTREAT ye, than, I the Lord's bondman, to gang on in mainner wordie o' the bode wi' whilk ye are biddin ;

2. Wi' a' laicness o' mind and canniness ; tholin lang, forbearin wi' ane anither,

3. In love takin tent to keep the ane-ness o' the Spirit, i' the union-bond o' peace.

4. Ae body ; ae Spirit ; e'en as ye war bidden in as hope o' yere biddin ;

5. Ae Lord ; ae faith ; ae baptizin ;

6. Ae God and Faither o' us a' ; he wha is ower a', and throwe a', and in a'.

7. But to ilk o' us, lovin favor was gien, conform to the measur o' Christ's free-gift.

8. Sae, says he, "Gau'n up on heigh, be made captivitie captive itsel', and gied gifts to men."

9. But this, "He gaed up," what is't, save that he eke gaed doon intil the under-pairts o' the yirth ?

10. The ane wha gaed doon, is the ane wha gaed up, far aboon the heevena, that he might hae a' things.

11. And he gied some for Apostles,

and some for prophets, and some for preachers, and some for pastors and teachers;

12. To fit the saints for the work o' service, for the up-biggin o' the body o' Christ.

13. Till we a' win forrit to the ane-ness o' the faith, and o' the perfecte knowledge o' the Son o' God, intil man's estate, intil the measur o' the height o' the perfecceness o' Christ.

14. That nae mair soud we be bairns, toos't as on billows, and blawn aboot wi' ilka awee o' doctrine, i' the pawkiness o' men, in knaverie; aftir the wiles o' wrang.

15. But, speakin truth in love, soud grow intil him in a' things, wha is the heid, Christ.

16. Oot o' wham a' the body, fitly marrowed thegither, and made siccar by ilka joint supplying, e'en as by the inner workin i' the measur o' ilka pairt, maks siccar the growin o' the body, intil an up-biggin o' itsel in love.

17. This, than, I say i' the Lord, that ye soud nae langer walk conform to the Gentiles' walkin, i' the vainness o' their mind.

18. Wi' their understandin made mirk, frem'd frae the life o' God, throwe ignorance whilk is in them, throws want o' feelin i' their heart;

19. Wha indeed has gotten to be by a' feelin, giean theirsels up wi' wantonness to the workin a' uncleaness wi' greed.

20. But ye didna in siccan a way learn Christ.

21. Gin at least ye heard him, and war instructit in him, as the truth is in Jesus,

22. That sae soud ye cast aff, as to yere past doing, the "auld" man, wha corruptit his sel conform to deceiptu' desires;

23. And be made young again, i' the spirit o' yere mind,

24. And soud pit on the "new" man, wha aftir God is creatit in richtousness and holiness o' truth.

25. Sae, therfor, castin aff what is fause, "Speak ye truth ilk man wi' his neebor," for that we are pairts ane o' anither.

26. Be ye vexed, and yet sin-na; lat-na the sun gang doon on yere ang'er;

27. And gie nae fitstance tae Sautan.

28. Lat him that staw steal nae mair, but raither toilin, workin wi' his ain hauns at what is fit, that he may hae to gie to him wha has-na.

29. Lat nae 'vileness gae forth frae yere mou'; but raither what is gude, airit to the up-biggin o' the needs, and to the giean o' grace, for them that hear.

30. And dinna mak the Spirit grieve, in wham ye war sealed to the day o' redemption.

31. A' bitterness, and wrath, and ill-will, and stour, and misa'in, lat them be taen awa frae ye, wi' a' malice;

32. And be ye gracious ane till anither, e'en as God in Christ forga' ye you.

CHAPTR FYVE.

The Kirk to walk in purity wi' Christ: a gude wife a likeress o't.

BE ye than taking paittent aftir God, as bairns belov'd;

2. And walk in love, e'en as Christ lo'ed you, and gied his sel up on yare behaif, an offeran and a sacrifice to God, for an odour o' sweetnesse.

3. But lecherie, and a' uncleaness, or selliness, lat-na sic be e'en named amang ye; e'en as befits saints;

4. Nor shamelessness, nor glaikit speech, nor levity; whilk are-na fittin; but raither giean o' thanks.

¹ V. 29. Mairt folk has yet to learn that the mooth airts the heart; and as a man's words are, see the man sune gets to be.

5. For this ye ken, and tak tent ! that nae lecherous ane, nor unclean person, nor covetous man (wha is an idol-worshipper !) has ony pairt i' the kingdom o' Christ and God.

6. Be-na cairry't awa wi' a cough o' words ; for it is for thir things the wrath o' God sal come doon on the bairns o' thrawartness.

7. Dinna then become partners wi' them !

8. For ye war at ae time mirkness ; but noo are ye licht, i' the Lord ; gang ye on as bairns o' the licht !

9. For the ootcome o' the licht is in a' gudeness, and uprichtneas, and truth ;

10. Puttin to the prufe what is weel-pleasin to the Lord.

11. And be-na ye marrows i' the shamefu' warks o' mirkness, but raither challenge them.

12. For it is shamefn' e'en to speak o' the things wrocht by them hidlin.

13. But a' things whan they are challenged, are made plain by the licht : for that whilk maks things plain is " licht."

14. Sae it is ¹said, " Wankin, ye sleepin ane ! and rise frae 'mang the deid, and Christ sal shine on ye ! "

15. Tak ye tent, than, to walk cannillie ; no as glaikit, but as wyss ;

16. And win ye for yersels the opportunity ; for the days are ill.

17. And sae, be-na ye simple, but be ye discernin as to what the Lord's wull may be,

18. And be-na ye fou' wi' wine, in whilk is riot ; but be ye fou' o' the Spirit,

19. Speakin amang yersels in psalms and hymns, and godly sangs, fiftin and makin music i' yere hearts to the Lord,

20. At a' times giean thanks for a' things, i' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, to yere God and Faither.

¹V. 14. We dinna find thir proper words onygate i' the Auld Testament. Tak ye them, as the Apostle's words to ye, direct frae Christ !

21. Pittin yersels beneath ane anither, in the fear o' Christ.

22. Let wives be in submissioon to their ain husbands, as to the Lord :

23. For the husband is the wife's heid, as Christ is the Kirk's heid ; and he is the Saviour o' the ²body.

24. And, as the Kirk submits hersel to Christ, sae the wives, in a things, to their husbands.

25. Ye husbands, lo'e yere wives, e'en as Christ lo'ed the Kirk, and gied himsel up in her behaif,

26. That he might sanctify it, makin it clean wi' the washin o' watir by the word,

27. That he might present, a'— glorious, to himself, the Kirk, no wi' a blotch or a runkle, or oacht sic thing, but that she could be holie and faultless.

28. Sae soud husbands lo'e their wives as their ain bodies. He that lo'es his ain wife lo'es his sel.

29. For nae ane at ony time scunner at his ain flesh, but nourises and cherishes it, e'en as Christ dis the Kirk.

30. For, pairts are we o' his ain body.

31. " For eae sal a man lea' his faither and mither, and be ane wi' his wife ; and the twa sal become ae flesh."

32. This is a great riddle ; but I speak in regard to Christ, and in regard to the Kirk.

33. Nane-the-less be ye, ilk ane o' ye, sae lo'ein his wife, e'en as his ain sel ; and the wife, baes reverence for her husband.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Bairns, and servants, and maidens : and they a' need the pruse-coat o' Faith.

YE bairns, be dntif' to yere ain parents, i' the Lord ; for this is bonnie.

2. " Honor thy faither and thy

²V. 23. That is, his ain " body " ; the Kirk.

mither" (whilk indeed is the first command wi' a promise);

3. "That it may gang weal w'ye, and ye may leve lang on the yirth."

4. And ye faithers, dinna wauken-up ang'er in yere bairns; but rear them up i' the chastenin and admonishin o' the Lord.

5. Ye servants, mind yere maisters i' the flesh, wi' reverence and trimlin, in aefauldness o' yere heart, as to Christ !

6. No by way o' ea-service, as man-pleasers, but as Christ's servitors, doin God's wull fras the heart;

7. Wi' gude-wull doin service, as to the Lord, and no to men :

8. Kennin that ilk ane, whatna gude he may dae, e'en that sal he has back again fras the Lord—gin he be bond or free.

9. And ye, maisters, div ye the like things to them, kennin that their Maister and your's is in Heeven; and that is nae respectin o' faces wi' him.

10. And for the lave o't—Be ye strang i' the Lord, and i' the poor o' his nicht !

11. Pit ye on the baill graith o' God, sae as ye may be fit to staun again the wiles o' Santan.

12. For oor struggle isna again flesh and blude, but again the poers, again the authorities, again the world-rulers o' this wirkness; again the spiritual hosts o' ill i' the ¹ lift.

¹ V. 12. In auld times they spak o' evil spirits haein po'er i' the air, the laigher heevena. Paul has the same word here as in chaptit i. 3, and ii. 6, whaer it is the heighest heeven : here it is the lift, the atmosphere.

13. Whaur-for tak to ye the baill graith o' God, that ye be strang to withatann i' the ill day ; and, haein done a' things, to staun.

14. And eas staun ! bailtit aboot the mids wi' truth, and haein put on the prufe-coat o' holiness ;

15. And shod yere feet wi' the readiness o' the Gude-word o' Peace ;

16. And wi' a', takin up the shield o' faith, in whilk ye has poer to kep a' the lowin shafts o' the Illane.

17. And the heid-piece o' salvation tak ye ; and the sword o' the Spirit, whilk is whatmoe'er God has spoken.

18. Wi' a' prayer and pleadin, prayin aye i' the Spirit ; and watchin i' the same, wi' a' tholin and pleadin, for a' the saints ;

19. And for me, that to me sond be gien utterance, that wi' freedom o' speech I may mak kent the Gode-wore ;

20. For sake o' whilk I am like an ambassador in a chain ; that in sic behaif I may be bauld to speak, as I soud speak.

21. But that ye may ken things regairdin me, Tyebius, the weal-lo'ed brither, and leal servant o' the Lord, wull mak a' things kent t'ye :

22. Wham I send to ye for this vera purpose, that ye nicht come to ken oor state, and that he nicht console yere hearts.

23. Peace to the brethren, and love, wi' faith, fras God the Faither and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24. Tender love be wi' a' thaes that lo'e oor Lord Jesus Christ wi' lealness !

PHILIPPIANS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Some preached, for that they war leal to Christ ; and some out o' thrawartness.

PAUL and Timothy, servitors o' Christ Jesus, to a' the saunts in Christ Jesus that are in Philippi, wi' the bishops and deacons :

2. Tender love to you, and peace, frae God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3. I am aye giean thanks to my God, at ilka thocht o' you,

4. Aye in ilka prayer o' mine for ye a', makin request for ye wi' joy,

5. On account o' yer ¹fellowship i' the Gude-word, frae the first day till noo :

6. Bein siccar i' this vera thing, that he wha beguds a gude work in ye, wull perfete it to the day o' Christ Jesus.

7. E'en as it is richt in me to haes siccan a regard o' ye; for that ye haes me i' yere heart, baith i' my bonds, and i' the defendin and makin steive the Gude-word; ye a' bein marrows wi' me o' my grace.

8. For God is witness to me, hoo fain I am for ye a', in the tender mercies o' Jesus Christ.

9. And for this I pray, brethren, that yer love yet mair and mair may exceed, in fu' knowledge and discernment;

10. To the end ye may pit to the test the things that are gude, that ye may be holie and faultless to the day o' Christ;

11. Bein fu' o' the frute o' righteousness; that whilk is throwe Jesus Christ, to the glorie and praise o' God.

¹ V. 5. "Fellowship" in supplyin his needs, for the gospel's sake (chap. iv. 14, 15), and in their giean o' their substance for the pair saunts at Jerusalem.

12. Noo, I wad haes ye to ken, brethren, that the things regairdin me haes rather come oot to the advantage o' the Gude-word.

13. See as my bonds haes been made kent i' the hale Heid-quarters, and to a' the lave.

14. And see as that the feek o' the brethren, haein been hearteved i' the Lord by my bonds, are mair uncolie bauld, fearless speakin the word o' God.

15. A wheen, indeed, oot o' envy and strife, and some oot o' gude-wull, are preachin Christ.

16. Thir, oot o' love, kennin I am set for the defence o' the Gude-word;

17. But thae, oot o' thrawartness are settin oot Christ; no in lealness; thinkin to mak faib to me i' my bonds.

18. Weel what ! Juist this, that in ony way, gin it be in deceit or in truth, Christ is proclaimed; and I in this am blythe, and wull be blythe !

19. For I ken that this sal turn a' to my ²salvation, throwe yare prayers, and the giean to me o' the Spirit o' Jesus Christ;

20. Conform to my fain lookin-forrit, and my hope, that in naestbing sal I be putten to shame; but that wi' a' freeness o' speech, an aye, sas e'en noo, Christ sal be glorifyt i' my body, gin it be by life, or by death.

21. For to me, leevin is Christ; and deein is treasur.

22. But, gin leevin i' the flesh is Christ, this to me is a reward o' toil; and whatna I sal wale I say-na.

23. But I am handen awixt the twa; haein an unco fainess to be

² V. 19. No that he needit thir trials in order to be saved, nor that he judged they wad bring him freedom frae prison; but that thir things war a' ripenin his graces, and makin him mair like Christ.

looten awa, and to be wi' Christ, for this is far, far better !

24. But to be bidin' i' the flesh is mair necessar for yere sakes.

25. And haein o' this been made siccar, I lippen that I sal bide, and stay shint wi' ye a', for the up-biggin o' yere faith, and for yere joy.

26. That yere glorying may be the mair in Christ Jesus—as to me—by my presence wi' ye again.

27. Only, in siccan a way as is wordie o' the Gude-word, airt yere lives ; sae that giu I come and see ye, or gin I be frae ye, I may be hearin o' ye, that ye stann siccar i' ae spirit, wi' ae saul joined thegither, for the faith o' the Gude-word ;

28. And no bein fleyt in ony thing by thae opposin their sel's : whilk, in truth, is for them a token o' destruction, but o' yere salvation ; and this frae God.

29. For, to you was gien as a favor, no only to be haein faith in Christ, but eke in his behaif to be sufferan :

30. Haein the like tulzie that ye saw in me, and noo hear in me.

CHAPTIR TWA.

Christ's humbleness. Timothy and anither sent to them.

GIN, than, thar is ony comfort in Christ, gin ony consolation o' love, gin ony fellowship o' the Spirit, gin ony tender-mercies and compassions,

2. Croon ye my joy, that ye a' may regaird the same things, and has the same love ; a' ane in saul, the ae thing regairdin.

3. Doin naething for strife's sake, nor for pride's sake ; but in humbleness o' mind, lookin aye on anither as bein better nor yersels.

4. No lookin on yere ain things allenarlie, but ilk ane at anither's things.

5. That whilk ye in Christ Jesus prefer, that prefer ye in yersels ;

6. Wha bein originally i' the form

o' God, thocht it no a thing to seize on, to be coontit aqual wi' God ;

7. But humbl't his sel, takin a servant's form, and comin in man's likeness ; and, bein fund in condition as a man,

8. He made his sel lowly, becomin obedient e'en till the deid ; aye, death on a cross.

9. Whaur-for God upliftit him far on heigh, and gied him a name whilk is ¹ aboon ilka name ;

10. That i' the name o' Jesus, ilka knee soud lout, o' thae in heeven, and thae on the yirth, and beneath the yirth,

11. And ilka tongue soud own that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glorie o' God the Faither.

12. Sae, than, beloved, e'en as ye haes aye obeyt, no in my presence alone, but noo muckle mair when I am awa, work ye oot yere ain salvation wi' fear an trim'lin.

13. For God it is wha is workin in ye, baith the ettilin and the inward doin conform to his gude pleasur.

14. And do a' things free frae yammerin, and argle-barglin,

15. That ye may become fanteless and innocent bairns o' God, wytelless amang a thrawart and perverse generation ; amang wham sebau yersels as liebts i' the wairld ;

16. Giean oot the word o' life, for a glorie to me i' the day o' Christ, that I didna rin in vain, nor toil in vain.

17. But, gin I am e'en to be offer't on the sacrificees and service o' yere faith, I am blythe in mysel and blythe wi' yon.

18. And—as to the same thing—be ye blythe in yersels and blythe wi' me !

19. But I am lookin forrit i' the

¹ V. 5. The text's no clear ; it may either be, " Whate'er ye prefer as Christians, that prefer ye ! " or " Whate'er Christ prefers (or whatever ye admire in Christ), that prefer ye ! "

² V. 9. Is this the name in Ex. iii. 14 ?

Lord, sune to send Timothy to ye ;
sae that e'en I may be made blythe,
when I ken yere state.

20. For I hae nae ana like him in
saul, wha wull be sae asfaul-anxious
about yere state :

21. For they a' seek aftir their ain
things, no the things o' Jesus Christ.

22. But the prufe o' him ye ken ;
for, like a bairn wi' a faither, he has
had service thegither wi' me i' the
Gude-word.

23. Sae I am lookin forrit to send
him at ance, whane'er I may look awa
frae the things that concern me.

24. But I lippen i' the Lord that I
myself may come sunie.

25. Yet I thocht it needfu' to send
t'ye Epaphroditus, my brither, and
marrow, and fellow-sodger, but your
messenger, and the provider for my
needs.

26. For he was unco fain to see ye
a' ; and in dolor for that ye had
heard he had been ill.

27. And, in truth, he was ill, and
nar to the deid ; but God schawed
mercie to him, and no to him allen-
arlie, but to me as weal, least sorrow
on sorrow I soud dree.

28. Wi' the mair entreaty I hae
sent him, that, seein him again, ye
soud be blythe, and I hae the less dool.

29. Be ready than to tak him t'ye,
wi' a' joy i' the Lord ; and siclike as
thir hand ye in honor ;

30. For it was for the sake o'
Christ's wark he was nar to the
deid ; rinnin risk wi' his life that he
micht mak up yere want o' care for
me.

CHAPTIR THIRIE.

*Beware o' fause teachers ! A' things o' oor
ain are nae thing for Christ.*

AND noo, to sum up, my brethren :
A Be blythe i' the Lord ! To
write to you the ¹ same things isna
fashious, whilst for you it is safe.

2. Be ye ware o' the dongs, tak ye
tent o' the workers o' ill, keep awa
frae the ² concession.

3. For we are the circumcision,
wha worship in God's Spirit, and
glorie in Christ Jesus, and pit nae
stress on things o' the flesh.

4. E'en though I myself might lay
some stress e'en on things o' the
flesh. Gin ony ither man thinks to
hie ocht to glorie o' in the flesh, I
yet mair !

5. In circumcision, an aucht-day
bairn ; o' Isra'el's sons ; o' Benjamin's
tribe ; a Hebrew o' Hebrews ; as to
law, a Pharisee ;

6. As to zeal, persecutin the Kirk ;
as to richtousness o' Law, wyteless.

7. But, whatna things war a gain
to me, thaes hae I esteemed loss for
the sake e' Christ !

8. But, in truth, doubtless I am
esteemmin a' things to be loss, for the
unco preciousness o' the leir o' Jesus
Christ my Lord ; for wham I suffer'd
the loss o' a' things, and coont them
as midden-orts, that I may win
Christ,

9. And may be in him ; no haein
for my richtousness that frae the
Law—but that throwe faith in Christ ;
the richtousness that is frae God, by
faith :

10. To come to ken him, and the
poorer o' his ³ Risin-again, and to be a
marrow wi' him in his sufferans, bein
conform to his death.

11. Gin aiblins, by ony means, I
may win on to the "Risin-again" ;
that frae amang the deid.

12. No that I hae it noo, or aye
sune had been made perfect ; but I
press on, gin that I may grip hand

¹V. 1. He may mean the "same things" he tellt them in word when he was wi' them ; or, the "same things" he was about the same time, sendia to the Ephesians, etc.

²V. 2. This is naither rightly a Scots word, nor an English ana. It means cuttin-aff, or mutilatin ; but it marrowa weel wi' the ither word, "circum-
cession."

³V. 10. No the poorer by whilk he raise
frae the deid, but the poorer—the unco
force and influence—o' that great fact
on the Apostle's ain mind.

o' that for whilk I was grappit by Christ.

13. Brethren, I, as to mysel allen-alie, am-na yet reckonin to ha grappit hand ; but as thing I div : forgettin the things abint, and raxin eot to thae things that are afore,

14. I press on for the gree, for the prize o' the biddin (fras on heigh) o' God in Christ Jeesa.

15. As mony o' us, than, as are o' fu' stature, lat this be oor mind ; and gin ye be mindit anither way, God wull mak it plain to ye.

16. Nane-the-less, as far on as we haes gotten, lat us resolve to gang on in the same rule.

17. Brethren I be ye followers o' me thegither ; and tak tent o' thae that eae gang, e'en as ye haes us for an example.

18. For mony walk, o' wham I aft tell't ye, and noo, e'en wi' tears tell ye : faes o' the Cross o' Christ !

19. Whase hinner end is destruction, whase god is their wame, and whase glorie is in their shame ; wha mind things o' the yirth.

20. For oor citizen-richts are in Heeven, eot o' whilk fain look we for a Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ ;

21. Wha wull change the body o' oor laigh-estate, to be like to the body o' his glorie ; conform to the inwart workin, whaur-by he has pouer e'en to bring a' things intil subjection to his sel.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Gods advisement, wi' his partin commendation.

AND eae, my brethren, belov'd and mickle-langed-for, my rejoicin, eae stann siccar i' the Lord, my beloved !

2. Euodia I entreat, and Syntyche I entreat, that ye be o' as mind, i' the Lord.

3. And I entreat ye as weal, leal yoke-fellow, be ye helpin thae weeman wha, in truth, helpit me i' the labor o' the Gude-word ; wi' Clement too,

and my ither marrows, whase names are i' the Buik o' Life.

4. Be glad i' the Lord aye ; and again I say, " Be glad ! "

5. Let yere reasonableness be kent to a' men : the Lord is at haun.

6. For naething be ye tranchit i' yere minds ; but in a' things by prayer and supplication, wi' gean o' thanks, lat yere needs be made kent to God.

7. And the peace o' God that is aboon a' oor thocht, sal keep yere hearts and yere thochtis in Christ Jesus.

8. And for the lave, brethren, ¹ As mony things as are leal, as mony things as are honorable, as mony things as are just, as mony things as are pure, as mony things as are bonnia, as mony things as are o' gude reput ; gin thare be ony virtue whatsoe'er, gin thar be ony praise, tak ye account o' thir things.

9. Whatna things ye baith learned and gat, and heard and saw, in me, do ye the same : and the God o' peace sal be wi'ye.

10. But I was made to be unco blythe i' the Lord, that noo i' the end, yere care for me blossom'd again : tho' in truth ye war carin, but wantit opportunity.

11. No that I was in need, am I speakin ; for I ken, boosoe'er I am, to be content.

12. I ken baith hoo to be brocht laigh, and I ken hoo to haes mair nor eneuch : in a' ways, and in a' things haes I been instruckit, baith to be fu' and to hung'er, baith to haes ower-and-aboon, and to want.

13. I can do a' things, by him wha strenthens me !

14. Nane-the-less, ye did weel, in haesin a co-stewardship wi' me in the distress.

¹ V. 8. Take ye tent, hoo faith wull aye mak itsel kent by gude warks ! Coud ony ane keep step wi' sic things, wha hadins first keepit step wi' Christ ?

15. Noo ya *Philippiane* ken, that i' the beginnin o' the Gude-word, whan I gaed oot frae Macedonia, no e'en se kirk had fellowship wi' me, i' the matter o' giean and takin, but ye only.

16. For e'en in *Thessalonica*, ye sent, ance and again, till my need.

17. No that I seek aftir a gift: but I seek aftir the frute that is to increase to yere account.

18. But I hae rowth o' a' thinga, and mair nor eneuch; I hae been filled, hasin frae *Epaphroditus* the things frae you, a sweet odor, an

acceptable offeran, weal-pleasin tae God.

19. But my God wull mak up for ye ilka need, conform to the riches o' his glorie in Christ Jesus.

20. Noo to oor God and Faither be glorie, for evir and for evir. Amen!

21. Salute ye every saunt in Christ Jesus. The brethren that are wi' me salute ye.

22. A' the saunts salute ye; in especial they o' Cesar's hooseaunld.

23. The tender-love o' the Lord Jesus Christ be wi' yere spirit!

COLOSSIANS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Paul tells what Christ is like: he likes weel to describe his Freend!

PAUL, an Apostle o' Christ Jesus, throwe God's wull, wi' Timothy, oor brither,

2. To the holie and leal brethren in Christ in Colosse: tender-love to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither,

3. We are aye giean thanks to the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ; praying at a' times on yers behaif.

4. Hearin o' yere faith in Christ Jesus, and the love ye bear to a' the saunta.

5. On accoont o' the hope that is lyin-by for ye i' the Heavens, o' whilk ye heard afore i' the word o' the truth o' the Blythe-message,

6. That has come to you, s'en as it is bearin frute and growin i' a' the warld, sae amang you as weel, frae whatna day ye first heard the sough o't, and cam to ken the tender-love o' God in truth:

7. Conform to what ye had frae Epaphras, oor dear fellow-servant, wha is a leal servitor o' Christ for ¹us;

8. Wha eke made kent to us your love i' the Spirit.

9. And for this, we oorsels, frae what day we heard it, cease-na prayer and seekin, that ye may be filled wi' the fu' knowledge o' his wull, in a' wisdom and spiritual discernment;

10. That ye soud walk in sic manner wordie o' the Lord, until pleasein him; in a' gude warks bearin frute, and growin in the lear o' God.

11. In a' micht bein made michty, conform to the micht o' his ain

glorie for a' tholin and patience wi' joy.

12. Giean thanks to the Faither, wha gars us to be fit to partak o' the inheritance o' the saunts in licht;

13. Wha deliver't us oot o' the poer o' the mirkness, and translatit us intil the Kingdom o' the Son o' his love.

14. In wham we hae redemption, the passin by o' sins.

15. Wha is the likeness o' the invisible God, the ²first-born o' a' the creation.

16. For in him war a' things creatit, things in Heeven and things on the yirth, the things seen and the things no seen; whether throns, or dominions, or principalities or authorites—thir a', throwe him, and for his sake, hae been creatit.

17. And he is afore a' things, and by him a' things haud thegither,

18. And he is the heid o' the body, the Kirk; wha is the original, the "first-born" frae mang the deid; that he may become, amang a', the pre-eminent.

19. For in him it was the gude-pleasur o' the Faither that a' boundless rowth soud dwell;

20. And throwe him to reconcile a' things to his sel, makin peace throwe the blude o' his cross, whether things on yirth, or things in the Heavens.

21. And you, at ae time bein frend, and wi' enmitis i' yere minds by ill warks, has he fu'-reconciled,

22. I' the body o' his flesh, throwe his death, to bring ye intil his presence holie, and faultless, and wyteless.

¹ V. 7. He continued Paul's work among them.

² V. 15. That is "the heir" o' a' creation: for i' the absence o' his bein, he was neither creatit nor born.

23. Gin at least ye hide i' the faith, sterk and steive, and no dung-awa fras the hope o' the Gude-word ye heard, that was preached till a' the creation 'neath the heevens ; o' whilk I Paul becam a servitor.

24. Noo I am blythe to suffer on yere behauf, and am fillin up what was wantin o' the Christ-tribulations in my flesh, on account o' his body, that is the kirk :

25. O' whilk I becam a servitor, conform tae the stewardship o' God, whilk was gien me for you, to fulfil the word o' God.

26. The riddle that was hidden awa fras the ages and the generations, but is at this time made kent to the saunts ;

27. To wham God willed to mak it kent, e'en the treasur o' the glorie o' this riddle i' the nations, whilk is Christ in you, the hope o' glorie.

28. Wham we declare, warnin ilka man, and teachin ilka man in a' wisdom, that we soud present ilka man perfete in Christ.

29. To whilk end I am toilin, battlin accordin to his workin, whilk works in me wi' pooer.

CHAPTIR TWA.

Christ for safety ; and no philosophy or ordinances !

FOR I wad hae ye ken hoo great a fecht I am haasin for ye, and for thae o' Laodicea ; and for as mony as haena seen my face i' the flesh.

2. In order that their hearts may be comfortit, bein wrootht a' intil aye in love, e'en till a' the treasure o' the perfete assurance o' the mind, till a' fu' knowledge o' the mysterie o' God, e'en Christ.

3. In wham are a' the treasures o' wisdom and leair hidden.

4. But I am sayin this, that nane may wyle ye agley wi' fleechin words.

5. For gin I be sindry fras ye i' the flesh, yet am I aye w'y'e i' the Spirit, rejoicin, and seein yere order-

liness, and the steive biggin o' yere faith anent Christ.

6. In sic way as ye received Christ Jesus the Lord, in him be walkin !

7. Bein firm-rutit and up-biggit in him, and bein made siccar i' the faith, conform till yere teachin ; aboundin in thanksgivin.

8. But tak ye tent, least some aye may be makin booty o' ye, throwe philosophy and vanities o' deceit, conform to men's instruction, conform to the wark's elements, and no conform to Christ.

9. For in him dwalls a' the abundance o' the Godheid in form-o'-body.

10. And ye are made fu' in him, wha is the heid o' a' principalities and autorities ;

11. In wham ye haes been circumcaes'd wi' the circumcaesion no wi' hauns, i' the pittin-aff o' the body o' the flesh, i' the "Christ-circumcaesion" ;

12. Bein wi' him buryt i' yere bapteazin, in whilk ye war raised wi' him again, throwe the faith o' the workin o' God, wha raised him fras 'mang the deid :

13. And you, deid i' the sins and uncircumcaesion o' yere flesh, he has made to leve again wi' him ; oot o' love forgiean us a' offences.

14. Blottin oot the haun-write again us, in ordinances, that was contrar to us ; and took it awa, nailin it to his cross !

15. And haasin strippit principalities and pouers, he made a plain spectacle o' them, and a triumph ower them thar-by.

16. Lat nane, than, be condemnin ye anent eatin or drinkin, or in regard o' a feast, or a new-mune, or the Sabbaths ;

17. That are a "shadow" o' comin things ; but the "body" is Christ.

¹V. 11. Trow ye hoo the circumcaesion we haes wi' Christ is a' a spiritual thing ? The reference here isna to the circumcaesion o' the bairn Jesus, whan aicht-days auld.

18. Lat nane twine ye, by a putten-on humility, like the worship o' an Angel; pratin aboot things he "has seen"; swallowed up wi' the vain importance o' a carnal mind.

19. And no handin steive the heid, oot o' whilk the bairn body, throws the joints and union-bands haesin supply, and joinin itsel thegither, is growin wi' the growth o' God.

20. Gif ye dee't wi' Christ fras the world's elements, boo, than (as gin ye war still leevin i' the world), are ye subject to ordinances:

21. "Ye mauna handle," "ye maunna taste," "ye maunna touch!"

22. (Whilk are a' to come to an end in the uain!) conform to the commandments and teachins o' men?

23. Whilk, in truth, are things, in a' view, haesin an appearance o' wya-beid in ane's ain-devised worship and humility of mind, and ill-doin wi' ane's ain body: no in ony honor:—merely a satisfying o' the flesh.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

The new man to be putten-on; and a' folk, in a' stations to do God's will.

GIN, than, ye war raised fras the deid wi' Christ, seek the things on Heigh, whar Christ is, at God's richt haun' sittin.

2. Be determined on things aboon, no on thae o' the yirth.

3. For ye dee't, and yere life has come to be bid, e'en wi' Christ, in God.

4. Whanso'er Christ, oor life, sal be seen, your life, than, alang wi' his, sal be seen in gloria.

5. Slay, than, yere members, as to things on the yirth: lachery, impurity, passion, base desires, and greed, whilk is idol-servin.

6. For whilk things God's ang'er is comin on the bairns o' disobedience.

7. In whilk, e'en ye walkit at a' time; whan ye war leevin i' the same.

8. But noo pit ye them a' awa: ang'er, wrath, malice, misca'rn, shamefu' talk oot o' yere moodth.

9. Speak-na twa fauld aue to anither; haesin put aff fras ye the "auld" man, wi' a' his deada.

10. And haesin putten on ye the "new," wha is formed anew into knowledge, aftir the likeness o' him that creatit him.

11. Whaur naither "Greek" nor "Jew" comes in; circumcision nor uncircumcissons, fremd ana, Scythian, bond, nor free: but Christ a'; and Christ in a'.

12. Pit ye on, than, as chosen anes o' God, holie and weel-lo'ed, the tender-affections o' compassion, graciouness, humbleness o' mind, canness, patience:

13. Tholin aue-anither, in tenderness forgiean aue-anither, gin aiblins ony aue has a compleent again ony; e'en as the Lord oot o' love forgae you, sae do ye.

14. But ower and aboon a' thir thinga, haes ye love, whilk wull bind thegither a' things in perfeteness.

15. And lat the peace o' Christ be Regant in yere hearts; till whilk ye war bidden, as a' body; and be ye thankfu'.

16. Be the word o' Christ dwellin in ye richly; in a' wyss teachin and admonishiu o' versals, in psalms, in hymns, and godly sangs: liltin i' yere hearts to God in yere gratitude.

17. And in a' things, whatsa'e'er ye be doin, in word or in wark, do a' in the name o' the Lord Jesus, giean thanks to yere God and Faither throwe him.

18. Wives, submit yersels to yere husbands, as is fittin in the Lord.

19. Husbands, lo'e yere wives, and be-na set again them.

20. Bairns, be ye biddable to yere parents in a' things, for this is weel-pleasin i' the Lord.

21. Faithers, wauken-na up ang'er in yere bairns, least they be disheartened.

22. Servants, be biddable in a' things to yere maisters i' the flesh; no by way o' ee-service, as men-

pleasers, but in aefauldness o' heart,
fearin the Lord.

23. Whatsa'er ye may do, oot o' the saul do it, as for the Lord, and no for men.

24. Kennin that frae the Lord sal ye duly receive the gree, e'en the inheritance: to the Lord Christ are ye doin service.

25. For he that is doin wrangoustie, sal hae return't to him what he wrangoustie did; and thar is nae walin oot o' faces.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

*Deal cauris wi' thae no yet brocht in! A
hantle o' gude wishes for his freends.*

MAISTERS, do justies and equity to yere servants; mindin that ye too hae a Maister in Heeven.

2. Gie yersels to prayer; takin tent thar-in, wi' giean o' thanks.

3. And prayin for us as weal, that God wull unsteek to us a door for the word, to speak the ferlies o' Christ, for whilk I hae become a prisoner;

4. That I may mak it plain; e'en as I am hauden to speak.

5. Walk ye wyaaly anent thae oot-side; ¹ obteenin the opportunity for yersels;

6. Yare speech at a' times bein wi' grace, kitchen'd wi' sart; that ye may ken hoo ye soud be giean ilk ane his answer.

7. A' that regards me, Tychicus wull mak kent t'ye—the weel-lo'ed brither, and faithfu' servitor, and fellow-server i' the Lord.

¹ V. 5. Tak ye tent o' opportunities! "obteen" them ("buy them"). They come gey aften, gin ye watch for them, as ye wad for a gude bargain!

8. Him hae I sent t'ye, for this vera thing, that ye may ken the things regardin us, and that he nicht comfort yere hearts.

9. Thegither wi' Onesimus, the leal and weel-lo'ed brither, wha is frae amang ye. A' things here wull they mak kent t'ye.

10. Aristarchus, my marrow in captivity, salutes ye; and Mark, cousin o' Barnabas, anent whom ye had instructions. Gin aiblins he comes to ye, gie him welcome.

11. And Jesus, the ane ca'd "Justus"; they bein o' the circum-cession. Fair alone are fellow-workers i' the kingdom o' God; wha in truth, has been comforters o' me.

12. Epaphras salutes ye, wha is frae 'mang ye, a servitor o' Jesus Christ: at a' times waralin in yere behaif in prayer, that ye may be made to staun complete, and wi' fu' assurance in a' things o' the wull o' God.

13. For I bear witness, that he has unco fainness for ye, and for thae in Laodicea, and thae in Hierapolis.

14. Luke, the weel-lo'ed leech, and Demas, salute ye.

15. Salute ye the brethren in Laodicea; and Nymphas, and the meetin that is in their hoose.

16. And whansa'er the letter has been read amang ye, e'en mak it to be read i' the Kirk o' the Laodiceans: and that, as weel, the ane oot o' Laodicea be read.

17. And say to Archippus: "Tak tent weel to the stewardship ye received i' the Lord, that it ye may fulfil!"

18. The salutation o' me Paul, wi' my ain haun. Mind ye my chaine! Tender love be wi' ye!

FIRST THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Their faith was spread abraid: and Paul rejoices in't.

PAUL, and Silas, and Timothy, to the Kirk o' the Thessalonians, in God the Faither, and the Lord Jesus Christ. Tender love to ye, and peace.

2. We are aye giean thanks to God for ye a', namin ye in oor prayers.

3. Never failin to mind yere wark o' faith, and toilin in love, and tholin in hope in oor Lord Jesus Christ, afore oor God and Faither.

4. We kannin, brethren belov'd o' God, yere choice.

5. And hoo that oor Gude-word didna come to ye as tidings in word alone; but eke in poore and the Holie Spirit, and in strang certaintie; e'en as ye kent whatna kind o' men we schawed oorsels amang ye for your sakes:

6. And ye took paittern aftir us, and aftir the Lord, takin to ye the word amang mickle affliction, wi' joy i' the Holie Spirit,

7. See that ye cam to be a paittern to a' the believin anea, in Macedonia and in Greece.

8. For, fras you has soondit oot the Lord's word, no alone in Macedonia and Greece, but in a' ither pairts, yere faith whilk is to Godward has gane oot; see that we has nae need to speak o't.

9. For ¹they, their sels, tell aboot us, whatna sort o' comin-in we had to ye, and hoo ye turned aboot fras eids to God, to ser' a God—a leevin reality.

10. And to look for his Son fras Heeven, wham he raised fras amang the deid, e'en Jesus, wha saves us fras the wrath that's comin.

CHAPTIR TWA.

He comforts his sel in lookin back ower the way he cam among them; what he said, and what he did, and what he dreed.

FOR ye ken yersels, brethren, oor comin amang ye, that it was leal and true.

2. But aftir we had dreed afore, and war treatit in a shamefu' way, as ye ken, at Philippi, we war free o' utterance in oor God to tell ye the Gude-word o' God, wi' muikle strifa.

3. For oor coonsellin isna a' error, nor o' vileness, nor in twafoaldness;

4. But e'en as we hae been lippened by God to be chairged wi' the Gude-word, in stelike manner div we speak, no to pleasur man, but raither God wha tries oor hearts.

5. For at nae time did we hae flatterin words, e'en as ye ken; nor made a cloak for self-seekin. God kena.

6. Nor seekin praise o' men, naither fras you, nor fras ither: tho' we had poore o' claimin ²support as Christ's Apostles.

7. Nane-the-less, we war cannie amang ye, as gin a nursin-mother war cherishin her ain bairn.

8. And see, bein fain for ye, we had been willin to gie ye no the Gude-word o' God only, but e'en oor ain souls; for that ye had come to be see los'd o' us.

9. For ye mind, brethren, oor toils and sairs: nicht and day toilin, that we nicht-na be a burden to ony o' ye, we made kent t'ye the Gude-word o' God.

¹V. 9. That is the folk that speak o' the Lord's cause in Thessalonica; whether siblins as traders they had been till that great mart, and heard it; or men o' that place, wha had carryt the Gospel abraid.

10. Ye are witness (and God), hoo purely, and richtouslie, and faultlesslie, we carryt oorsels amang you wha believe.

11. Just as ye ken, hoo to ilk ane o' ye we war like as a faither to his ain bairns, comfortin and heartenin ye, and testifyin;

12. That ye soud walk wordie o' God, wha has bidden ye to his ain kingdom and glorie.

13. And for this too we are aye giean thanks to God, that whan ye had frae us the word o' the message, e'en God's message, ye took it to ye, no as man's word, but e'en as it is truly, God's word, whilk is e'en workin inwardly in you wha believe.

14. For ye took paattern, brethren, eftir the Kirks o' God that are in Judea in Jesus Christ—in that the same things ye tholed frae yere ain countrymen that they did frae the Jews;

15. Wha slew baith the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Prophets; and us they persecute, and are displeasin to God, and contrary to a' men;

16. And wad hinner us frae speakin to the Nations that they might be saved, to fill up their ain sins aye; for wrath is comin on them to the hinner end o't.

17. But we, brethren, bein taen awa frae ye for an 'oor—in presence, no in heart—sae muckle the mair socht to see yere face, wi' unco fainness.

18. And sae I uncolie desir't to come t'ye, ance and again; but Sautan hinder't us.

19. For what sal be oor hope, or joy, or croon o' oor glorie! Sanna e'en ye thus be, afore oor God, at his ¹ presence?

20. For ye are oor glorie and oor joy!

¹ V. 19. Oor English has it "comin." But Paul's word here isna sae muckle "comin," as "havin come," or "presence": *parousia*: no an action *nae* muckle as a condition. See in iii. 13, and elsewhere.

CHAPTIR THRIE

Timothy, haes been till Thessalonica, and back agais, gars Paul rejoice.

AND sae whan we could nae lang'er lat-be, we war well-pleased to be left in Athens alane,

2. And sent Timothy, oor brither and God's servant i' the Gude-word o' Christ, to gar ye staun siccar, and comfort ye i' yere faith.

3. Sae that nae ane soud be dauntit by their afflictions; for ye ken yersels that we war appointit for the same.

4. For e'en whan we war wi' ye, we tell't ye afore, that we soud dree afflictions; e'en as it cam aboot, and ye ken.

5. And for this cause, nae mair happen ower my fainness, I sent to ken o' yere faith, least by ony means the tempin-ane had temptit ye, and oor toil soud be a' in vain!

6. But noo Timothy, comin to us frae you, feshin us gude word o' yere faith and love, and that ye kindly has mind o' us at a' times, bein unco fain to see us, e'en as we are fain to see you,—

7. For this cause we are comfortit, brethren, o' ye, as to a' oor distress and affliction, by yere faith:

8. For noo we haes life in us, gin ye staun steive i' the Lord.

9. For whatua thanksgivin eam we gie to the Lord anent ye, for a' the joy we rejoice wi' afore oor God, because o' you;

10. Nicht and day, wi' unco abundance, makin petition for the behauldin o' yere facea, and makin perfete the things that are wantin i' yere faith!

11. But, may it be, that oor God and Faither himself, and oor Lord Jesus Christ, airt oor way t'ye!

12. That the Lord may mak ye to increase, and be unco abundin in yere love ane to anither, and to a' men; e'en as wi' us towards you,

13. For the up-biggin o' yere hearts, to be wytelass in holiness, afore oor God and Faither, at the presence o' oor Lord Jesus wi' a' his saunta.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Folk sould be pure i' their life, wha took for the comin o' the Lord!

AND forby, we entreat ye, brethren, and counsel ye i' the Lord Jesus, that e'en as ye had frae us hoo ye sould be walkin and pleasin God—e'en as ye are walkin—that ye abound yet mair and mair.

2. For ye ken whatna chairges we gied ye throwe the Lord Jesus.

3. For this is a thimg God desires, e'en yere holiness ; that ye keep frae lecherie.

4. That ye sould ken, ilk ane o' ye, to possess himsel o' his ain body in holiness and honor.

5. No i' the passion o' ill-desires ; e'en as the heathen wha ken-na God ;

6. That nae man gang ayont, and defraud i' this maitter his brither ; for an avenger is the Lord anent a' thir, e'en as we tell't ye afore, and testifyt.

7. For God didna ca' ye to vileness, but to holiness.

8. He, than, that disna heed, disregards no a man, but God ; wha gies his Holie Spirit to ye.

9. But, anent love to the brethren, ye need-na that I write to ye ; for ye yersels are instrackit o' God to lo'e ane-anither.

10. And, in truth, ye do sae to a' the brethren that are i' the hail o' Macedonia. But we entreat ye, brethren, that ye overflow yet the mair.

11. And that ye ettle to be quate, and mind yere ain affairs, workin wi' yere ain hauns, e'en as we ga'e ye chairge ;

12. That ye may walk honorably toward thaes that are oot-by ; and that ye may lack in nocht.

13. But we desire-na ye sould be ignorant, brethren, as to the faun asleep, least ye be sorrowin conform to the lave, wha hae nae hope.

14. For gin we believe that Jesus dees't and raise again, e'en sae sal

God lead oot thaes wha fell asleep in Jesus, wi' him.

15. For this to you we say, by the word o' the Lord, that we, wha are leevin to the comin o' the Lord, sal in naegate win forrit afore them wha are faun asleep.

16. For the Lord himself sal come doon frae Heeven wi' a shout, wi' an Archangel's voice, and a trumpet o' God ; and the deid in Christ sal rise foramaist.

17. Eftir that, we, the leevin that are left, a' at ance, thegither wi' them, sal be claught awa in cluds to meet the Lord i' the lift : and sae at a' times, thegither wi' the Lord sal we be !

18. Sae than, comfort ye ane-anither wi' thir words.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The Day o' the Lord comin on, we are to be ready to meet him ; leadin hielie livers, and denying a' sin.

BUT, as to the times and the occasions, brethren, ye need-na that I write ocht to ye ;

2. For ye yersels weel ken that the Day o' the Lord sae comes as a thief i' the nicht.

3. At siccane times as they may be sayin, "Peace and safety" ; than, o' a suddaintie, destruction comes on them—as birth-pangs on a bearin wunuman—and in naegate may they escape.

4. But ye, brethren, are-na i' the mirk, that the Day sould come on ye as a thief.

5. For ye are beairns o' light ; sons o' the day ; we are-na o' the nicht, nor yet o' the gloom.

6. Sae than, lat us no be sleepin, as div the lave, but lat us be wary, and keepin sober.

7. For folk that sleep, sleep by nicht ; and folk that mak theirsels fu', by nicht are fu'.

8. But we, bein o' the day, lat us be eident, haein putten on the prufe-

coat o' faith and love; and as a helmet the hope o' salvation.

9. For God didna gie us ower to wrath, but to come into salvation throwes oor Lord Jesus Christ.

10. Wha dee't for us, that, gin we be waiken, or gin we be ¹ sleepin, we a' at ance, and a' thegither, nicht begin to leeven wi' him.

11. And sae, be ye comfortin ane anither; e'en as ye are doin.

12. But we entreat you, brethren, to be weel-acquant wi' thae wha toil amang ye, and are ower ye i' the Lord, and admonish ye;

13. And hae muckle esteem for them for their wark's sake. And be ye at peace amang yersels.

14. But we coonseal ye, brethren, admonish ye the disorderly; comfort thae o' feebleness o' saul; strenthen the weak; thole lang wi' a'.

15. See to it that mane return ill-doin for ill-doin to ony; but aye pursue aftir that wblilk is gude,

¹ V. 10. The "sleepin" here iana the same as v. 6, 7; bat raither the sleepin wi' the deid.

toward ane anither, and toward a' men.

16. Be aye rejoicin.

17. Cease-na to pray.

18. In a' things gie thanks; for this is God's wull in Christ Jesus toward ye.

19. Quench-na the Spirit.

20. Geck-na at preachins,

21. But pit a' things to the test; and what is bonnie haud fast.

22. Keep awa frae evil, in ony shape.

23. And the God o' peace, mak ye perfete in holiness! And may yere haill spirit, and saul, and body, be keepit faultless at the comin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ!

24. He is faithfu' wha ca's you; wha eke wull perform.

25. Brethren, be ye in prayer for us.

26. Salute a' the brethren wi' a sacred kiss.

27. I chairge ye by the Lord, that this letter be read to a' the brethren.

28. The tender love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' ye.

SECOND THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTR ANE.

*Paul takz comfort i' the saunis; and bens
weel that God takz vengeance on the ev-
goddie.*

PAUL, and Silas, and Timothy, tae
the Kirk o' the Thessalonians in
God oor Faither, and the Lord Jesus
Christ!

2. Tender love to ye, and peace
fræ God oor Faither and the Lord
Jesus Christ!

3. We bude gie God thanks at a'
times anent ye, brethren, conform
tae what is meet; for that yers faith
grows uncolie, and the love o' ilka ane
o' ye a', ane to anither, owerflowans.

4. Sae that we coorsels are roosin
ye i' the Kirks o' God, in that ye
dree'd and had faith, in a' the per-
secutions and afflictions ye thoaled;

5. A token o' the just judgment o'
God; to the end that ye soud be
reckoned wordie o' God's kingdom,
on behaif o' whilk ye suffer.

6. Gif eas be that it is a just
thing wi' God to gie tribulation to
thae wha mak ye tribulation;

7. And to you wha thole tribula-
tion, to gie rest wi' us, at the revealin
o' the Lord Jesus fræ Heeven, wi'
his mighty Angels.

8. In lowin fire rendering ven-
geance on thae wha ken-na God, and
on thae wha mind-na the Gude-word
o' the Lord Jesus.

9. Wha, in truth, sal dree punishment,
e'en everlastin destruction fræ
the presence o' the Lord, and fræ
the glorie o' his power.

10. Whansae'er he may come to
be glorifyt in his saunta, and to be a
ferlie to a' wha believe; for that oor
witness to ye was lippen'd, i' that
day.

11. To whilk end we are e'en pray-
in at a' times anent you, that oor God
may reckon ye wordie o' yers joyfu'.

biddin, and fill up a' the pleasur o'
his gudeness, and wark o' faith in
pooer;

12. That the name o' Jesus may
be made a' glorious in you, and ye a'
glorious in him, conform to the
tender love o' oor God and the Lord
Jesus Christ.

CHAPTR TWA.

*Paul expounis mair about the Comin o'
Christ.*

BUT we entreat ye, brethren, by
Dha Bein-wi'-us o' oor Lord
Jesus Christ, and oor gatherin the-
gither to him,

2. That ye be-na sac eithlie toos't
about i' yers mind, nor yet be fleyt'-
—ither throwe spirit, or throwe dis-
coorse, or throwe letter as fræ us—
as that the Day o' the Lord has
ritten-in.

3. That nae ane may beguile ye in
ony way: for that day winna be,
except the gann-back comes first, and
the Man o' Sin be made kent, the
son o' perdition,

4. He wha rises up, and lifts up
his sel again a' that is ca'd "God,"
or that is worshipped: sae that he,
i' the temple o' God takz his seat,
settin himself forrit that he is "God."

5. Dae ye no mind, that whan I
was yet wi' ye, I tellt ye thir
things!

6. And noo ye ken what hands
back his revealin himself in his fit
time.

7. For the mystery o' lawless sin
dis e'en noo work; until that whilk
hands back may be ta'en oot o' the
gata.

8. And than sal be seen the Man
o' Sin, wham the Lord Jesus "Sal
slay wi' the breath o' his lips," and
sal destroy wi' the shinin-forth o' his
presence.

9. E'en he, whase comin is conform to the inward workin o' Sautan in a' mighty workin and tokens, and leean farlies,

10. And a' deceitfu'ness o' wickedness to thaer that are perishin; for that the love o' the truth they took-na ben to them, that they might be saved.

11. And, for this, God sends them an inward-workin' o' error, that they might lippen a lee;

12. That they might be judged, ane and a', wha didna lippen to the truth, but delichtit theirsele in unrichtousness.

13. But we are hauden to gis thanks to God at a' times for you, brethren beloved o' the Lord, that God made wale o' you frae the beginnin, to salvation, by sanctification o' the Spirit, and lippanin o' the truth.

14. Until whilk he ca'd you throwe oor Gude-word, to the obteanin' o' the glorie o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Sae than, brethren, staun siccar, and haud firm the leair ye gat, whether throwe preachin, or throwe oor letter.

16. But oor Lord Jesus Christ bimesel, and God oor Faither, wha loved us, and ga'e us everlastin' comfort and gude hope throwe his favor,

17. Comfort yere hearts, and up-bigg ye in a' gude wark and word.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Some faitherty charges, as ane patrin w' his dear bairns.

AND for the lave o't; pray ye for us, brethren, that the Lord's word may be rinnin, and winnin glorie, e'en as it dis wi' you.

2. And that we may be saved frae forritsome and ill men; for a' men haana the faith.

3. But faithfu' is the Lord, wha wull up-bigg ye, and gaird ye frae the ill-ane.

4. But we haes perawadit oorsels that whatna things we are giean ye in chairge, ye are baith doin and wull do.

5. The Lord airt yere hearts into the love o' God, and into the lang-tholin o' Christ!

6. But we chairge ye, brethren, i' the name o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, that ye haud awa frae ony brither wha walks disorderly, and no conform to the coonsel ye had frae us.

7. For ye yersels ken hoo ye soud be takin paittarn by us; in that we warra disorderly amang ye:

8. Naither, as a free-gift, did we eat ony man's breid; but in toil and sair tholin, nicht and day workin, sae as no to be a burden on ony o' ye;

9. No that we hadna authoritie, but that we might mak oorsels a paittarn for ye to paittarn eftir us.

10. For e'en whan we war wi' ye, this we gar giean in chairge till ye, "That gin ony man wadna work, naither soud he eat."

11. For we hear o' some walkin amang ye disorderly, workin at naething, yet thrang and forritsome.

12. But sic as thir we chairge and entreat i' the Lord Jesus, that, quately workin, they eat their ain breid.

13. But ye, brethren, be-na wearied in weal-doin.

14. But gin ony ane iana giean heid till oor word throwe this letter, remark this ane, and be-na chief wi' him, that he may be shamed.

15. Yet eeteem-him-na as a fae, but coonsel him as a brither.

16. And the Lord o' peace himself, may he gie ye peace aye, and in a' ways! The Lord he wi' ye a'!

17. The salutation o' Paul, wi' my ain hann; that is a token in ilka letter: sae I write.

18. The tender love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' ye a'!

FIRST TIMOTHY.

CHAPTIR ANE.

*Paul mindis him o' what he had telft him :
and than speeks o' God's mercie till his sel.*

PAUL, an Apostle o' Jesus Christ,
by commaun o' God the Faither,
and Jesus Christ, oor Lord.

2. To Timothy, my true bairn i'
the faith : tender love, mercie, peace,
fræ God oor Faither, and Jesus Christ
oor Lord.

3. E'en as I entreatit ye to bide
still in Ephesus, whilst I gaed intil
Macedonia, that ye soud chaire ge
wheen no to be teachin anither gate,

4. Nor yet giean heed to silly
auld tales and endless pedigrees ;
whilk in truth rin intil nevir-endin
quaistens, raither than a gude
stewardship for God that is in faith.

5. But the end o' the commaun is
love, oot o' a pure heart, and a clean
conscience, and a leal faith ;

6. Whilk some, haein missed the
mark, gaed agley into idle havers ;

7. Wha wad be teachers o' the
Law, no understaunin the things they
war sayin, or anent whilk they war
stoutly affirmin.

8. But we ken that the Law is
gude, gin a man mak use o't in a law-
fu' mairner.

9. Kennin this, that to a just man
the Law iens laid doon, but to lawless
and disobedient anes, ungodly and
sinfu', irreligious and profane, slayers
o' faithers and slayers o' mithers,
blude-shedders,

10. Lecherers, sodomites, man-
stealers, leear, maneworn anes ; and
gin thar be onything mair, contrar
to halesome doctrine ;

11. Conform to the Gude-word o'
the glorie o' the blessed God, whilk
was committed to my keepin.

12. Unco thanks haes I to him wha
enabl't me—Christ Jesus oor Lord—

in that he esteem'd me leal, pittin
me intil the service,

13. Tho' I was anee a blasphemer,
and a persecutor, and a hater ; none-
the-less, I gat mercie, for that I had
dune it throwe ignorance, in unbelief.

14. But aboon a' measur was the
tender-love o' oor Lord, wi' faith and
love ; that whilk is in Christ Jesus.

15. Leal the word ! and wordie o'
a' takin-till ane, "That Christ Jesus
cam into the world, sinners to save !"
o' wham a chieftain am I !

16. But I wan mercie on this ac-
coont, that in me, as a chieftain,
Christ Jesus nicht schaw forth his
unco lang-tholin, for a paittren for
thaes wha wad pit faith in him for
life everlasting.

17. Noo to the King o' the ages,
uncorruptible, unseen, the Ae God,
be honor and glorie for evir and evir,
Amen !

18. This chaire ge I t'ye, my
bairn Timothy : conform to the pro-
phicies gaun afore on ya, that ye
nicht fecht the noble war.

19. Handin lealness and a clean
conscience ; whilk some caustin fræ
them, haes as to the faith made ship-
wreck ;

20. O' wham is Hymeneus and
Aylsander, wham I gied ower to
Santan, that they nicht learn no to
blaspheme.

CHAPTIR TWA.

*Pray for a' men ; for thar is the as God,
and a' men are alike needys'.*

I COONSEL, than, that first o' a',
applications, prayers, interces-

¹ V. 20. The words are gey like 1. Cor., v. 5 ; and the process is the same—pittin
them back, oot o' the Kirk, intil Santan's
kingdom [the warld], till, discipline haes
wrocht a gude wark in them, they nicht
be looten back again intil the Kirk.

sions, thanks-gleans, ye mak on be-hauf o' a' men :

3. For kinga, and a' thaes in autho-ritie ; that we may lead a quate and peaceable life, godly and douce.

3. This is gude and pleasin i' the sicht o' God oor Saviour ;

4. Wha wad hae a' men to be saved, and to come to fu'-kennin o' the truth.

5. For thar is as God, and thar is as mediator atwixt God and man, himsel man, Christ Jesus ;

6. Wha gied himself up a ransom for a' ; the testimonie to be borne in its ain fit times.

7. Until whilk I was appointit to proclaim, and to be an Apostle (I say true, I lee-na !), a teacher o' the nations in faith and truth.

8. I coonsel thar-for, that the men pray in a' places, haudin up holie bauis, far frae a' wrath and disputins :

9. I' the same way, too, that weemen, in fit cleedin, wi' meekness and douceness, be buakin theirsaele ; no wi' braidins, and gowd, or pearls, or braw attire :

10. But—what becomes weemen professin godliness—wi' a' gude warka.

11. Lat a wumman in quateness be learnin ; wi' a' submision.

12. But I allooo-na a wumman to teach, nor to hae authoritie ower a man, but to be in quateness.

13. For Adam first was made, then Eve.

14. And Adam waana deceiv't ; but the wumman bein deceiv't, has come to be in transgression.

15. Yet she sal be saved in her bairn-time, gif they abide in faith, and love, and holiness.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

And Bishops and Deacons i' the Kirk, and whatna men they wad be.

IT is unco true, "Gin a man seeks for a Bishop's place, he seeks a gude wark !"

2. It is necessar, than, that the

Bishop be aboon reproach, the husband o' ae wife, douce, o' sober mind, behavin weel, hospitable, skilfu' in teachin,

3. No gien to wine, nae striker ; but thochtfu', again contention, no glaumin astir siller ;

4. Bearin rule weel in his ain hoose, haesin bairns in submission wi' a' propriety ;

5. For gin ake kens-na boo to pre-side ower his ain hoose, boo sal be tak chairge o' the Kirk o' God ?

6. No a new convert ; least, hein swalled-up, he fa' intil the condemna-tion o' Sautan.

7. And mair : he mann hae a gude testimonie frae thas oot-hy, least he fa' intil reproach, and the snare o' the adversary.

8. And Deacons maun be grave ; wi' aefauld tongue, no gien to mickle wine, no greedy o' canker't gain ;

9. Handin the mysterie o' the faith wi' a clean conscience.

10. And lat thir, as weel, be first teatit ; then lat them tak service, bein fund wytelusa.

11. The wives, i' the same way, grave ; no gien to slander ; douce, leal in a' things.

12. Lat the Deacons be husbands o' ae wife, airtin their bairns weel, and their ain hooses.

13. For thae wha weel hae ser't, win to their aels a gude staunin, and mickle freedom o' speech i' the faith, that is in Christ Jesus.

14. Thir things I write to ye ; lookin forrit to comin till ye sune.

15. But, gin aiblins I soud delay, that ye may ken boo it is necessar i' the hoose o' God to conduct ane's sel, whilk in truth is the Kirk o' the Leevin God, the pillar and ground-wa'-etane o' the truth.

16. And, ayont a' doot, great is the mysterie o' godliness ! He was

¹ V. 10. The buskin issa to be gowd, or pearls, or hair buskit wi' tinsel, but gude warka : aye bonnie i' the Maister's sicht !

made kent i' the flesh, declar't richtons by the Spirit, seen o' Angels, was preached amang the nations, was lippened on i' the wold, was taen up in glorie!

CHAPTIR FOWR.

What the Spirit says. Tak ye gude tent tillt!

BUT the Spirit says in express words, that i' the hintmaist times, come wull gang agley fras the faith, takin tent to beguilin spirits, and to teachins o' demons,

2. Speakin lees in doobleness, scared as wi' a hot airn i' their ain concience,

3. Forbiddin mairriage, and layin doon abstinence fras meats, whilk God creatit tae be receivit wi' a thanksgivin o' thae wha hae faith, and ken the truth.

4. For ilka creatur o' God is gude, and nane to be cuisten-aide gin it be receiv't wi' thanksgivin;

5. For it is made holie by God's word and by prayer.

6. Airtin the brethren in mind o' thir things, ye sal be a gude servant o' Christ Jesus, nouriced wi' the words o' faith and gude teachin that ye hae closely follow't.

7. But refuse ye godless and auld wives' tales: and train yersel into godliness.

8. For bodily exercesis profit but a wee; but godliness is profitable for a' things; haen a promise o' life, noo and comin.

9. Faithfu' the word! and wordie o' a' receivin.

10. For to this end are we toilin and strivin' for that we has putten oor hope in the leevin God, wha is the Saviour o' a' men, special o' thae that believe.

11. Gie chairge as to thir things, and teach them.

12. Lat nae man lichtlis yere youth, but be ye a pattern o' them that believe, in word, in condeic in love, in lealness, in pureness.

13. Till I come, gie gude attent to the readin, to exhortin, to teachin.

14. Neglect-na the gift in ye, that was gien ye throwe prophecie, wi' the layin-on o' hauns o' the Eldership.

15. Gie thir things yere care: gie yerself to them: that yere progress may be seen by a'.

16. Gie gude tent to yersel and to the teachin. Bide in them: for, see doin, baith yersel sal ye save and them hearin ye.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

To care weel for the weedows; and lat-na them leek who toll in the Word!

CENSURE-NA an Elder, but entreat him as a faither; the young'er men like brithers:

2. Elderly weemen as mitthers; young'er weemen as sisters, in a purity.

3. Honor weedows that are true weedows.

4. But gin ony weedow has bairns or oes, lat them first learn to schaw reverence to their ain folk, and to mak a return to their forbears: for this is weel-pleasin to God.

5. Noo she that is a 'true weedow, and desolate, has putten her hope in God, and is gien gude tent to supplications and prayers nicht and day.

6. But she that is gien ber sal to pleasure, is deid while she yet leaves.

7. And thir things gie ye in chairge, that they may be wytaleen.

8. But gin ony ane has nae care for his ain, special for thae o' his ain boosehaul, he is denyin the faith, and is waur nor an unbeliever!

9. Lat a weedow be coontit-in whan she comes to be nes less than sixty year; that has been as man's wife;

¹ V. 5 Warne siblin: the "weedows" in general, the discardit wives o' converted polygamists? and the "true weedows" thae whase husbands war deid?

10. Weel-attestit for her gude warks: gif she has brocht up bairns, gif she schawed hospitality, gif she weah't the saunt's feet, gif she helpit tae in distress, gif she gaed aftir a' gude warks.

11. But young'er weedows tak-na in! for whan they grow reestie again Christ, they wull desire maiddaage.

12. Haein as their condemnation, that their first faith they turned-frae.

13. And forby, they learn to be traikin, gaun aboot frae hoose to hoose; aye, and no traikers alone, but tell-pyats and busybodies, speakin things that soudna be spoken.

14. I desire, than, that the young'er weeman mairry, bear weana, guide the hoose, giean nae occasion for the adversary to reproach.

15. For e'en noo a wheen are gane agley aftir Santan.

16. Gin ony believin wumman has weedows, lat her be helpin them, and lat-na the Kirk be burden't; that it may help thase that are true weedows.

17. Lat the Elders that bear rule weel be reckoned wordie o' dooble honor; special they wha toil sair in the word and teachin.

18. For the Scriptur says, "A threshin-ox ye sanna muzzle"; and, "Wordie the toiler o' his fee."

19. Again an eldor enteeken ye nae chairge, except "Afore twa or thrie witnesses."

20. Thase wha are sinners, reprove ye i' the presence o' a', that the lave may hae fear.

21. I chairge ya, i' the sicht o' God, and Christ Jesus, and the weel-lov'd Angels, that ye tak tent o' thir thinga, wi' nae fore-judgment; and doin naething for the sake o' inclination.

22. Lay hauns in haaste on nae man, nor hae ye airt nor pairt wi' the sins o' unco folk. Keep yersel pure!

23. Drink nae mair watir only, but

a drappie wine be ye takin, for yere stammack's sake, and yere aft illnesses.

24. Some men's sins are openly seen, gaun on till judgment; and wi' some, they follow aftir:

25. I' the same manner, gude warks are openly seen; and thase that are-na sic, canna bide hidden.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Content, the best gear. *The Gude-Fecht*, and *The Gude-Treasure ayont*.

AT as mony as are servants under command, reckon their ain maisters wordie o' a' honor; least the name o' God and the teachin be spoken-again.

2. But thase that hae maisters believin, lat them no lichtlie them for that they are brethran, but a'-the-mair do them service on accoont o' being believers and belov'd, partakers o' the same gude-workin. Thir things teach and threep.

3. Gif ony ane differs in his teachin' and staune-na by halesome words, thase o' our Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine conform to godliness,

4. He is swallowed up, skeelie in naething, but donnert aboot quaisitens and argla-barglin o' words, oot o' whilk come envy, strivins, misca'ins, ill-surmisins,

5. Unendin tulzies o' men clean-corrupt i' their minds, and wantin the truth, thinkin that 'godliness is gain.

6. But godliness, wi' content, is unco gain.

7. For naething brocht we into the wairld, naither are we able to cairry ocht oot.

8. And haein meat and coverin, wi' thir we sal hae eneuch.

9. But thase wha bude be rich, are fa'in into a temptation and a girm, and mony glaikit and ill desires; whilk ding men into ruin and destruction.

¹ V. 5. That is, they think that as chief end o' godliness is to help men ou to win gear. Lat us be wyse, and mind what followa. See v. 6-11.

10. For, a rute o' ill-doin is the love o' siller ; whilk while some follow't astir, they war drawn awa frae the faith, and thringed their eels throwe-and-throwe wi' mony pangs.

11. But you, O man o' God ! flee frae thir things ; and follow ye righteousness, godliness, faith, love, langtholin, meekness.

12. Fecht ye the noble fecht o' the faith ! Lay haud on the ever-bidin Life, to whilk ye war bidden, and did confess a noble confession forment mony witnesses.

13. I chairge ye i' the sicht o' God, wha gies life to a' things, and o' Christ Jeaus, wha confess'd afore Pontius Pilate a noble confession,

14. That ye keep the commann¹ wantin' a spot, wantin' a' reproach, until the appearin o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Whilk glorie in its ain times

the blessed and only Potentate sal schaw, the King o' the kingly, and the Lord of the lordly ;

16. Wha alone has immortality, dwallin in liebt unapproachable ; wham nae man e'er saw or can see : to wham be honor and dominion for evir and evir. Amen !

17. Them that are rich in this present world, chairge ye no to be prood, nor lippen to the uncertainie o' riches ; but on God, wha gies us a rowth o' a' things to enjoy :

18. To be doin gude, to be rich in warks o' nobleness ; to be free in impairtin, ready to co-operate ;

19. Layin-up for their aels a grann fundation for the time to come, that they may lay haud on that that is truly Life.

20. O Timothy ! gaird ye what is lippen'd to ye ; avoidin the profane havers and oppositions o' a' fause-named "knowledge" ;

21. Whilk some, haudin, haes miss'd the mark o' the faith ! Tendur love to ye !

¹ V. 14. The English reader will tak tent that "wantin," in Scots, means "lack-ing" : seldom means "desirin."

SECOND TIMOTHY.

CHAPTIR ANE.

About their aels—Paul, Timothy, his mither, and the lave.

PAUL, an Apostle o' Christ Jesus, throwe the wull o' God, conform to the promise o' Life that is in Christ Jesus,

2. To Timothy, my weel-lo'ed bairn: Tender love, mercie, peace, frae God the Faither, and Christ Jesus oor Lord.

3. Thanks hae I tae God, wham frae my forebears I worship wi' a clean conscience, that I hae constant mind o' ye in my petitions; nicht and day.

4. Bein unco fain to see ye, mind-in yere tears, that I may be fu' o' joy;

5. Bein remindit o' the aefauld faith that is in ye, whilk in truth dwalt first i' yere gran'-mither Lois, and i' yere mither Eunice; and I am perswadit in yon as weal.

6. And for this cause I pit ye in mind to steer up God's gift that is in ye, throwe the layin-on o' my hauna.

7. For God hasna gien us a spirit o' cowardrie, but o' poore, and love, and o' a hate mind.

8. Be-na, than, ashamed o' the testimonie o' oor Lord, nor yet o' me his prisoner; but, co-sufferin ill wi' the Gude-word, conform to the poore o' God;

9. Wha saved us, and bade us wi' a bolie biddin—no conform to oor warks, but conform to an allenar purpose and favor—that whilk was gien us in Christ Jesus afor the ages began,

10. But is e-noo made plain throwe the forth-shinin' o' oor Saviour Christ Jesus; wha pat awa death, but brocht to licht life and immortality, throwe the Gude-word:

11. O' whilk I was set as a herald, and an Apostle, and a teacher o' the Nations.

12. For whilk cause I dree thir things; but I am-na putten to shame, for I ken him in wham I hae lippened, and am perswadit that he is mighty to gaird what I hae committit to him, to that day.

13. Keep ye the 'paattern o' hale-some teaching ye heard frae me, in faith and love, that whilk is in Christ Jesu.

14. The gude thing in yere keepin, gaird ye by the Holie Spirit, wha dwalls in us!

15. This ye ken, that a' they o' Asia are gane frae me, o' wham are Phygelus and Hermogenes.

16. May the Lord gis mercie tae the hoose o' Onesiphorus, for that he ast refresh't me, and waana sham't o' my chain:

17. But, bein in Rome, eidentlie socht me, and faund me.

18. May the Lord grant to him that he find mercie frae the Lord i' that day! and hoo mony times he ser'd at Ephesue, ye ken better yersel.

CHAPTIR TWA.

He urges Timothy to be laborious, wise, pure, and meek.

YE, than, my bairn, he strang i' the tender-love that is in Christ Jesus.

2. And what ye heard o' me throwe mony witnesses, the same things commit ye to aefauld men; sic as can e'en teach itheras.

3. Thole affliction alang wi' us, as a gude sodger o' Christ Jesu.

4. V. 13. What the "paattern" was, we kan-na; maist like it was a wheen fundamentals Paul ast gaed ower in his preachins.

4. Nae aye ser'in as a sodger taigles his sel i' the affaers o' his "leevin"; that he may please him wha summoned him as a sodger.

5. And, gin aye be contestin for the gree, he isna crooned, gin he contest-na in a lawfu' way.

6. The tiller o' the grund that toils maun first partak o' the frute.

7. Ponder ye what I say; and the Lord wull gie ye discernment in a' things.

8. Keep in mind Jesus Christ, o' Dauid's seed, raised frae the deid, conform to my Blythe-Message:

9. In whilk I dre afflication, e'en to bonds, as an ill-doer, but God's word hasna been bond.

10. For this cause I thole a' things, for the sake o' the chosen ones, that they may obtean salvation, that whilk is in Christ Jesus, wi' glorie never-endin.

11. Faithfu' is the ¹ sayin! "Gin we dee't thegither, we sal eke leave thegither.

12. "Gin we dreec, we sal eke reign thegither; gin we deny, he too wull deny us;

13. "Gin we be fause, he leal and true wull aye remain; for he canna be fause to his sel."

14. O' thae things pit them in mind, bearin witness i' the sicht o' the Lord, no to be battlin aboot words for nae gude, but for the pu'in-doon o' thae listenin.

15. Gie gude tent to present yer sel tae God, a workman no tae be putten to shame, portionin-oot wyssly the word o' trutb.

16. But shun ungodly, vain haivers; for they wull but brouk intil mair ungodliness.

17. And their words wull spread as a canker; o' wham is Hymenens and Pbilstus;

18. Wha, in sooth, anent the truth has gane agley frae the mark, threepin that the Risin-again is a' ² by-past; and are destroyin the faith o' some.

19. Nane-the-less, the steive fundation o' God stauna, basin this seal-mark, "The Lord kens his ain!" and, "Lat ilka aye namin the name o' the Lord, haud awa frae unrichtousness!"

20. But in a great boose they are-na only veschels o' gowd and o' siller, but eke o' wud and o' clay; and some for honor and some for dishonor.

21. Gin, than, aye purify his sel frae siclike, he sel be an honorable veschel, purify't, usefu' to the Maister; made ready for a' gude warka.

22. But the passions o' youth div thou flee! and follow on efter richtousness, faith, love, peace, thegither wi' thae wha are waitin on the Lord oot o' a pure heart.

23. Frae glaikit and ignorant qualtaens hand awa, kennin that they beget strifes.

24. And the servant o' the Lord soudna strive; but to be cannie to a'; gleg at teachin; ready to thole ill;

25. In meekness instructin thae wha set up their sels as contrar, gif at ony time God gie them repentance, for winnin' fu' knowledge o' the truth;

26. And that they soud come to their sels, and win oot o' the snare o' the Adversary, wha war taen alive by him at his wull.

CHAPTIR THIRIE

I'll men comin. But haud ye weel tae the truth.

BUT o' this tak ye tent, that i' the last days fearsome times wull come.

¹ V. 11. We dinna find this "sayin" ony-gate i' the Scriptur: it was aiblins a verse o' some kirk-sang; wi' the bonnie overword, "For he canna be fause to his sel!"

² V. 18. Aiblins they still held, wi' the unbelievin Greeks, that ther was nae "Risin-again" for the body; or that the New Birth was a' the "Risin-again" we war to look for.

2. For men wull be lovers o' their sels, lovers o' siller, boastfu', prood, misce'sers, undutif' to parents, thankless, unholie.

3. Wantin proper affection, twa-fauld, alanderers, unrestrained, harsh, haters o' the just,

4. Fause anes, reckless, ram-stam, lovers o' pleasur mair nor lovers o' God,

5. Mainteenin a shadow o' godliness, but castin awa its pooer; frae a' thir turn ye awa!

6. For frae 'mang thir are they wha creep until hooses, and lead awa witless weemen, happit ower wi' mony temptations:

7. Aye learnin, and never able to come intil the fu' knowledge o' the truth.

8. But in siclike way as ¹ Jannes and Jambres stude up again Moses, aae thir men stann up again the truth: men a' corruptit i' their mind; and to be rejectit as regards the faith.

9. But they're gang on nae mair, for their folly sal be seen o' a' men, as was the ither's.

10. But ye did closely paattern aftir my teachin, mainner o' life, ettlin, faith, lang-tholin, dreein,

11. Persecutions, sufferins; whatna things happened to me in Antioch, in Iconium, in Lystra; whatna persecutions I dreid; and oot o' them a' the Lord brocht me!

12. But a' wha mak choice to leave godly in Christ Jesus wull be persecutit!

13. But ill men and deceivers wull warale on their way to the warst, deceivin, and bein deceived.

14. But div ye bide siccar i' the things ye did learn, and war lippened-wi', kennin frae whatna teacher ye learned them,

¹ V. 8. A' we ken o' thir men, gin it be-na for a wheen dootfa' tales aboot them i' the books o' the auld Jews, is what is here tellt. It maks us was to think that some men's names are only keepit mind o' for the ill they did!

15. And that, frae a bairn, ye ken the holie Scripture, that are able to mak ye wyas to salvation, throwe faith that is in Christ Jesus.

16. A' Scriptur is wi' the breath o' God, and is o' profit for teachin, for convincin, for correctin, for trainin in godliness:

17. In order that the man o' God may be perfete, weel-fettit for ilka godic wark.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

His Home-comis no far awa! His last charge tae Timothy.

I CHAIRGE ye i' the presence o' God, and Christ Jesus wha is to judge the leevin and the deid, and by his shinin-forth and kingdom,

2. Gie oot the word! Press ye in season and oot o' season; convince, rebute, entreat, wi' a lang-tholin and doctrine.

3. For thar wull be a time whan halesome teachin they wiuna thole: but, conform to their ain desires, and haein a yeuck i' their lugs, wull gaither-up teachers to theirsels;

4. And wull turn awa frae hearin the truth, and turn agley to glaikit tales.

5. But be ye watchfu' in a' things, thole afflictions, do the wark o' an evangelist, fulfil yere service.

6. For I am bein ² offert, and the time o' my settin-free is at haun.

7. The gude-fecht has I foughтен, the race has I run, the faith has I keepit!

8. And as for the lave: thar is lyin-by for me a holie croon, that the Lord the Richtous Judge wull gie me i' that day; yet no alienar tae me, but eke tae a' thas wha love his shinin-forth.

9. Gie gude tent to come tae me wi' speed.

10. For Demas gaed awa frae me, carin for this present life, and has

² V. 6. He speaks o' his sel as bein teemed-oot ("offert") as a drink-offeran was, at the altar; and bein "set free" (by death).

gane to Thessalonica ; Crescens intil Gaul ; Titus intil Dalmatia.

11. Luke alone is wi' me. Tak Mark, and fesh him wi' ye ; for he is o' use to me i' the service.

12. But Tychicus I had sent to Ephesus.

13. The cloak I left ahint at Troas wi' Carpus, whan ye come, bring ; and the scrolls, in especial the ¹ parchments.

14. Aylsander the coppersmith did me muckle skaith ; the Lord wull gie to him conform to his wark.

15. As to wham, be on yere gaard ; for he uncolie resistit oor words.

16. At my first hearin, nae man cam forrit to help me, but a' forsook me : may-it-na be laid to their chaire !

17. But the Lord stude by me, and strenthened me, that throwe me the preachin micht be weel-kent, and

a' the heathen micht hear ; and I was deliver't oot o' the mooth o' the lion.

18. And the Lord wull deliver me frae ilka evil wark, and bring me safe to his heavenlie kingdom : to wham be the glory for evir and aye ! Amen.

19. Salute ye Prisca and Aquila, and the hoosehauld o' Onesiphorus.

20. Erastus bade in Corinth ; but Trophimus I left ahint, ill, in Miletus.

21. Gie a' care to come afore winter. Thar salute ye Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and a' the brethren.

22. The Lord be wi' yere spirit. Tender-love be w'ye !

¹ V. 13. Some think "the parchments" war the writings schawin his Roman citizenship. He aiblins gaed frae Troas in haste, on an occasion we ken-na o', to escape some bruilzie. The leavin o' the scrolls and the cloak looks like it.

T I T U S.

CHAPTR ANE.

Paul, wha left Titus abint in Crete, sends him many instructions in his kirk-work.

PAUL, a servitor o' God, and an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, conform to the faith o' God's bidden anes, and knowledge o' the truth, that whilk is conform to godliness,

2. In hope o' Life-eternal, that the God wha isna fause promised afore the ages;

3. But has made plain in his ain gude times his word, wi' whilk I was lippened, as by the commaun o' oor Saviour God,

4. To Titus, my true bairn efter a co-ordinate faith; tender-love and peace, frae God oor Faither, and Christ Jesus oor Saviour.

5. For this ond I left ye abint in Crete, that the things no yet duue ye nicht pit in order, and set Elders in ilka citie, as I gied ye orders.

6. Gin ony man is wytless, the husband o' ae wife, hasin believin bairns, no wytit wi' riot or disobedience.

7. For the bishop mann be wytless, as the steward o' God; no set in his ain wall, no sune vexed, no gien to wine, no a striker, no grippie wi' siller;

8. But hospitable, a freend o' what is gude, douce-mindit, just, holie, airtin weel his sel,

9. Keepin sterke hand o' the leal word that is conform to the ¹ teachin, that he may be able to exhort i' the halesome doctrine, and to convince the contendin.

10. For a hantle are unruly; fu' o' perfec' haivers; deceivers; special they oot o' the Circumcession.

¹ V. 9. In mony places, Paul speaks o' "the Teachin," as meanin the Gude-word aboot Christ. In Madagascar, in oor ain day, they ca' it "the prayin."

11. As to wham, it is necessar to steek their mou's; wha, in sooth, for the sake o' siller, are whammlin hail hooase, teachin things they soud-na.

12. Says ane frae 'mang their sel's, a prophet o' their ain:—"Cretans; aye fause; rampin wild-beass, idle pock-puddins!"

13. This testimonie is true; for whilk cause reprove them snellie, that they may be hale i' the faith.

14. No takin tent to Jewish tales, and commauns o' men wha turn their sel's awa frae the truth.

15. A' things are clean to the clean: but to the unclean and unbelievin is naething clean: but baith their mind and conscience has become unclean.

16. God they profess to ken; but i' their warks they deny him; bein abominable and dour, and until a' gude warks rejeekit.

CHAPTR TWA.

Hoo Titus sou'l teach the folk o' Crete.

BUT speak ye the things that conform to the halesome doctrine.

2. Auld men to be tentie, grave, douce-mindit, halo i' the faith; in love, in tholin;

3. The auld weemen, i' the same way, in demeanor as becomes holie anes; no giean to slander, nor yet to muckle wine made captive; teachers o' what is gude;

4. That they may lead the young weemen to lo'e their husbands, to lo'e their bairns;

5. To be douce-mindit, pure, workers-at-home, gude, submittin to their ain bnsbands; least the word o' God soud be spoken agairn.

6. The younger men i' the same way, chairge ye to be douce-mindit;

7. Anent a' things schawin yere

ain sel as a paattern o' gode warks ; in yere instructions, in purity, gravity,

8. Halesome speech no to be condemned ; that he wha o' a contrar mind may be shamed ; haesin naething ill he can say o' us.

9. Servants, be biddable to yere ain maisters ; in a' things pleasein-weel, no answerin-back,

10. No pilferin, but schawin a' gode faith, that they may mak bonnie the doctrine o' oor God and Saviour in a' things.

11. For the tender-love o' God, wi' salvation for a' men, has appear't,

12. To the end that denyin oorsels as to ungodliness and worldly fainness, we soud levee in a deuse-mindit and richtous and godly mairner i' the present world ;

13. Ready to welcome the blessed hope and shinin-forth o' the glorie o' oor great God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

14. Wha gied himsel for us, that he might rescue us frae a' sin, and mak pure for himsel a people o' his ain, fu' o' zeal in gode warks.

15. As to thir things, be ye speakin, and entreatin, and reprovin, wi' a' authority. Lat nae man lichtlie ye !

CHAPTIR THRIE.

More directions to Titus ; wha seemed to be among a loose-tongued folk.

PIT them weel in mind to submit their sels to rulers and authorities : to be obedient, ready to a' gode warks.

2. No to speak ill o' ony ; no to be contentious : but cannie, schawin a' meekness to a' men.

3. For e'en we, at ac time, war glaikit, dour, deceived, baunden wi' mony hankering and pleasurs, leevin on in malice and envy, wordie to be detestit, and hatin anither.

4. But whan the unco favor and the love o' God oor Saviour to man shined oot,

5. No by warks o' richtousness we had done oorsels, but by his mercie he sav't us, throwe the weesin o' the new birth, and a makin-new o' us by the Holie Spirit,

6. Whilk he teemed-oot on us wi' rowth, throwe Jesus Christ oor Saviour ;

7. In order that bein declar't richtous by his tender-love, we might be made heirs, by way o' hope, o' Eternal Life.

8. Faithfu' is the word ! and o' thir things I wad that ye threep strangly, in order that they wha haes believed in God may be carefu' to pit their sels forrit in gode warks. Thir things are gode and profitable to men !

9. But silly quaistens, and pedigrees, and strifes, and argie-bargilins aboot points o' the Law, avoid ; for they are fruteless and sapless.

10. A promoter o' factions, stir a first and second warnin, refuse.

11. Kennin, that siccan a ane has been turned agley oot o' the way, and sins ; bein ¹ condemned o' his sel.

12. At siccan a time as I may send Artemas to ye, or Tychicus, mak a' diligence to come to me at Nicopolis ; for I haes determined to winter yonder.

13. Set forrit diligently Zenas the writer, and Apollos, that naething be wantin tae them.

14. But lat oor folk, as weel, be learnin in gode warks to pit their sels forrit in needfu' services ; that they be-na ungratefu'.

15. A' they that are wi' me salute ye. Salute ye thae that lo'e ua weel i' the faith. Tender-love be wi' ye a.

¹ V. 11. Sic a ane, bein wyes and cannilie dealt wi', wull be checkit by his ain conscience, and may sure come back again.

PHILEMON.

Paul speaks weel o' Philemon's faith ; and commands his servin-man Onesimus.

PAUL, a prisoner o' Christ Jesus, and Timothy, oor brither, to Philemon, oor weel-lo'ed, and oor marrow,

2. And to Apphia oor sister, and to Archippas oor sodger-marrow, and to the Kirk in yere hoose—

3. Tender-love to ye, and peace, frae God oor Faither and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4. I am gien thanks to my God, aye pittin ye i' my prayers :

5. Hearin o' yere love and faith that ye hae to the Lord Jesus, and to a' the saunts,

6. That the fellowship o' yere faith may be zealous in the schawin-forth o' ilka gude thing in ye, until Christ.

7. For mickle joy had I, and comfort, in yere love ; for that the tender-affections o' the saunts are refreshed by you, brither ;

8. And sae,—tho' unco bauldness o' speech I hae in Christ to press upon ye what is becomin—

9. Yet I wad raither entreat : bein siccian a ane as Paul, in eild, but noo a prisoner o' Christ Jesus.

10. I entreat you regardin a bairn o' mine, wham I hao begotten i' my bonds, Onesimus ;

11. Him, at ae time o' nae profit to ye ; but noo unco serviceable to you and me ;

12. Wham I send back t'ye ; him, that is my ain tender-affections !

13. Wham I wad fain este wi' mysel to detain, that, in your behaup he might do service to me, i' the bonds o' the Gude-word.

14. But, wantin word o' yere mind, naething was I willin to do ; that no o' necessity, but o' free choice, yere gude soud be.

15. For aiblins for siccian a cause he was pairtit wi' ye for a wee, that ye might hae him back for aye :

16. Nae mair as a servant, but aboon a servant, brither weel-lo'ed —vera specially to me, but hoo mickie mair to you—baith i' the flesh and the Lord !

17. Gin than ye coont me as ane wi' yersel, tak him to ye, as mysel.

18. And gin aiblins he has wranged ye, or is indebted, the same tae me div ye reckon.

19. I Paul pit it doon wi' my ain haun ; I wull meet it ; tho' I say-na t'ye hoo ye are awn me e'en yere ain sel.

20. Aye, brither ! lat me hae joy o' ye i' the Lord : refresh ye my tender-affections in Christ !

21. Lippennin to yere courtesie, I wrate to ye, kennin that ye wull do e'en mair nor I seek.

22. But, at the same time, ¹ mak me ready a lodgin ; for I look forrit, throwe yere prayers, that I sal be gien as a favor to ye.

23. Thar salute ye Epaphras, my prison-marrow in Christ Jesus,

24. And Mark, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke, my brither-workers.

25. The tender-love o' oor Lord Jesus Christ be wi' yere spirit !

¹ V. 22. Paul lookit forrit to liberty : and we tak thae to be richt wha think Paul gat awa frae Rome aftr the twa years imprisonment spoken o' in Acts.

HEBREWS.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Christ far aboon Angels, and creatit things.

WHAUR-AS, in a bantle o' portions and in a bantle o' ways, in auld times, God spak to the faithers by the prophets,

2. At the hinner-end o' thir days he speaks to us by his Son; wham he set forrit for an heir o' a' things; and throwe wham he made the warlds.

3. Wha, bein the radiant brichtness o' glorie, and a perfete like-ness o' his sel, and uphandin a' things by the word o' his power—haen made a purifyin o' oor sins—sat doon on the richt haun o' the Majestic on Heigh;

4. By sae mickle bein his sel aboon the Angels, as he has inheritit a name that is far aboon their ain.

5. For to whilk o' the Angels said he at ony time, "My Son art thou; this day has I begottan thee"; And again, "I wull be a Faither to him; and he sal be a Son to me"!

6. But at sic a time again as he soud send the First-Begotten into the warld, he says, "And lat a' the Angels worship him!"

7. And o' the Angels he says, "Wha maks his Angels be winds, and his servitors flauchts o' fire."

8. But anent the Son — "Thy thron, O God is to a' ages; and the sceptre o' thy kingdom is a sceptre o' richtousness!"

9. "Thou haest lo'ed richtousness, and scunner'd at ill; and for this

God has anointit thee wi' the oyle o' gladness aboon thy marrows!"

10. And, "Thou, Lord, at the fore-end, did set the fundation o' the yirth; and the heevena are the warks o' thy hauna.

11. "They sal dwine awa; but thou bides for aye! And they a', as a wearin-dud, sal end;

12. "And, as a maud sal thou fauld them up; and they're be changed; but thou art aye the same, and thy years end-na."

13. But to whilk ane o' the Angels has be said at ony time, "Sic thou at my richt haun, till I mak thy faes the fit-brod o' thy feet?"

14. Are-na they a' waitin spirits, sent oot to wait on thae that sal inherit salvation?

CHAPTIR TWA.

The glorious Son o' God, wha became a man.

AND for the sake o' a' this, we soud ells sair to hand fast the things that war heard, least at ony time we soud slype awa.

2. For gif the word spoken throwe Angels was stieve, and ilka gangin-agley and disobedience gat its true recompense o' reward,

3. Hoo sal we 'scape, gif we gie the gang-by to sae great a salvation; whilk in truth, begude to be spoken throwe the Lord by they wha heard, and to us was made siccar:

4. God bearin co-witness, baith wi' tokenes and ferlies, and mony-faulk warks o' power, and gifts o' the Holie Spirit, conform to his wull?

5. For it wiana to Angels be subjeckit the comin warld, o' whilk we are speakin:

6. For ane in ae place bure witness, sayin, "What is man, that thou

¹ V. 5. This graun array o' Auld Testament prufes, gars us think this would be the way oor Lord himself (as whan gaun to Emaus), expouned the Scriptures relation to himself. Ony o' us wad, aftir haun, closely follow his methods! Dootless, sae did the Apostles.

soud keep him in mind ? or man's bairn, that thou soud visit him ?

7. "Thou did ¹ mak him for a wee, laigher nor the Angels ; thon did croon him wi' glorie and honor ; and did set him ower the warks o' thy hauns.

8. "Thou did pit a' things subject aneath his feet." For in makin a' things subject to him, naething was left oot that wasna made subject to him : whaur-as, noo we see-na yet a' things to him made subject.

9. But the Ane wha was "made for a wee, laigher nor the Angels," div we behauld, o'on Jesus ; crooned wi' glorie and honor throwe the pangs o' death ; that, by the tender-love o' God be might pree o' death for a' men.

10. For it beboor'd him, for whose sake are a' things, and throwe wham are a' things, in leading mony eone to glorie, that the Chieftain o' their salvation soud by sufferins be made perfete.

11. For baith he wha maks bolie, and they wha are made bolie, are a' o' ane ; for whilk cause be iana backward to ca' them "brethren."

12. Sayin, "I wull mak kent thy name to my brethren ; amang a' the thrang wull I sing praise to thee !"

13. And again, "I wull stievely lippen him !" And again, "Behauld ! ² I and the bairns God has gien me"

14. Seein than, that the bairns had pairt in the flesh and blude, be eke in sic manner had fellowship i' the same ; that by means o' his death he might ding the poore o' him that

had the dominion o' death, that is the Adversary ;

15. And nicht deliver thir—as mony as frae fear o' death war a' their life under bondage.

16. For no, truly, is he takin hand o' Angels ; but he lays hand o' Abra'm's seed.

17. And eas, in a' things he bude be made like his brethren ; that he nicht be a mercifu' and leal Heigh-priest in the things o' God, to mak a reconciliation for folk's sins.

18. For, seein he dree'd his sel, and was tempit, he kens weel to rescue them that are in temptation.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Christ greater nor Mosen, and wordie o' mair honor.

SAE, holie brethren, the bidden anes o' a heaveutie biddin, look weel at the Apostle and Heigh-Priest o' oor profession, Jesus.

3. Wha was leal to him wha made him priest, as was Moses in a' his boose.

3. For he is coontit wordie o' mair glorie nor Moses, by as muckle as be wha bigges the boose has mair glorie nor the boose.

4. For ilka boose is made by some ane ; but he wha made a' things is God.

5. And, indeed, "Moses was leal in a' his boose," as a steward, for a witness o' the things that war to be spoken ;

6. But Christ, as a Son ower his ain boose ; whose boose are we, gin ablinis we haud siccar the freedom o' the promise and the glorie o' the hope to the end.

7. Whaur-for, e'en as says the Holie Spirit, "The day, gin ye may hear his voice,

8. "Harden-ye-na yere hearts, as in the bitter thrawartness, on the day o' temptation i' the desert,

9. "Whan yere forbears tempit me wi' a test ; and easw my warks forty year.

¹ V. 7. Dauid is aye unrecalin a pris about Christ, o'en whan he seems only to be speakin o' man ; for tak tent here, what we hausa gotten, Christ has gotten for us, and as oor King and Head. And what he gets, he shares (no ablinis here, but a' certain Aboon !) wi' his brethren.

² V. 13. The baill passage iana gien, but is left as an unfinished sentence : Kepiah viii. 18.

10. "Sae was I sair vexed wi' this generation, and said, 'Aye gang they agley i' their heart, and they divna ken my ways.'

11. "Sae did I swear i' my wrath, 'They aal enter-na intil my Rest!'"

12. Tak ye tent, brethren, least at ony time thar soud be, in ony o' ye, a dour heart o' unbelief, in fa'in-awa fras the leevin God;

13. But exhort ane-tho-ither, day by day, e'en as lang as it is ca'd "the day," least ony o' ye be hardened throwe the glamor o' sin.

14. For gin we haud siccar tae the hinner end the beginnin o' oor faith, we haes come to be partners wi' Christ.

15. While it is said, "The day, gin ye wull hear his voice, harden-ye-na yere hearts, as in the bitter thrawartness!"

16. For wha was't, tho' they heard, caused the bitterness? Na, didna a' thae wha cam oot o' Egypt hy Moses?

17. But wham was he sair vexed wi' for forty year? Was't no wi' thae that sinned, wha fell i' the desert?

18. And to wham swure he that they soudna enter intil his ¹ Rest, but to thae wha war thrawn and dour?

19. And we see they warna able to enter in for unbelief.

CHAPTR FOWR.

The ever-bidin rest o' God is still to the fore for the believer.

AT us than haes fear, least at ony time—tho' thar be a promise left o' enterin intil his Rest—ony fras 'mang ye soud come short o't.

2. For to us has the Joyfn'-mes-sage been gien, e'en as to them; but the word o' their hearin did

them nae gude, they no makin their souls ane in faith wi' thae that hearken't.

3. For we that haes had faith div enter intil the ² Rest; conform to what he has said, "As I did swear i' my wrath, they sanna enter intil my Rest!" tho' the warks war a' endit fras the fundation o' the yirth.

4. For he has said in a place, anent the seeventh day, thus: "And God restit on the seeventh day, fras a' his warks."

5. And in this place again, "Gif they sal enter intil my Rest!"

6. Sae, seein it is left ower for some to enter intil't, and they wha afore had the Joyfn'-message deliver't to them enter't-na in, on account o' thrawartness.

7. He still marks oot a certain day, sayin by Dauvid—e'en eftir sae lang a time as that—juist like as it had been said afore: "The day, gin aihlina ye hear his voice, mak-na hard yere hearts!"

8. For gin Joshua had gien "Rest" to them, he wadna i' that case haes been speakin, eftir thae things, o' anither day.

9. Sae thar is bein left ower a Sabbath-keepin for a' the folk o' God!

10. For he that enter't intil his rest, be eke haes restit fras a' his warks, as God did fras his.

11. Let us than gie a' tent to enter intil that "Rest"; least ony ane fa's, i' the same example o' thrawartness.

12. For God's word is leevin and mighty, keener nor a twa-edged sword, thringin throwe to the pairtin o' saul and spirit, o' joints and marrow; and gleg at discernin the airtins and ettlins o' the heart.

13. And thar iana a creatit thing that can be hidden fras his sicht; but a' things are nakit and laid bare to the een o' him wham we haes to do wi'.

¹ V. 18. It was a bonnie an-sweet land they had afore them! and yet they never saw it! God sanf us fras the dourness and thrawartness that wad come atween us and oor Canaan Abom.

² V. 3. It waansa rest free wark, but rest free dool and sin God was promisin: and that Rest is still to the fore!

14. Haein than a great Heigh-Priest, wha has gane up throwes the heevens, Jesus, the Son o' God, lat us hand siccar oor confession !

15. For we haena a Heigh-Priest that haena a brither-feelin wi' oor weaknesses ; but ane wha was tempit in a' the likeness o' oorsels, yet wantin sin.

16. Lat us, than, draw nar wi' freedom o' speech to the throu o' tender-love ; that we may ohteen mercie, and find favor to help us in oor need !

CHAPTIR FYVE

Christ, the great Heigh-Priest ; the first and the last o' his Order !

FOR ilka Heigh-priest, taen fras among man, is appointit for things o' God, that be may offer baith gifts and sacrifices for sins ;

2. As ane wha can marrow weel in his heart wi' thae that are ignorant and gane aside ; sin' be his sel is rinkit roon' wi' weakness ;

3. And on this acoont be bude for his sel, sae for the folk, to be offerin for sins.

4. And nae man takts to him this honor, but is ca'd by God, e'en as Aaron was.

5. And sae, e'en Christ magnify't-na himself' to be made a Heigh-priest ; but rather it was he that spak to him, sayin' " My Son art thou ; this day hae I begotten thee."

6. E'en as in anither place he says, " Thou, a Priest for aye, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

7. Wha, i' the days o' his flesh, aftir offerin up prayers and entreaties to him wha was strang to save him fras death, wi' sair ootcries and tears ; and had been 'heard for his godly fear.

8. E'en tho' he was a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things that he tholed ;

9. And bein perfetit, becam to a' thae obeyin him the fundation o' an endless salvation ;

10. Haein been addressed by God himself as " Heigh-Priest, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

11. Anent wham we hae muckle to say, and are sair beset hoo to say it, seein ye are become feckless in hearin.

12. For, e'en whan ye soud hae come to be teachers i' the lapse o' time, ye hae need ance mair that ane be teachin you the vera elements o' the first principles o' the oracles o' God ; and are gotten to be sic as hae need o' milk and no o' man's meat.

13. For ilka ane takin milk wants skill i' the word o' richtousness ; for he is a wean :

14. But tae sic as are man-grown, pertains man's meat ; to thae wha throwes proper use, hae their pouers exerceest to discern baith gode and ill.

CHAPTIR SAX.

The awfu' state o' thae that fa' back. But God is strang and faithfu' to sixteen !

THAR-FOR, lat us lea' thir be-gintins o' the things o' Christ, and gang on toward fu' growth ; no layin ower again the fundation o' turning fras deid warks, and o' faith toward God.

2. O' the teachin anent baptizaing, and o' layin-on o' bauns, and o' the Risin fras-the-deid, and o' eternal judgment.

3. And this wull we do, gin at least God permit.

4. For it isna possible, as to thae wha ance had licht, and had preed the free-gift o' Heeven, and had been made to partak o' the Holie Spirit.

5. And had preed the sweet word o' God, and the pouers o' the wORLD to come, —

6. And then fa'in awa, ance mair to new-form them until repentance ; seein they are crucifyin over again

¹ V. 7. See Mark xiv. 36, and note ; and John xix. 34, and note.

to their sels the Son o' God, and makin a public shame o' him !

7. For the grund, that sooks in the ast-fa'in rain, and brings forth what they wad fain hae wha till it, receives blessin fræ God ;

8. But gin it bear thorns and briers, it is no esteemed, and is nar-haun bein curst ; whass end is to be brunt.

9. But we are perswadit better things o' you, beloved, e'en things o' salvation, tho' we div sae speak.

10. For God is no ill-deedie to be forgettin yere wark and love that ye schawed forth for bis name ; in ser'in the saunts, and still ser'in.

11. But we hae mickle desire that ilk ane o' ye schaw forth the same perseverin, to the fu' confidence o' hope, e'en tae the end.

12. That ye be-na slack, but followin on astir thaе wha by faith and loug-tholin fell heirs to the promises.

13. For whan God made promise to Abra'm, seein that war nane greater to sweer by, he swure by his sel,

14. Sayin, "Certoa, in blessin wull I bless theo ; and in multiplyin wull I multiply thee !"

15. And sae, tholin patiently, he gat the promise.

16. For men sweer by ane greater ; and wi' them an aith is the end o' a' disputin.

17. And sae God, bein muckle mair willin to schaw forth to the heirs o' the promise the siccarness o' bis coonsel, cam in wi' an aith.

18. For by ¹ twa unchangeable things, in whilk it waens possible for God to be fause, a stieve consolation we sond hae, wha fled to grip the hope set afore us ;

19. Whilk boope we hae as an

anchor o' the soul, baith siccar and sure, and comin ben within the veil.

20. Whaur Jesus, as fore-rinner for us, has enter't ; wha "was made a Heigh-priest for aye, i' the order o' Melchizedek."

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

Jesus Christ, a Priest o' Melchizedek: grander nor Aaron.

NOR this Melchizedek, king o' Salem, priest o' God Maist Heigh, that forgather't wi' Abra'm as he cam back fras the slaunchtir o' the kings, and bless't him ;

2. Till wham gied Abra'm e'en a tenth o' ² : he bein first, by translation, "King o' Richtousness," and than as weel, "King o' Salem," whilk is "King o' Peace,"

3. Wantin faither, wantin mither, without pedigree, baein naither be-ginnin o' days nor end o' life ; but made to be like the Son o' God—bides a Priest without interruption.

4. And noo think boe great this man is, till wham Abra'm gied a tenth oot o' the best spoil, e'en Abra'm the patriarch !

5. And they, truly, fræ amang Levi's sons wha are gien the priesthood, hae instructions to tak tithes o' the folk, conform to the law ; that is, o' their brethren, e'en tho' they hae come oot o' the loins o' Abra'm !

6. But he wha wins-na his pedigree fras them, gat tithes fræ Abra'm, and bless't him wha had the promises.

7. But, aboon a' disputin, the heigher aye blesseas the laigher.

8. And here, truly, men wha dee tak tithes ; but tbair ane taks them wha obteene witness that he leeves.

9. And, sae to speak, e'en Levi, wha taks tithes, pays tithes throwe Abra'm :

10. For yet i' the loins o' his faither was he, whan Melchizedek forgather't wi' him.

11. Noo truly than, gin thar war a perfetin throwe the Levitical

¹ V. 19. What the "twa things" war, the text disna mak vera clear. Aiblins we sond tak it as *first*, the promise ; *second*, the aith.

priesthood (for 'neath it the folk had the Law gien them) whatna need was thar for a different Priest to be raised up, "conform to the order o' Melchizedek," and no be named as "conform to the order of Aaron?"

12. For seein thar is a change o' priesthood, thar mann e'en as weel be a change o' Law.

13. For he o' wham thir things are said has pairt wi' a different tribe; fræ whilk nae man has gien attendance at the altar.

14. For the truth is siccar, that oot o' Judah sprang oor Lord; anent whilk tribe Moses spak naething aboot priests.

15. And still muckle mair is it evident, that, conform to the likeness o' Melchizedek, is to be raised up a different Priest.

16. Wha has been made a Priest, no conform to the rule o' a commandment dealin wi' flesh, but conform to the poorer o' a Life for Aye.

17. For it is witnessed, "Thou art a Priest for aye; o' the order o' Melchizedek!"

18. For truly, a settin-aside o' a fore-gaun commandment comes aboot, on account o' its weakuess and want o' profit.

19. For the Law brocht naething to perfection; but thar is the comin-in o' a better hope, throwe whilk we draw nar to God.

20. And inasmuckle as it wasna wantin an aith-takin—

21. For thae priests war made wantin an aith; whan-as he wi' an aith-takin, by him that said to him, "The Lord swure, and gangs-na back, 'Thou art a Priest for Aye, o' the order o' Melchizedek!'"

22. By nae muckle as this, has Jesus come to be ¹ca'tion o' a heigher covenant.

¹ V. 22. E'en as Jason and the ither war ca'tion for Paul's friends (Acts xvii. 9) ase Jesus becomes Ca'tion for us afore the coort o' Heeven. Samu'l Rutherford says, "Go and agree wi' Christ, your Ca'tioner, and purchase a discharge."

23. And truly, in lairger numbers has they been made priests, for that on account o' death they coudna bide;

24. But he, in that he bides for aye, ever-constant bands the priesthood.

25. Sac is he able to sauf to a' extremitis thae that come throwe him to God; leevin aye, to intercede in their behaif.

26. For siccar a Heigh-Priest as this for us was aye meet, wha was holie, innocent, uncorrupt, sindry fræ sinners, and made to be aboon the heavens.

27. Wha has nae need, day by day, to be offerin up sacrificees, like thae Heigh-priests, for his ain sins, and than for thae o' the folk. For this he did, ance for a', whan his ain sel be offer't!

28. For the Law appointit men Heigh-priests, haein weakness; but the word o' the aith-takin (whilk was estir the Law) appoints the Son, wha is consecrate for evermair.

CHAPTIR AUCHT.

Christ's priesthood heigher nor Aaron's; and the Gospel wider war the auld covenant.

BUT, as bringing to a point what we hae said: Siccar a Heigh-Priest baie we as this, wha is set on the richt haun' o' the thron o' The Majestie i' the Heevens;

2. O' the Holie Place, and o' the true tabernacle, whilk the Lord pitched, and no a man.

3. For ilk a Heigh-priest is ordeened for the offerin o' baith gifts and sacrificees; and it was necessar for this ane too, that he soud hae that whilk he nicht offer.

4. Gin than the Lord had been on yirth, he hadna been a priest ava; sin' thar are thae, offering the gifts conform to the "Law."

5. Wha e'en, as a glint and shadow o' heevenlie things, are doin service; e'en as Moses had word whan aboot to finish the tabernacle: "For tak tent," says he, "that ye mak a'

things conform to the paitttern schawn to ye i' the mount."

6. But noo has he obteened a mair noble ministry, by as muckle as he is the Mediator o' a 'heigher covenant, whilk is established on heigher promises.

7. For gin the first had been perfecte, nae need wad thar has been for a second.

8. For as wytin them, he says, "Tak tent ! tho days come, says the Lord, that I wull mak wi' the hoose o' Isra'el and the hoose o' Judah a new covenant.

9. No conform to the covenant I made wi' their forbears, i' the day I took them by the haun, to lead them oot o' the land o' Egypt ; for it was that they bade-na i' my covenant, and I disregairdit them, says the Lord.

10. "But this is the covenant I wull covenant wi' Isra'el's hoose efter thae days, says the Lord, I wull pit my laws i' their minda, and write them on their hearts ; and I wull be to them for a God, and they sal be for mo a folk.

11. "And nae need, ilk ane to teach his marrow, or ilk ane his brither, sayin, 'Ken ye tho Lord ?' for a' they sal ken me, frae the am'kest to the greatest o' them.

12. "For I wull bo mercif' to their unrichtuousness, and o' their sins will I be mindfu' nae mair !"

13. By this word, "A new covenant," he made the first ane "auld" : but what ie made past use and auld, is passin awa.

CHAPTIR NINE.

The ordinances and offerans o' the Law war but the fore-gaun shadow o' the better things comin.

AND eke the first covenant had its ordinances o' divine service, and a sanctuary o' this present world.

2. For a tabernacle was plenib't ; the first, in whilk war baith the lamp-steed and the table, and the

settin-forth o' the braid ; whilk is ca'd the "Holie."

3. But, efter the second veil, the tabernacle ca'd the "Holie o' Holies":

4. Haein a gowden censer, and the Ark o' the Covenant, owerlaid wi' gowd, in whilk was a gowden pat haudin the manna, and Aaron's wand that bloomed, and the tables o' the covenant ;

5. But ower aboon it the Cherubim o' gloria, ower-shadin the Mercy-seat ; anent whilk things it isna necessary e-noo to speak specially.

6. Noo, when thir things war sae ordeened, intil the first tabernacle gaed aye continually the priests, makin the services :

7. But intil the second the Heigh-priest alone, ance ilka year ; and no wantin blude, whilk he offers for his sel, and for the blin'nessa o' the folk.

8. The Holie Spirit sae makin it seen, that the gate to the Holiest hadnna yet been made plain, whiles the first tabernacle was staunin.

9. Whilk indeed was a likeness for the time noo come ; conform to whilk waa offer't baith gifts and offerans, that canna, as to the conscience, mak him perfete wha offers the service ;

10. Bein but eatin and drinkin, and a hantle o' purifications, appointit to a time o' mair liebt.

11. But whan Christ drew nar, a Heigh-priest, o' comin gude things, throwe the better and mair perfecte tabernacle, no made wi' hauns, that is, no o' this creation,

12. Nor yet throwe blinde o' goats and eauves, but throwe his sin blude he enter't in, ance for a', to the Holie Place, haein won Eternal redemption !

13. For gin the blude o' goats and bulls, and the assis o' a quey, strink-

¹ V. 6. The "heigher" covenant God was makin wi' them in Christ, was nae newer than the ane was whan he brocht them oot o' Egypt ! And yet for that it was "now," it "contradicts the auld," quo' the Jews ! And they wad haes name o' !

lin the defil'd, sanctifies to the pureness o' the flesh,

14. Hoo muckle mair sal the blude o' Christ, wha, throwe the ever-leevin Spirit offer't his sel, wantin blemish, until God, purify yere conscience frae deid warks, to the offerin up o' a divine service to the leevin God ?

15. And for sic a reason is he the Mediator o' a new covenant ; to the end, that a death haein taen place, for the redeemin o' sins aneath the first covenant, thas that haec been invitit may receive the promise o' Eternal inheritance.

16. For whaur a covenant is, it is necessar that a death soud come in, on his side wha covenants.

17. For a covenant is made siccar, efter a death : but it is o' nae effect while the ¹ "covenanter" levees.

18. And sas, no s'en the first covenant was consecrate wantin blude.

19. For whan a' the commauns war spoken conform tae the Law, by Moses to the folk, takin the blude o' the caunes and the goats, wi' watir and scarlet oo', and hyesop, he strinkl't baith the buik and a' the folk ;

20. Sayin, "This is the blude o' the covenant whilk God sent in commaun to you ! "

21. Aye, and the tabernacle as weel, and a' the veschols o' the service, strinkl't he in like manner wi' the blude.

22. And nar-baun a' things are purify't wi' blude ; conform to the Law ; and, wantin the blude-sheddin, is nae remission.

23. It was a necessity than, for the imitations o' things in heeven to be purify't wi' sic ; but the heevenlie things theirsels wi' better sacrificees than thair.

¹ V. 17. "Covenanter" here, isna one o' the pairties makin the covenant, but that whilk maks siccar the covenant--the sacrificee offer't. The text is no vera clear : but "covenanter" is the word the Apostle uses.

24. For no intil Holies made-wi' hauns did Christ gang in--that war but figures o' the true Holies--but intil Heeven itsel, noo to come plainly afore the face o' God for us.

25. Nor yet that aft-times soud he be offerin his sel ; like as the Heigh-priest enters the Holie-Place, year by year, wi' ithers' blude.

26. Else had it been needfu' for him aften to suffer, frae the beginnin a' the wairld. But noo, ance at the end o' the time has he been schawn, for the settin-by o' sin, throws his sacrificees.

27. And, inasmuckle as it is laid up for men ance to dee, and efter this the Judgment,

28. Sas Christ, haein ance for a' been offer't, and carryt the sin o' mony, sal appear a second time, spairt frae sin, to thae that fain wait for him, for their salvation.

CHAPTIR TEN.

Christ's sacrificee nae better than thas o' the Law. Warious again back-yair.

FOR the Law, wi' a shadow o' the gude things to come, and no the perfecte likeness o' the things their sels, canna wi' thae sacrificees offer't up year by year aye, mak perfecte them that draw nar.

2. For than wadna they quat bein offer't ? for they worshippin, bein ² ance for a' purify't, wad hae nae mair conscience o' sins !

3. But, in them, is a bringin-back to mind o' sins, year by year.

4. Impossible is't for blude o' bulls and goats to tak awa sins !

5. Whaur-for, comin intil the wairld, he says, "Sacrificee and offeran thou willest-na, but a body didst thou prepare for me.

6. "In hail brunt-offerans, and offerans for sins, thou didst-na joy ;

² V. 2. The Jews warair misguidit by their Scribes, and gar'd to think the offerans theirsels took awa sin. But the Ae-offeran needs nae repeatin, as the offerans are.

7. "Than said I, 'Behauld, I am come—(at the heid o' the buik it is written o' me)—to do thy wull, O God !'"

8. Aboon, sayin, "Sacrificees and offerans, and haill brunt-offerans, and offerans for sin thou willest na, naither didst joy in"—sic as, conform to the Law, are offer't;

9. Than did he say, "Behauld ! I am come to do thy wull !" He takis awa the first, that he may mak siccar the second.

10. By the whilk wull we are made holie, throwe the offerin o' the body o' Jesus Christ ance for a'.

11. And ilka priest strauns, in truth, day aftir day servin, and offerin ower again the same sacrificees; whilk, truly, can never tak awa sins;

12. But he, basin offer't as sacrifice for sins for evermair, sut doon at God's richt bann;

13. Frae this waitin, "till his faes be made the fit-brod o' his feet."

14. For by the Ae-offeran he has perfectit for evermair them that are sanctify't.

15. And the Holie Spirit himself bears witness for us; for aftir he had said,

16. "This is the covenant I wull covenant wi' them aftir thae days," says Jehovah, "Giean my laws on their hearts, I wull write them on their minds ;"

17. He says mair : "Their sins and their ill-deediness wull I nae wise mind ony mair."

18. Noo, whaursee'er they are remittit, thar is nae mair offeran for sin needfu'.

19. Haein than, brethren, bauldness o' speech to enter intil the Holiest by the blude o' Jesus,

20. Whilk enterin-in he has consecrate for us, a new way, and a way o' Life, throwe the veil (that is, his flesh),

21. And haein sic a great Heigh-Priest ower the booshauld o' God,

22. Lat us come nar, wi' leal hearts, in the fu' confidence o' faith ; haein been strinkl't in oor hearts frae an ill conscience ; and haein been weash't in oor bodies wi' pure watir ;

23. Lat us hand siccar the confession o' oor hope wi' nae wafflin ; for leal is he that did undertak.

24. And lat us think upo' ane anither, for an encouragin to love and gude warks :

25. No lettin-fa' the forgatherin o' oorsels, o'en as it is the way wi' some ; but, perawadin aye ; and nae muckle the mair, as ye see the dawin o' the day.

26. For gif we gang on sinnin aftir receivin the knowledge o' the truth, nae lang'er, for sin, is thar remainin a sacrificees ;

27. But a fearsome lookin-forrit tae judgment, and a sautness o' fire, that sal devoor the enemy.

28. Ane that set aside Moses' Law, deet without pitie, "afore twa or thrie witnesses."

29. O' hoo muckle sairer punishment, think ye, sal he be handen wordlie, wha trampit the Son o' God under fit ; and held as an unclean thing the blude o' the covenant by whilk he is consecrate, and did wantonly misca' the Spirit o' love ?

30. For we ken wha said, "To me perteens avenging ; I wull recompense !" and again, "Jehovah wull judge his folk."

31. It is a fearsome thing to fa' intil the banns o' a Leevin God !

32. But mind ye nae the days gane by, in whilk, ance ye gat licht, ye tholed an unco fecht o' sufferans ?

33. Some pairt that ye war made, wi' misca'in and griefs, a ferlie for men ; and some pairt that ye war made marrows o' thae that war eas done till.

34. For ye took the pairt o' thae in bonds, and tholed the poindin o' yers gear wi' joy, kennin that ye hae for yersels better and ever-bidin gear.

35. Ye maunna cast awa, than,

yers bauldness o' speech ; whilk in truth has unco reward !

36. For ye has need o' patience, that basin dune God's wull, ye may win the promise :

37. For yot, "A wee while, fleetin, fleetin ! the Comin Ane sal come, and no delay !

38. "But the richtous ane by faith sal levee ; but gin ye gang back, my aul delichts-na in him !"

39. But we are-na o' them wha gang back to perdition ; but o' faith, to the salvation o' the saul.

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.

What faith is? and who had it, and how they made it to be seen? A noble bead-roll.

NOO faith is gruppin the substance o' things lookit for ; the confidence o' raal-things no yet seen.

2. For thar-in the Elders had gude-witness borne them.

3. Throwe faith we come to ken the warlds war order't by the words of God, sae as that whilk is seen was made oot o' wbat was seen-na.

4. Throwe faith Abel offer't to God a mair perfote sacrificee than Cain ; by whilk he obteened testimoniie that he was richtous, God testifying anent his gifts : and throwe it, though he dee't, he is still speakin.

5. Throwe faith Enoch was translatit sae as no to see death, and was seen-na, for God had translatit him ; for afore the translation be bad testimoniie borne to him that he had been weel-pleasin to God.

6. But, wantin faith, it isna possible to be weel-pleasin to him ; for he that comes to God man needs haes faith that he is, and that to thae that seek him a Rewarder is he.

7. Throwe faith Noah, being tell't o' things as yet no seen, wrocht-on by godly fear, made ready an ark to the savin o' his hoosehould ; throwe whilk he condemned the world, and becam heir o' the righteousnes o' faith.

8. Throwe faith Abra'm—he wha was tell't—obey'd to gang till a place he was to has for a heritage ; and gaed oot, no weel-kennin whaur he was gaun.

9. Throwe faith he bade day-hy-day i' the Land o' Promise, as in a fremd land ; bidin in tents, wi' Isaac and Jacob, joint-heirs o' the same promise :

10. For he was waitin for the Citiie wi' fundations, biggit, and planned by God.

11. Throwe faith e'en Sarah her sel bad strength to conceive, whan she was ayont age : seein that she was haudin him as faibfu' that had promised.

12. And sae, e'en frue ane was thar born—and him as be war deid—"as mony as the starns o' the sky in their thrang, and as the sand by the lip o' the sea ; no to be number't."

13. And conform to faith, dee't a' thir ; no haen their sels grippit the promises, but seein them far awa, and salutin them, and confessin that they their sels war fremd anes, and lodgers on the yirth.

14. For they that say sic things, mak it plain to be kent that they are seekin a land o' thair ain.

15. For gin they bad been thinkin aye o' the land they came fras, they micht has had opportunity o' returnin :

16. But noo they look for a better land, that is a heevenlie ane ; whan-for God isna ashamed o' thom to be socht till as their God ; for he did prepare for them a Citiie.

17. Throwe faith Abra'm when he was testit, offer't up Isaac ; aye, he wha hlythely acceptit the promises, was offerin-up his ane and only son ;

18. O' wham it was said, "Thar sal bo ca'd a seed tae thee in Isaac."

19. Reckonin that God could raise him again, e'en fras 'mang the deid ; fras whilk he, in a likeness, wan him back again.

20. Throwe faith Isaac gied blessin

to Jacob and Esau, speakin o' comin things.

21. Throwe faith Jacob, whan he cam to dee, bless'd baith the sons o' Joseph; and "worshipp't, loutin doon on the heid o' his staff."

22. Throwe faith Joseph, whan his end cam nar, spak o' the gain oot o' the sons o' Isra'el, and ga'e commaun aenent his banes.

23. Throwe faith Moses, whan he was born, was keepit hidlin thrie month, for that they saw he was an unco bonnie wean, and fear't-na the orders o' the king.

24. Throwe faith Moses, whan he was grown, wadna be ca'd "Son o' Pharaoh's dochter";

25. Makin choice raither to dree wi' the folk o' God their ill-treatment, than to be enjoyin for a wee the pleasures o' sin.

26. Reckonin the reproach o' the Anointit Ane as unco better than a' the gear o' Egypt; for he was lookin awa to the giean o' the reward.

27. Throwe faith he left Egypt abint, no fearin the ang'er o' the king; for he tholed, as behaundin him wha is unseen.

28. Throwe faith he institutit the Pasche, and the strinklin o' blude; that he that destroy't the first-born soudna be touchin them.

29. Throwe faith they gaed athort the Red Sea as on dry grun'; whilk the Egyptians, ettilin to do, war whammilt ower.

30. Throwe faith the wa's o' Jericho fell doon, haein been rinkit roon' for seeven days.

31. Throwe faith Rahab the courtesan perish't-na wi' thae that war disobedient, haein welcomed the spies wi' peace.

32. And what mair can I say? for time wad fail me tellin o' Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah; o' Danvid too, and Samu'l, and the prophets;

33. Wha, throwe faith prevailed ower kingdoms, wrocht richtousness,

obteened promises, dang the mooth o' lions.

34. Quenched the lowin o' fire, escapit the mooth o' the sword, frae fecklessness raise to strenth, wax't mighty in war; turned to flicht armies o' frem'd anes.

35. Weemen gat back their deid, rais't to life; and some war tortured, no acceptin conditions o' deliverance, that they might come to a better Risin-again.

36. Itbers war tried wi' mockins and clourins; aye, mair; wi' fettters and dungeons:

37. They war stan'd, war sawn sindry, war tempit, war murder'd wi' sword; they gaed aboot row't in sheepskins and goat-hides, hain in poortith, dool, and misery.

38. The world ¹ waana wordie o' them; wanderin on muirlands and mountaina, hidin in dens and caves o' the yirth.

39. And thir a', tho' they had witness to their faith, obteend-na, their sels, the promise.

40. God haein aforehann providit better things for na, that no sindry frae us soud they be perfetit.

CHAPTIR TWAL'.

*Haul ye on by faith! A graun Assembly
we're comin till!*

SAE, seein we hae a' aboot us sic an unco clud o' witnesses—drappin ilka taiglement, and the dawtit sin that eithlie rinks us roond, lat us rin, perseverin, i' the race set afore us;

3. Lookin-awa till oor Leader-Prince and Perfeter, Jesus; wha for the joy held afore him, ² tholed the

¹ V. 38. Thank God for sic noble anes! Nae ither leet o' heroes war ever as graun as this. The fragrance o' their warks o' faith is wi' us; and their example. Let us follow on!

² V. 2. Nae doot the Lord often looks back wi' joy, on the cross he bare: and we wha hae crosses (licht and swa' what even'd wi' his) maun "lichtlie the shame" o' them, and the skraith o' them.

cross, and lichtlid the shame ; and on God's richt haun has taen his seat.

3. For, think ye o' him, wha has tholed sic gainsayin o' sinners again himsel, least ye be forfonchten, and yere sauls be faint.

4. Ye hae-na yet resistit tae blude, battlin again sin !

5. And ye hae clean forgotten the avisement that speaks till ye as to bairns : " My son, lichtlis-ye-na the chastenin o' the Lord, naither faint ye when ye are reprov'd o' him ;

6. " For the Lord chastens the ane he lo'es, and lays stripes on ilka son he welcomes hame."

7. For the experience-sake, thole ye ; for God deals wi' you as wi' sons ; for wha is a son, and no exercess'd o' his faither ?

8. But gin ye are ootae o' a' exercess, o' whilk a' hae their portion, than are ye bastards and no " sons."

9. And mair : faithers o' oor flesh had we to exercess us, and we gied them reverence ; sal-we-na muckle raither submit oorsels to the Faither o' oor spirits, and levee !

10. They, certainlie, for a wheen days, exercess'd us, conform tae what seemed to them gude ; but he conform tae what is best, that we might partak o' his holiness.

11. Yet nae exercessain, for the time present, seems a blytheness, but a sorrow ; notwithstanding, aftirhaun, to thae wha hae been thar-by exercess'd, it gies peacefu' frutes o' richtousness.

12. Sae, " The feckless hauns and palsied knees rax oot ;

13. " And mak straucht fit-roads for yere feet " ; that what is gley'd be-na thrawn-oot, but be raither made hale.

14. Follow peace wi' a' : and holiness ; wantin whilk nae man sal see the Lord.

15. Takin tent gif thar be ony man fa'in shint frae the tender-love o' God, " least ony rute o' bitterness

springin up " be makin bitterness, and sae mony corruptit :

16. Ony lecherer ; or ony ungodly ane as Esau, wha for the sake o' se meal o' meat, gied up his " first-born " richt.

17. For ye ken that, e'en aftir that was dune, he fain wad hae the blessin, but was rejeckit ; for he faund nae turnin again, tho' he socht it wi' unco tears.

18. For ye hae-na come to the lowin and devoorin fire, to mirk, and gloom, and tempest.

19. And a peal o' a bugle-horn, and a sound o' spoken words ; frae whilk thea wha heard pled no-tae-hear-them ouy mair ;

20. For they couldna thole what was bein laid doon, " And, gin a bees' may tonch the mountain, it maun be staned ! "

21. And sae awesome was that whilk was seen, that Moses said, " I am unco fley'd ; and trimle ! "

22. But ye are come nar till Zion's mountain, and tae the Citee o' the Leevin God, a Heevenlie Jeruaalem ; and till hosts o' rejoicin Angels ;

23. And to God the Judge o' a' ; and to the spirits o' richtous anes made perfete ;

24. And till a Mediator o' a new Covenant, Jesus ; and to the strinklin o' blude, sair-pleadin mair than Abel !

25. Tak ye tent that ye rejeek-na him that speaks ! for gin they escapt-na wha rejeckit him wha on yirth was warnin them, hoo muckle less sal we escape, gin we turn oorsels awa frae him wha warns us frae Heeven !

26. Whase voice did shake the yirth ; but noo has he said, " Yet ance mair I wull shake, no the yirth alane, but heeven as weel ! "

27. And this : " ance mair " points to the takin awa o' thae things that can be shucken, as o' things that hae been formed ; that thae may remain that canna be shucken.

28. And sae, seein we are to hae a kingdom that canna be shucken, lat us hae lovin-favor, that we may render service weel-pleasin until God, wi' reverence and godly fear.

29. For oor God is a devoorin fire.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

A wheen gude counsels at the hinner-end ; and salutations o' the Apostle.

LAT britherly love aye staun.

2. Forget-na to entreeten fremd anes ; for sae some has takin to them Angels, unkent.

3. Bear in mind thae that are in bonds, as bein in bonds wi' them ; and thae dreein ill-treatment as e'en yersels bein i' the body.

4. Lat mairriage be hauden in honor o' a', and lat the bed be pure ; for lecherers and adulterers God wull judge.

5. Lat yere life no be i' the way o' los'in siller ; bein content wi' what ye hae ; for he has said, "In naegate wull I lea' ye ! Na, in naegate wull I foraae ye !"

6. Sae that, takin heart, we may say, "The Lord is my freend, and I'se be-na fley't ; what sal man do to me ?"

7. Keep in mind thae wha are airtin ye ; wha speak to ye the words o' God ; the outcome o' whase life seein, follow ye their faith !

8. Jeesue Christ, yestreen and the day the same, and for evermair !

9. Be-na carry't awa wi' mony and and unco teachins, for it is grann to hae the heart made siccar wi' favor and love ; no wi' meata, whaur-in they that hae fasb'd theirsels hae gotten nae profit.

10. We hae an altar, o' whilk they hae nae richt to partak, wha ser' i' the Tabernacle.

11. For the bodies o' thae beass whose blude is cairry't within the Holie Place by the Heigh-priest, are brunt ¹ ayont the camp.

12. And sae Jeesua, that he soud

sanotify the folk wi' his ain blude, suffer't ayont the porta.

13. Lat us than gang oot to him ayont the camp, bearin misericord for his sake !

14. For here we hae nae everbidin Citeie, but are seekin oor way till aye to come.

15. Throwe him, than, lat us be offerin-up a "sacrificee o' praise" aye to God ; whilk is "the frute o' oor lips," confessin to his name.

16. But, o' doin gude, and o' fellowship, forget na ; for wi' sic sacrificees as thir, God is weel-pleased.

17. Obey them that has the airtin o' ye, and gie-in to them ; for they are takin tent for yere sanla, as haein an acoont to gie ; that they may do siclike wi' joy, and no wi' dool ; for that war nae profit for you !

18. Pray for us ; for we are perswadin oorsels that we keep a gude conscience ; in a' things etlin to leave honorably.

19. And muckle mair div I entreat ye to do siclike ; that wi' a' the mair spedd I may be restor't t'ye.

20. Noo the God o' peace, that led up frae amang the deid oor Lord Jeesua, the Great Shepherd o' the sheep, throwe the blude o' the everbidin covenant,

21. Mak ye perfete in ilka gude thing for the workin o' his wull, doin in ye that whilk is weel-pleasin afore his face, throwe Jeesus Christ : tae whau be glorie for evir and evir ! Amen.

22. But I entreat ye, brethren, bear wi' the word o' coonsel ; for e'en wi' few words I wrate t'ye.

23. Ken-ye-na that oor brither Timothy is set free i' wi' wham, gin he come suna, I wull see ye.

24. Salute a' thae that hae the airtin o' ye, and a' the saunte. They o' Italie salute ye.

25. Gude-favor be wi' ye a'. Amen.

¹ V 11. Tak tent o' the words, "within" and "ayont." The sacrifice is made ayont—the blude presentit within Calvary—and the Holies o' Holies aboou!

J A M E S.

CHAPTIR ANE.

James tells what true faith will do to ane's life. Gis a' word dae eae, what a bonnie world we wod ha'e!

JAMES, a servant o' God, and o' the Lord Jesus Christ, tae the Twal' Tribes o' the Dispersion ; joy !

3. A' joy coont it, my brethren ; whan ye come intil mony triala.

3. Comin to ken that the testin o' yere faith works oot lang-tholin.

4. But let lang-tholing haes its perfeteness, eae as ye may be perfete and completa, wanting in naething.

5. Gin ony o' ye want wisdom, lat him be seekin frae God, wha gies in rowth till a', and wyties-na ; and it sal be gien him.

6. But lat him seek in faith, wi' nae switherin ; for he wha has switherin doota, is like a sea-wave, ca'd wi' the wind, and toss'd wi' the storm.

7. For lat-na siccan a man think he sal haes onything o' the Lord :

8. He, wi' a twafoald mind, unsiccar in a' his ways !

9. Let the lowly brither joy at his uplifting ;

10. But the rich in his bein brocht laigh ; for, as the bloom o' the geras he is to pass awa.

11. For uprises the sun, wi' its birs'lin heat, and birsles the geras ; "and its blume fa's awa," and the ee-sweetness and beauty o' its face is gane ! e'en eae the rich man dwines awa in his ways.

12. Happy be wha tholes trial ! for, eae being appruv't, he sal haes a croon o' Life, promised o' the Lord to thae that lo'e him !

13. Lat nae ane, whan under trials, eae, "I am temptit o' God !" for God is naither temptit wi' sin, nor eae tempts he ony ane.

14. But ilk ane is ¹ temptit, whan by his ain desires he is wheedlit awa and enticed.

15. And the deaire, haein conceiv'd, brings forth sin ; but the sin, whan a' is dune, brings forth death !

16. Be-ye-na deceiv't, brethren belov'd !

17. Ilka gude grant, and ilka perfectit gift is frae Aboon, comin doon frae the Faither o'lichts ; wi' wham is nae unsiccarness, nor shadow o' gaun back.

18. O' his ain wull begat he us wi' the word o' truth, that we soud be like first-frutes o' his creation.

19. Ye ken this, my brethren belov'd ! But let ilka man be gieg to hear, backward to speak, refusin to be ang'er't.

20. For man's ang'er works-na-oot God's richtousness.

21. Sae than, pittin by a' vileness and owercome o' wickedness, tak till ye in meekness the inborn word, that is able to save yere souls.

22. But become ye word-doers, and no word-hearers alone, deceivin yere ain sel's.

23. For, gin ane is a word-hearer, and no a word-doer, he is but like a man seein his born face in a keekin-glass.

24. He sees his sel, and awa he is gane : and balyve he minds-na what sort he was like !

25. But he wha obteens a closer sicht intil a better and perfote rule, a rule o' libertie, and takes aye heed thare-till, bein no a hearer forgettin, but a wark-doer, this ain is bleas't in his doin.

¹ V. 14. We say "trial," whan it comes frae God ; and "temp," whan it comes frae Mautao, or wicked men, or our ain wicked thooughts. In auld times, they said "temp" for baith. Sae James heru.

26. Gin ony ane thinks to be doin religious service, and commauns-na his tongue, but mislippens his sin heart, this ane's religious service is nocht ava.

27. The service o' religion, pure and perfete afore oor God and Father is this: To be visitin faitherless and widows i' their dool, to keep his sel unstained fras the wairld.

CHAPTIR TWA.

The rich and the pair: hoo aae soold treat the ither. Faith mair be sown and tenit, gin it wad braird and grouse!

MY brethren, div ye hand by the faith o' oor Lord Jeans Christ, the Lord o' Glorie, i' the maitter o' respect o' persons?

2. For gin aiblins thar come intil yer kirk a man wi' rings o' gowd, and braw cleedin; and thar come in as weel, ane in poortith, wi' claes unclean;

3. And ye soud spy him wearin the braw cleedin, and say, "Ye sit here in a gude place!" and to the ane in poortith soud say, "Ye staun there!" or "Sit ye aneath my fit-brod!"

4. Are-ye-na thaum dividit amang yersels, and become judges haein unjust thochts?

5. Hearken, my beloved brethren! Hasna God taen the pair o' the wairld to be rich in faith, and to haes the kingdom be has promised to thae that lo'e him?

6. But ye lichtlie the pair ane. Are-na the rich baudin ye doon? and theirsle harl ye afore judgment-seats?

7. Are-they-na misca' in the wordie name whilk is placed upon ye?

8. Gin than, ye fulfil the law, the royal ane, conform to the Scripture, "Ye sal lo'e yere neebor as yersel," weel are ye doing!

9. But, gin ye schaw waln oot o' persons, ye are committing sin, and

are fund guilty by the law as ill-doers.

10. For whae may keep the hail law, and yet stoiter in as thing, has become guilty o' a'.

11. For he wha said, "Ye maunna commit adultery," said as weel, "Ye maunna commit murder." Noo, gin ye commit nae adultery, but are committin murder, ye haes become a breker o' the law.

12. Sae be ye speakin, and sae be ye doing, as men throwe a law o' liberty to be judged!

13. For judgment, wantin mercy, is for him that gied nae mercy; and mercy glories again judgment!

14. What the profit, my brethren, gin ane says he haes faith, but haes nae warks? Is't possible for this ane's faith to save him?

15. Gif aiblins a brither or sister be bare, and wantin o' daily meat,

16. But ane o' ye soud say till them, "Be ye gaun in peace! be ye gettin warmed and gettin meat!" but soudna gie them the thing necessary for the body: what the profit?

17. In sic mainner, e'en the faith, unless aiblins it haes warks, is deid by itsel.

18. But ane wull say, "Ye haes faith, and I haes warks; lat me see yere faith sindry fras yere warks, and I wull lat ye see, by means o' my warks, my faith!"

19. Ye believe "God is ¹Ane"; weel are ye doing! The demons, too, believe, and trummle.

20. But, wull ye learn, O vain man! that faith, sindry fras warks, is barren.

21. Wasna Abra'm oor faither declar't richtous throwe warks, whan he gied up his son on the altar?

¹V. 19. James was specially writing to the Jews (i. 1); "God is Ane!" quo' they; "and sae Jesus canna be divine!" He schawn that a faith that gangs nae far'er than belief in the existence o' no God, canna save. Santan hens as muckle as that!

22. See-ye-na that his faith was workin in his deeds ? and by his deeds his faith was ripened ?

23. And the Scriptur was fulfilled whilk said, "And Abra'm believed God ; and it was reckoned till him as richtousness," and "Freend o' God" was his name.

24. Div ye no see that by means o' warks a man is declar'd richtous, and no by faith alienarlie ?

25. And, in siolike manner, Rahab the courtesan too, was she no by warks declar'd richtous, whan she gae welcome to the messengers, and set them forth anither gate ?

26. For e'en as the body, sindry fras the spirit, is deid ; sae thus faith, sindry fras warks, is deid.

CHAPTIR THIRIE.

The tongue, to praise God, and speak cannie to men : but hoo aft a world o' fire !

DECOME-NA, mony o' ye, teachers, B my brethren ; kennin' that we sal haes the heavier judgment.

2. For in mony-fauld things ane-and-a' aft stoiter. Gin ony ane stoiters-na in his 'words, the same is a weel-ripened man, able to bridle the hale body.

3. We pit bits intil horses' mou'a, that we may airt them ; and their hale body we turn aboot.

4. Mark too the ships ; muckle as they are, and are cairryt by rounch winds, yet are they airtit aboot wi' a vera wee helm, whaure'er the steerer may wuss.

5. Sae the tongue is a wee pairt, and yet boasts o' muckle thinga. Look, hoo a wee fire lunta sae great a wud !

6. And the tongue is a fire, a world o' wickedness ! The tongue is amang oor pairts as that whilk defiles the

¹ V. 2. Gin ane speirs " hoo he can improve his sel ? " lat him tak his tongue in haun ! That restrained, and artit weel, he will learn mair, and aye the faster, fras the Holie Spirit !

hale body ; and sets a-lowe the wheel o' oor natural life, and is set a-lowe by hell !

7. For ilka natur o' beaſs and o' birda, and o' crowlin-things, and things i' the sea, are tamed, and haes been tamed, by human-kind.

8. But the tongue nane o' mankind can tame : a restless ill, fu' o' deidly pushion :

9. Whaur-by we bless God the Faither ; and whaur-by we ban men, made conform to God's likeness.

10. Oot o' the ae mooth comes forth bleasin and cursin ! It isna bonnie, my brethren, for sic things to be !

11. Dis the fountain, oot o' the same mooth, teem oot the sweet and the bitter !

12. Can a fig tree, my brethren, bring forth olives ? or a vine gie figs ? naither can saut water yield sweet.

13. Wha is wyss and weel-lear'd amang ye ? let him schaw oot o' a gude life his warks, in a wyss meekness.

14. But gin ye haes bitter selliness and rivalry i' yore hearta, boast-na yersels ; and schaw-na yersels fause tae the trath.

15. This wisdom is no the wisdom comin doon fras Aboon ; but is yirthly, natural, and deevilish.

16. For whane-e'er selliness and rivalry are, thar are taiglements and a' vile deeds.

17. But the wisdom that is fras Aboon is first to purify, than peaceable and cannie ; easy to be entreatit, fu' o' mercy and gude frutes ; wi' nae pu'in doon ; and aefauld.

18. But the seed o' richtousness is sown in peace, by thae wha mak peace.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Warning to the worldly : for a' that ye wad haue, and a' that God wad yic, lippen ye to him !

WHAR come the wars and fechtins amang ye ? E'en

hence, oot o' yere pleasure, that I tak the field amang yere members !

2. Ye desire, and haen-na ; ye kill, and are fain, and canna obtean : ye fecht and war : ye haen-na, for that ye ask-na :

3. Ye ask, and ye get-na : for that ye ask-na weel ; that ye nicht ware it ou yere pleasure.

4. Ye adulteresses ! ken-ye-na that the friendship o' the wold is enmity wi' God ! Wha, then, wad be a freend o' the wold is makin his sel a fae to God.

5. Or reck ye that in vain the ²Scriptur says, "The spirit that dwalit in us leads to envy."

6. But be gies the mair lovin-favor. Sae it is said, "God is again the prood anes ; but to the humble anes he gies favor."

7. Pit yersels, than, beneath God ; but stann up again Sautan, and he wull flee fras ye.

8. Draw ye nar to God, and be wul draw nar to you. Mak clean yere hauns, sinners ! and purify yere hearts, ye dooble anes !

9. Be ye dool, and maen and greet ! lat yere daffin be turned to lamentation, and joy to heaviness.

10. Come doon laigh i' the sicht o' the Lord ; and he wull lift ye up.

11. Speak-ye-na again ane-anither, brethren. He that speaks again his brither, or judges his brither, speaks again the law itsel, and judges the law : but gin ye pass judgment on the law, nae mair are ye a doer o' the law, but a judge !

12. But thar is ae Lawgiver and Judge ! he wha is strang to save and

to destroy. But wha are ye that are judgin yere neebor ?

13. Awa noo ! ye that say, "The day or the morn, we wull gang to this citie here ; and bide a year thar ; and troke, and win gear."

14. Wha, indeed, ken nocht o' the morn ! for o' whatna sort is yere life ? For as the scum o' the sky ye are, whilk appears for a wee, and then dwines awa.

15. Raither soud ye say, "Gin the Lord please, we sal baith levee, and do this or yon."

16. But noo ye vaunt yersels in yere boastins. A' sic boastin is ill.

17. To ane, than, wha kens hoo to do a gude thing, and dis-it-na, it is a sin to him !

CHAPTIR FYVE.

A book for patience and faith. The teachings o' Natur ; and the experience o' men, are a' on the ae side !

A WA noo, ye rich ! wail ye and cry, for the dool that is comin on ye !

2. Yere gear has roustit ; yere cleedin is moth-eaten ;

3. Yere gowd and yere siller are roust-eaten, and their roost sal witness again ye, and sal eat yere flesh as fire. Ye haes laid-up treasur for the Last Day !

4. Tak tent ! the penny-fee o' the workers, wha cuttit doon yere fields, and has by you been keepit back by dishonesty, is crying oot : and the cries o' thae that shure are enter't intil the hearin o' the Lord o' Hosts.

5. Ye leeved wanton on the soil, and rioted ; ye pamper't yere hearts, as for the ³day o' slanchur !

6. Ye condemned, ye killed the Richtous Ane ; and he resists-ye-na.

7. Thole patiently, than, brethren ! till the Lord be amang ye. Behauld, the tiller is waiting for the precious

¹ V. 1. Think o' oor sinfu' desires, "takin the field," as an armie, to fecht ! The Christian can only owercome, as he has God on his side !

² V. 5. Tho' Eccl. iv. 4, is gey nar the same thing, this is no a direo' quotin fras ony pairt o' the Auld Testament. The New Testament writers and speakers, as here, aft tuik the meanin o' the words, without muckle care about the preceese form o't.

³ V. 5. Amang a hantle o' interpretations, sibbly this—that they fed theirsels, as nowt to beas, for the shambles—is narest the Apostle's meaning.

frutes o' the yirth, and is patient wi' it, till it gets the early and the himaist rain.

8. Thole ye patiently, as weel ! strengthen yere hearts ; for the comin o' the Lord draws on !

9. Yammer-na, brethren, again ane anither, least ye be judged : See ! the Judge stauns forntent the door.

10. Tak ye, brethren, for yere likenesses o' sufferan and patience, the Prophets that spak i' the name o' the Lord.

11. Look ! we ca' thae happy wha tholed. O' Job's patience ye has heard ; and the end the Lord had in view ye saw : that the Lord is o' muckle tender-love, and fu' o' compassion.

12. But aboon a' things, my brethren, sweer-na ; either by the heeven or the yirth, or by ony ither aith : but lat yers "aye" be "aye," and yers "na" be "na" ; least ye fa' under judgment.

13. Is ony afflictit amang ye ? lat him be prayin ! Is ony hlythe ? lat him sing wi' harp !

14. Is ony ill amang ye ? lat him ca' till him the kirk elders ; and lat them pray ower him, anointin him wi' oyle i' the name o' the Lord.

15. And the faithfu' prayer sal save the dwinin ane, and the Lord wull raise him up : and gin aiblins he has sinned, it sal be forgien him.

16. Sac confess ye ane to anither yere sins ; and pray ye ilk for ither, to the end that ye may be healed. Muckle avails the prayers o' a richtous man in its ootcome.

17. Elijah was a man, o' like natur wi' us ; and wi' mickle prayer prayed he that thar soud be nae doonfa' ; and thar was nae weet on the grun for thrie year and a hauf ;

18. And again prayed he, and the lift ga'e rain, and the yirth brocht forth her frute.

19. My brethren, gin aiblins ony ane amang ye mis-airs his way frae the truth, and anither convert him,

20. Lat him ken, that he that turns a sinner frae the error o' his ways, sal save a soul frae death, and gets ²covert ower an unco wheen sins.

¹ V. 20. The words theirsel nicht mean either his sins wha is saved, or his wha converts him. But, conform tae the Gospel plan, we understand it o' him that is convertit.

FIRST PETER.

CHAPTIR ANE.

The Lord Jesus cam, as was testifyt o' auld : eae, follow efter holiness, and be like him !

PETER, an Apostle o' Jesus Christ, to the chosen anes wha hide in Pontus, Galacia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia,

2. Conform to the foreknowledge o' God the Faither, in sanctification o' the Spirit, to obedience and strinklin o' the blude o' Jesus Christ ; lovin-favor and peace till ye be increas'd !

3. Bless't be the God and Faither o' oor Lord Jesus Christ, wha, conform to his great mercy, has regeneratit us until a leevin hope, throwe Jesus Christ's Risin-again, frae 'mang the deid,

4. To a heritage uncorrupt, and pure, and unfadin, keepit i' the heevens for you,

5. Wha are preserved by God's pouer, by faith, to a salvation staunin ready for a revealin i' the last time.

6. In whilk ye rejoice ; tho' for a wee, e-noo, gin need be, ye are made wae wi' a hantle o' trials,

7. In order that the testin o' yere faith (muckle mair precious than o' gowd that perishes !), e'en tho' throwe fire it is testit, soud be to praise, and glorie, and honor, whan reveal't by Jesus Christ.

8. Wham, no haein seen, ye lo'e ; in wham, tho' no seein e-noo, yet wi' faith ye are rejoicin wi' unspeakable joy, filled wi' glorie :

9. Obteanin the end o' yare faith, the salvation o' yere sauls.

10. Anent whilk salvation, the propheta socht oot and searcht oot, wha prophesy't o' the lovin-favor that soud come to you.

11. Seekin to ken as to what, or whatna mainner o' time, the Spirit o'

Christ was giean them kennin o', whan bearin witness aforahann o' the sufferans o' Christ, and the glories estir.

12. Till wham it was made kent, that no to theirsle, but to you they war bringin them ; whilk things e-noo are reportit to ye throwe wha deliver't the Blythe-Message to ye, i' the Holie Spirit sent doon frae heeven ; intil whilk things the Angels wad fain obtean a narer view.

13. See, girdin up the loins o' yere endeavour, keepin douce, zealously airt ye yere hope to the lovin-favor to be brocht to ye, at oor clear vision o' Jesus Christ.

14. As bairns o' obedience, no conformin yersels to the auld desires i' yere ignorance ;

15. But e'en as he wha bade ye is holie, do ye yersels be holie in a' manner o' leevin ;

16. Inasmuckle as it is putten-doон, " Holie sal ye be, for I am holie ! "

17. And gin ye ca' on him, wha wi' nae respect o' faces, judges conform to ane's ain wark, wi' a' reverance for the time o' yere bidin here, leeve ye.

18. Kennin weel that it wasna wi' perishin things like siller and gowd, ye war ransomed oot o' yere vain life, frae yere forebears handit doon,

19. But wi' maist precious blude (as o' a lamb wantin blemish or spot), o' Ane Anointit ;

20. Kent aforhaun ; indeed, afor the foundin o' the wORLD, but made plain i' the last day for yere sakes,

21. Wha throwes him are leal to

¹ V. 12. Angels ken a hantle aboot na' mair, aiblins than we jalouse ; and are unco interestit in Christ's folk, and Christ's cause.

ward God, wha rais't him up frae 'mang the deid, and gied him glorie, see that yere faith and hope are turned towards God.

22. Hasin made yere sauls clean, i' the obeyin o' the truth oot o' the heart wi' leal and britherly lova, lo'e ye ane-anither fondly.

23. Hasin been born again, no o' corruptible seed, but incorruptible, throwe the leevin and abidin lova o' God.

24. Forasmuckle as "a' flesh is gersa, and a' its glorie as the blume o' gerss: the gerss birsles-up, and the flourishin o't fa's awa:

25. "But the sayin o' the Lord bides for aye!" And this is the message that by the Glad-tidins is delivert t'ye.

CHAPTIR TWA.

The weel-waled Corner-Stane. The duties o' a' conditions o' folk—weel performed, when Christ is weel followit.

SAE, pittin by a' malice, and a' twa-
S fuldoess, and a' pretence, and a' misca'in,

2. As bairns new-born, be ye fain to crave the aefauld milk o' reason, that see ye may grow intil salvation;

3. Gif see ye has tastit for yersels that the Lord is fu' o' mercie.

4. To wham comin—a leevin stane, by men cuisten aside, but waled-oot by God, and hauden in honor—

5. Ye yersels, as leevin stanes, are biggit intil a spiritual hoose, to be holie priests, to offer up spiritual sacrificees, weel-pleasin tae God, throws Jesus Christ.

6. For it is contain'd i' Scriptur, "See, I lay in Zion a heid corner-stane, chosen, and hauden in honor, and wha lippens on him sal in naegate be putten to shame."

7. To you, than, is this honor; you wha lippen: but to sic as believe-na—"The stane they that higgit wadna hae, the same was made a heid corner-stane!"

8. But, "a stumblin-stane and a rock o' offence" to them that stoiter, bein disobedient to the word; until whilk they war appointit.

9. But ye are "a waled-oot race, priests o' royalty, a holie people"; a folk for his ain possession, that ye may tell oot the glories o' him wha bade ye oot o' darkness to come into his wunnerfu' licht.

10. Wha at ae time war "nae-nation," but are noo a "God's nation"; wha hadna been hasin mercy, but has obteened mercy e-noo.

11. Beloved, I entreat ye, as lodgers and pilgrims, keep ye frae carnal desires, sic as tak-the-field again the saul:

12. Conductin yersels wi' honor amang the Gentiles; see that when they speak again ye as ill-doers, they may, seein yere gude warka, glorify God in the ¹ day o' his comin amang them.

13. Obey-ye a' human ordinances, for the Lord's sake; gin it be to a Sovereign, as ower a',

14. Or to Governors, as by him set, for punishin ill-doers, but for praise o' them that do weel.

15. For eas is God's wull, that wi' weel-doin ye soud pit to silence the ignorance o' glaikit men:

16. As free, and yet no haudin yere freedom for a cloak o' malice; but as servants o' God.

17. To a' men gie honor; lo's ye the britherhood; revere ye God; honor ye the Sovereign!

18. Servants, gie-in to yere masters, wi' a' respec'; and no slane to the gude and cannie, but to the thrawart as weel.

19. For this is till bis praise, gif, on account o' conscience afore God, ane drees dool; sufferin wrangously.

¹V. 12. This (in baith the English versions, "the day o' visitation") is no vera clear. It may be the Day e' Judgment; but, siblin raither, is it no God, lookin down to see gif they had faith amang them?

20. For whatna credit win ye, gin ye be cloured for yere ill-deeds, that ye sond thole it ! But, doin weel, and dreein ill, this is praise-wordie wi' God.

21. For to siclike war ye ca'd : for Christ suffer't in yare behaup, lea'in ahint a pattern, that ye might follow his fitstaps :

22. " Wha did nae sin ; nor was decesit fund in his mooth " ;

23. Wha, whan misca'd, misca'd-na again ; sufferin, be banned-na : but gied himself ower to him wha judges justly.

24. Wha his ain sel bure oor sins in his ain body tae the tree ; sae that we, haasin dee't to sin, might leesve to holiness : " by whase clours ye war healed."

25. For ye war like sheep, for-wanderin ; but are noo came hame to the Shepherd and Guide o' yere canla.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

Duties o' wives and husbands : lat a' do weel, and please the Lord !

1 N siclike manner, ye wives, be biddable wi' yere ain husbands ; sae that gin ony yield-na tae the word, they may, e'en wantin the word, be won by the gude-leevin o' their wives ;

2. As they behauld yere pure manner o' life, fu' o' reverence.

3. Whase buakin let it no be a' ootward—the braidin o' hair, and wearin o' gowd, and dinkin-oot in braws :

4. But, the inner man o' the heart, i' the fadeless pitten-on o' a meek and lown spirit, whilk is afore God's face o' unco price.

5. For sae, langsyne, the holie weemen, wha had their hopes on God, buakit theirsels ; obeyin their ain husbands ;

¹ V. 6. The sense is a wee obscure here. But we take it to mean, " As lang as ye do richt afore God, nocht sal bring fear till ye ! "

6. E'en as Sarah obey't Abra'm, ca'in him " Lord " ; whase hairns ye are, as lang as ye do weel, ¹ fearin wi' nae fear.

7. And ye husbands, in siclike manner, dwell wi' them conform to knowledge, as wi' the weaker vesel, as being joint-heirs o' leevin grace ; that yere prayers be-na interfer'd wi'.

8. To sum up : be ye o' ae mind, sympathizin thegither, lovin the brethren, tender-heartit, lowly-mindit ;

9. No giean ill for ill, nor returnin misca'n for misca'in ; bat on the contrar giean blessin ; for to this ye war bidden, that ye sond inherit a blessin.

10. " For ye that wad lo'e life, and see gude days, let him gar his tongue cease fras ill, and his lips that they speak-na guile.

11. " But lat him turn awa fras the ill, and do the gude ; let him seek peace and follow it.

12. " For the Lord's e'en are on the richtous anes, and his hearin to their petition ; but the Lord's face is again them that do ill ! "

13. And wha is he that can bring ye skaith, gin ye be fu' o' zeal for what is gude ?

14. But gin e'en ye soud dree ill for that whilst is gude, happy are ye ! " But their dreid, dreid ye-na ! nor be ye put-till't ;

15. " But the Anointit, as Lord, sanctify ye i' yere hearts " ; aye ready as a defence, wi' ilk ane speirin at ye a reason for the hope ye has in ye : but ays wi' meekness, and reverence.

16. Haasin a gude conscience ; sae that wbaur-in they speak again ye as ill-doers, they may be putten to shame, wha misca' yere gude manner o' life in Christ.

17. For nohler is it (gin it please the wull o' God sae) as weel-doers to be sufferin, than as ill-doers.

18. For that Christ also, ane for a', suffer't for sins ; a Richtous Ane for unrichtous anes ; that he soud

bring us nar to God; basin been putten to deid in flesh, but made alive in spirit;

19. In whilk, gaun e'en to the spirits in thrall, be preached;

20. Wha war dour at ae time, whan God's lang-tholin was entreatin them i' the days o' Noah, the ark bein preparin; gaun intil whilk a wee wheen, that is acht souls, war brocht safe throwe by means o' watir:

21. Whilk, as a true likeness, noo raves ye, e'en baptism (no the syndin-awa o' the filth o' the flesh, but the speirin o' a gude conscience toward God) throwe the Risin-again o' Jesus Christ.

22. Wha is at God's richt haun, basin passed intil the heevens; Angels, and authorities, and pooers, bein made obedient to him.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

Cease frae sin; for Christ sinned-na! And gin ye be Christian, ye soud be like him!

FORASMUCKLE than as Christ has suffer't i' the flesh, arm ye yersels wi' the same attlin: for he that has tholed i' the flesh has' gotten rest frae sin!

2. Sae that nae lang'er soud ye leve i' the ill-desires o' men the lave o' yere time i' the flesh.

3. For the by-past time is eneuch to haes wrocht-oot the desires o' the Gentiles; gaun on in wantonness, ill-desires, an owercome o' wine, riotin, feasting, and vile eidol-worshippin;

4. In whilk they ferlie unco that

¹ V. 19. We needna follow sic queer fancies as that Christ gaed to hell, and preached (preached what?) to the lost anea thar. The time he preached to them was i' the days o' Noah (and by the mouth o' Noah). In Noah's time they war dour and thrawart anes on yirth; in Peter's time they war "spirits in thrall."

² V. 1. Christ, at his death, gat rid o' a' ounsets o' sin and sinners; eas the Christian, wha take up his cross and followa Christ, has sinder't his sel frae sin; has nae mair to do wi't.

ye rin-na wi' them to the same ower-flowin o' riot, misca'rn ye:

5. Wha sal gie up an account to him wha is haudin himself ready to judge leevin and deid.

6. For to this end was the Blythe-message gien to thees that are 'deid; that they nicht be judged, indeed, by man's judgment, in flesh; but nicht leave afore God in spirit.

7. But the end o' a' comes on: be ye than o' soun' mind, and doucely pray ye.

8. Aboon a' things, has ye love ane for anither; for that "love haps over a rowth o' sins."

9. Schawin hospitality ane to anither, wi' nae swairness.

10. Ilk ane, e'en as he has had gien to him a free gift, sharin it wi' ither, as leal stewards o' God's mony-fauld favors:-

11. Gif ony ane speaks, as God's oracles speakin; gif ony ane ser'a, as oot o' strenth gien by God; that, in a' things, God may be made glorious, throwe Jesus Christ, to wham is the glorie and the pooer, for evir and aye. Amen.

12. Beloved, be ye na taen by surprise anent tha lowin fire amang ye, whilk is comin on ye for to try ye, as gin some ferlie happen't to ye;

13. But in sae far as ye marrow wi' Christ in his sufferana, rejoice ye; that, at the unsauldin o' his glorie, ye may rejoice wi' muckle joy.

14. Gin ye be misca'd for Christ's name, happy are ye! for the Spirit o' glorie, e'en the Spirit o' God, brings ye rest!

15. But lat name o' ye dree as a blude-shedder, or a thief, or an ill-doer, or a meddler in ither folk's maitters:

16. But, gin it be as "a Christian," lat him feel nae shame; but lat him gie God praise for this name.

17. For it is time for judgment to

³ V. 6. The Apostle here, nae doot, refers to the saints wha haes won awa hame.

begin at the hoosehaul o' God ; but gif it first begin wi' us, what sal be the end o' thas that gie-na-in to the Gude-tidins o' God ?

18. And, gin the richtous ane simply be saved, whaur sal the ungodly and the sinner schaw theirsels ?

19. And sae, lat they wha dree, conform to God's wull, commit their sanle, in a' weel-doin, till a true and faithfu' Creator !

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The Elders and the flock ; gude avisement for baith.

THE elders that are amang ye I entreat, wha am, wi' you, an elder, and a witness o' the sufferans o' Christ ; and ane to partak o' the glorie to be made kent ;

2. Hard the wee flock o' God amang ye ! takin the chairge o't, no o' constraint, but o' gude-wull, conform to God ; nor yet for base gains, but o' ready mind.

3. Nor yet as lordin it ower the allotted chairge, but makin yersels as paitters to the wee flock.

4. And whan the Heid-Shepherd is made manifest, ye sal haes a croon that dwines-na awa.

5. In like manner, ye younger anes, gie-in to the aulder ; and a', ane to anither, pittin on humbleness o' mind ; for "God arrays himself

again the haughty, but gies favor to the humble."

6. Lout yersels doon than, under the mighty haun o' God, that he may raise ye up in due time.

7. Castin a' yere carkin cares on bim, for that he is carin for ye.

8. Be doues ; be alert ; for Santan yere fae, as a rampin lion, is gaun about, seekin wham to devoor.

9. Wham resist ye, siccar i' the faith ! kennin that like sufferins are brocht to pass wi' yere brethren that are i' the world.

10. But the God o' a' gude-favor, wha ca'd ye to his evir-hidin glorie, in Christ Jesus, whan ye has tholed a wee, himself will mak ye perfete, mak siccar, mak strang !

11. To him be the glorie for evir and aye. Amen !

12. By Silvanna, the leal brither as I tak him, wrate I in brief words, coonsellin and testifyin that this is God's vera favor : staun ye in't !

13. ¹She in Babylon, chosen wi' yersels, and Mark my son, salutes ye.

14. Salute ye ilk ither wi' a kiss o' love. Peace to ye a' wha are in Christ.

¹ V. 13. Peter means the Kirk o' Christ in the auld citie o' Babylon : but he says just "she." Sae in Psalm lxxxvii. 5, "The Heighest himself sal mak her siccar !"

SECOND PETER.

CHAPTR ANE.

The graun array o' Christian virtues; lat by Faith, and linked by Love.

SIMON Peter, a servitor and Apostle o' Jesus Christ, to thae wha obteened the same faith wi' us, throwe the richtousness o' oor God and oor Saviour Jesus Christ.

2. Lovin-favor to ye, and peace, be made great, i' the fu' knowledge o' God, and Jesus oor Lord;

3. As a' things for life and godliness his godly pooer has gien to us, throwe the fu' knowledge o' him wha has ca'd us to glorie and weel-doin.

4. Whaur-by he has gien to us unco promises—and precious—that throwe sic ye soud be brocht to hae fellowahip wi' the Divine natur, and flee the world's corruption in ill-desires.

5. Aye, and for this vera thing, bringin forrit a' diligence, add to yere faith courage, and to yere courage knowledge.

6. And to knowledge the airtin o' yersel, and to the airtin o' yersel endurance, and to endurance holiness,

7. And to holiness britherly-kindness, and to yere britherly-kindness love.

8. Thir things belangin t'ye, and aboundin, they sal make ye to be naither idle nor unfrutesfu' i' the fu' knowledge o' oor Lord Jesus Christ.

9. For he wha is wantin i' thir things is ¹bleart seein-na far-awa, haein forgotten the purifyin o' his auld sins.

10. Whaur-for the raither, brethren, gie gude tent to mak siccar yere callin and walin-oot; for doin thir

things ye sal in naegate at ony time stoiter.

11. For sae sal unco richly be supplyt t'ye a graun enterin-in to the evir-bidin kingdom o' oor Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12. And sae I'se be aye ready to pit ye in mind o' thae things; tho' ye ken them, and haes been made siccar i' the trnht present wi' ye.

13. Name-the-leas, I tak it to be richt, as lang as I am i' this sheelin, to steer ye up, by remindin ye;

14. Kennin that sunn comes the pittin-aff o' my sheelin, conform to what tho' Lord Jesus Christ made clear to me.

15. Yet I will gie gude tent, on ilka occasion, that ye may haes means, oftir my departin, to keep in mind a' thae things.

16. For it waana as followin oftir pawkilie-wrooht-oot tales, that we made kent to ye the pooer and ²presence o' oor Lord Jesus Christ; but as ee-witnesses o' his gloriousness.

17. For when he was gien frae God the Faither honor and glorie, and a voice cam to him frae that glorious splendor, "This is my Son, the Beloved Ane, in wham I delicht!"

18. E'en this voice we heard, whan it cam frae heaven; we bein wi' him i' the holie mount.

19. And we haes the word o' prophecie, made waist siccar, to whilk ye do weel gin ye tak gude tent, as to a licht glintin in a mirk place, to what time the dawin come, and the mornin-starn rise i' yere hearta.

¹ V. 9. No clean blin'; but wantin in clear sight. Eng.: "purblind."

² V. 16. On the mount, to whilk Peter specially refers (tho' it is the same word he elsewhere uses for "comin"), it was neither a glorifyt presence, than strictly a "comin."

20. Kennin this first, that nae prophecie o' Scriptur is o' allenar and private ¹ meanin'.

21. For nevir cam ony prophecie by the wull o' man; but as by Holie Spirit mov'd, eas speak holie men o' God.

CHAPTIR TWA.

The folk of Sodom and Gomorrah; and that that follow their ways.

BUT thar war fause-prophets amang the folk; as e'en amang you wull thar be fause-teachers: sic as wull bidlins bring in diabolical sects e'en denying the Lord wha bocht them; bringin doon on theirsels sudden destruction.

2. And mony wull follow oot their wanton ways; throws wham the way o' truth wull be misca'd;

3. And in their menseless greed, wi' twa-fauld words, wull they mak trokin-ware o' ye: whase condemnation o' auld days isna gane-by, and their destruction sleeps-na.

4. For gin God didna spare Angels whan they sinned—castin them to hell—and deliverin them ower to dungeons o' gloom, keepit for judgment;

5. And spared-na the auld world, letting lowse a flood on the ungodlie anea, but preserved Noah, a preacher o' richtousness, as the ² auchth person:

6. And bringin the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah till assis, whamml't them ower in condemnation; settin them forth as a lesson to sic as soud aftir be ungodly.

7. And richtons Lot, sair vex't wi' the wanton lives o' the wicked, be deliver't;

8. For wi' seein and bearin, that richtous ane dwallin among them was distressin his richtous sail wi' their lawless deeds.

¹ V. 20. No to be ta'en as a private rule for me, and no at the same time for my brither. It is for the Kirk, and for the wairld!

² V. 5. No the auchth fras Adam, for he was the tenth; but the auchth o' thae that war saved by the ark.

9. The Lord kens hoo to deliver sic as are godlie oot fras trials; and to keep tae the day o' Judgment to be dealt wi', sic as are ungodlie;

10. Mair in particular, thae gann awa aftir the flesh, i' the ill-desires o' uncleanness; despain rule; darin; pamperers o' theirsels; authorities they fear-na to misca' ;

11. Whaur-as Angels, heigher in pouer and micht, feah-na a radlin accusation again ³ them afore the Lord.

12. But thir, as beasts wantin reason, made to be ta'en and destroyed, misca' things they kenna o', i' their snarin sal theirsels be snared!

13. Dreein wrang as the outcome o' wrang-doing; they that coont it a pleasur to riot i' the day-time: blotches and blains; riotin in self-deceit as they feaest wi' you.

14. E'en takin-up wi' an adulteress, and that winna cease fras sin; wheedlin souls that are waff; wi' a heart schuled by greed; bairns that are accurst;

15. Gaun a-gley fras the straught way, and are forewander't; traikin aftir the gate o' Balaam son o' Bosor, wha socht the fees o' unrichtousness.

16. But was reprov't for his ain wickedness; a dumb beas' wi' man's voices speakin, forbad the rage o' the prophet.

17. Thir are waal-ees wantin the watir; miste carry't wi' the wund; for wham the gloom o' mirkness is keepit for aye.

18. For, speakin unco swalled-up words o' vanity, they wheedle wi' fleshly desires, wi' wanton ways, thae that war escapin fras them that leuve in error;

19. They promisin freedom to them, they theirsels bein a' the time slaves o' corruption. (For, by what'er ane has been overcome, he has become a slave till't.)

20. For gin aiblins aftir they had escapit the pollutions o' the wairld,

³ V. 11. Again the anes that fell, nae doot; tho' some read "again theirsels."

threw a knowledge o' the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again taigl't thar-in—their last state is waur nor the first!

21. Unco better for them no to haes keit the way o' richtousness ava, than, haesin come to ken it, to turn awa frae the holie commaun-gien to them!

22. It has come aboot wi' them conform to the true sayin, "The dog turnin again to his ain spuein;" and, "A sow weashed, to wallowin i' the muck."

CHAPTR THRIE.

The awesome day o' the Lord. None kens when, but a' to be ready!

THIS, a second letter, beloved, I am writin to ye; in whilk letters I steer up yere afauld minds by way o' remindin,

2. That ye soud mind the words the holie prophete spak afore, and the commauns o' the Lord and Saviour throwe yere Apostela.

3. Kennin this first, that thar wull come scoffers i' the last day, scoffin; gaun on conform to their ain ill-desires,

4. And speirin, "Whaur is the promise o' his comin? for, frae whatna day the faithers drappit asleep, a' things gang even-on frae the first o' the creation."

5. For this they o' their ain wull forget, that the heevens war frae o' auld, and the yirth oot o' the watir and throwe the watir swappit the-gither, by God's word;

6. By whilk the wold than-bein, whammel-tower in watir, perish't.

7. While the heevens and the yirth that are noo, keepit by his word, haes been stored up for fire, for a day o' judgment and ruin o' ungodlie men.

8. But tak gude tent o' this as thing, beloved, that "As day is wi' the Lord as a thoosand year;" and a thoosand year as a day.

9. The Lord isna swair anent his

promise, as some men speak o' swairness; but is lang-tholin wi' you, no bein willin that ony soud be destroy't, but that a' soud airt their ways to repentance.

10. But the day o' the Lord wull come as comes a thief; in whilk the heevens wi' an unco noise sal flee awa, and the elements sal be meltit wi' ragin heat, and the yirth and the warks o't sal be brunt.

11. Seein than, that a' thir things are to be dissolv't, whatna personssond ye a' the time be, in holie habite o' leevin, and warks o' godlineas,

12. Lookin forrit and bringin narer the comin o' God's day, throwe whilk, the heevens bein a-low, wull be dissolv't; and elements, wi' awesome heat, are to be meltit!

13. But we look for new heevens and new yirth, conform to his promise, whaur holiness bides.

14. See, beloved, lookin forrit for sic things, gie a' tent (wantin blotch or blain), to be fund o' him in peace:

15. And reckon ye oor Lord's lang-tholin to be salvation; o'en us oor weel-lo'ed brither Paul, conform to the wisdom gien to him, wrate t'ye:

16. As too, in a' letters, speakin in them o' thir things; in whilk letters are a wheen things hard to be comprehendit, whilk they that are ignorant and unsiccar¹ wrangly t'w²u. as they dae the lave o' Scriptur, to their ain ruin.

17. Ye than, weel-lov'd anea, kennin aforehaun, tak gude tent, least bein led a-gley wi' the wa'-gaun o' the wicked, ye soud fa' oot frae yere ain siccarness.

18. But grow ye in lovin-favor and knowledge o' oor Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be the glorie, baith e-noo and for evir and aye. Amen!

1 V. 16. Tak tent no to handle the Scripture as did the auld Pharisees, and mak them servants o' error and sin. God is holie; and his word, weel understande, airts men to holiness.

FIRST JOHN.

CHAPTIR ANE.

Christ the Life, and Christ the Licht, o' men.
THAT whilk was fras the first o' a',
that whilk we haes heard, that
whilk we haes seen wi' oor een, that
whilk we for oorsels haes gazed upon,
and oor hauns war laid on, o' the
Word o' Life,—

2. And the Life was made kent
to us, and we haes seen, and gie witness,
and report to you the evi-
durin Life, whilk was wi' the Faither,
and was made kent to us.

3. That whilk we haes oorsels seen
and heard, we report to you, that ye
too as weel may haes marrowin wi' us;
and oor marrowin is wi' the Faither,
and wi' his Son Jesus Christ.

4. And we write thir things, that
oor joy may be filled fu'.

5. And this is what we haes heard
o' him, and gie to you, that God is
licht, and mirkness isna in him:
nane ava!

6. Gin aiblins we soud say, "We
haes marrowin wi' him," and are gaun
on i' the mirk, we are leear, and
divna the truth.

7. But gin aiblins we are gaun on
i' the licht, as he is in the licht, we
marrow ane wi' anither, and the
blude o' Jesus his Son maks us clean
fras a' sin.

8. Gin aiblins we soud say, "Sin
haes we name," we deceive oorsels, and
the truth bides-na in us.

9. Gin aiblins we confess oor sins,
leal¹ and gude is he to forgie oor
sins, and mak us pure fras ilk un-
richtous deed.

10. Gin aiblins we soud say, "We
hae-na sinned," we are makin him
fause, and his word isna in us.

¹ V. 9. What a ferlie, that the pair believer
can claim God's Justice and truth for the
pittin-awa o' his sins! God has pro-
mised; and he is leal to his promise!

CHAPTIR TWA.

*Lore is the great Law; and Faith the
great waund.*

MY dear bairns, thir things I write
t'ye, that ye soudna sin; and
gin aiblins ony ane sines, we haes an
Advocat wi' the Faither, Jesus Christ
the Gude!

2. And he is the coverin-ower o'
oor sins; and no for oors allenar, but
e'en for thae o' the hail wark.

3. And in stelike we ken that we
haes come to ken him, gin we keep
his commauns.

4. He that says, "I haes gotten to
ken him," and keeps-na his com-
mauns, is a leear; and the truth isna
in sic a ane.

5. But whasae'er may be keepin
his word, in sic a ane, truly, is the
love o' God made perfete. And thus
ken we that we are in him.

6. He that says "he bides in him,"
soud, e'en as he walkit, see walk his
sel.

7. Beloved, I write nas new com-
maun to ye, but an auld commaun,
whilk ye had fras the first. The auld
commaun is the word that ye heard.

8. Again, a new commaun write I
t'ye, and whilk is true in him and in
you: "That the mirk is gane by,
and the true licht noo shines oot!"

9. He that says "He is i' the licht,"
and hates his brither, is in the mirk
e'en till noo.

10. He that lo'es his brither bides
i' the licht; and thar is nae cause for
stoiterin in him.

11. Whan-as he wha hates his
brither is i' the mirk, and gange i' the
mirk, and kens-na whaur he is airtin,
for that the mirkness has blindit his
sen.

12. I write to you, dear bairns,
for yere sins haes been forgiuin ye, for
the sake o' his name.

13. I write to you, faithers, for that ye haes come to ken him that was frae the first. I write to you, lads, for that ye haes overcome the ill-ane.

14. I wrate to you, dear bairns, for that ye haes come to ken the Faither. I wrate to you, faithers, for that ye haes come to ken him that was frae the first. I wrate to you, lads, for that ye are stark, and the word o' God bides in ye, and ye haes overcome the ill-ane.

15. Love-ye-na the world, nor yet the things i' the world ; gin ony ane is lovin' the world, the love o' the Faither isna in him.

16. For a' that is i' the world, the desires o' the flesh and the craikin o' the een, and the pride o' folk's lives, iana o' the Faither, but is o' the world.

17. And the world wears awa, and the desires o' the same ; but wha dis the wull o' God bides for aye.

18. Bairna, it is the last 'oor ; and, e'en as ye heard tell that antichrist is comin, s'en noo antichrists are mony ; and sas we come to ken it is the last 'oor.

19. Frae'mang us they gaed oot, but they warna ane wi' us ; for gin they had been ane wi' us, they wad haes bidden wi' us ; but it was that they soud be kent, boo they warna o' us.

20. And ye haes an anointin frae the Holie Ane, and ¹ken a' things.

21. I didna write t'ye as jalonsin ye kent-na the truth, but for that ye kent it, and for that nae lee is o' the truth.

22. Wha is a leear, gin it be-na he that denies that Jesus is the Anointit ? This is the antichrist, he wha denies the Faither and the Son.

23. Ilka ane wha denies the Son hasna the Faither : he that owns the Son has the Faither as weel.

24. As for yersels, lat that bide w'y'e that ye heard frae the first : for gin ye abide in what ye heard at the first, ye sal abide in the Son, and abide in the Faither.

25. And this is the promise he promised to us, e'en the life that is forevir and aye.

26. Thir things I wrate to ye, anent thaes that beguile ye.

27. As for you, the anointin ye had frae him bides within ye, and ye dinna need ony ane soud gie ye leär ; but as his anointin schaws ye o' a' things, and is true and nae lee, e'en conform tae the leär o't, bide ye in him !

28. And noo, dear bairns, bide ye in him ; sas that gin aiblins he soud be made seen, we may haes freedom o' speech, and no be putten to shame at his comin.

29. Gin aiblins ye ken that he is richtous, ken ye as weel that ilka ane that is doin richtousness is born o' him.

CHAPTIR THRIE.

God's bairns to 'gree thegither—lo'e ane anither—and lo'e God mairt o' a'.

LOOK, whatna love the Faither has bestown on us, that we soud be ca'd "God's Bairns" ; and we are ! And that the world kens-na-na ; for it kent-him-na !

2. Beloved, noo are we bairns o' God ; and it hasna yet been seen what we sal be. But we ken that gin he sal be seen, we sal be like him ; for we sal seo him ; conform to what he is.

3. And ilka ane haecin this hope in him, maks his sel pure, e'en as Christ is pure.

4. Ilk ane that dis sin brecks ower the law ; for sin is a breckin ower the law,

5. And ye are aware that he was made kent, that he micht tak awa oor sins ; and in him sin isna !

7. Nae ane bidin in him sins ; nae ane sinnin has seen him nor comprehendit him.

¹V. 20. A' things perteyn to life and godliness. Folk sit, that are ignorant o' the world's wisdom, are weel-learced by the Spirit in the things o' salvation.

7. Dear bairns ! lat nae aye beguile ye ! He that dis richtousness he is richtons, e'en as Christ is richtons.

8. He that dis sin is o' Santan ; for Santan sins frae the first. And for this end was the Son o' God made kent, that he nicht whammle ower the warks o' Santan.

9. Nae aye begotten o' God gangs on in sin ; for his seed in him abides ; and he canna gang on in sin, for he is begotten o' God.

10. In siclike is made kent the bairns o' God, and the bairns o' Santan. Nae aye that disna do richtousness is o' God, naither he that loe's-na his brither.

11. For this is the message ye heard frae the first : that we soud lo'e aye another :

12. No like Cain, wha was o' the ill-aye, and slew his brither. And for why did he slay him ? For that his warks war ill, and his brither's richtous.

13. Brethren, ferlie-na gin the wark hate ye.

14. We oorsels ken we has stappit ower frae death intil life, for that we lo'e the brethren. He that loe's-na bides still in death.

15. Ilka aye that hates his brither is a 'blude-shedder ; and we ken that nae blude-shedder has evir-durin life bidin in him.

16. Hereby haes we come to ken love, in that Christ on our behauf laid doon his life ; and we soud, in behauf o' the brethren to pawn oor lives.

17. But whasae has this wark's gear, and sees his brither in need, and steeks oot his tender affections awa frae him, hoo dwells God's ain love in him ?

18. Dear bairns ! lat us no lo'e

V. 15. "Ye sal do nae murder," is a declaration o' war again the king o' a great nation. The king is Murder ; but the hale hostile nation is Hatred. See hoo our Lord maks this plain in Matt. v. 21, 23.

alone in words ; nor wi' the tongue, but in warks and in truth !

19. And in this sal we come to ken that we oorsels are o' the truth, and sal mak blythe oor hearts afore him.

20. Whan oor hearts wyte us, God is aboon oor hearts, and kens a' things.

21. Beloved, gin siblins oor heart wytes-us-us, we haes freedom o' speech toward God ;

22. And whatna things we may be seekin, we are obteemin frae him ; for his commauns we are keepin, and the things pleasin in his ticht we are doin.

23. And this is his commaun, that we soud haes faith i' the name o' his Son Jesus Christ, and be loe'in aye another ; conform to the commaun he gied us.

24. And he that keeps his commauns, in Christ abides, and he is in him ! And thus we ken that he abides in us, throwe the Spirit he has gien us.

CHAPTIR FOWR.

We arena to lippen like spirit, but to follow true spirit. Hoo is tae a siclike.

WEEL-LOED anes ! Lippen-ye-na a' spirits, but try the spirits, gin they be o' God ! for mony fanse-prophets are game oot intil the wark.

2. Hereby ken ye the spirit o' God : ilka spirit that owns Jesus Christ, as haes come i' the flesh, is o' God ;

3. And ilka spirit that owns-na Jesus, is no o' God. And this is the spirit o' antichrist that ye heard o' as comin ; and e'en noo is it i' the wark.

4. Ye are o' God, dear bairns, and haes overcome them ; for greater is he that is in you than he that is in the wark.

5. Thir are o' the wark ; and sae they speak o' the wark, and the wark hearkens to them.

6. We are o' God! He that kens God, hearkens to us; and he that isna o' God hearkens-na till us: and see we ken the spirit o' truth and the spirit o' error.

7. Beloved, lat us lo'e aye anither; for love is o' God; and ilk aye that lo'es is begotten o' God, and kens God.

8. He that lo'ea-na, ne'er kent God: for God is love.

9. And sae was made to be seen the love o' God in us, that God sent oot his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might leave throws him.

10. In this is love—no that we lo'ed God, but that he lo'ed us, and sent oot his Son, a coverin-ower for oor sins.

11. Beloved! gin God sae lo'ed us, we too soud lo'e aye anither.

12. Nae aye has at any time seen God; gin we be lo'ein aye anither God bides in us, and his love has been made perfete in us.

13. And thus we ken that we bide in him, and he bides in us, on account o' his Spirit he has gien us.

14. And we ha'e ¹seen him, and gie witness that the father has sent oot the Son, as the Saviour o' the world.

15. Whasae may own that Jesus is the Son o' God, God bides in him, and he abides in God.

16. And we ha'e come to ken and to believe the love that God has to us. God is love; and he wha bides in love, bides in God, and God bides in him.

17. Herein is love perfetit in us, that we may ha'e freedom o' speech i' the day o' judgment, in that, s'en as he is, sae are we i' this world.

18. Fear bides-na in love; nay, perfete love casts oot fear; for fear

has misery, and wha fears isna made perfete in love.

19. We lo'e, for that he first lo'ed us.

20. Gin aiblins any aye soud say. "I lo'e God!" and is hatin his brither, be is a leear; for he that lo'ea-na his brither wham he has seen, hoo can he be lo'ein God wham he hasna seen?

21. And this commaun has we frae him, that he wha lo'es God is to be lo'ein his brither as weel.

CHAPTIR FYVE.

Hoo aye is born again: and hoo it is seen and kent.

WHASAE believes that Christ is the Anoinuit, is begotten o' God; and ilka aye that lo'es him that begat, lo'es him as weel that is begotten o' him.

2. By this we ken that we lo'e God's bairns, when we lo'e God, and are keepin his commauns:

3. For this is the love o' God, that we soud keep his commauns; and his commauns are na burden.

4. For a' that is born o' God overcomes the world; and this is the victory that overcam the world, e'en oor faith.

5. And wha is he that overcomes the world, but be that believes Jesus is God's Son?

6. This is he wha came baith by watir and blude, Jesus Christ; no in watir alone; but by the watir and by the blude.

7. And it is the Spirit that is bearin witness, for the Spirit is truth.

8. For thar are thrie that are gien witness, the Spirit, and the watir, and the blude; and the thrie are for the aye thing.

9. Gin we accept the witness o' men, the witness o' God is mair; for this is the witness o' God, that he has witnessed anent his Son.

10. He wha hauds to the Son o' God has the witness in himself; he

¹V. 14. John says, "Nae aye has at ony time seen God," that is the Father: but since the Apostles had seen Christ, he had seen God. And our Lord says the same, John xiv. 9.

wha lippens-na God, has made him oot fause ; for he haana pitten faith i' the witness God has witnessed enent his Son.

11. And here is the witness : that God has giftit us wi' eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

12. Wha has the Son has the life ; and wha hasna the Son o' God hasna the life.

13. Thir things I wrate to ye that ye nicht ken ¹ ye hae eternal life ; to you wha are pittin faith i' the name o' the Son o' God.

14. And this is the freedom o' speech that we hae toward him ; that, gin onything we be askin, conform to his wull, he bearkens to us.

15. And, gif we ken he hearkens to us, whatae thing we may be askin

fras him, we ken that we hae the askins that we askit o' him.

16. Gin aiblins ony aue soud see bis brither sinnin a sin no to death, he sal ask, and he wull gie him life, for thae sinnin no to death. Thar is a sin to death : no anent that am I sayin that he sond mak request.

17. A' wickedness is sin, and thar is sin no to death.

18. We ken that nae aue begotten o' God is sinnin ; but anent him wha was begotten o' God—he keeps him, and yon Ill-ane diana touch him.

19. We ken that we are o' God, and the hail world is in the airms o' the Ill-ane.

20. But we ken the Son o' God has come, and has gien us an inwardicht, that we may comprehend the True Ane ; and we are in the True Ane ; in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and, and life-for-aye.

21. Dear bairns ! gaird yersels frae eids !

¹ V. 13. A' throwe this chapir, the "witness" the Spirit gies the believer, iana some excitit rapture, but plain evidence o' word and statement : something to be understande, and received, and believed i' the heart ; and actit on i' the life !

SECOND JOHN.

The Elder has sweet coones of a Christian mither.

THE Elder to a ¹chosen leddy, and her bairns, wham I lo'e i' the truth ; and no I allenar, but a' thae too that has come to ken the truth ;

2. For the truth that is bidin in us, and sal be wi' us for aye.

3. Lovin-favor sal be wi' us, mercy and peace frae God the Faither, and frae Jesus Christ the Son o' the Faither, in trouth and love.

4. I was blythe that I fann'd amang yare bairns thae that war ganging i' the truth, e'en as we ha'e had commaun o' the Faither.

5. And noo I beg o' ye, leddy, no as giean a new commann to ye, but e'en what we ha'e frae the first, that we sond lo'e ane anither.

6. And this is love, that we gang

¹ V. 1. Some tak the words *elect cyria* ("chosen leddy") to be, ane or ither o' them, the name o' the person to whom this letter was sent. Oor English translators tak the contrar view : but it is like enuch that her name was Cyria ; and heers spoken o' as the "chosen" or "elect" Cyria.

conform to his commaun. This is his commaun, e'en as ye heard frae the first, that we soud gang thar-in.

7. For mony fause-anes has gane oot intil the world, they that own-na that Jesus Christ is come i' the flesh. This is a fause-ane and an anti-christ.

8. Tak ye gude tent to yersels, least ye tine what things ye did win ; but that a fu' reward ye may duly ha'e.

9. Whase'er gangs ayont, and bides-na i' the teachins o' Christ, haesna God. He that bides i' the teachins, e'en he has baith the Faither and the Son.

10. Gif ony ane comes t'ye, and brings-na this teachin, tak-him-na to yere hoose, nor say to him, "Joy be w'ye !"

11. For he that says to him, "Joy be w'ye !" marrows wi' his ill-deeds.

12. Haein mony things to write t'ye, I wadna wi' paper-an-ink ; but I hope to come t'ye, and speak mou' to mou', that yere joy may be fu'.

13. The hairns o' yere chosen sister salute ye.

THIRD JOHN.

*To godly Gaius ; and anent anither that was
over muchle pitten his sel forrit.*

THE Elder tae Gaius the weel-lo'ed,
wham I lo'e truly.

2. Beloved, I pray that in a' things
ye may be prosperin, and be in
health ; e'en as ye are prosperin in
yere saul.

3. For I was blythe whan the
brethren cam, and bure witness to
yere aefauldness, e'en as ye are walkin
in aefauldness.

4. Greater joy hae I nane than
that I soud be hearin o' my bairns,
ganging i' the truth.

5. Beloved, a thing o' faith are ye
doin, whatmae ye are doin for the
brethren—and to them being fremd
folk t'ye.

6. Wha testify't afore the Kirk to
yere love ; wham ye sal do weel to
set forrit on their journey, in a way
wordie o' God.

7. For in behauf o' "The Name"
they gaed forth, takin naething frae
thae outside.

8. We, than, soud susteen sic as
thir, that we may be fellow-workers
wi' the truth.

9. I wrate somewhat to the Kirk,
but he wha is fain to be heid amang
them—Diotrephes—bids me nae wel-
come.

10. Whaur-for, gin siblins I come.
I wull hae in mind his warks that he
dia, wi' ill-words misca'fn us ; and,
no content wi' thir things, be naither
bids welcome the brethren, nor hands
fras castin oot o' the Kirk thae that
are sae disposed.

11. Beloved, pit-ye-na on that
whilk is ill, but that whilk is gude.
The weel-doer is o' God ; the ill-doer
baana seen God.

12. A' has borne witness to
Demetrius ; and the truth itsel. We
too, gie witness, and ye ken our
witness is true.

13. Mony things had I to write
ye ; but I am-na ready wi' ink-and-
pen to be writin t'ye ;

14. But I am hopin belyve to
see ye, and we will speak mon' to
mou'. Peace be t'ye. The freends
salute ye. Salute ye the freends by
name.

J U D E.

Warnin again corrupt nines. The Lord is comin!

JUDE, a servitor o' Jesus Christ, brother o' James, to thas wha bein in God the Father beloved anes, and keepit in Jesus Christ, are the chosen.

2. Mercie to you, and peace and love, be made mair!

3. While I was giean a' tent to be writin to ye o' oor common salvation, I fand it necessar to write to ye, exhortin ye to strive uncolie for the faith ance-and-for-a' gien to the saunta.

4. For thar slippit in a wheen men, o' wham it was putten-doon lang syne, that this soud be their condemnation, ungodlie anes—oor God's lovin-favor turnin intil wantonness, and disownin oor only Lord Jesus Christ.

5. I am thar-for disposed to pit ye in mind, tho' ance-and-for-a' ye ken a' things, that the Lord, haein saved a folk oot o' the land o' Egypt, did again destroy them wha believed-na.

6. Angels too, thas wha main-teen'd-na their ain station, but left their ain place, has he keepit for judgment o' a great day, in evir-durin bonds, in mirkness.

7. As Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities aboot them, for that in siclike they gaed oot to commit uncleanness, and gaun aftir strange flesh, are set forrit as a warnin, dreein the penalty of endless fire.

8. And in siclike, e'en thir dreamers defile the flesh, despise authoritie, and misca' dignities;

9. Whaur-as Michael the Archangel, whan contendin wi' Santan he debatit aboot Moses' body, daurna misca' him; but quo' hs, "The Lord reprove ye!"

10. But thir, as mony things as

they ken-na, they misca'; while in as mony things as they ken by nature as the beass without reason, in thir they corrupt theirsels.

11. Alack for them! for they gaed on i' the path o' Cain, and waral't forrit i' the sin o' Balaam, and perish't i' the mockery o' Korah.

12. Thir are they that are like hidlin rocks at yere love-feasts, whant they feast w'y's; shepherds ¹ feedin theirsels without shame; cluds wantin moisture, by the winds driven on; trees o' the leaf-fa'in, wantin frute, twice deid, rived up by the rutes;

13. Wild waves o' the sea, foamin oot o' their ain shame; gangrel starns, for wham black mirkness has been keepit for aye.

14. And to thir prophesy't Enoch, the seeverth frae Adam, and quo' be, "Behauld! the Lord cam, amang his holie myriads,

15. "To gie judgment upon a', and to sentence a' the ungodlie anent a' their warks o' wickedness they for ungodliness had done; and anent a' the hard things they speak again him; cinsfu', ungodlie men!"

16. Thir are yammerers, com-pleenin anes, gaun on aftir their ain desires; and their mou' speak heigh swallin words, fleaching and flatterin folk for their ain ends.

17. But ye beloved, mind ye the words afore spoken by the Apostles o' oor Lord Jesus Christ;

18. For they tellt ye that i' the last times thar soud be mockers, gaun on conform to their own ungodlie desirea.

19. Thir are they that mak separa-tions; nateral man, no possessin the Spirit:

¹ V. 12. A shepherd soud feed his flock; but this sort thocht only o' theirsels.

20. But ye beloved, up-biggin yersels i' yere maist holie faith, prayin i' the Holie Spirit,

21. Keep yersels in God's love, lookin for the mercie o' oor Lord Jesus Christ until life-for-aye.

22. And on some hae unco compassion, while they argue w'ye;

23. And itheras save wi' terror, eleekin them oot o' the lowe; and on

ithers hae mercie in fear, hatin e'en the garment stained by the flesh.

24. Noo to him wha is strang to gaird ye frae fa' in, and to set-ye-doone i' the presence o' his glorie faultless, wi' unco rejoicin,

25. To this as God oor Saviour, throwe Jesus Christ oor Lord, be glorie, heighness, dominion, and power, afore a' time past, and noo, and for a' time to come ! Amen !

REVELATION.

CHAPTIR ANE.

John to the Seeven Kirks; and the braw blinks he had o' Christ, on the Lord's Day.

A REVEALIN o' Jesus Christ, that God gied to him, to mak kent to his servants the things that bude come to pass; and he sent and schawed by signs, throwe his Angels, to his servitor John:

2. Wha bure witness anent the word o' God, and the testifyin o' Jesus Christ, and as mony things as he saw.

3. Happy be wha reada, happy they wha listen to the words o' the Revealin, and keeps the things sac putten-doон; for the time rows on!

4. **JOHN** to the Seeven Kirks that are in Asia: lovin-favor to ye, and peace, frae Wha-Is, and Wha-Was, and Wha-is-to-Be; and frae the ¹ seeven Spirits that are afore his thron.

5. And frae Jesus Christ, the leal witness, "the first-born o' the deid, the heid o' the kingly anes o' the yirth." To him wha lo'es us, and lousd us oot o' oor sins wi' his blude,

6. And made o' us a kingdom! priests to his God and Faither; to him be glorie and dominion for evir and aye. Amen!

7. Tak tent! he comes in clouds, and every ee sal see him, and they that pierced him; and a' the tribes o' the yirth sal maen for him.

8. "I am the Alpha and the Omega," says God, "Wha-Is, and

Wha-Was, and Wha-is-to-Be, the Almighty!"

9. I John, yere brither, and yere marrow in dool, and the kingdom, and the tholin, in Jesus, was i' the Isle ca'd Patmos, for the sake o' the word o' God, and the witness o' Jesus.

10. I cam to be i' the Spirit on the Lord's Day; and heard, abint me, an awfu' voice as o' a bugle horn,

11. Sayin, "What ye behauld write ye in a buik, and send to the Seeven Kirks; to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamum, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea."

12. And I turned me aboot to see the voice that spak to me, and haein turned, I saw seeven gowden lamp-bearers;

13. And in the mids o' the seeven gowden lamp-bearers, Ane like as to the Son o' Man, cleedit wi' a mantle doon till his fit, and row't aboot the hreist wi' a gowden girdin-graith.

14. His heid and his locks white, as the white woo', as the snaw; and his een like a lowing ² fire.

15. And his feet like tae brass made clear, as gin they war meltit in a furnace; and his voice as theough o' mony watirs.

16. And he had in his richt haun seeven starns, and oot o' his mo' gaed forth a keen twa-moothed sword; and his countenance was like the sun shinin in his strength.

17. And whan I saw him, I loutit doon at his feet as ane deid. And he laid his richt haun on me, and quo' he, "Be na fley't! I am the first and the last;

¹ V. 4. Some expon it as a seeven-fold manifestation o' the attributes o' God; and some as seeven Archangels o' power; bat we are wysis to haud wi' the feck o' the interpreters, wha tak it to mean the Holie Spirit, in a' his mony ways o' workin.

18. "And the Leevin-Ane ; and I was deid, and behauld ! leevin am I for evir and aye, and I haes the keya o' death and the pit.

19. "Set doon, than, the things ye saw, and the things that are, and the things that are sune to come aftir thir present things.

20. "The secret o' the seeven starns that ye saw on my richt haun, and the seeven lamp-bearers o' gowd : the seeven starns are the messengers o' the Seeven Kirks ; and the seeven lamp-bearers are the Seeven Kirks."

CHAPTIR TWA.

The message to the Kirks. And tak ye test that a' that could be said quide o' them is said, afore any fault is fand wi' what was wrang.

TO the messenger o' the Kirk in Ephesus write : Thir things quo' be wha siccar bands the seeven starns in his richt haun, be that gangs amid the seeven gowden lamp-bearers :

2. "I ken yere warks, and strivin, and yere patience ; and that ye canna thole ill men ; and did test them ca' in theirsels 'Apostles,' and are-na, and fann'd them leears ;

3. "And has striven, and for my name did thole, and hasna gien ower.

4. "Nane-the-leas, I has this again ye, that ye has turned awa frae yere first love.

5. "Bring ye to mind, than, frae whaur ye has faun ; and turn ye, and div ye yere first warks ; or I'se come t'ye, and wull tak awa yere lamp-bearer oot o' its place—gin ye turn-na.

6. "But this ye has, that ye scunner at the warks o' the Nicolaitanes, e'en whilk l scunner at.

7. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks ! To him wha prevails, I wull gie to him to eat o' the tree o' Life, whilk is in the Paradise o' God.

8. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Smyrna write : Thir things

says the First and the Last, wha was deid, and is leevin :

9. "I ken yere warks, and dool, and poortith (but rich are ye !), and the misca' in o' thae that ca' theirsels Jews, and are-na, bnt are a kirk o' Sautan.

10. "Be-na-sleyt as to whatna things ye are to dree. And look ! the Enemy is aboot to cast some o' ye intil thrall, that ye may be testit ; and ye'se haes dool ten days. Be ye leal to death, and I wull gie ye the croon o' Life !

11. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit says to the Kirks ! He that prevails, sal in naegate be slaidh'd o' the second death.

12. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Pergamum write : Thir things saye he wha has the keen twa-mooth'd sword,

13. "I ken whaur ye dwell, e'en whaur Sautan has his thron ; and that ye hand siccar my name, and that ye didna disown my faith, e'en i' the days o' Antipas, my leal ane, wha was slain amang ye, whaur Sautan hides.

14. "But I has again ye a wheen things : that ye haes thar sic as haud siccar the teachin o' Balaam, wha airtit Balak to set a snare afore the children o' Isra'el, to eat o' idol-sacrificees, and commit uneleanness.

15. "Sae haes ye thae as haud siccar the teachins o' the Nicolaitanes, in siclike manner.

16. "Turn ye than ; but if no, I am comin to ye wi' speed, and wull war again them wi' the sword o' my mooth.

17. "Wha has hearin, lat him hear, what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks ! To him that prevails, wull I gie o' the secret man ; and wull gie him a white stane, and on the stane a new name inscriv't, that nae ane kent savin he that gets it.

18. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk in Thyatira write : Thir things says the Son o' God, he wha has his

ean like a lowin fire, and his feet like brass made clear :

19. "I ken yere warks, and lealness, and love, and service, and yere patient tholin, and yere warks ; and the end to be ¹ mair nor the beginnin.

20. Nane the-less, I hae this again ye, that ye thole that wumman, Jezebel, wha ca's herself a prophetess ; and she wheedles my servants to commit uncleanness, and to eat eidol sacrifices.

21. "And I gied her time to turn frae her uncleanness, and she repentit-na.

22. "Behauld ! I wull cast her intil a ² bed, and thae that commit adultery wi' her sal sair pyne, gin they turn-na frae her warks.

23. "And I'se slay her bairns wi' death ; and a' the Kirks sal come to ken that I am he that rypes the inwards and the heart ; and I wull return ye—ilk ane—conform to yere warks.

24. "But to yon I say, to the lave in Thyatira, as mony haud-na this teachin, and ken-na 'the deep things o' Santan' (as they say), I lay on ye nae ither burden.

25. "But what ye hae, hand ye siccar, till sic time as I may come !

26. "And he that prevails, and he that hauds on by my warks to the end, I wull gie him pooer ower the nations ;

27. "And he sal rule them wi' an airn sceptre, as potters' veschels are dung in blairs ; as I too hae received frae my Faither.

28. "And I wull gie him the starn o' the dawin.

29. "He that has hearin lat him hearken what the Spirit is saying to the Kirks !"

¹ V. 19. Thyatira was growin and waxin, as every Kirk and every Christian woud. But I jalouse she estir fall awa frae the true faith, like the lave o' them. Her light was mony tane awa out o' its place.

² V. 22. A bed o' pain and anguish. The word is " *hins*," used either for " bed " or " couch."

CHAPTIR THRIE.

*Cooards and helpa. Mair hope o' the cauld-
rise than ane wather hot nor cauld.*

" **A**ND to the messenger o' the Kirk in Sardis write ye : Thir things says he wi' the seeven Spirits o' God, and the seeven starns : I ken what ye div, and that ye hae the name o' leevin whan ye are daid.

2. " Tak ye gude tent, and mak siccar what remain, that are ready to dee ; for I haena fund yere warks accomplishit i' the sicht o' my God.

3. " Mind weel, than, hoo ye obteen'd and beard ; and haud siccar, and turn. Gin ye gaird-na, I wull come as comes a thief, and in naegate sal ye ken whatna 'oor I'se come on ye.

4. " But ye hae a wee wheen names in Sardis, wha haena stained their robes, and they sal walk wi' me in white ; for they are wordie.

5. " Whasae prevails sal be buskit in white cleedin ; and in naegate wull I delete his name oot o' the Buik o' Life : and I wull own his name afore my Faither, and afore his Angels.

6. " He that has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks !

7. " And to the messengers o' the Kirk in Philadelphia write ye : Thir things says the Holie Ane, the 'True Ane, he that has the key o' Danvid, he that opens and nane can streak, and streak and nane can open :

8. " I ken yere warks (tak tent ! I hae set afore ye a door unsteekit ; as to whilk nane can shut it !) for ye hae a wee pooer, and did keep my word, and didna disown my name.

9. " Look ! I gie them o' Santan's kirk, whilk eas they are Jews and are-na, but lee ; see, I wull gar them come and lout doon afore yere feet, and ken that I hae lo'ed ye.

10. " For that ye did keep the word o' my patience, I sal o'en keep ye oot o' the 'oor o' trial, whilk is coming on the baill world, to test them dwallin on the yirth.

11. "Wi' haste come I ! haud fast what ye hae, sae as nae man tak yere croon !

12. "He that prevails, I wull mak him a strang pillar i' the temple o' my God ; and oot-by sal he gang nae mair ; and I wull set upon him the name o' my God, and the name o' the citie o' my God, New Jerusalem, she wha is to come doon oot o' heeven frae my God : and my new name.

13. "He that has hearin lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks !

14. "And to the messenger o' the Kirk o' Laodicea write ye : Thir things says the Amen, the Leal, and True Witness, the ¹First o' the Creation o' God :

15. "I ken yere warks, that naither cauld nor hot ye are ; I wad that ye had been aither cauld or hot !

16. "And sae than, for that ye are simmer-warm, and naither cauld nor yet hot, I wull spue ye oot o' my mooth !

17. "For ye are sayin : 'Rich am I ; and hae rowth o' plenishin, and want nocht !' and divna ken that ye are the waeosome ane, and miserable ; and in need, and blin', and nakit.

18. "I coonsele ye to buy frae me gowd made clear wi' fire, that ye may be rich ; and white cleedin that ye may be weel-buikit ; and that the shame o' yere nakitness appear-na ; and ee-sa' to anoint yere een that ye may see.

19. "I, as mony as I weal-lo'e, reprove and chasten ; be zealons than, and turn ye !

20. "Mark, I am staunin at the door, and chappin ; gin ony ane hearken to my voice, and unsteek the door, I wull gang in to him, and sup wi' him, and be wi' me.

21. "He that prevails, I wull gie to him to tak his seat wi' me i' my thron ; as I e'en prevail't, and took my seat wi' my Father in his thron.

22. "He that has hearin, lat him hear what the Spirit is sayin to the Kirks !"

CHAPTIR FOWER.

A bonnie blink o' the Heevenie glorie !

EFTEIR thir things I airtit my een, E and lo ! a door was unsteekit in heeven ; and the first voice I heard, like a buglehorn, was speakin wi' me, sayin, "Come ye up here, and I wull set oot afore ye what things maun come to pass here-aftir."

2. And belyve I was i' the Spirit ; and lo ! a Thron was set in heeven ; and on the Thron Ane sittin ;

3. And he that was sittin was like to a jasper stane and a cornelian ; and a rainbow was aboot the Thron, to look on like an emerant.

4. And roond aboot the Thron, fowr-and-twenty thrones ; and on the thrones fowr-and-twenty Elders sittin, cledit in robes o' white ; and on their heads croons o' gowd.

5. And oot o' the Thron gaed oot fire-flanchts, and voices, and thunners, and ther war seeven fiery lampes abewe afore the Thron, whilk are the seeven Spirits o' God.

6. And afore the Thron a glassy sea, like to crystal ; and i' the mida o' the Thron, and roond about the Thron, fowr leevin-anea, fu' o' een afore and abint.

7. And the first leevin-ane was like a lion ; and the second leevin-ane like a cauf ; and the third leevin-ane had the face as o' a man ; and the fowrth leevin-ane was like to an eagle fleein.

8. And the fowr leevin-anea, ilk ane o' them, had sax wings, and war fu' o' een around and within ; and rest-they-na, day nor nicht, sayin, "Holie, holie, holie ! Lord God Almighty, wha Was, and wha Is, and whar Is-to-Come !"

¹ V. 14. No that he was the first creatit ; for he wisna creatit ; nor aiblins (in this place) that he was hissel the Creator—tho' that is true ; but naither that he is the heid o' a' things ; the First and Heighest.

9. And whan the leevin-anes gie glorie, and honor, and thankgivin to him that sits on the Thron, to him wha leaves for evir and evir,

10. The fowr-and-twenty Elders fa' doon afore him wha sits on the Thron, and gie worship to him wha leaves for evir and evir, and cast doon their croons afore the Thron, sayin,

11. "Wordie art thou, O Lord, e'en oor God, to receive a' glorie, and honor, and pooer; for thou did mak a' things; and o' thy wull they war, and war creatit!"

CHAPTIR FYVE.

The Lamb that was slain opens the sealed Buik.

AND I saw, on the richt haun o' him that sat on the Thron, a buik, written within and without, seal't up wi' seeven seals.

2. And I saw a mighty Angel, proclaimin wi' a soondin voice, "Wha is fit to open the Buik, and to lowse its seals?"

3. And nae man was fit, in heeven, nor yet on the yirth, to open the buik, or e'en to look upon it.

4. And I grathair, that nae man was fund fit to open the buik, or e'en to look on't.

5. And ane frae mang the Elders says tae me, "Greet-na: see! the Lion o' the tribe o' Judah, the Rute o' Danvid, has prevail't to open the buik, and the seeven seals o't."

6. And I saw, i' the mids o' the Thron, and o' the fowr leevin-anes, and in mids o' the Elders, a Lamb stannin, as it had been slain, hasin seeven horns and seeven een, whilk are the seeven Spirits o' God sent oot till a' the yirth.

7. And he cam, and has ta'en the buik oot o' the richt haun o' him that sits on the Thron.

8. And as soon as he rex't for the buik, the fowr leevin-anes and the fowr-and-twenty Elders fell doon afore the Lamb, hasin ilk a harp, and

gowden flagons fu' o' insence, whilk are the prayers o' saints;

9. And they sing a¹ new sang, sayin, "Wordie art thou, to tak the buik and to lowse its seals; for thou was slain, and has brocht us to God by thy blude, oot o' ilka tribe, and tongue, and folk, and nation;

10. "And did mak them a kingdom and priests to oor God; and they rule on the yirth!"

11. And I saw, and I heard as a voice o' mony Angels, roond aboot the Thron, and o' the leevin-anes, and o' the Elders; and their number was myriade of myriads, and thoosands o' thoosands.

12. Sayin wi' a soondin voice, "Wordie is the Lamb that was slain, to receive pooer, and richea, and wisdom, and micht, and honor, and glorie, and blessin!"

13. And ilka creatit thing that is in Heeven, and on the yirth, and aneath the yirth, and on the sea, heard I sayin, "To him that sits on the Thron, and to the Lamb, be the bleasin, and the honor, and the glorie and the pooer, for evir and aye!"

14. And the fowr leevin-anes war sayin "Amen!" And the Elders loutit doon and worshipped.

CHAPTIR SAX.

Six seals lowsed: and a' that wad come on the yirth.

AND I saw whan the Lamb lowsed a' ane o' the seals, and I heard ane o' the leevin-anes sayin in a voice o' thunner, "Come!"

2. And I saw, and lo! a white horse, and he that was on it was haudin a bow; and a croon was gien to him; and he gaed oot conquerin and that he woud conquer.

3. And whan he had lowsed the second seal, I heard the second leevin-ane, sayin, "Come!"

4. And forth gaed anither horse, reid; and to him that sat on't it was

¹ V. 9. A new kind o' sang a'thegither: see the word signifiea.

gien to tak peace fras the yirth, and that they soud shed ither's blude ; and thar was gien to him a great sword.

5. And whan he had lounsed the third seal, I heard the third leevin-ane sayin, "Come!" And I lookit, and lo! a black horse, and he that sat on it had a pair o' banks in his haun.

6. An' I heard a voice i' the mids o' the fourt leevin-ane, sayin, "Twa gowpens o' wheat for a hauf-merk, and a forpet o' barley for a hauf-merk ; and the oyle and the wine ye are-na to skaith!"

7. And whan he lounsed the fourth seal, I heard the fourth leevin-ane sayin, "Come!"

8. And I lookit, and lo! a blas horse, and he that sat on't had his name "Death," and the Sbenc follow't wi' him. And he had pocer gien him ower a fourth pairt o' the yirth to slay wi' the sword, and wi' hung'er, and wi' the 'death, and wi' the wild beaass o' the yirth.

9. And whan he lounsed the fifth seal, I saw, anaath the altar, the sauls o' sic as had been slain for the word o' God, and for the witness that they held.

10. And they cryt oot wi' a lood voice, sayin, "To whatna time, O Lord, the Holie and the True, dost thou no judge and avenge our blude on thae that dwall on the yirth?"

11. And thar was gien to them, ilk ane, a white robe ; and it was tellt them that they soud rest their seals a wee while, till their marrowa, and their brethren that soud be slain e'en as they war, soud be a' fulfilled.

12. And I saw whan he lounsed the sixth seal ; thar was a great yirdin ; and the sun was black as sack-claith o' hair ; and the hale muine became as blude ;

13. And the starns o' heeven fell

¹ V. 8. I jalouse the plague is meant here ; or some o' the nameless scourges that man ca' "The Death."

to the yirth, as a fig-tree sheds her orra figs, whan shak'en o' a miebty win'.

14. And the heeven slippit awa, as a scroll row't-up ; and every mountain and isle war mov't oot o' their stances.

15. And the kings o' the yirth, and the nobles, and rulers o' thoosands, and the rich, and the mighty, and ilka thirlman, and ilka freeman, hid theirsels i' the caves and i' the dens o' the mountains,

16. Sayin to the mountains and the craigs, "Fa' on us ! and beild us fras the face o' him wha sits on the Thron, and fras the wrath o' the Lamb !

17. "For the great day o' their wrath is come ; and wha is fit to staun?"

CHAPTIR SEEVEN.

The Saunts are sealed : "Wha are they in white attire?"

LEFTIR thir things I saw fourt Angels stannin on the fourt corners o' the yirth, handin siccar the fourt wins o' the yirth, that nae win' soud blaw on the yirth, or on the sea, or on ony tree.

2. And I saw anither Angel come up fras the sunrisin, haein the seal o' the leevin God, and he cryt oot wi' a soondin voice to the fourt Angels to wham it was gien to bring skaith on the yirth and the sea,

3. Sayin, "Ye maunna skaith the yirth, nor the sea, nor the trees, to we hae seal't the servants o' our God on their broos."

4. And I heard the number o' thae seal't : a hunner and forty-fourth thoosand ; seal't oot o' every ²tribe o' the sons o' Isra'el.

5. Oot o' Judah's tribe, twal'

² V. 4. We ken-na why Dan is left oot in this list. Some think Dan had clean gane ower to idols (see Judges xviii. 30, 31), and was nae mair to be coontit as Isra'el. We hand-na wi' Grotius, that the tribe was extinct.

thousand seal't; oot o' Benben's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Gad's tribe, twal' thoosand;

6. Oot o' Asher's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Naphali's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Manasseh's tribe, twal' thoosand.

7. Oot o' Simeon's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Levi's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Issachar's tribe, twal' thoosand;

8. Oot o' Zabulon's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Joseph's tribe, twal' thoosand; oot o' Benjamin's tribe, twal' thoosand seal't.

9. Estir this I lookit, and see! an unco number, that nae man could tell, oot o' a' nations and kith, and folk, and speech, stude afore the Thron, and forment the Lamb, dink't in white, wi' palms i' their hauns.

10. And cry't oot heigh, "Salvation to oor God, wha sits on the Thron, and to the Lamb!"

11. And a' the Angels war stannin i' the compass o' the Thron, and roond-about the Elders and the four leevin-anes; and fell doon afore the Thron on their faces, worshippin God,

12. And quo' they, "E'en sae: Blessin, and glorie, and wisdom, and giean o' thanks, and honour, and power, and might be to oor God, for evir and evir mair!"

13. And ane o' the Elders answer't, and quo' he tae me, "Wha are thir, buskit a' in white? and whaur cam they frae?"

14. And quo' I tae him, "My lord, ye ken!" And quo' he tae me, "Thir are the anes that cam oot o' sair and unco tossins-about, and hae made their cleedin white i' the blude o' the Lamb.

15. "Sae ars they i' the presence o' the Thron o' God, and aer' him day and nicht in his Temple: and the Ane that sits on the Thron sal unfauld his tent ower him."

16. "And they sal hunger nae mair, and gang drouthie nae mair;

nor sal the sun smite them, nor ony heat-blast.

17. "For the Lamb fras the mids o' the Throne sal herd them, and sal airt them to the watirs o' the waal-ees o' Life; and God sal dicht awa' ilka tear fras their e'en!"

CHAPTR AUCHT.

The seventh seal lowered. Four buglehorn-soond: and the skaith that follows.

AND whane'er he open't the A seeven seal, a quateness fell in Heeven as it was for half-an'-oor.

2. And I saw the seeven Angels wha staun i' the presence o' God; and thar war giean to them seeven buglehorns.

3. And anither Angel cam and stude at the altar, wi' a gowden censor; and thar was giean to him muckle incense, that he might pit it wi' the prayers o' the saunts, pittin them on the gowden altar that is forment the Thron.

4. And the reek o' the incense gaed up, wi' the prayers o' the saunts, oot o' the Angel's hauns, afore God.

5. And the Angel took the censor, and fill't it wi' the lowin coals o' the altar, and cuist it on the yirth; and thar cam thunners, and voices, and lichtuines, and a yirdin.

6. And the seeven Angels, thao haein the seeven buglehorns, made theirsel's ready that they sond soond.

7. And the first ane soondit: and hail and lowe, mix't in blunde, war cuisten on the yirth; and the third-pairt o' the yirth was burnt-up, and the third-pairt o' the trees was burnt up, and a' green foggago was burnt up.

8. And the second Angel soondit; and as it war a great mountain, lowin wi' fire, was cuisten into the sea; and the third-pairt o' the sea became blude.

1. V. 7. Thir four trumpets aboves refer to the invasion o' the Roman Empire, and the terror and skaith fras the hordes o' barbarians, under Alaric, Genereric, Attila and Odoacer.

9. And the third-pairt o' the beass that war i' the sea, that had life, dee't; and the third-pairt o' the shipes war destroy't.

10. And the third Angel soondit; and fræ heeven fell a great starn, lowin like a lamp; and it fell on a third-pairt o' the rivers, and on the beid-springs o' the watirs;

11. And the name o' the starn is ca'd "Worm-wud"; and the third-pairt o' the watirs becam wormwud, and mony dee't o' the watirs, for they war made bitter.

12. And the fourth Augel soondit; and the third-pairt o' the sun was smitten, and the third-pairt o' the mune, and the third-pairt o' the starns; and the third-pairt o' them soud be made mirk, and the day soudna glint for a third-pairt o't, nor yet the nicht.

13. And I saw, and I hearken't to an eagle flyin throue the mids o' the lift, cryin wi' a soondin voice, "Wae, wae, wae! for thaes that dwell on the yirth, by reason o' the lave o' the voices o' the buglehorns o' the thrie Angels that has yet to soond!"

CHAPTIR NINE.

The reek fræ the bottomless pit, and the locusts that cam oot o't.

AND the fifth Angel soondit; and I saw a starn that had faun oot o' heeven to the yirth; and thar was gien to him the key o' the pit o' the abyss.

2. And he unsteekit the pit o' the abyse; and reek cam up oot o' the pit, as the reek o' a great furnace; and the sun and the lift war darken't wi' the reek o' the pit.

3. And oot o' the reek cam locusts on the yirth; and pooer was gien them, as the scorpions o' the yirth haes power.

4. And it was bidden them that they soudna skaith the foggage o' the yirth, nor yet ony green thing, nor yet ony tree, but only the men wha haena the seal o' God on their broo.

5. And it was gien to them that they soudna slay them, but that they soud be tormentit fyve months; and the torment o' them was like a scorpion's torment, whan it may strike a man.

6. And i' thaes days sal men seek for death, and no find it; and desire to dee, and death flees fræ them.

7. And the likeness of the locusts was as horses made ready for war; and on their heids war like croons o' gowd; and their faces as faces o' men;

8. And their hair as the hair o' weemen; and their teeth like lions' teeth;

9. And they had cuirasses as graith o' airm; and the noise o' their wings as the noise o' chariots, as o' mony horses rushin to battle.

10. And they had tails like scorpions, tails like stings; and i' their tails is pooer to skaith men for fyve montha.

11. And they had a king ower them, an angel o' the abyse; his name in Hebrew is "Abaddon," and in oor common tongue he has a name "Destroyer."

12. As was is past; tak tent! thar are comin yet twa mair waes efter thir things!

13. And the sixth Angel soondit; and I heard a voice fræ the horns o' the gowden altar, i' the presence o' God,

14. Sayin to the sixth Angel, "Ye that has the huglehorn! lowse the four Angels that are in bonds at the great river Euphrates!"

15. And the four Angels war lowsed, wha had been made ready for the 'oor, and day, and month, and year, that they soud slay the third-pairt o' men.

16. And the number o' the hosts o' horsemen, twa million: I heard the number o' them.

17. And I saw the horsees i' the vision, and thaes sittin on them; haes cuirasses as o' fire, and

hyacinth, and brunstane ; and the heids o' the horses as heids o' lions ; and oot o' their mou' gang ¹ lowe, and reek, and brunstane.

18. By thir thries plagues war slain the thrid-pairt o' men ; by the lowe, and the reek, and the brunstane that cam oot o' their mou'.

19. For the pooer o' the horses is i' their mou' and i' their tail ; for their tails are like serpents, wi' heids ; and wi' them they do skaith.

20. And the lave o' men, wha warna slain by thir plagues, repentit-na o' the warks o' their hauns, that they soudna ser' demons, and eidola o' gowd, and siller, and o' brass, and o' stane, and o' wud ; whilk can naither see, nor hear, nor gang :

21. And they repentit-na o' their blude-sheddin, nor o' their incantations, nor o' their uncleanness, nor of their plunderins.

CHAPTIR TEN.

The wee bookie open ; sweet to the taste, but ill to digest.

AND I saw anither, a mighty Angel, comin doon oot o' Heeven, clad wi' a clud ; and a rainbow on his heid ; and his face as the sun, and his feet as lowin pillars.

2. And be had in his haun a wee bookie open ; and he set his richt fit on the sea, and his left fit on the lan' ;

3. And cry't oot wi' a soondin voice, as a lion wad roar. And whan he cry't oot, seeven thunners spak wi' their voices.

4. And when the seeven thunners spak I was gaun to write ; and I heard a voice oot o' Heeven, sayin,

¹ V. 17. Gin this chaptir airtis to the Mahomedan pooer, as maist think, than this might be a glint o' the new way o' making war wi' poother and ordnance : as among the Turks.

² V. 2. Wasna this the Scripture, or at least the New Testament ? nevir weel-open't and understude till the days o' printin and the Reformation.

"Bind ye up the things the seeven thunners spak, and write-them-na !"

5. And the Angel I saw staunin on the sea and on the lan', liftit his richt hand toward heeven,

6. And swure by him wha leeves for evir-and-evir, wha creatit the heeven and a' thar-in, and the yirth and a' thar-in, and the sea and a' thar-in, that "The delay was endit !"

7. Bot i' the daya o' the seeven Angel, whane'er he soud begin to seond, soud be perfetit the secret o' God ; conform to the Gude-tidins he has declar't to his ain servants the prophets.

8. And the voice I heard oot o' heeven heard I again talkin wi' me, and saying, "Awa ! tak the wee bookie, the open ane, i' the haun o' the Angel that stands on the sea and on the lan'."

9. And I gaed awa to the Angel, and says to him, "Gie the wee bookie to me !" And he says to me, "Tak it, and eat it up ; and it sal be bitter within ye, but i' yero mou' it sal be sweet as binny !"

10. And I took the wee bookie oot o' the Angel's haun, and ate it up ; and it was i' my mou' as binny sweet ; and whan I had eaten it, it was bitter within me.

11. And quo' they to me, "Ye maun prophesie yet again to mony folk, and nations, and tongues, and kings !"

CHAPTIR ELEVEN.

The measurin-wand ; the Two Witnesses.

AND thar was gien me a reed like ¹ A to a wand ; and it was said, "Rise ye, and ² measur the temple o' God, and the altar, and a' that worship thar !

2. "And the coort that is ootside the Temple lea' ye ootside, and

¹ V. 1. Fre this oot, the buik seems to tak up the spiritual history o' the world : thus far haen been wi' the outward and national. We gang back as it war noo, and look at Christ's Kirk.

measur-it-na ; for it is gien ower to the nations : and the holie citie wull they tramp doon forty-twa montha.

3. " And I wull gie to my Twa Witnesses, and they sal prophesie twal-hunner and saxty daya, cleedit in sack-claith.

4. " Thir are the twa olive-trees, and the twa lamp-bearers, whilk staun i' the presence o' the God o' the haill yirth.

5. " And gif ony man wad do them skaith, a lowe comes oot o' their mou' and devoors their faes ; and gif ony ane wad do them skaith, eas maun be be slain.

6. " Thir hae the pooer to steek heeven, that thar he nae rain or weet i' the days o' their propheseyin ; and hae pooer ower the watirs, to turn them intil blude ; and to smite the yirth wi' a' plagues, as aft as they wull.

7. " And, at sicc an time as they sal perfete their witnessin, the beas' that comes up oot o' the abyss wull mak war wi' them, and owercome them, and slay them.

8. " And their corses wull lie on the braid causey o' the great citie, whilk spiritually is ca'd Sodom, and Egypt, whaur e'en their Lord was crucify't.

9. " And a wheen fras 'mang the folk, and tribes, and tongies, and nations look on their corses, thrie days and a hauf, and they dinna alloow their corses to be putten in a tomb.

10. " And they that dwell on the yirth rejoice ower them, and are blythe ; and they send presents ans to anither ; for thir twa prophets wadna lat-be them dwallin on the yirth.

11. " And eftir the thrie days and a hauf, a spirit o' life fras God enters them ; and they stude on their feet : and muckle fear fell on thas heauldin them.

12. " And they heard a soondin voice oot o' Heeven, sayin to them, ' Come ye up hers ! ' And they

gaed up intil Heeven, in a clud ; and their faes saw them.

13. " And in that same 'oor, thar cam an unco yirdin, and the tenth-pairt o' the citie was whammal't owre ; and thar war slain by the yirdin, names o' men seeven thoosand : and the lave war fleyt, and gied glorie to the God o' Heeven.

14. " The second wae is past ; and behould ! the third wae is comin on."

15. And the seventh Angel soon-dit ; and thar war lood voices in Heeven, sayin, " The Kingdom o' the Warld is come to be the Kingdom o' oor Lord, and o' his Anointit ; and he sal reign for evir and aye ! "

16. And the four-and-twenty Elders, wha sit on their throns, fell on their faces, and adored God, sayin,

17. " We gie thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, wha Is, and wha Was, for that thou hast taen thy great pooer, and did become King.

18. " And the nations war offendit ; and thine anger cam, and the time o' the deid to be judged ; and to gie reward to thy servants the prophete, and to the saints, and to thas wha reverence thy name, sma' and great ; and to destroy them that destroy the yirth ! "

19. And the Temple o' God that is in Heeven was unsteikit, and the Ark o' his Covenant in his Temple was seen ; and that cam fire-flauchs, and voices, and thunner, and a yirdin, and unco hail.

CHAPTRIE TWAL'.

The woman and her lad-bairns. War in Heeven. Glorie be to God !

AND an unco sign appear't in Heeven : a ¹ wumman cleedit wi' the sun, and the moon aneath her feet, and on her heid a croon o' twal' starns.

2. And, bein a mither-to-be, she

¹ V. 1. Dif we no do weel to tak this to be the Kirk o' God ; and a fulfillin o' Esaih Ixvi. 7, 8 ?

cryt oot in bearin-pains, and in anguish, to be deliver't.

3. And another ferlie appear't in Heeven; and mark! a great red Dragon, wi' seeven heids and ten horns; and on his heid seeven croons;

4. And his tail taig't the third pairt o' the stars o' the heeven, and dash't them tae the Yirth. And the Dragon stude afore the wumman, wha was bein deliver't, to devoor her bairn as sune as she was deliver't.

5. And she brocht forth a lad-bairn, a hero-son, wha soud sway a' nations wi' a sceptre o' airt; and her son was waftit awa to God and to his Thron.

6. And the wumman fled to the wilderness, whaur she had a howff prepar't for her o' God; and thar sal they noorice her twal hunner and saxty dayas.

7. And War begude in Heeven: Michael and his Angels makin war wi' the Dragon; and the Dragon made war, and his angels;

8. And they owercam-na, nor was a stane foun' for them ony mair in Heaven.

9. And har'l doon was the great Dragon, the auld serpent, he that is ca'd "Deevil," and "Satan," he that wrangs the hale yirth—he was cuis'n-doone tae the yirth; and his angels war cuis'n-doone wi' him.

10. And I heard a soondin voice in Heeven, sayin, "Now comes the salvation, and the poower, and the kingdom o' oor God, and the poower o' his Anointit! for the Accuser o' oor brethren is cuisten-doone, he that was wytin them afore oor God day and nicht.

11. "And they prevail't again him, throwe the blude o' the Lamb, and by the word o' their witnessin; and they lo'ed-na their life, e'en on to death.

12. "For this be blythe, O Heevens! and a' ye that in them dwall! Wae for the yirth, and for the sea! for the fae has gane doon

intil you: hasin muckle wrath, keanin he has but a wee while."

13. And whan the Dragon saw he was cuis'n-doone tae the yirth, he pursued the wumman, she wha brocht forth the hero-son.

14. And to the wumman war gien the twa wings o' the great eagle, that she soud flee into the wilderness, into the howff; whaur she is to be noorice a season, and seasons, and hauf a season, fras the serpent's face.

15. And the serpent belched-forth, aftir the wumman, watir like a river, that he nicht mak her to be carryt awa wi' the spate.

16. And the yirth helpit the wumman; and the yirth open't her mou', and swallow't up the spate that the Dragon belched-forth fras his mooth.

17. And the Dragon was fu' o' wrath again the wumman, and he gaed awa to mak war wi' the lave o' her bairns, thaet that war keepin the commauns o' God, and haudin the testimonie o' Jesus.

CHAPTIR THIRTEEN.

A beast risin out o' the sea: another beast that dis ferlic.

AND he stude upon the sand o' the sea. And I saw a beast comin up oot o' the sea, hasin ten horns and seeven heids, and on his horns ten croons, and his heids hure the names o' blasphemie.

2. And the beast I saw was like to a leopard, and his feet like as o' a bear, and his mooth as a lion's mooth; and the Dragon gied him the poower that he had, and his thron, and great authoritie.

3. And I saw aye fras his heids as it war thrust-throwe to the deid; and his deid-strak was healed; and a' the world ferlic at the beast.

4. And they gied worship to the

Dragon, for gien aic pocer to the beast ; and they gied worship to the beast, sayin, " Wha can marrow the beast ? Wha can mak war wi' him ? "

5. And thar was gien to him a mon' speakin unco things, and blasphemies ; and thar war gien him authoritie for forty-twa montbs.

6. And he open't his mon' in blasphemies again God ; to misca' his name, and his tabernacle, and thae that dwall in Heeven.

7. And it was gien to him to mak war wi' the saunts, and to owercome them. And thar was gien him authoritie ower a' tribes, and folk, and tongaes, and nations.

8. And they wull worship him a' they that dwall on the yirth, ilk ane whase name issa putten-doon i' the Bulk-o'-Life o' the Lamb that was slain frae the fundation o' the warld.

9. Gif ony ane has hearin, lat him hear.

10. Gif ony man is for bonds, intil bonds he gangs ; gif ony man wi' sword wull slay, by sword sal he be slain. Here is the tholin and the lealness o' the saunts !

11. And I saw anither beast comin up oot o' the yird ; and he had twa horns like a lamb, and he was speakin like a dragon.

12. And he aways the pocer o' the first beast in his presence ; and gars the yirth and a' its dwallers worship the first beast, wha was healed o' his deid-straik.

13. And he dis great forlies, e'en to gar lowe to come doon oot o' the list, afore the sicht o' men :

14. And he beguiles them that dwall on the yirth, wi' the ferlies it was gien him to do i' the sicht o' the beast, and commauns thae that dwall on the yirth to mak an image to the beast, wha had a deid-straik o' a sword, and leaved.

15. And it was gien him to gie breath to the image o' the beast, that the image o' the beast might e'en speak ; and gar as mony as wadna

gie worship to the image o' the beast to be slain.

16. And he gars a', sma' and great, and the rich and the pair, the free and the enthrall't, that they soud be brandit on their richt-haun, or on their broo ;

17. And that nane soud has pocer to buy or to troke, but he that has the mark, the name o' the beast, or the number o' his name.

18. Hare is discernment : he that is wyss lat him coont-up the number o' the beast ; for it is the number o' a man, and his number is sax hunner and sixty-sax.

CHAPTIR FOWRTEEN.

The Land, wi' a' his Sealed-Anns. Babylon fa'a. The Hairt o' the World.

AND I saw, and behavid ! the Lamb, staunin on Mount Zion ; and wi' him a hunner and forty-fowr thoosand, wi' his name and his Faither's name inseriv't on their broo.

2. And I heard a voice oot o' Heeven, as the soondin o' mony watirs, as an unco voice o' thunner ; and the voice that I heard was as o' harpers, soondin on their harpa.

3. And they sing a new Sang, in presence o' the Thron, and in presence o' the fowr leevin-anes, and o' the Elders ; and nae man could ken the Sang but the hunner and forty-fowr thoosand that war ransomed frae the yirth.

4. Thir are they that are-na defiled in incontinency ; for they are pure. Thir are they wha follow the Lamb whaurse'er he may lead ; thir war ransomed frae 'mang men, a first frute for God and the Lamb.

5. And i' their mon' was nae guile ; for they are wyteless.

6. And I saw anither Angel, flyin i' the mids o' the list, hagin the evirdurin Gude-news to deliver to thae that dwall on the yirth, e'en to ilka nation, and tribe, and tongue, and folk.

7. Cryin wi' a soonding voica, " Re-

vere God, and gie him land ; for the 'oor o' his judgment has come ; and gie ye worship to him who made the Heevens and the Yirth, and the sea, and the waal-ees o' watira."

8. And anither, a second Angel, followt sayin, " Babylon, the mighty, is faun, is faun ! wha gar't a' nations to drink o' the wine o' the wrath o' her lecherie ! "

9. And anither Angel, a third, followt wi' them, cryin wi' a soondin voice, " Gin ony aue worships the beast and his image, and taks the brand on his hroo, or on his haun,

10. " He ake sal drink o' the wine o' the wrath o' God, whilk is teemmed oot unmixed i' the cup o' his wrath ; and sal be tormentit in lowe and brunstane i' the presence o' holie Angels, and i' the presence o' the Lamb."

11. And the reek o' their torment gangs up for evir and evir ; and they haes nae ease day nor nicht, they that worship the beast and his image, and gin ony aue take the brand o' his name.

12. Here is the tholin i' the saunta, they wha keep God's commanns, and their lealness to Jesus !

13. And I heard a voice oot o' heeven sayin, " Write ye ! Happy the deid wha dee i' the Lord, fras this oot ! Aye, testifies the Spirit, that they may rest fras a' their weary moil, and their works gang wi' them ! "

14. And I saw, and look ! a white clud ; and on the clud Ane sittin, like tae the Son o' Man, wi' a croon o' gowd upon his heid, and in his haun a shairp sickle.

15. And anither Angel cam forth oot o' the Temple, cryin oot wi' a soonding voice to him that was sittin on the clud, " Pit in thy heuk and shear ; for the 'oor to shear has come ; for the hairst o' the yirth is ripe."

16. And he that sat on the clud swung in his heuk on the yirth, and the yirth was hairstit.

17. And anither Angel came oot o' the Temple that was in heeven, he too haein a shairp heuk.

18. And anither Angel came forth fras the altar, haein pooer ower fire ; and he cryt wi' a soondin voice to him that had the shairp heuk, sayin, " Pit in yere heuk, and gaither ye the clusters o' the vine-stock o' the yirth ! for her grapes are fu ripe ! "

19. And the Angel swung his heuk intil the yirth, and gather't in the viutage o' the yirth ; and cuist it intil the great wine-press o' the wrath o' God.

20. And the wine-press was trampit ayont the citie yetts ; and forth cam blude oot o' the wine-press, o'en to the horse-bridles, the length o' twa hunner mile.

CHAPTIR FYFTEEN.

The Sa' o' Moses and the Lamb.

AND I saw anither ferlie in heeven, A unco and wunnerfu' ; seeven Angels, haein seeven plagues—the last—for in them was endit the wrath o' God.

2. And I saw 'an it war a glessy sea, glintin bricht ; and they that had gotten the victory ower the beast, and ower his image, and ower his brand, and ower the number o' his name, stude on the glessy sea, haein the harps o' God.

3. And they sing the Sang o' Moses the servant o' God, and the Sang o' the Lamb, sayin, " Unco and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty ; richtous and true are thy ways, thou King o' Nations ! "

4. " Wha wadna fear thee, O Lord, and laud heigh thy name ! For thou only art holie ; for a' nations sal come and loot doon afore thee ; for thy holie commanns are made kent."

5. And aftir the things I saw the

¹ V. 15. God may thole lang ; but the time comes his face sal ken his wrath.

Temple o' the Tabernacle o' Testimoniunstekit in heeven.

6. And forth cam the seeven Angels, thae basin the seeven plagues, oot o' the Temple; buskit wi' jewels, pure and bright; and girdit roond the breist wi' bands o' gowd.

7. And aue frae 'mang the four leevin-anes gied tae the Angels seeven gowden flagons, fu' o' the wrath o' God, he wha levees for evir and evir.

8. And the Temple was fu' o' reek, frae the glorie o' God, and frae his pouer; and nane could gang intil the Temple, till the seeven plagues o' the seeven Angels war endit.

CHAPTR SAXTEEN.

The Angels teem oot their flagons on the yirth.

AND I hearkened to a soondin voice oot o' the Temple, cryin to the seeven Angels, "Awa! and teem oot the seeven flagons o' the wrath o' God on the yirth!"

2. And the first gaed awa, and teemed oot his flagon on the yirth; and thar cam a waeosome and sair blain on the men who had the brand o' the beast, and on thae giean worship to his image.

3. And the second teemed oot his flagon into the sea, and it becam blude, as o' aue that was deid; and every life deet i' the sea.

4. And the third teemed oot his flagon into the rivers and waal-ees o' watir; and hecam blude.

5. And I heard the Angel o' the watirs sayin, "Richtous art thou, the Aue wba Ia, and the Aue wba Was,

the Holie Ane, for that thou hast me judged;

6. "For the blude o' thy saints has they shed; and blinde thou hast gien them to drink; for they are wordie o't."

7. And I heard frae the altar, sayin, "I'en say, Lord God Almighty; true and richtous are thy judgments."

8. And the fourth Angel teemed oot his flagon upon the sun; and it was gien to it to birele men wi' heat.

9. And they war birlat wi' an unco birlin; and men misca't the name o' God, wha had pouer ower thir plagues; and they repentit-na, to gie him gloria.

10. And the fifth Angel teemed oot his flagon on the thron o' the beast; and his kingdom was made mirk; and they gnash't at their ain tongues wi' pain;

11. And misca't the God o' Heeven on accoont o' their pain, and for thir blaina; and didna turn frae their warka.

12. And the sixth Angel teemed oot his flagon on the great river Euphrates, and its watir was lickit up, that the comin o' the kings frae the sun-risin may be made ready.

13. And I saw three unclean spirita, as puddocks, come oot o' the mooth o' the Dragon, and oot o' the mooth o' the beast, and oot o' the mooth o' the fause-prophet.

14. For they are demour' spirita, workin ferlies; whilk come forth to the kings o' the haill yirth, to gaither them togither to the battle o' the great Day o' God Almighty.

15. "Behauld I come, as comes a thief! happy he wha is on gaird, and keeping his cleedin, least he gang bare, and they see his shame."

16. And they gaither't thegither intil a place that is ca'd i' the Hebrew, "Mountain o' Megiddo."

17. And the seventh teemed oot his flagon in the air, and a voice cam oot o' the Temple, frae the Thron, sayin, "It has come to be!"

¹ V. 7. We wad a' like to ken mair aboot the last days: but lat us mind that gin God had designed we woud ken a' aboot it, he wad hae tell't us in plain words, and no in visions: and that the great end o' prophecie is no to mak folk wya aforehan, but raither to strenthen their faith, when they see the things come to pass. John xiv. 29.

18. And thar cam fire-flauchta, and voices, and thunners ; and a yirdin cam, sic a ane as ne'er cam aboot syn men war on the yirth, sic an unco yirthquake, see great.

19. And the great citie was pairtit in thrie parts, and the cities o' the nation war whumml't ; and Babylon the Great cam to mind afore God, to gie to her the cup o' the wrath o' his displeasur.

20. And ilka isle fled awa, and the mountains war-na mair fund.

21. And unco hail, as o' a hauf-hunnerwecht, cam doon oot o' the heeven upon men. And the men misca't God, on account o' the hail ; for the weird o't was unco.

CHAPTIR SEVENTEEN.

The Scarlet Wumman : her abominations, and her punishment.

AND thar cam oot ane o' the seeven Angels, thae haeiu the seeven flagons, and spak wi' me, and quo' he, "Come ! and I wull schaw ye the judgment o' the great harlot, that sits on mony waters,

2. "Wi' wham the kinga o' the yirth hae committit uncleanness, and thae dwallin on the yirth hae been made drucken, oot o' the wine o' her lecherie."

3. And he carry't me awa i' the Spirit intil the wilderness ; and I saw a wumman sittin on a scarlet beast, whilk was fu' o' names o' blasphemie, wi' seeven heids and ten horns.

4. And the wumman was buskit in purple and scarlet, and was dinkit oot wi' gowd and jewels and pearl, haudin a gowden cup in her haun fu' o' abomination, e'en the abomination o' her adulteries.

5. And on her heid a name written, a mysterie : "Babylon the Great, Mither o' Harlots, and o' the Abominations o' the Yirth !"

6. And I saw the wumman drucken wi' the hinde o' the saunta, and wi' the blude o' the martyrs o' Jesus,

and I ferlied whan I saw her, wi' an unco ferliein.

7. And the Angel said to me, "Hoo did ye ferlie ? I wull tell ye the secret o' the wumman, and o' the beast that bears her, that has the seeven heids and the ten horns.

8. "The beast that ye saw was, and is-na, is to rise frae the abyss, and gangs awa to destruction. And thae that dwell on the yirth sal ferlie, whase names hae no been putten-doon i' the Buik-o'-Life frae the fundation o' the warld, at behauldin the beast, hoo that he was, and is-na, and sal come.

9. "Here is the mind that has wisdom. The seeven heids are seeven mountains, whaur the wumman sits.

10. "And they are seeven kingz ; the fyve fell ; the ane is ; and the ither isna yet come ; and whan he comes, he maun hide for a wee while.

11. "And the beast whilk was, and is-na, e'en he is the auchth, and is o' the seeven ; and gangs awa intil destruction.

12. "And the ten horns ye saw are ten kingz ; wha hae gotten nae kingdom as yet, but hae pouer gien them as 'oor wi' the beast.

13. "Thir are o' as mind, and they gie their pouer and authoritie to the beast.

14. "Thir mak war wi' the Lamb, and the Lamb wull prevail again them ; for he is Lord o' the lordly, and King o' the kingly ; and thae that are wi' him are bidden, and chosen and leal !"

15. And quo' he to me, "The watirs ye did see, whaur the harlot is sittin, are folk, and thrangs, and nations, and tongues.

16. "And the ten horns ye saw, and the beast, thir wull hate the harlot, and wull mak her bare and nakit, and wull eat her flesh, and burn her up wi' fire.

17. "For God pat i' their hearts to fulfil his mind, and to be a' o' as

mind, and gie their kingdom to the beast, till a' God's words come to pass.

18. "And the wumman ye saw is the great citie ; ¹ she that has a kingdom ower the kings o' the yirth."

CHAPTIR AUCHTEEN.

The fit' o' Babylon : the unco lamentation over her.

AND efter thir things I saw anither Angel comin doon oot o' Heeven, haein great power ; and the yirth was lichtit up wi' his glorie.

2. And he cry't oot wi' a mighty voice, sayin, " Faun, faun, is Babylon the great ! and come to be the howff o' demons, and a dungeon o' ilka vile spirit, and a hanld o' ilka unclean and abominable bird.

3. " For by the wine o' the wrath o' her adulteries have faun a' the nations ; and the kings o' the yirth committit adultery wi' her : and the mairchants o' the yirth, oot o' the power o' her wantonness made theirsels rich."

4. And I heard anither voice frae Heeven, sayin, " Come forth oot o' her, my folk ! that ye may hae nae marrowin wi' her sins, and get-na o' her plagues !

5. " For her sins war heapit-up to the heevens, and God has brocht her ill-deeds to mind.

6. " Gie ye to her e'en as she herself has gien, and doobie ye to her the dooble, conform to her wark : in the cnp she has made fou, fill ye to her the doobla.

7. " As muckle as she magnify't herself and leaved daintily, by sae muckle gie her torment and wae ; for in her heart she was sayin, ' I sit a queen, and am-na weedow't, and sal see murnin name ! '

8. " And sae, in ae day sal come her waes ; death and murnin, and famine ; and wi' fire sal she be brunt-

up : for mighty is the Lord God, he wha judges her.

9. " And the kings o' the yirth, that committit adultery wi' her, and leaved wantonly wi' her, sal weep and wail ower her, when they see the reek o' her burnin ;

10. " Staunin far-awa, for the fear o' her torment, sayin, ' Wae, wae ! the great citie, the mighty citie ; for in ae 'oor has her judgment faun ! ?

11. " And the mairchants o' the yirth greet and mak maen for her, for that their ² mairchandise has aye buys ony mair.

12. " Mairchandise o' gowd, and o' siller, and o' jewels and pearls, and o' fine linen, and o' purple, and silk, and scarlet, and ilka sort o' odoroue wud, and ilka thing o' ivorie, and ilka thing made o' maist precious wud, and o' brass, and o' airm, and o' marble,

13. " And cinnamon, and spice, and incense, and perfume, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and nowte, and sheep, and o' horses, and chariots, and o' bodies and lives o' men.

14. " And the frutes yere saul socht efter hae depairtit frae ye, and a' the dainty and delicate things hae perish't frae ye, and in naegate sal they be fun'.

15. " The trokers i' thae things, they wha becam rich frae her, will staun far-awa, for the fear o' her torment, greetin and makin maen ;

16. " Sayin, ' Wae, wae ! the mighty citie, that had buskit herself wi' fine linen, and purple and scarlet, and had dink't herself oot wi' gowd, and jewel and pearl ; in ae 'oor has been laid waste sic walth as this ! '

17. " And ilka captain, and ilka ane gaun to sea, stude far-awa,

18. " And cry't oot, behankdin the

¹ V. 18. In this buik, the Bride is the tree Kirk o' Christ, the saints o' God on the yirth.

reek o' her burnin, sayin, 'Whatna citie like to this great citie !'

19. "And they cuist stoor on their heids, and cry't alood, greetin and makin maen, sayin, 'Wae, wae ! the mighty citie, in whilk wax't rich a' thae haein ships on the sea, oot o' her luxuries. In ae 'oor is she laid waste !'

20. "Be blythe ower her, O Heeven ! And a' ye saunts, and Apostles, and prophets ! for God has jndged her for yare aakea."

21. And an Angel, a mighty ane, liftit up a stane, like a great mill-stane, and cuist it into the sea, sayin, "Sae, wi' unco might sal be hurled doon the great citie, Babylon; and in naegate ony mair be fun".

22. "And voice o' harpers, and minstrels, and pipers, and buglers, sal be heard in ye nae mair ! And cay craftsman o' ony craft, sal be fnu' in ye nae mair ! And the soond o' a mill-stane sal be heard in ye nae mair !

23. "And the licht o' a crusie sal nae mair shine in ye. And the voice o' bridegroom and o' bride sal he nae mair heard in ye ! For thy mair-chants war nobles on the yirth; for that a' the nations war beguiled by her sorceries.

24. "And the blude o' prophets and saunts was fun' in her, and o' a' thae that had been slain upon the yirth."

—CHAPTIR NINETEEN.

Rejoice in Heaven. A vision o' a Mighty Conqueror.

EFTIR thir things I heard as a soondin voice o' an unco thrang in Heeven, and they said, "Hallelujah ! The salvation, and the glorie, and the poore o' oor God !

2. "For true and holie are his judgments; for he has judged the great harlot, wha corruptit the yirth wi' her adulteries; and he has avenged the blude o' his servants at her haun!"

3. And again they cry't, "Halle-

lujah !" And her reek gangs up for evir and evir.

4. And the four-and-twenty Elders, and the four leevin-anees loutit doon, and worshipped God, that sits on the Thron, sayin, "E'en sae ! Hallelujah !"

5. And a voice cam oot fras the Thron, sayin, "Gie ye praise to oor God, a' ye his servants, and thae that reverence him, baith sma' and great!"

6. And I heard the voice as o' an unco thrang, and as the voice o' mighty thunners, sayin, "Hallelujah ! for the Lord oor God, the Almighty, is King !

7. "Lat us rejoice, exultin, and gie laud to him; for the bridal o' the Lamb has come, and his bride has made hersel ready.

8. "And it was gien to her that she soud busk hersel in fine linen, bright and pure; for the fine linen is the holie deeds o' the Saunta."

9. And he said to me, "Write ye, Happy wha are bidden to the marriage-supper o' the Lamb !" And he says to me, "Thir words are the aefauld words o' God."

10. And I loutit doon afore his feet, to do reverence to him. And he says to me, "No sae ! for I am a fellow-servant wi' ye, and o' yere brethren wha haud the testimonie o' Jesus : gie God worship; for the testimonie o' Jesus is the heart o' the prophecy."

11. And I saw the Heevens unsteikit, and lo ! a white borsa: and he that sat on't was ca'd "Leal and True"; and in holiness judges he, and gangs to war.

12. And his e'en lowin fire; and on his heid mony croons; and has a name written whilk nae ane kens but his ain sel;

13. And he war cleedit in a mantle drookit wi' blude, and his name is ca'd, "The Word o' God."

14. And the airmies o' Heeven follow't wi' him, on white horses, clad in fine linen, white and pure.

15. And oot o' his mooth gang a shairp twa-mooth' sword, that sae be may smite the nations ; and he wull shepherd them wi' a sceptre o' a'air, while he tramps the press o' the wine o' the wrath o' God the Almighty.

16. And he has, on his mantie and on his thigh, a name placed : "King o' the kingly, and Lord o' the lordly ! "

17. And I saw an Angel staunin i' the sun ; and he cry't wi' a soondin voice, sayin to a' the birds fleein in mid-air, "Come ye, and gaither the-gither to the great supper o' God.

18. "That ye may feast on the flesh o' kings, and flesh o' captains, and the flesh o' mighty ones, and flesh o' horses, and o' thae that sit on them ; and flesh o' a', baith free and bond, baith sma' and great ! "

19. And I saw the beast, and the kings o' the yirth, and their hosts, gaither't thegither to war wi' him that sat on the horse, and wi' his army.

20. And the beast was taen, and wi' him the fause-prophet, he that did the ferlics afore him, by whilk he beguiled thae that took the brand o' the beast, and thae giesen worship to his image ; and the twa war cuisten, leevin, intil the loch o' fire, lowin wi' brunstane.

21. And the lave war slain by the sword o' him that sat on the horse, the sword that gaed forth oot o' his mooth ; and a' the ravenin birds war filled wi' their flesh.

CHAPTR TWENTY.

The blessed Thousand-Year ! The great White Thron.

AND I saw an Angel comin doon frae Heeven, haein the key o' the abyss, and a muckie chain in his haun.

2. And he laid baud o' the Dragon, the auld serpent, wha is "Deevil," and "Sautan," and chained him for a thousand year,

3. And harled him intil the abyss,

and steikit it, and seal't it aboon him, that he soud nae mair beguile the nations, to the end o' the Thooseand-year ; and aftir that he bude be lowsed a wee while.

4. And I saw throns, and they sat on them ; and judgment-pooer was gien to them ; and I saw the sauls o' them that war beheidit for the testimoniie o' Jesus, and for the word o' God ; and sae mony as worshipped-na the beast nor his image, and took-na the brand on the broo, nor on the haun ; and they leeved wi' Christ, and reigned wi' him, a thooseand-year.

5. And the lave o' the deid leeved-na till soud be endit the thooseand year. This is the "First Risin-again."

6. Happy and holie he, wha has pairt in the First Risin-again ! ower siclike the seconnd death has nae pooer ; but they sal be the priests o' God and o' Christ, and sal reign wi' him for the Thooseand Year !

7. And, whane'er the Thooseand Year is endit, Sautan wull be lowsed oot o' his thrall,

8. And wull gang oot to beguile the nations, that are i' the four corners o' the yirth, Gog and Magog, to gaither them thegither for the war, o' wham the number is as the sand o' the sea.

9. And they cam up, spread-oot ower the breidh o' the yirth ; and rinkit-roond the camp o' the saunts, and the weel-lo'ed citie : and fire cam doon frae God, oot o' Heeven, and devoort them.

10. And the fae, he that was beguilin them, was cuisten intil the loch o' fire and brunstane, whaur ake war cuisten the beast and the fause-prophet ; and they sal be tormentit day and nicht, for evir and evir.

11. And I saw a Great White Thron, and him that sat on it ; frae whase face the heeven and yirth fled awa, and place waana fund for them.

12. And I saw the deid, the great and the sma', staun afore the Thron, and buiks war unseal't ; and anither

buik was unseal't, whilk is the Buik-o'-Life; and the deid war judged oot o' the things that war putten-doон i' the buika, conform to their warks.

13. And the sea gied up the deid that war in't, and Death and the Grave gied up the deid that war in them; and they war judged, ilka ane, conform to their warks.

14. And Death and the Grave war cuisten intil the loch o' fire: this is the Second Death, the lowin loch.

15. And gin ony ane wasna fund putten-doон i' the Buik-o'-Life, be was cuisten intil the lowin loch.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-ANE.

A New Heeven and a New Yirth. The bonnie Bride o' Christ, wi' a' her pearls and her jewels.

AND I saw a New Heeven and a New Yirth; for the first Heeven and the first Yirth war gane-by; and sea was thar name.

2. And the holie city, "New Jeruaalem," saw I comin doon frae God oot o' Heeven, made ready as a bride buskit for her bridegroom.

3. And I heard a soondin voice oot o' Heaven, sayin, "Lo! God's dwallin is wi' men, and he sal bide wi' them; and they sal be his folk, and God his ain sel sal be wi' them!"

4. "And he sal dicht a' tears frae their een; and Death sal be nae mair; nor dool, nor ootery, nor pain sal be ony mair: for a' the auld things are gane-by!"

5. And he that sat on the Thron, said, "Lo! I mak a' things ower again!" And he says to me, "Write; for thir words are leal and true!"

6. And he said to me, "It has come to be! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the forefront and the endin! I to ilka drouthie ane wull gie o' the waal-e o' the Watir-o'-Life, freely.

7. "He that prevails has a' things for his heritage; and I sal be to him a God, and be sal be to me a bairn."

8. "But as to the dauntit ones, and the unbelievin, and the abominable, and blude-shadders, and lecherers, and eidol-worshippers, and a' leers, their pairt is in the loch that lowes wi' fire and brunstane, whilk is the second death."

9. And thar cam oot ane o' the seeven Angels that had the seeven flagons fu' o' the seeven last plagues and spak wi' me, sayin, "Come awa'! I wull schaw ye the Bride, the wife o' the Lamb!"

10. And he bare me awa' i' the Spirit to a mountain great and heigh, and airtit my een to the citie, the holie Jeruaalem, loutin doon oot o' Heeven frae God;

11. Hacin the glorie o' God; and her glintin was like to a stane maist precious, as a jasper-stane, clear as crystal;

12. Hacin a wa' great and heigh; and had twal' porta, and at the porta twal' Angels: and names putten thar-on, whilk are the names o' the twal' tribes o' Isra'el.

13. Eastward, thrie ports; and northward thrie ports; and soothward thrie ports; and wastward thrie porta.

14. And the city wa's had twal' fundations; and upo' them twal' names, o' the twal' Apostles o' the Lamb.

15. And he that spak to me had a wand o' gowd, that he nicht measur the citie, and her portals and her wa'.

16. And the citie lies four-square, and the lenth is as muckle as the breidh. And he measur't the citie wi' the wand, up to twal' thoosand furlongs: ber lenth, and breidh in beicht a' marrow thegither.

17. And he measur't ber wa' a bunner and forty-fowr half-airms o' a man's measur; that is, the Angel's.

18. And the biggin o' the wa' was jasper; and the citie pure gowd, like abinin glass,

19. And the fundations o' the wa'

o' the citie wi' ilka precious stane
war buskit. The first fundation,
jasper ; the second, sapphire ; the
third, chalcedonie ; the fourth, emer-
ant ;

20. The fifth, sardonix ; the sixth,
cornelian ; the seventh, gowd-stane ;
the eacht, beryl ; the ninth, topaz :
the tenth, chrysoprasie ; the eleventh,
hyacinth ; the twal' th, amethyst.

21. And the twal' yetts war twal'
pearls ; ilka allenar yett as pearl ;
and the causey o' the citie was gowd,
like shinin gless.

22. And Temple saw I nane tharin ;
for the Lord God Almighty and
the Lamb are her temple !

23. And the citie isna wantin for
the sun, nor yet for the mune, that
they soud be shinin in't ; for the
glorie o' God is her licht, and the
Lamb is the lamp o't.

24. And a' folk sal gang by the
licht o't ; and a' the kings o' the
yirth bring their glorie intil't.

25. And a' the day lang the yetts
are wide unsteekit ; for nae ¹ nicht
fa's thar !

26. And they sal bring the glorie
and treasur o' the nations intil't.

27. And in naegate sal enter intil't
ocht that defiles, nor ane that dis
abomination, or is a leear ; but thae
wha are putten-doон i' the Lamb's
Buik-o'-Life.

CHAPTIR TWENTY-TWA.

*A braw hink o' Heaven. The himmest
word, till the Lord comes agan.*

AND he airtit my een to a river o'
the Watir o' Life, as clear as
crystal, flowin oot frae the Thron o'
God and the Lamb.

2. And atween the river-street
and the river, on this side and on
yon, the Tree o' Life, gien: twal'
frutins ; month by month gien its
frute ; and the leaves o' the tree to
mak the nations hale.

¹ V. 25. Nae nicht over the holie citie ;
and naething that nicht and mirkness
signify—sorrow, nor dool, nor pain.

3. And nae curse sal be ony mair ;
and the Thron o' God and o' the
Lamb in her sal be ; and his servitors
sal do him service.

4. And they sal look on his face ;
wi' his name carryt on their broo.

5. And nae nicht sal fa' mair ; and
they need nae licht o' lamp nor shine
o' sun ; for the Lord God wull shed
licht upon them ; and they sal reign
for evir and aye.

6. And he said to me, "Thir
sayins are leal and true ; and the
Lord, the God o' the spirits o' the
propheta, has sent oot his Angel to
schaw to his servants whatna things
wull sune come to pass.

7. "And lo ! I come wi' speed ;
happy he wha keeps the words o' the
prophecie o' this buik."

8. And I, John, am he that heard
and saw thir things ; and whan I
heard and saw, I loutit doon afore
the feet o' the Angel, wha was schawin
me thir things.

9. And quo' he to me, "No sae !
I am yere fellow-servant, and o' yere
brethren the propheta, and o' thae
that are keepin the words o' the
buik : tae God gie worship !"

10. And he says to me, "Ye may-
na seal up the words o' the prophecie
o' this buik ; for the time is nar-hy.

11. "He that is wrang-doin, lat
him still do wrang ; and he that is
unclean, lat him be made still unclean ;
and he that is just, lat him be just
still ; and he that is holie, lat him be
holie still."

12. "Lo ! ² I come wi' speed, and
my reward is wi' me, to bestow on
ilk ane o'en as his wark sal be.

13. "I am the Alpha and the
Omega, the first and the last, the
forericht and the endin.

14. "Blessed they wha wash their
robes ; that they may haie richt to
the Tree o' Life ; and may gang in by
the ports intil the citie !

15. "Ootby are the dowgs and

² V. 12. Thir are noo the words o' the Lord
Jesus.

sorcerers, and the lecherers, and blinde-shedders, and ilka ane that lo'ens or maks a lee.

16. "I, Jesus, sent my Angel to witness to ye thir things i' the kirka. I am the rute and offshoot o' Dauvid; the bricht, the mornin stern.

17. "And the Spirit and the Bride say, 'Come ye!' And he wha hears, lat him say, 'Come ye!' And he that is drouthie, lat him be comin! He that wull, lat him hae the Watir o' Life freely!

18. "I bear witness to ilka ane hearin the words o' the prophecie o'

this buik:—Gin ony ane pits ocht mair on them, God wull pit on him the plagues that are putten-doон in this buik.

19. "And gin ony ane takes awa' frae the words o' the buik o' this prophecie, God wull tak awa' his pairt frae the Tree o' Life, and frae the Holie Citie, e'en frae the things that are putten-doон i' this buik.

20. "He that bears witness o' thir things says, 'Aye! I come wi' speed!' E'en sae! Come, Lord Jesus!"

21. The lovin-favor o' the Lord Jesus be wi' the saints!

THE TWENTY-THIRD PSAUM.

Daurid is aye unreekin a pairn about Christ. Here he pens him as a Shepherd, and his sel as a silly bit lammie. It evens reek wi' the tenth o' John.

THE Lord is my Shepherd ; my wants are a' kent ; the pasture
I lie on is growthie and green.

I follow by the lip o' the waters o' Peace.

He heals and sterklie haunds my saul : and airts me, for his ain
name's sake, in a' the fit-roads o' his holiness.

Aye, and though I bude gang throwe the howe whaur the
deid-shadows fa', I'se fear nae skaith nor ill, for that yersel is aye
aside me ; yere rod and yere cruk they defend me.

My table ye hae plenish't afore the een o' my faes ; my heid
ye hae chrystit wi' oyle ; my cup is teemin fu' !

And certes, tenderness and mercie sal be my fa' to the end o'
my daya ; and syns I'se bide i' the hoose o' the Lord, for evir
and evir mair !

GLOSSARY

GLOSSARY OF SCOTTISH WORDS.

IN the following Glossary, there is no attempt made to present a dictionary of the Scottish language. Only those words are inserted that are found in the text ; and, generally, only the English definitions that belong to the situations in which the words are placed in the text.

Scottish vowels are considerably deeper than English in sound : the short *i* sounding to an English or American ear like a short *e*. The pure sound of *er*, as in the English words *berry*, *ferry*, etc. ; the guttural *ch* or *gh*, as in the German ; the affix *it*, corresponding to the English *ed*, and pronounced “*eet*” ; and the termination *in*, corresponding to the English *ing*, and pronounced “*eem*” ; are some points necessary to be observed.

As to the dialect used in this version, the dialect of Burns, which has become fixed as the literary form of the Broad Scotch, has been mainly followed ; and that, notwithstanding many Border predilections on the part of the translator. Burns, Scott, and Hogg are the great dialectic authorities in Scotch, to whose diction all must conform : and the world has accepted, as a representative form of the language, a dialect used by these, which is not strictly peculiar to any definite locality.

Criticism on this work there will be, however rendered ; but I have had before me, all throughout, the probability of this translation being counted, in a modest way, as one of the standards of the language in time to come ; and have endeavoured to make it consistent with itself, and conformable to already-existing standards ; and a help to those who should afterwards write in Scotch.

W. W. S.

GLOSSARY.

A.

A', *a.* [aw] all
 Aboon, *prep.* above
 Absteen, *v.* abstain
 Ae, *a.* [yae] one
 Afauld, *a.* single; sincere
 Afaulness, *n.* sincerity
 Agley, *adv.* oblique; aside
 A'gate, *adv.* everywhere; all ways
 Ahint, *prep.* behind
 Aihlina, *prep.* perhaps
 Ainsel, *n.* one's own self
 Airon, *n.* iron
 Airt, *a.* and *v.* direction; to direct
 Airtid, *v.* directed
 "Airt or pairt," *n.* anything at all
 Allenar, allemanie, *adv.* solely, exclusively
 Aise, aisis, ase, *v.* aashes
 Aignal, aignal, *a.* equal
 A-low, *adv.* on fire, blazing
 Alane, alone, only
 Als, *conj.* [als] also
 An, *prep.* if
 Anent, *prep.* concerning
 Ance, *adv.* [yence] once
 Argie-bargie, *n.* wordy disputation
 Arles, *n.* "deposit," advance payment
 Aschet, *n.* platter
 Askina, *n.* the thing asked
 Athort, *prep.* across
 Attent, *n.* attention
 Amoikie, *v.* to acquit on trial
 Aucht, *a.* (gutt.) eight
 Aucht, *v.* own, possess
 Auechth, *a.* (gutt.) eighth
 Aughty, *a.* (gutt.) eighty
 Auld, *a.* old, elder
 Aumoneries, *n.* presses for storing alms
 Ava, *adv.* at all
 Avisement, *n.* advice
 Aventrie, *n.* adultery
 Aw, *prep.* away
 Awosome, *a.* awful
 Awmons, *n.* alms
 Awmoners, *n.* almoners
 Awn, *v.* owing

B.

Backlins, *prep.* backwards
 Baff, *n.* a blow or stroke with the hand
 Bairn, *n.* child
 Bairnbaird, *n.* childhood
 Ban, *v.* and *n.* curse

Bannock, *n.* flat cake of bread
 Barn, *a.* yeast
 Barrie-coat, *n.* infant's swaddling-cloth
 Barrin, *a.* excepting
 Bauchs, *a.* balances, weighing beams
 Bauld, *a.* bold
 Beadle, *n.* sexton
 Bearin-pains, *n.* pangs of childbirth
 Beasts, *n.* beasts, cattle
 Beda', *v.* [befaw] befall
 Befaun, *v.* befallen
 Beild, *v.* and *n.* shelter
 Bein, *v.* being
 Begude, *v.* began
 Behauden, *v.* beholden, compelled
 Belyve, *adv.* by and bye, soon
 Ben, *n.* an inner part of the house
 Benmaist, *a.* innermost
 Besocht, *v.* (gutt.) besought
 Bethocht, *v.* (gutt.) bethought
 Biddable, *a.* obedient
 Biddans, *n.* biddings, orders
 Bide, *v.* remain
 Bigg, *v.* build
 Biggit, *n.* built
 Bin, *v.* (short i) bind
 Binna, *v.* be not
 Bink, *n.* bunch
 Birr, *n.* energy, vigour
 Birsale, *n.* scorch
 Blads, *n.* pieces
 Blae, *a.* bluish, livid, pale
 Blains, *n.* boils, sores
 Blate, *a.* bashful, shrinking
 Blear't, *v.* made blind
 Blink, *v.* and *v.* glance
 Blirtit, *v.* wept noisily
 Blude, *n.* blood
 Blythe, *a.* (A hard) joyful
 Bocht, *v.* (gutt.) bought
 Bode, *n.* invitation
 Bedle, *n.* 2d. Soots (a small coin)
 Bogle, *n.* something frightful; an apparition
 Bonnie, *a.* beautiful
 Boonmaist, *a.* uppermost
 Bonn-face, *n.* natural face
 Bothie, *n.* a hut
 Bonk, *n.* and *v.* bulk
 Bower, *n.* private chamber
 Bowet, *n.* a small lantern
 Braid, *a.* broad
 Braird, *v.* and *n.* sprout

GLOSSARY.

Brandered, *v.* broiled
 Braw, *a.* gandy, adorned
 Braws, *n.* adornments
 Brawlie, *adv.* gaudily, finely; also exceedingly well
 Breist, *n.* breast
 Breck, brek, *v.* break
 Brekin, *v.* breaking
 Brulzæ, *n.* noisy quarrel
 Brunt, *v.* burned
 Brunstane, *n.* brimstone
 Bude, *v.* must
 Buird, *n.* board, table
 Bun', *v.* bound
 Bura'n, *a.* being burst
 Busk, *v.* adorn
 Buskit, *v.* adorned, dressed
 Buss, *n.* bush

C.

Ca', *v.* [caw] call; turn; drive
 Caber, *n.* rafter-pole, or large round stick
 Ca'l, *v.* called, named
 Calliant, *n.* boy
 Canna, *v.* cannot
 Cannis, *a.* gentle; cautious
 Canniness, *n.* gentleness
 Cap, *v.* equal; complete
 Cark, *n.* burden (of care)
 Cauldrife, *a.* chilly, cold
 Causey, *n.* causeway, pavement of street
 Cauves, *n.* calves
 Ca'tiou, caution, *n.* bail, security
 Challenge, *v.* rebuke
 Chap, *n.* knock at a door, *v.* to knock slightly
 Chaumer, *n.* chamber
 Chekit, *v.* restrained
 Cheenge, *v.* and *n.* change
 Chief, *a.* intimate
 Chokit, *v.* choked
 Clashan, *n.* (gutt.) hamlet
 Clraith, *n.* cloth
 Clash, *n.* talk; tell-tale, gossip
 Clauncht, *v.* (gutt.) clutched, caught
 Clean, *a.* and *adv.* entirely
 Cleekin, *n.* brood
 Cleedin, *n.* clothing
 Cleedit, *v.* clad
 Cleek, *v.* and *n.* snatch, jerk; a hook
 Clippit, *v.* sheared; snatched
 Clour, *a.* and *n.* [cloor] a blow; to strike or beat
 Close, *n.* (soft *s*) blind alley, a narrow side street
 Clout, *n.* and *n.* patch; a rag
 Clud, *n.* cloud
 Coft, *v.* purchased
 Cog, *n.* vessel for holding or carrying liquids
 Collequin, *n.* advising together
 Compleint, *n.* complaint
 Coont, *n.* count
 Coonsel, *n.* counsel, advice

Corbies, *n.* ravens
 Corp, *n.* corpse
 Coold, *v.* could
 Co'way! interj. come away! "come on!"
 Cowt, *n.* colt
 Craik, *v.* persistently entreat
 Craig, *n.* crag, high rock
 Crampit, *v.* restricted
 Craw, *v.* and *n.* crow
 Creel, *n.* hamper, large basket
 Crouse, *a.* [croos] cheery, joyful
 Croon, *v.* softly murmur in song
 Croft, *n.* small holding of land
 Croulin, *a.* and *n.* crawling
 Cruppen, *v.* crept
 Cruse, *n.* (hard *s*) small open lamp; cup for oil
 Crystat, *n.* smoothen
 Cuist, *v.* did cast
 Cuit, *n.* ankle
 Cule, *v.* and *a.* cool
 Cuisten, cuis'n, *v.* was cast
 Cuis'n oot, *v.* cast out; quarrelled
 Cushat, *n.* ringdove
 Cuttit, *v.* did cut

D.

Daddi, *v.* a piece, especially a somewhat large piece, of anything
 Daddit, daudit, *v.* struck with the open hand
 Dae, do
 Daen, *v.* doing
 Daffin, *v.* and *n.* idle toying
 Daft, *a.* foolish; insane
 Dang, dung, *n.* struck; knocked over
 Darg, *n.* a specific task, a day's work
 Dauntit, *v.* intimidated
 Daur, *n.* dare
 Dawin, *v.* and *n.* dawning; dawn
 Dawtit, *a.* fondled, petted
 Deal, *n.* board or plank
 Dea, *v.* die
 Deat', *v.* died
 Deid-strike, *n.* death-stroke
 Deif, *a.* deaf
 Denner, *n.* dinner
 Dementit, *a.* deranged in mind
 Delicht, *v.* and *n.* (gutt.) delight
 Dentit, *a.* bruised, dinted
 Depone, *v.* depose; make statement
 Differ, *a.* difference
 Dight, *n.* (gutt.) wife
 Dightina, *n.* (gutt.) refuse
 Ding, *v.* stroke or knock
 Dink, *a.* neat
 Dink, *v.* to ornament; set off
 Diona, *v.* do not
 Dirl, *v.* thrill; cause a tremulous motion
 Dia, *v.* (hard *s*) does
 Disgeist, *v.* digest
 Disjaskit, *a.* disordered, dilapidated
 Div, *v.* do
 Divna, *a.* do not
 Divescions, *n.* divisions

GLOSSARY.

Dochter, n. (gutt.) daughter
 Doitit, a. foolish, imbecile
 Dolor, n. grief, sorrow
 Donnert, a. stupid
 Dooble, a. double
 Dool, n. grief, woe
 Doomster, n. an officer of the court who announces the sentence
 Doon-gam, n. and v. descent, descending
 Doot, v. and n. doubt
 Dootsomeness, n. state of indecision; hesitancy
 Douce, a. [dooes] respectable, quietly-behaved
 Dour, a. [door] obstinate
 Dourness, n. obstinacy; reluctance
 Dow, doo, n. dove
 Dowg, n. dog
 Dowie, a. downcast; sad
 Dres, v. suffer
 Dreid, a. and n. dread
 Drock, v. drench
 Drooth, droath, n. thirst
 Droothe, droathie, a. thirsty, dry
 Drunken, a. drunken
 Drunkie, a. discoloured or muddy (as water)
 Dune, v. done
 Dung, v. knocked down
 Dwaeun, n. faint; trance
 Dwine, v. shrink; fade away
 Dykit, v. built a dyke round

E.

Kar', a. [air] early
 Een, a. eyes
 E'min, n. evening
 Ee-sweet, a. sweet to the eyes
 Eridant, a. frugal, prudent
 Eidol, n. idol
 Eild, n. old age
 Eithlie, adv. (soft t) easily
 Eeffek, a. and v. effect
 Eftir, prep. after
 Eftivhaun, prep. afterwards
 Els, a. (hard s) else; already
 Eke, conj. also
 Emerant, n. emerald
 Enesah, a. (gutt.) enough
 E-noo, adv. at the present
 Ettle, v. intend, attempt
 Ettlin, v. intending; attempting
 Even, v. compare

F.

Fa', v. [faw] fall, n. lot; portion
 Factor, n. agent, manager
 Faddom, n. lathom
 Fae, n. foo
 Fain, a. anxious; wishful
 Fain, v. and n. [fawin] falling
 Fall, a. heroic; admirable
 Fend, v. submit

Fendin, n. necessary food
 Fail, v. dwindle, faint
 Fair fa', interj. well betide!
 Funk, n. tangle; knot
 Farder, a. farther
 Fardin, n. farthing
 Fash, n. and n. trouble
 Fauld, v. and n. fold
 Faun, n. fallen
 Faund, v. found
 Fawn-oot, v. fallen out, quarrelled
 Fause, a. (soft s) false
 Faunt, n. and v. fault
 Fecht, v. and n. (gutt.) fight
 Feck, a. principal part
 Feckless, a. useless; without spirit or strength
 Fee, n. wages, hire, reward
 Ferlie, n. and v. wonder
 Fesh, a. fetch
 Fettle, n. condition, order
 Firlet, n. fourth part of a "boll"; (about a bushel)
 Fire-flaucht, n. (gutt.) lightning; flash
 Fit-brod, n. footstool
 Fivver, n. fever
 Flaff, v. shake off; flutter
 Flanchit, v. (gutt.) wafted
 Pleechin, v. persuading in a flattering way
 Flay't, v. affrighted
 Flytin, v. and n. chiding; scolding
 Fogage, n. berbage
 Fowrorn, a. perfumed
 Fowrtseen, a. fourteen
 Forby, prep. besides
 Forrit, adv. forward
 Forritsome, a. forward
 Forasmuch, conj. forasmuch
 Forebearn, n. parents; ancestors
 Forfouchten, a. (gutt.) exhausted
 Fornent, prep. opposite; in front of
 Forgather, n. meet together
 Forgien, v. forgiven
 Forlyin, n. adultery
 Forpot, n. fourth part of a peck
 Forwander, v. stray away
 Fras, prep. from
 Frappin, n. frapping; undergirding a ship
 Freend, a. friend
 Frend, a. strange; alien
 Frute, n. fruit
 Frutins, n. fruitings, crops
 Fu', lou, a. full, drunk
 Fusionless, a. pithless, weak
 Fyteen, a. fifteen
 Fyve, a. five
 Fyle, v. dasile

G.

Gaberhanzie, n. a licensed beggar
 Gae, v. go
 Gaad, v. went
 Gaird, n. and v. guard
 Gans, v. gone

GLOSSARY.

Gairden, *n.* garden
 Gang, *v.* go
 Gangable, *a.* fit for travelling
 Ganab, *v.* snap; bite
 Gang-by, *n.* neglect
 Gangrel, *a.* strolling, *n.* wanderer
 Gar, *v.* compel
 Gann, *v.* going
 Gato, *n.* way
 Gear, *n.* treasure, riches
 Geek, *v.* mock, deride
 Gerus, *n.* grass
 Gey, *adv.* somewhat; to some extent; medium
 Gibberish, ^{*} *n.* inarticulate speech
 Gie, *v.* give
 Gien, *v.* given
 Giean, *v.* giving
 Gif, *prep.* if
 Gin, *prep.* if
 Girm, *v.* grin, gnash
 Girm, *n.* snare or trap
 Gurnal, *n.* receptacle for holding grain or meal
 Glamor, *n.* fascination; occult influence
 Glaikit, *a.* exceedingly foolish
 Glasm at, *v.* snatch at
 Ghiff, *v.* frighten
 Glintin, *v.* and *a.* sparkling, shining
 Glisk, *n.* glance; transient ray
 Gleg, *a.* quick; active
 Gleyed, *a.* crooked; oblique
 Glint, *v.* and *n.* glance; shine
 Glower, *v.* stare
 Gonyal, *n.* stupid fool
 Gosity, *a.* gosity
 Gowd, *n.* gold
 Gowpen, *n.* "double handful"
 Graff, *n.* grave
 Graip, *a.* grope
 Graith, *n.* harness; accoutrement
 Grange, *n.* a grain farm, or its buildings
 Graun', *a.* grand
 Grat, *v.* wept
 Gree, *n.* prize, reward
 Gree, *v.* agree
 Greet, *v.* weep
 Greetin, *v.* weeping
 Grieve, *n.* farm-overseer
 Grippit, *v.* seized, apprehended
 Grit, *a.* great
 Grund, *v.* ground
 Grynnin, *n.* sprinkling; thin covering
 Gudes, *n.* goods
 Gude-father, *n.* father-in-law. (In the same way, gude-mither, gude-son, gude-dochter, gude-brither, and gude-sister)
 Gudeman, *n.* master of the house; husband

H.

Ha', *n.* (haw) hall
 Hae, *v.* have

^{*} These words in *pt.* have all the hard sound of *g.*

Haet, *n.* the least portion
 Hadden, haddin, *n.* possessions
 Hail, *a.* whole, total
 Hain, *v.* economise; save, or reserve
 Hairst, *n.* harvest
 Hald, *n.* stronghold; dwelling
 Hale, *a.* whole; healed; well
 Halesome, *a.* wholesome
 Hansel, *v.* to honour anything by first use; inaugurate
 Hantle, *a.* a considerable number
 Harled, *v.* dragged
 Harris, *v.* ravage; rob; plunder
 Hand, *v.* hold
 Handie, *n.* holding
 Handen, handen; held
 Hanf, *n.* half
 Hann, *n.* hand
 Hann-write, *n.* hand-writing
 Haues, *n.* windpipe, throat
 Havers, havers, *n.* idle talk
 Heartit, *v.* [hairtest] encouraged
 Heigh, *a.* (gutt.) high
 Heigher, *a.* (gutt.) higher
 Height, *a.* (gutt.) height (*ei* pron. as short *e*)
 Heid, *n.* head
 Heize, *v.* hoist, lift
 Het, *a.* hot
 Hereawa, *adv.* hereabouts
 Herdit, *v.* herded
 Hersel, *pr.* herself
 He'se, *v.* [heez] he will
 Heagh, *n.* (gutt.) glen; hollow place
 Heuk, *n.* hook; sickle
 Hie, heigh, *a.* high
 Hinner, *a.* and *v.* lust, or binder; also, to hinder or obstruct
 Hinner-end, *n.* conclusion; the last
 Hiany, *n.* honey
 Hirplin, *v.* limping, creeping with age or weakness
 Hinsel, *n.* small flock
 Hirsle't, *a.* drawn together; creeping together
 Hools, *n.* pods; shells
 Hornbuik, *n.* hornbook; first-book, or alphabet-card
 Hoose, *n.* house
 Howe, *n.* and *a.* hollow
 Hawk, *v.* dig; excavate
 Howff, *n.* and *v.* rendezvous
 Hundit, *v.* hounded, pursued
 Hunner, hunder, *n.* hundred

L

Ilk, ilka, *a.* each
 Ill-deedie, *a.* evil-doing
 Ingle, *n.* (iny'l) domestic fire
 Inscriv't, *v.* inscribed
 Intil, *prep.* into
 Inwarts, *n.* inwards
 Ise, *v.* I am; I will
 Isna, *v.* is not
 Ither, *a.* other

GLOSSARY.

J.

Jalousie, *v.* [ja-loos] suspect
Juist, *adj.* just, even
Joult, *v.* jostled; shaken
Jimp, *a.* acaut; scarce; narrow

K.

Kist, *n.* and *a.* chest; to prepare for burial
Ken, *v.* know
Kith and kin, *a.* intimate friends, and relatives
Kintra, *n.* country
Kensis, *v.* and *a.* knowing; knowledge; a very small quantity
Kent, *v.* known
Kenspeckle, *a.* easily distinguished, marked
Kep, *v.* catch; intercept
Kitchen, *v.* and *a.* give relish to; reliah
Kens-na, *a.* knows not
Keepit, *v.* kept
Keekin-glass, *n.* looking-glass
Kythe, *v.* appear, or show itself

L.

Laft, *n.* upper room; loft; gallery
Laif, *n.* loaf
Laigh, *a.* (gutt.) low
Laigher, *a.* (gutt.) lower
Laird, *a.* landowner
Lameter, *a.* [la'me-ter] one lame; cripple
Langsyne, *n.* (soft *s*) long ago
Lang-tholin, *v.* and *a.* long-suffering.
Lap, *v.* leaped
Lass, lassie, *n.* girl, maiden
Laudit, *v.* praised
Leave, *n.* the rest, the remainder
Lax, *n.* dysentery or diarrhea
Leal, *a.* [leal] faithful, loyal, true
Lear, *a.* [lare] knowledge, learning
Leean, *v.* and *a.* lying; false
Leesonee, *n.* leave, license
Leech, *n.* physician
Leet, *n.* a list, as of candidates
Leuch, *v.* (gutt.) laughed
Leeva, *n.* to live
Let-shen, *adj.* cosy, except
Licht, *n.* (gutt.) light
Lightlie, *v.* despise, undervalue
Lift, *n.* the atmosphere; the sky
Lilt, *v.* and *a.* sing; a song
Lippem, *v.* trust
Lippin-fu', *a.* full to overflowing
Loanin, *n.* a wide lane, or other enclosed p'ace
Loch, *n.* (gutt.) lake
Loof, *n.* palm of the hand: pl. "looves"
Loons, *n.* fellows
Loot, *v.* let, permitted
Loup, *v.* [loup] leap
Loutit, *v.* [lout'eet] lowered, bent down
Lowe, *n.* blaze
Lowin, *v.* and *a.* blazing
Lown, *a.* quiet, still
Lowp, *v.* and *a.* leap

Lowne, *v.* (hard *s*) to lowne
Lowne, *a.* (soft *s*) loose
Lowt, lout, *v.* bend down; to lower
Loutit, *v.* kindled; lit

M.

Maen, *v.* and *a.* moan
Mailiu, *n.* property occupied or possessed
Mauswear, *v.* perjure
Mansworn, *a.* perjured
Manteel, *a.* mantle; wrap
Manglin, *v.* mangling
Marrow, *v.* and *a.* equal
Maud, *n.* a woollen wrap; a "plaid"
Mauu, *v.* meat
Mauuna, *v.* must not
Meat, *n.* food in general
Mead, *a.* reward
Melder, *n.* batch, or "grist"
Meuse, *n.* (soft *s*) discretion, propriety
Merk, *n.* a "mark," or coin worth two-thirds of a pound Scots: about 13*l.* sterling

Merkit, *n.* market
Mickle, muckle, *a.* much
Mids, *prep.* midst; middle
Midden, *n.* dust-heap; dung-heap
Midden-ortz, *n.* odd trash flung out
Minnie, *n.* mother
Mirk, *n.* and *a.* dark
Misca', *v.* asperse, slander
Misluotit, *v.* bad doubts
Miscuri'en, *a.* wrongly-thrown
Mislearid, *v.* [mis-lair'd] misinformed
Mislinpen, *v.* mistake, deceive
Mistryst, *v.* (y, sound of long *i*) disappoint, deceive
Mis-sayin, *a.* slander
Moil, *n.* depressing labour
Mony, *a.* many
Mools, *n.* crumbs
Mou', *n.* mouth
Mylane, *pr.* myself alone

N.

Naegate, *adv.* nowise; nowhere; no way
Naipkin, *n.* napkin; kerchief
Nar, *a.* near
Nar-by, *prep.* near-by
Nathelless, *adj.* nevertheless
Neiffa', *n.* handful
Neist, *a.* next
Neiva, *n.* fist
Nevoy, *n.* nephew
Nisser, *v.* barter, exchange
Nocht, *n.* (gutt.) nothing
Nourice, *n.* nurse; cherish
Nowte, *n.* cattle

O.

Ochta, aucht, *v.* (gutt.) possesses
Oea, *n.* grandchildren
Offeran, *n.* offering

GLOSSARY.

Onygate, *adv.* anyhow
 Ov, *n.* wool
 'Oor, *n.* hour
 Out-by, *prep.* outside
 Outcome, *n.* outcome, conclusion
 Outermost, *a.* outermost
 'Or, *prep.* before
 Orra, *n.* occasional ; odd ; superfluous
 Orta, *n.* refuse ; rubbish
 Outarior, *n.* outcast ; reprobate
 Owarcome, *n.* superfluity
 Owergaun, *n.* and *a.* overflowing
 Owzen, *n.* oxen

P.

Paction, *n.* agreement ; treaty ; covenant
 Pang, *v.* pack closely
 Park, *n.* an enclosure, especially if in grass
 Pasche, *n.* [pask] Passover
 Pat, *n.* pot
 Pawkie, *a.* sly ; cautious
 Pawn, *n.* pledge ; risk
 Pearlina, *n.* silk or other fine laces
 Pertoon, *v.* pertain
 Perfeta, *a.* perfect
 Pernickity, *a.* over-particular
 Pickle, *n.* sample of grain ; a small quantity
 Pirn, *n.* spool ; bobbin (ir as English er in "perry")
 Pit, *v.* put
 Pitten, patten, *v.* put
 Plack, *n.* a small copper coin
 Plas, *n.* case ; argument
 Plenishin, *n.* furnishing
 Plough, *v.* [plew] to plough
 Plenich, *n.* (gutt.) a plough
 Ploy, *n.* a law-plea or suit
 Pock-paddin, *n.* "bag pudding," a contemptuous term for a glutton
 Poind, *v.* distrain, confiscate
 Port, *n.* gate of entry
 Poor, *n.* power
 Poortith, *n.* poverty
 Poother, *n.* (hard *th*) powder
 Ponches, *n.* pockets, wallets
 Pourie, *n.* [poor'ee] a vessel with a spout for pouring
 Practese, *v.* [prac-teeze'] practise
 Pre, *v.* to taste
 Preed, *v.* tasted
 Prentin, *a.* printing
 Prod, *n.* sharp points ; punctures
 Proddit, *v.* punctured
 Prufe, *n.* proof
 Prufe-coat, *n.* proof-coat ; armour
 Pu', *v.* pull
 Pu'd, *v.* pulled
 Puddocke, *n.* frog
 Puir, *a.* poor
 Pushion, *n.* [push'ion] poison
 Putten-about, *v.* agitated ; troubled
 Pyat, *n.* magpie

Pyke, *v.* pick ; dig out
 Pyne, *n.* and *a.* pain ; sorrow, penitement, pain

Q.

Quaisten, *n.* question
 Quern, *n.* a hand-millstone
 Quey, *n.* [quae] a heifer
 Quat, *v.* quit, cease ; ceased, let go
 Quata, *a.* quiet, silent
 Quateness, *n.* quietness ; peace

R.

Raal, *a.* real
 Raise, *v.* rase
 Raun-stam, *a.* thoughtless
 Raung, *v.* reigned
 Rax, *v.* stretch
 Rebute, *v.* rebuke
 Re-astie, reastie, *a.* fractions, unwilling
 Red, *v.* teach, counsel
 Reddil, *v.* to disentangle, put to rights
 Rede, *n.* lesson, advice
 Reek, *n.* and *a.* smoke
 Reive, *v.* plunder
 Reiver, *n.* robber
 Rewth, *n.* pity
 Richt, *a.* and *n.* (gutt.) right
 Richtous, *a.* (gutt.) righteous
 Riggiu, *n.* roofing
 Rinkit, *v.* ranged round
 Rive, *v.* rend ; *n.* a rent
 Roosin, *v.* (hard *s*) praising
 Rouch, *a.* (gutt.) rough
 Rousit, *n.* rust
 Row't, *a.* rolled
 Rowth, *n.* abundance
 Ruskle, *n.* and *a.* wrinkle
 Rung, *n.* stake, or club
 Rutit, *v.* rooted
 Ryope, *v.* to probe, to poke

S.

Sa', *n.* salve
 Sah, *v.* and *n.* sob
 Sacrifice, *n.* sacrifice
 Sad-bred, *n.* heavy, or unleavened bread
 Sair, *n.* sore, grievous
 Sairs, *n.* injuries
 Sairs, *v.* serves, accomplishes
 Sal, *v.* shall
 Sanna, *v.* shall not
 Sauf, *v.* save
 Saul, *n.* soul
 Saunt, *n.* saint
 Saut, *n.* and *a.* salt
 Sauton, *n.* Satan
 Sawed, *v.* sowed
 Sawn, *v.* sown
 Sax, *a.* six
 Scaom, *n.* haze
 Scaur, *n.* precipitous bank
 Schaw, *v.* shew
 Schew, *n.* [sheu] sow

GLOSSARY.

Schante, v. push
Scouther, v. and *v.* scorch ; a scorching
Scread, n. a writing ; a hasty epistle ; any-
 thing torn off
Sonnuer, v. and *n.* loathe, disgust
Seil, n. strain ; filter
Sel, pr. self
Sellie, a. *whiſt*
Ser', v. serve
Ser'in, v. serving
Servitor, n. servant, waiter
Sham't, v. ashamed
Shapit, v. formed
Shear, v. reap with a sickle
Shoelin, n. hut
Sheugb, n. (gutt.) trench ; grave
Shoon, n. shoes
Shooter n. [shoo'ther : hard *th*] shoulder
Shucken, v. shaken
Shore, v. did shear (or reap)
Sib, a. related by blood
Sibness, n. consanguinity
Sic, siccan, siclike, adv. such
Siccar, a. secure, firm
Siccarlie, adv. strongly, securely, sternly
Sich, n. (gutt.) sigh
Siller, n. silver, money
Silly, a. weak in body or mind
Sillness, n. weakness, especially of the body
Simmer-warm, a. lukewarm
Sinder, v. divide, separate
Sindry, adv. asunder
Sirra n. (soft *s*) sire
Skail, v. scatter ; spill ; disperse
Skaith, v. and *n.* (soft *th*) injure ; injury
Skeelie, a. skilful
Skellied, a. oblique, squinting
Skirlin, v. screaming
Skreigb, v. and *n.* (gutt.) shriek
Sleeperie, a. sleepy
Slippit, v. slipped
Sloakened, v. slaked, quenched
Slype, v. slide
Smack, n. a small decked, or partially
 decked vessel
Smoored, v. smothered
Snapper, v. stumble
Sned, v. snip off
Snod, v. trim, put in order
Sonsie, a. well-conditioned, sensible, pleasant
Sneek, n. latch
Snell, a. sharp ; biting
Soom, v. swim
Soupit, v. swept
Sooth, n. truth
Sornin, v. "sponging"
Sond, v. should
Sough, n. (gutt.) whisper ; echo ; sound
Soun', n. [soon] sound
Sowp, n. a mouthful ; a small quantity
Sowther, v. solder
Spate, n. freshet ; flood
Speel, v. climb
Speir, v. enquire

Speirin, v. questioning
Speldrin, n. a fish split and dried
Sperfl't, v. scattered wastefully
Spraid, v. spread
Spuein, v. and *n.* vomiting
Stanee, n. site ; standing-place
Stanerie, a. stony
Starn, n. star
Stauners-by, n. by-standers
Staw, v. stole
Steave, steere, a. robust, strong
Steively, adv. strongly
Steek, v. fasten ; stitch
Steab, v. (gutt.) to fill to satiety
Stell'd, v. set fast
Sterk, a. bold, unflinching
Stibble, n. stabble
Stirk, a. young ox ; steer
Stog, v. and *n.* puncture
Stottar, stotter, n. stumble
Stoun', n. sudden pain
Stour, n. flying dust ; strife
Stouthrief, n. robbery with violence
Stowp, stoup, n. vessel for holding liquids
Stramash, n. disturbance ; broil
Straucht, a. (gutt.) straight
Strett, a. narrow ; *n.* difficulty
Strickly, adv. strictly
Strinkle, v. sprinkle ; strew
Strucken, v. struck
Suddaintie, a. a sudden occasion
Suner, a. sooner
Sumph, n. a "soft," or weak-minded man
Sut, suttin, n. set or sit
Swappit, v. thrown or clapped together
Swarf, v. faint
Sweob, n. (gutt.) trumpet
Swee, n. swing, lurch
Sweir, a. reluctant
Swither, v. hesitate
Synd, v. rinse, cleanse
Syne, adv. soon ; since

T.

Tack, n. the term of a lease
Taigle, n. involve ; delay
Tang, n. sharpness ; a sharp point
Teem, v. pour
Tempit, v. tempted
Tenner, a. tender
Tent, n. notice ; care
Tentie, a. thoughtful ; careful
Tether, n. and *n.* to fasten ; a tie, fastening
Thae, pr. (hard *th*) those
Theak, n. thatch
Thegither, prep. together
Theretill, prep. thereto
Thir, pr. (hard *th*) these
Thirlman, n. slave ; prisoner
Thole, v. endure, bear
Tholeable, a. endurable
Thrawart, a. intractable, contrary
Thrawn, a. obstinate, contrary
Threep, v. pertinaciously affirm

GLOSSARY.

Thretty, a. thirty
 Thring, v. thrust ; press forward
 Throwe-ganga, n. streets
 Throwe-ither, prep. mixed together
 Ticht, a. (gutt.) tight
 Tightly, adv. (gutt.) tightly, strictly
 Tine, v. lose
 Tint, v. lost
 Tirl, v. a continuous light knocking or touching
 To-booth, n. tolbooth, prison
 Tocher, n. (gutt.) dowry
 To the fore, a. prepared ; still available
 Tod, n. fox
 Toom, n. empty
 Tow, n. rope ; string ; fastening
 Towlaith, a. coarse bagging
 Tush, a. neat, trim
 Towerickie, n. tower ; high point
 Trampit, n. trampled, trod
 Traik, v. to trail in a languid way
 Tranchilt, a. (gutt.) draggled
 Troke, v. traffic, deal, trade
 Trocha, n. troughs, receptacles for water
 Trim'l, v. trembled
 Trimlin, v. and a. trembling
 Tryst, n. an appointment
 Trystit, v. made an appointment ; covenanted
 Tukken, v. taken
 Twafanid, a. double ; inaimeero
 Tulzie, n. tumult ; conflict

U.

Ulyie, n. oil
 Unco, adv. strange ; exceedingly
 Uncoos, n. strange things
 Unsteekit, v. unfastened ; opened
 Unwankit, a. unfulfilled
 Up-biggin, v. up-building
 Uphand, v. uphold
 Upon, prep. upon
 Uptak, n. comprehension
 Unsiccar, a. unsettled, unstable

V.

Vessel, n. vessel

W.

Wa', n. wall
 Waal, n. [waal] well ; shaft
 Waal-ee, n. spring of water
 Wad, v. wold
 Waesome, a. woeful, miserable
 Waff, a. weak ; inaipid
 Waffle, n. to show weakness or insincerity
 Waffim, a. weak ; undecided
 Wa'-gaun, v. going away
 Wale, v. and n. select ; choice
 Walin oot, v. selecting
 Wame, n. belly, stomach
 Want, v. to lack
 Wantin, v. lacking
 Wand, n. rod
 Wanrestie, a. uneasy
 Wapins, n. weapons

War, n. ware
 Warna, n. ware not
 Wared, n. spent, disbursed
 Warble, v. wrestle
 Wastrie, n. waste
 Wanfness, n. weakness
 Warr, a. worse
 Waask, v. to "full" as cloth
 Wastre', n. [wac'strel] spendthrift
 Weane, n. infants ; children
 Wearin-dud, n. a garment
 Wecht, n. (gutt.) weight
 Weel-fair'd, a. well favoured ; handsome
 Weir, n. war
 Weird, n. fate
 Weise, v. (soft s) to turn by gentle means
 Wench, n. a young woman
 Werah, a. [waerah] inaipid ; unseasoned
 Wesh, v. wash
 Whammie, v. overturn
 Whan, adv. when
 Whasse, pr. whose, whosoever
 Whaurin, prep. wherein
 Whean, a. a few
 Whilk, pr. which
 Whing, whang, n. thong
 Whisht, whaht, v. whispered ; silenced
 Whust, a. silence
 Wi', prep. [wee] with
 Widdie, a. withie ; rope
 Win, v. get, obtain ; arrive at
 Winnock, n. window
 Wordie, a. worthy
 Wrangous, wrangously, adv. wrongfully
 Wright, n. (gutt.) wright ; artificer
 Writer, a. lawyer
 Wrocht, v. (gutt.) wrought
 Wud, n. wood
 Wud, a. mad, insane
 Well, a. and n. will
 Wun, wund, n. wind
 Wunner-warkt, n. miracles
 Wuss, v. and n. wish
 Wi'ya, prep. and pr. with you
 Wyle, v. draw, entice
 Wyse, a. (soft s) wise, sane
 Wysesheid, a. wisdom
 Wyte, v. and n. blame
 Wyteless, a. blameless

Y.

Yaird, n. garden
 Yammer, v. whine, mutter
 Yap, a. hungry
 Yerba, n. herbs
 Yernest, a. earnest
 York, v. jerk, snatch
 Yett, n. gate
 Yeuckie, a. itching
 Yeak, v. and n. itch ; Itching
 Yird, n. ground ; soil
 Yirdin, n. earthquake
 Yirth, n. earth ; world
 Yonner, prep. yonder
 Yont, prep. beyond